THE MODELL OF VVit, Mirth, Eloquence, and Conuerſation.

Framed in Ten Dayes, of an hundred curious Pieces, by ſeuen Honourable Ladies, and three Noble Gentlemen.

Preſerued to Poſterity by the Renowned *Iohn Boccacio, the firſt Refiner of Italian proſe: And now tranſlated into Engliſh.*

Printed by Iſaac Iaggard, for Mathew Lownes, 1625.



TO THE RIGHT HO-

nourable, Sir PHILLIP HERBERT, Knight *of the Bath at the Coronation of our Soueraigne Lord* King *IAMES*, Lord Baron of Sherland, Earle of *Montgomery, and Knight of the moſt Noble Order of the Garter.*

THE Philoſopher *Zeno* (Right Honourable, and my moſt worthily eſteemed Lord) being demanded on a time, by what meanes a man might attaine to happineſſe; made anſwer: *By reſorting to the dead, and hauing familiar conuerſation with them.* Intimating thereby, *The reading of ancient and moderne Hiſtories, and endeauouring to learn ſuch good inſtructions, as haue bene obſerued in our Predeceſſors.* A queſtion alſo was mooued by great King *Ptolomy*, to one of the learned wiſe Interpreters: In what occaſions a King ſhould exerciſe himſelfe? Whereto thus he replied; *To know thoſe things which formerly haue bene done; And to reade Bookes of thoſe matters which offer themſelues daily, or are fitteſt for our inſtant affaires. And laſtly, in ſeeking thoſe things whatſoeuer, that make for a Kingdomes preſeruation, and the correction of euill manners or examples.*

Vpon theſe good and warrantable grounds (moſt Noble Lord) beſide many more of the ſame Nature (which I omit to auoid prolixitie, I dare boldly affirme, that ſuch as are exerciſed in the reading of Hiſtories, although they ſeeme to be but yong in yeares, and ſlenderly inſtructed in worldly matters: yet grauity and gray-headed age ſpeaketh maturely in them, to the no meane admiration of common and vulgar iudgement. As contrary-wiſe, ſuch as are ignorant of things done and paſt, before themſelues had any being: continue ſtill in the eſtate of children, able to ſpeake or behaue themſelues no otherwiſe; and, euen within the bounds of their Natiue Countries (in reſpect of knowledge or manly capacity) they are no more then well-ſeeming dumbe Images.

In due conſideration of the precedent allegations, and vpon the command, as alſo moſt Noble encouragement of your Honour from time to time; this volume of ſingular and exquiſite Hiſtories, varied into ſo many and exact natures, appeareth in the worlds view, vnder your Noble Patronage, to be ſafely ſheelded from foule-mouth'd ſlander and detraction which is too eaſily throwne vpon the very beſt deſeruing labours.

I know (moſt worthy Lord) that many of them haue long ſince beene publiſhed before, as ſtolne from the firſt originall Authour, and yet not beautified with his ſweet ſtyle & elocution of phraſe, neither fauouring of his ſingular morall applications. For as it was his full ſcope and aime by diſcouering all vices in their vgly deformities, to make their mortall enemies (the ſacred Vertues) to ſhine the cleerer, being ſet down by them and compared with them: ſo euery true and vpright iudgement, in obſeruing the courſe of theſe well-carried Nouels, ſhall plainely perceyue, that there is no ſpare made of reproofe in any degree whatſoeuer, where ſinne is embraced, and grace neglected; but the iuſt deſeruing ſhame and puniſhment thereon inflicted, that others may be warned by their example. In imitation of witty *Æſope*, who reciteth not a Fable, but graceth it with a iudicious morall application, as many other worthy Writers haue done the like.

For inſtance, let me heere inſert one. A poore man, hauing a pikeſtaffe on his ſhoulder, and trauailing thorow a Country Village, a great Maſtiue Curre ran mainly at him, ſo that hardly hee could defend himſelfe from him. At the length, it was his chance to kill the Dogge: for which, the Owner immediately apprehending him, and bringing him before the Iudge, alledged; That he had ſlaine his ſeruant which defended his life, houſe, and goods, and therefore challenged ſatisfaction. The Iudge leaning more in fauour to the Plaintiffe, as being his friend, neighbour, and familiar, then to the iuſtice of the cauſe; reproued the poore fellow very ſharply, and peremptorily commanded him to make ſatisfaction, or elſe he would commit him to priſon. That were iniuſtice replyed the poore man, becauſe I kilde the dogge in defence of my owne life, which deſerueth much better reſpect then a million of ſuch Curres. Sirra, ſirra, ſaid the Iudge, then you ſhould haue turned the other end of your ſtaffe, and not the pike, ſo the dogges life had beene ſaued, and your owne in no danger. True Sir (quoth the fellow) if the dogge would haue turn'd his taile, and bit me with that, and not his teeth, then we both had parted quietly.

I know your Honor to be ſo truly iudicious, that your ſelfe can make the morall alluſion, both in defence of my poore paines, and accepration of the ſame into your protection; with moſt humble ſubmiſſion of my ſelfe, and all my vttermoſt endeauours, to be alwayes at your ſeruice.

The Authors Prologue, to the Lords, Ladies, and Gentlewomen.

IT is a matter of humanity, to take compaſſion on the afflicted, and although it be fitting towards all in generall, yet to ſuch as are moſt tied by bond of duty, who hauing already ſtood in neede of comfort, do therfore moſt needfully deſerue to enioy it. Among whom, if euer any were in neceſſity, found it moſt precious, and therby receiued no ſmall contentment, I am one of them; becauſe from my verie yongeſt yeeres, euen vntill this inſtant: mine affections becam extraordinarily enflamed, in a place high and Noble, more (perhaps) then beſeemed my humble condition, albeit no way diſtaſted in the iudgement of ſuch as were diſcreete, when it came truly to their knowledge and vnderſtanding. Yet (indeed) it was very painfull for me to endure, not in regard of her cruelty, whom I ſo deerely loued; as for want of better gouernment in mine owne carriage; being altogether ſwayed by raſh and peeuiſh paſſions, which made my afflictions more offenſiue to mee, then either wiſedome allowed, or ſuited with my priuate particular.

But, as counſell in miſery is no meane comfort, ſo the good aduice of a worthy friend, by many ſound and ſingular perſwaſions, wrought ſuch a deliberate alteration; as not onely preſerued my life (which was before in extreame perill) but alſo gaue concluſion ro my inconſiderate loue, which in my precedent refractarie carriage, no deliberation, counſell, euident ſhame, or whatſoeuer perill ſhould enſue thereon, could in any manner contradict; beganne to aſſwage of it ſelfe in time, beſtowing not onely on me my former freedome, but deliuering me likewiſe from infinite perplexities.

And becauſe the acknowledgement of good turnes or courteſies ceiued (in my poore opinion) is a vertue among all other highly to bee commended, and the contrary alſo to be condemned: to ſhewe my ſelfe not ingratefull, I determined (ſo ſoone as I ſaw my ſelfe in abſolute liberty) in exchange of ſo great a benefit beſtowne on mee, to miniſter ſome mitigation, I will not ſay to ſuch as releeued me, becauſe their owne better vnderſtanding, or bleſſedneſſe in Fortune, may defend them from any ſuch neceſſity; but rather to them which truly ſtand in need. And although that my comfort, may ſome way or other auaile the common needie, yet (me thinkes) where greefe is greateſt, and calamity moſt inſulteth; there ought to be our paines ſoundly imployed, and our graueſt inſtructions and aduiſe wholly adminiſtred.

And who can deny, but that it is much more conuenient, to commiſſerate the diſtreſſe of Ladies and Gentlewomen, then the more able condition of men? They, as being naturally baſhfull and timorous, haue their ſoft and gentle ſoules, often enflamed with amorous afflictions, which

lie

lie there closely concealed, as they can best relate the power of them, that haue bin subiect to the greatest proofe. Moreouer, they being restrained from their wils and desires, by the seuerity of Fathers, Mothers, Brethren, and Husbands, are shut vp (most part of their time) in their Chambers, where constrainedly sitting idle, diuersity of straunge cogitations wheele vp and downe their braines, forging as many seuerall imaginations, which cannot be alwayes pleasant and contenting. If melancholly, incited by some amorous or louely apprehension, oppresse their weake and vnresisting hearts: they must be glad to beare it patiently (til by better Fortune) such occasions happen, as may ouercome so proud an vsuration.

Moreouer, we cannot but confesse, that they are lesse able, then men, to support such oppressions: for if men grow affectionate, wee plainely perceiue, when any melancholly troublesome thoughts, or what greefes else can any way concerne them, their soules are not subiect to the like sufferings. But admit they should fall into such neceffity, they can come and go whither they will, heare and see many singular sights, hawk, hunt, fish, fowle, ride, or saile on the Seas, all which exercises haue a particular power in themselues, to withdraw amorous passions, and appropriate the will to the pleasing apperite, either by alteration of ayre, distance of place, or protraction of time, to kill sorrow, and quicken delight.

Wherefore, somewhat to amend this error in humane condition, and where least strength is, as we see to bee in you most gracious Ladies and Gentlewomen, further off (then men) from all fraile felicities: for such as feele the weighty insultations of proud and imprious loue, and therby are most in neede of comfort (and not they that can handle the Needle, Wheele, and Distaffe) I haue prouided an hundred Nouelles, Tales, Fables, or Histories, with iudicious moralles belonging to them, for your more delight, and queinter exercise. In a faire and worthy assembly, of seuen Honourable Ladies, and three Noble Gentlemen, they were recounted within the compasse of ten dayes, during the wofull time of our late dangerous sicknesse, with apt Sonnets or Canzons, for the conclusion of each seuerall day.

In which pleasing Nouels, may be obserued many strange accidents of Loue, and other notable aduentures, happening as well in our times, as those of grauer antiquity: by reading whereof, you may receyue both pleasure and profitable counsell, because in them you shal perceiue, both the sin to be shunned, and the vertue to be embraced; which as I wholly hate the one, so I do (and euer will) honor the others aduancement.

THE

The Table.

The First Day gouerned by Madame Pampinea.

1. Nouell.

MEsire Chappelet du Prat, by making a false confession, beguiled an holy religious man and after dyed. And hauing during his life time bene a very bad man, at his death was reputed to be a Saint, & called S. Chappelet.

2. Nouell.

ABraham a Iew, being admonished or aduised by a friend of his, named Iehannot de Cheuigny, trauailed from Paris to Rome : and beholding there the wicked behauiour of men in the Church, returned to Paris againe, where (neuertheless) hee became a Christian.

3. Nouell.

MElchizedech a Iew, by recounting a tale of three Rings to the great Soldan, named Saladine, preuents a great danger which was prepared for him.

4. Nouell.

A Monk committed an offence worthy punishment, freed himselfe from the paine to be inflicted on him, by wittily reprehending the Abbot, of the very same fault.

5. Nouell.

THe Lady Marquesse of Montferrat, with a banquet of Hens, and diuers other excellent speeches beside, represſed the fond loue of the King of France.

6. Nouell.

AN honest plaine meaning man, simply & conscionably, reprehended the malignity, hypocrisie, & misdemeanour of many Religious persons.

7. Nouell.

BErgamino, by telling a Tale of a skilfull man, named Primasso, and of an Abbot of Clugni, honestly checkt a new kinde of couetousnesse in Master Can de la Scala.

8. Nouell.

GVillaume Boursier, with a few queint and familiar words, checked the miserable couetousnesse of Signior Herminio de Grimaldi.

9. Nouell.

HOw the King of Cyprus was wittily reprehended, by the words of a Gentlewoman of Gascognie, and became vertuously altred from his vicious disposition.

10. Nouell.

MAster Albert of Bullen, honestly made a Lady to blush, that did thinke to haue done as much to him, because she perceiued him to bee amorously affected towards her.

The II. Day, gouerned by Madam Philomena.

The first Nouell.

MArtellino counterfetting to be lame of his members, caused himselfe to bee set vpon the body of Saint Arriguo, where (in iesting maner) he made shew of his sodaine

ſodaine recouery: but when his diſſimulation was diſcouered, hee was well beaten, being afterwards taken priſoner, and in great danger of being hanged, and yet eſcaped in the end.

2. Nouell.

RInaldo de Eſte, after he was robde by Theeues, arriued at Chaſteau Guillaume, where he was friendly lodged by a faire Widdow, and recompenced likewiſe for all his loſſes: returning afterward ſafe and well home vnto his owne houſe.

3. Nouell.

THree yong Gentlemen being Brethren, and hauing ſpent all their Lands and poſſeſsions vainely, became poore. A Nephew of theirs (falling almoſt into as deſperate a condition) becam acquainted with an Abbot, whom he afterward found to bee the King of Englands daughter, and made him hir Husband in marriage, recompencing all his Vnkles loſſes, and ſeating them againe in good eſtate.

4. Nouell.

LAndolpho Ruffolo, falling into pouerty, became a Pyrate vppon the Seas, & being taken by the Geneweyes hardly eſcaped drowning. Which yet neuertheleſſe he did, vpon a litle cheſt or coffer full of very rich Iewels, being carried thereon to Corfu, vvhere hee was well entertayned by a good Woman, and after returned richly home to his owne houſe.

5. Nouell.

ANdrea de Piero, trauayling from Perouſe to Naples to buy Horſſes, was (in the ſpace of one night) ſurprized by three admirable accidents: out of all which, vvith a rich Ring, he fortunately eſcaped.

6. Nouell.

MAdame Beritola Caracalla, vvas found in a ſtraunge Iſland vvith two Goates, hauing loſt her two ſonnes, and thence trauailed into Lunigiana: where one of her ſons became ſeruant to the Lord thereof, and was found a little ouer-familiar with his Maſters daughter, who therefore cauſed him to be impriſoned. Afterward, when the country of Sicily rebelled againſt king Charles, the aforeſaid Sonne chanced to be knowne by his mother, and vvas married to his maſters daughter. And his brother being found likewiſe, they both returned to great eſtate and credite.

7. Nouell.

THe Soldane of Babylon ſent one of his daughters to be ioyned in mariage with the King of Cholcos; who by diuers accidents (in the ſpace of foure yeeres) hapned into the cuſtody of nine men, and in ſundry places. At length, being reſtored backe to her Father, ſhee went to the ſaide King of Cholcos, as a Maide, and as at firſt ſhee was intentended to be his wife.

8. Nouell.

COunt d'Angiers being falſly accuſed, was baniſhed out of Fraunce, and left his two Children in England in diuers places. Returning afterward (vnknowne) thorough Scotland, hee found them aduanced to great dignity. Then, repayring in the habit of a Seruitor, into the King of France his Army, and his innocency made publikely knowne; he was reſeated in his former honourable degree.

9. Nouell.

BErnardo a Merchant of Geneway, being deceiued by another Merchant, named Ambroſio; loſt a great part of his goods: and commanding his innocent wife to be murthered, ſhe eſcaped, and in the habite of a man, became ſeruant to the Soldan. The deceiuer being found at laſt, ſhee compaſſed

ſuch

such meanes, that her Husband Bernardo came into Alexandria, & there after due punishment inflicted on the false deceiuer, shee resumed the garments againe of a woman, and returnd home with her husband to Geneway.

10. Nouell.

PAgamino da Monaco, a rouing Pyrate on the seas, carried away the wife of Signior Ricciardo Chinzica, who vnderstanding where shee was, went thither; and falling into friendship with Pagamino, demaunded his wife of him, whereto he yeelded, prouided, that she would willingly goe away with him: shee denied to part thence with her husband: and Signior Ricciardo dying, she became the wife of Pagamino.

The third Day gouerned by Madam Neiphila.

The first Nouell.

MAssetto di Lamporechio, by counterfeiting himselfe dumb, became a Gardiner in a Monastery of Nunnes, where hee had familiar conuersation with them all.

2. Nouell.

A Querry of the stable belonging to Agilulffo, King of the Lombards, found the meanes of accesse to the Queenes bed, without any knowledge or consent in her. This being secretly discouered by the King, and the partie knowne, he gaue him a marke, by shearing the haire of his head. Whereupon, he that was so shorne, sheared likewise the heads of all his fellowes to the lodging, and so escaped the punishment intended to him.

3. Nouell.

VNder colour of confession, and of a most pure conscience, a fair yong Gentlewoman beeing amorously affected to an honest man, induced a deuout and solemne religious Friar, to aduise her in the meanes (without his suspition or perceiuing) how to enioy the benefit of her friend, and bring her desires to effect.

4. Nouell.

A Yong Scholler named Felice, enstructed Puccio di Rinieri how to become rich in a very short time. While Puccio made experience of the instruction taught him; Felice obtained the fauour of his daughter.

5. Nouell.

RIciardo, surnamed the Magnifico, gaue a horse to Signior Francesco Vergilliti, vpon condition, that by his leaue & license, he might speak to his wife in his presence, which hee did, and shee not returning him any answere, made answere to himselfe on her behalfe, and according to his answer, so the effect followed.

6. Nouell.

RIciardo Minutolo, fell in loue with the wife of Philippello Fighinolfi, and knowing her to bee very iealous of hir husband gaue her to vnderstand, that he was greatly enamored of his wife, and had appointed to meete her priuately in a bathing house on the next day following: where shee hoping to take him tardy with his close compacted Mistresse, found her selfe to be deceiued.

7. Nouell.

THeobaldo Elisei, hauing receyued an vnkinde repulse by his beloued,

beloued, departed from Florence, and returning thither (a long while after) in the habite of a Pilgrime hee ſpake with her, and made his wrongs knowne vnto her. He deliuered her Father from the danger of death, becauſe it was proued, that he had ſlaine Theobaldo: he made peace with his brethren, and in the end, wiſely enioyed his hearts deſire.

8. Nouell.

FErando, by drinking of a certaine kind of pouder, was buried for dead: and by the Abbot who was enamoured of his wife, was taken out of his graue, and put into a darke priſon, where they made him beleeue that he was in purgatory: afterward when time came that he ſhould be raiſed to life againe, he was made to keepe a childe, which the Abbot got by his wife.

9. Nouell.

IVliet of Narbona, cured the King of a Fiſtula: in recompence whereof, ſhe requeſted to enioy in mariage, Bertrand the Count of Rouſſilion. He hauing married her againſt his will, deſpiſing her; went to Florence, where he loued a young Gentlewoman. Iuliet by a cunning policy compaſſed the meanes (inſted of his choſen friend) to lye with her husband, by whom ſhee had two ſonnes; which afterward being made knowne, the Count accepted her againe for his wife.

10. Nouell.

THe chaſte reſolued continencie of Seriſtha Daughter to Siwalde King of Denmarke, being ſued vnto by many worthy perſons, that loued her, would not looke any man in the face, till the time ſhe was maried.

The IV. Day, gouerned by Philoſtratus.

The firſt Nouell.

TAncrede, Prince of Salern, cauſed the amorous friend of his daughter to be ſlaine, and ſent her his heart in a cup of Golde: which afterward ſhe ſteeped in an impoyſoned water, and then drinking it, ſo dyed.

2. Nouell.

FRiar Albert made a young Venetian Gentewoman beleeue, that God Cupid was falne in loue with her, and he reſorted oftentimes vnto her, in diſguiſe of the ſame God: afterward, being frighted by the Gentlewomans kindred and friends, hee caſt himſelfe out of her Chamber window, and was hidden in a poore mans houſe. On the day following, in ſhape of a wilde or ſauage man, he was brought vpon the Rialto of Saint Marke, and being there publikely knowne by the Brethren of his Order, he was committed to priſon.

3. Nouell.

THree young Gentlemen affecting three Siſters, fled with them into Candy. The eldeſt of them (through iealouſie) becommeth the death of her Louer. The ſecond, by conſenting to the Duke of Candy, ſaueth her life. Afterward, her owne friend killeth her, and flieth away with the elder Siſter. The third couple, both man & woman are charged with her death, being caſt into priſon, confeſſe the fact: but corrupting the keepers with money eſcaping thence to Rhodes, ther died poore.

4. Nouell.

GErbino, contrary to the former plighted faith to Gulielmo, fought with the King of Thunis, to take away his daughter She being ſlaine by them that had the poſſeſsion of her, he likewiſe ſlew them; and afterward had his owne head ſmitten off, by the command of Gulielmo.

5. Nouell.

5. Nouell.

ISabellaes three Brethren, slew a Gentleman that secretly loued her. His ghost appearing to her, shewed her in what place they had buried his bodie, &c.

6. Nouell.

ANdreana falling in loue with Gabriello, she declared a dreame of hers to him, and he another of his vnto her; whereupon Gabriello fel downe sodainly dead, &c.

7. Nouell.

FAire Simonida affecting Pasquino, and walking with him in a pleasant garden, it fortuned, that Pasquino rubbed his teeth with a leafe of Sage, and immediately fell downe dead. Simonida being brought before the bench of Iustice, & charged with the death of Pasquino, she rubbed her teeth likewise with one of the leaues of the same Sage, as declaring what shee saw him do, and thereon shee dyed also in the same manner.

8. Nouell.

IEronimo affecting Siluestra, went by the earnest entreaty of his mother to Paris. Returning backe, hee found his Loue Siluestra married. By secret meanes he got into her house, and dyed vpon the bed by her. His body being to be buried, she likewise died vpon his coarse.

9. Nouell.

MEsser Guiglielmo hauing slayne Messer Guiglimo Guardastagno whom hee imagined to loue his wife, gaue her his heart to eate. Which shee knowing afterward, threw her selfe out of an high window to the ground: and being dead, was then buried with her friend.

10. Nouell.

A Physitians wife, had a Louer of her maids, supposing him to bee dead, in a Chest, by reason that he had drunk a sleeping water. Two Lombard Vsurers stealing away the chest, caried it to their owne house, where the man awaking, was apprehended for a theef, &c.

The Fift Day, gouerned by Madam Fiammetta.

The first Nouell.

CHynon, by falling in Loue, became wise, and by force of Armes, winning his faire Lady Iphigenia on the Seas, was afterward imprisoned at Rhodes. Being deliuered by one named Lysimachus, he recouered his Iphigenia againe, and faire Cassandra, euen in the middest of their marriage. They fled with them into Candy, where after they had married them, they were called home to their owne dwelling.

2. Nouell.

FAire Constance of Liparis, fell in loue with Martuccio Gomito: and hearing that he was dead, desperately she entred into a Barke, and vvent to Thunis, where she found him to bee liuing. Making her selfe known to him he married her, and returned richly home with her to Liparis.

3. Nouell.

PEdro Bocamazzo, escaping away with a yong Damosell which he loued, named Angelina, met with certaine Theeues in his iourney. The Damosell flying fearefully into a Forrest, by chance arriueth at a Castle. Pedro being taken by the Theeues, and happening afterward to escape from them; commeth (accidentally) to the same Castle where Angelina was. And marrying her, they then returned home to Rome.

4. Nouell.

RIcciardo Manardy was found by Messer Lizio sleeping at his daughters Chamber window, hauing his hand fast in hers. Whereuppon, they were toyned in mariage, & their long loue mutually recompenced.

5. Nouell.

GVidotto dying, left a daughter of his with Iacomino. Giouanni, and Menghino, fell both in loue with the yong Maiden, and fought for her; who being afterward known to be the sister to Giouanni, she was giuen in mariage to Menghino.

6. Nouell.

GVion di Procida, being found conuersing with his Loue, was adiudged to be burned. Being known by Don Rogiero de Oria, Admirall of Sicily, he escaped that danger, & was after maried to the Damosell.

7. Nouell.

THeodoro falling in loue with Violenta, she conceiuing with childe by him, was condemned to bee hang'd. Leading him to the Gallowes, hee happned to be knowne by his owne father, whereupon he was released, and after married to Violenta.

8. Nouell.

ANastasio, by louing the daughter of Signior Paulo Trauersario, wasted most of his substance, without receiuing any loue from her againe. By perswasion of Friends, he went to Chiasso, where he saw a Knight desperately pursue a Maid, whom he slew, and gaue to his Hounds. Anastasio inuited his friends, and hers also whom hee loued, to a dinner, who likewise sawe the same Damosell so torn in peeces: which his vnkind loue perceiuing, fearing least the like should befall her, tooke Anastasio to be her husband.

9. Nouell.

FRederigo loued a Gentlewoman, and was not requited with loue againe. By bountifull expences, he consumed all his wealth sauing a Hawke or Falcon, which he bestowed on her for a dinner. She being conquered by this his exceeding kindnesse, accepted him for her Husband, & made him a man of welthy possessions.

10. Nouell.

PEdro di Vinciolo, went to sup at a friends house. His wife the whilst had a young man whom shee loued, at supper with her. Pedro returning on a sodaine, the yong man was hidden vnder a Coope for Hens. Pedro *in excuse of his so soone comming home, declareth how in the house of* Herculano *(with whom he should haue supt) a friend of his wiues was found, which was the reason of the Suppers breaking off.* Pedroes *wife, reprouing the error of* Herculanoes *wife, an Asse by chaunce treads on the yong mans fingers that lay hidden vnder the Hencoope. Vpon his crying out,* Pedro *stepeth thither, sees him, knowes him, and findeth the fallacy of his wife; with whom (neuerthelesse) he groweth to agreement, in regard of some imperfections which hee found in himselfe.*

The end of the Table.

THE SIXT DAY,
Gouerned vnder Madame ELIZA.

Wherein the Diſcourſes or Nouels there to bee recounted, doe concerne ſuch perſons; who by ſome witty words (when any haue taunted them) haue reuenged themſelues, in a ſudden, vnexpected and diſcreet anſwere, thereby preuenting loſſe, danger, ſcorne and diſgrace, retorting them on the buſi-headed Queſtioners.

The Argument of the firſt Nouell.

A Knight requeſted Madame Oretta, *to ride behinde him on horſebacke, and promiſed, to tell her an excellent Tale by the way. But the Lady perceiuing, that his diſcourſe was idle, and much worſe deliuered: entreated him to let her walke on foote againe.*

The Morall.

Reprehending the folly of ſuch men, as vndertake to report diſcourſes, which are beyond their wit and capacity, and gaine nothing but blame for their labour.

The Argument of the ſecond Nouell.

CIſtio *a Baker, by a witty anſwere which he gaue vnto* Meſſer Geri Spina, *cauſed him to acknowledge a very indiſcreet motion, which he had made to the ſaid* Ciſtio.

The Morall.

Approuing, that a requeſt ought to be ciuill, before it ſhould be granted to any one whatſoeuer.

The Argument of the third Nouell.

MAdam Nonna de Pulci, *by a ſodaine anſwere, did put to ſilence a Biſhop of* Florence, *and the Lord Marſhall: hauing mooued a queſtion to the ſaid Lady, which ſeemed to come ſhort of honeſty.*

The Morall.

Wherein is declared, that mockers doe ſometimes meet with their matches in mockery, and to their owne ſhame.

The Argument of the fourth Nouell.

CHichibio, *the Cooke to* Meſſer Currado Gianfiliazzi, *by a ſodaine pleaſant anſwere which he made to his Maſter; conuerted his anger into laughter, and thereby eſcaped the puniſhment, that* Meſſer *meant to impoſe on him.*

The Morall.

Whereby plainely appeareth, that a ſodaine witty, and merry anſwere, doth oftentimes appeaſe the furious choller of an angry man.

The

The Argument of the fift Nouell.

MEſſer Foreſe da Rabatte, *and Maiſter* Giotto, *a Painter by his profeſsion, comming together from* Mugello, *ſcornefully reprehended one another for their deformity of body.*

The Morall.

Whereby may be obſerued, that ſuch as will ſpeake contemptibly of others, ought (firſt of all) to looke reſpectiuely on their owne imperfections.

The Argument of the ſixt Nouell.

A *Yong and ingenious Shcoller, being vnkindly reuiled and ſmitten by his ignorant Father, and through the procurement of an vnlearned Vicare; afterward attained to bee doubly reuenged on him.*

The Morall.

Seruing as an aduertiſment to vnlearned Parents, not to be ouer-raſh, in cenſuring on Schollers imperfections, through any bad or vnbeſeeming perſwaons.

The Argument of the ſeauenth Nouell.

MAdame Philippa, *being accuſed by her Husband* Rinaldo de Pugliese, *becauſe he tooke her in Adultery, with a yong Gentleman named* Lazarino de Guazzagliori: *cauſed her to bee cited before a Iudge. From whom ſhe deliuered her ſelfe, by a ſodaine, witty, and pleaſant anſwere, and moderated a ſeuere ſtrict Statute, formerly made againſt women.*

The Morall.

Wherein is declared, of what worth it is to confeſſe a truth, with a facetious and witty excuſe.

The Argument of the eighth Nouell,

FResco da Celatico, *counſelled and aduiſed his Neece* Ceſca: *That if ſuch as deſerued to bee looked on, were offenſiue to her eyes (as ſhe had often told him;) ſhe ſhould forbeare to looke on any.*

The Morall.

In iuſt ſcorne of ſuch vnſightly and ill-pleaſing ſurly Sluts, who imagine none to bee faire or well-fauoured, but themſelues.

The Argument of the ninth Nouell.

SIgnior Guido Caualcante, *with a ſodaine and witty anſwere, reprehended the raſh folly of certaine Florentine Gentlemen, that thought to ſcorne and flout him.*

The Morall.

Notably diſcouering the great difference that is betweene learning and ignorance, vpon Iudicious apprehenſion.

The Argument of the tenth Nouell.

F*Rier Onyon promiſed certaine honeſt people of the Country, to ſhew them a Feather of the ſame Phœnix, that was with* Noah *in his Arke. Inſted whereof, he found Coales, which he auouched to be thoſe very coales, wherewith the ſame Phœnix was roaſted.*

The Morall.

Wherein may be obſerued, what palpable abuſes doe many times paſſe, vnder the counterfeit Cloake of Religion.

THE

THE SEAVENTH DAY, Gouerned vnder the Regiment of DIONEVS.

Wherein the Diſcourſes are directed, for the diſcouery of ſuch policies and deceits, as women haue vſed for beguiling of their Husbands, either in reſpect of their loue, or for the preuentition of ſome blame or ſcandall; eſcaping without ſight, knowledge, or otherwiſe.

The Argument of the firſt Nouell.

IOhn *of* Lorraine *heard one knocke at his doore in the night time, wherupon he awaked his Wife* Monna Teſſa. *Shee made him beleeue, that it was a Spirit which knocked at the doore, and ſo they aroſe, going both together to coniure the Spirit with a charme; and afterwards, they heard no more knocking.*

The Morall.

Reprehending the ſimplicity of ſome ſottiſh Huſbands: And diſcouering the wanton ſubtilties of ſome women, to compaſſe their vnlawfull deſires.

Peronella,

The Argument of the ſecond Nouell.

PEronella *hid a yong man her Friend and Louer, vnder a great brewing Fat, vppon the ſodaine returning home of her Husband; who tolde her, that he had ſold the ſaide Fat, and brought him that bought it, to carry it away.* Peronella *replyed, That ſhee had formerly ſolde it vnto another, who was now vnderneath it, to ſee whether it were whole and ſound, or no. Whereupou, he being come forth from vnder it; ſhee cauſed her Husband to make it neate and cleane, and ſo the laſt buyer carried it away.*

The Morall.

Wherein is declared, what hard and narrow ſhifts and diſtreſſes, ſuch as be ſeriouſly linked in Loue, are many times enforced to vndergoe: according as their owne wit, and capacity of their ſurprizers, driue them to extremities.

The Argument of the third Nouell.

FRiar Reynard, *falling in loue with a Gentlewoman, Wife to a man of good account; found the meanes to become her Goſsip. Afterward, he being conferring cloſely with her in her Chamber, and her Husband comming ſodainely thither: ſhe made him beleeue, that he came thither for no other ende; but to cure his God-ſonne by a charme, of a dangerous diſeaſe which he had by wormes.*

The Morall.

Seruing as a friendly aduertiſement to married Women, that Monks, Friars, and Prieſts may be none of their Goſſips, in regard of vnauoydable perils enſuing thereby.

THE

The Table.

The Argument of the fourth Nouell.

TOfano *in the night ſeaſon, did locke his Wife out of his houſe, and ſhe not preuailing to get entrance againe, by all the entreaties ſhee could poſsiby vſe: made him beleeue that ſhee had throwne her ſelfe into a Well, by caſting a great ſtone into the ſame Well.* Tofano *hearing the fall of the ſtone into the Well, and being perſwaded that it was his Wife indeede; came forth of his houſe, and ranne to the Welles ſide. In the meane while, his Wife gotte into the houſe, made faſt the doore againſt her Husband, and gaue him many reprochfull ſpeeches.*

The Morall.

Wherein is manifeſted, that the malice and ſubtilty of a woman, ſurpaſſeth all the Art or wit in man.

The Argument of the fift Nouell.

A *Iealous man, clouded with the habite of a Prieſt, became the Confeſſour to his owne Wife; who made him beleeue, that ſhe was deepely in loue with a Prieſt, which came euery night, and lay with her. By meanes of which confeſſion, while her iealous Husband watched the doore of his houſe; to ſurprize the Prieſt when he came: ſhe that neuer meant to doe amiſſe, had the company of a ſecret friend who came ouer the toppe of the houſe to viſite her, while her fooliſh Husband kept the doore.*

The Morall.

In iuſt ſcorne and mockery of ſuch iealous Huſbands, that wil be idle headed vpon no occaſion. And yet when they haue good reaſon for it, doe leaſt of all ſuſpect any ſuch iniury.

The

The Argument of the ſixth Nouell.

MAdame Iſabella, *delighing in the company of her affected friend, named* Lionello, *and ſhe being likewiſe beloued by* Signior Lambertuccio: *At the ſame time as ſhee had entertained* Lionello, *ſhe was alſo viſited by* Lambertuccio. *Her Husband returning home in the very inſtant; ſhe cauſed* Lambertuccio *to runne foorth with a drawne ſword in his hand, and (by that meanes) made an excuſe ſufficient for* Lionello *to her Husband.*

The Morall.

Wherin is manifeſtly diſcerned, that if Loue be driuen to a narrow ſtraite in any of his attempts; yet hee can accompliſh his purpoſe by ſome other ſupply.

The Argument of the ſeauenth Nouell.

LOdouico *diſcouered to his Miſtreſſe Madame* Beatrix, *how amourouſly he was affected to her. She cunningly ſent* Egano *her Husband into his garden, in all reſpects diſguiſed like her ſelfe; while (friendly)* Lodouico *conferred with her the meane while. Afterward,* Lodouico *pretending a laſciuious allurement of his Miſtreſſe, thereby to wrong his honeſt Maſter, inſtead of her, beateth* Egano *ſoundly in the Garden.*

The Morall.

Whereby is declared, that ſuch as keepe many honeſt ſeeming ſeruants, may ſometime finde a knaue among them, and one that proues to bee ouer-ſawcy with his Maſter.

The Table.

The Argument of the Eight Nouell.

Arriguccio Berlinghieri, *became immeasurably iealous of his Wife* Simonida, *who fastened a thred about her great toe, for to serue as a signall, when her amourous friend should come to visite her.* Arriguccio *findeth the fallacy, and while he pursueth the amorous friend, shee causeth her Maide to lie in her bed against his returne: whom he beateth extreamly, cutting away the lockes of her haire (thinking he had done all this violence to his Wife* Simonida:) *and afterward fetcheth her Mother and Brethren, to shame her before them, and so be rid of her. But they finding all his speeches to be false; and reputing him to be a drunken icalous foole; all the blame and disgrace falleth on himselfe.*

The Morall.

Whereby appeareth, that an Husband ought to be very well aduised, when he meaneth to discouer any wrong offered by his Wife; except he himselfe doe rashly run into all the shame and reproch.

The Argument of the Ninth Nouell.

Lydia, *a Lady of great beauty, birth, and honor, being wife to* Nicostratus, *Gouernor of* Argos, *falling in loue with a Gentleman, named* Pyrrhus; *was requested by him (as a true testimony of her vnfeigned affection) to performe three seuerall actions of her selfe. She did accomplish them all, and imbraced and kissed* Pyrrhus *in the presence of* Nicostratus; *by perswading him, that whatsoeuer he saw, was meerely false.*

The Morall.

Wherein is declared, that great Lords may sometime be deceiued by their Wiues, as well as men of meaner condition.

The Argument of the tenth Nouell.

Two Citizens of Sienna, *the one named* Tingoccio Mini, *and the other* Meutio di Tora, *affected both one woman, called* Monna Mita, *to whom the one of them was a Gossip. The Gossip dyed, and appeared afterward to his companion, according as he had formerly promised him to doe, and told him what strange wonders he had seene in the other world.*

The Morall.

Wherein such men are couertly reprehended, who make no care or conscience at all of those things that should preserue them from sinne.

THE EIGHTH DAY,
Gouerned vnder Madame LAVRETTA.

Whereon all the Diſcourſes, is, Concerning ſuch Witty deceiuings, as haue, or may be put in practiſe, by Wiues to their Husbands, Husbands to their Wiues, Or one man towards another.

The Argument of the Firſt Nouell.

GVlfardo *made a match or wager, with the wife of* Galparuo-lo, *for the obtaining of her amorous fauour, in regard of a ſumme of money firſt to be giuen her. The money he borrowed of her Husband, and gaue it in payment to her, as in caſe of diſcharging him from her Husbands debt. After his returne home from* Geneway, *he told him in the preſence of his wife, how hee had payde the whole ſumme to her, with charge of deliuering it to her Husband, which ſhe confeſſed to be true, albeit greatly againſt her will.*

The Morall.

wherein is declared, That ſuch women as will make ſale of their honeſtie, are ſometimes ouer-reached in their payment, and iuſtly ſerued as they ſhould be.

The Table

The Argument of the second Nouell.

A *Lusty Prieſt of* Varlungo, *fell in loue with a prety woman, named* Monna Belcolore. *To compaſſe his amorous deſire, hee left her cloake (as a pledge of further payment) with her. By a ſubtile ſleight afterward, he borrowed a morter of her, which when hee ſent home againe in the preſence of her husband, he demanded to haue his Cloake ſent him, as hauing left it in pawne for the Morter. To pacifie her Huſband, offended that ſhe did not lend the Prieſt the Morter without a pawne: ſhe ſent him backe his Cloake againe, albeit greatly againſt her will.*

The Morall.

Approuing, that no promiſe is to be kept with ſuch women as will make ſale of their honeſty for Coine.

The Argument of the Third Nouell.

C Alandrino, Bruno, *and* Buffalmaco, *being Painters by profeſſion, trauailed to the Plaine of* Mugnone, *to finde the precious ſtone called Helitropium.* Calandrino *perſwading himſelfe to haue found it, returned home to his houſe heauy loaden with ſtones. His wife rebuking him for his abſence, he groweth into anger, and ſhrewdly beates her. Afterward, when the caſe is debated by his other friends* Bruno & Buffalmaco, *all is found to be meere folly.*

The Morall.

Reprehending the ſimplicity of ſuch men, as are too much addicted to credulity, and will giue credit to euery thing they heare.

The Argument of the Fourth Nouell.

T *He Prouoſt belonging to the Cathedrall Church of* Fieſola, *fell in loue with a Gentlewoman, being a Widow, and named* Piccarda, *who hated him as much as he loued her. He immagining that he lay with her: by the Gentlewomans Brethren, and the Biſhop vnder whom he ſerued, was taken in bed with her Mayde, an vgly, foule, deformed Slut.*

The Morall.

Wherein is declared, how loue oftentimes is ſo powerfull in aged men, and driueth them to ſuch doating, that it redoundeth to their great diſgrace and puniſhment.

The Argument of the fift Nouell.

THree pleaſant companions, plaid a merry prank with a Iudge (belonging to the Marqueſate of Ancona) *at* Florence, *a ſuch time as he ſat on the bench, & hearing criminall cauſes,*

The Morall.

Giuing admonition, that for the managing of publike affaires, no other perſons are or ought to bee appointed, but ſuch as be honeſt, and meet to ſit on the ſeate of Authority.

The Argument of the ſixt Nouell.

BRuno *and* Buffalmaco *ſtole a yong Brawne from* Calandrino, *and for his recouery thereof, they vſed a kinde of pretended coniuration, with Pils made of Ginger and ſtrong Malmeſey. But inſted of this application, they gaue him two pils of a Dogges dates or douſets, confected in Alloes, by meanes whereof they made him beleeue, that hee had robd himſelfe. And for feare they ſhould report this theft to his Wife, they made him ta buy another Brawne.*

The Morall.

Wherein is declared, how eaſily a plaine and ſimple man may bee made a foole, when he dealeth with crafty companions.

The Argument of the ſeauenth Nouell.

A *Yong Gentleman being a Scholler, fell in loue with a Ladie, named* Helena, *ſhe being a woman, and addicted in affection vnto another Gentleman. One whole night in cold winter, ſhe cauſed the Scholler to expect her comming, in an extreame froſt and ſnow. In reuenge wherof, by his imagined Art and skill, he made her to ſtand naked on the top of a Tower, the ſpace of a whole day, and in the hot moneth of Iuly, to be Sun-burnt and bitten with Waſpes and Flies.*

The Morall.

Seruing as an admonition to all Gentlewomen, not to mocke Gentlemen Scbollers, when they make meanes of loue to them, except they intend to ſeeke their owne ſhame by diſgracing them.

THE

The Table.

The Argument of the eighth Nouell,

Two neere dwelling Neighbours, the one beeing named Spineloccio Tauena, *and the other* Zeppa di Mino, *frequenting each others company daily together*; Spinelloccio *Cuckolded his Friend and Neighbour. Which happening to the knowledge of* Zeppa, *hee preuailed ſo well with the Wife of* Spinelloccio, *that he being lockt vp in a Cheſt, hee reuenged his wrong at that inſtant, ſo that neyther of them complained of his misfortune.*

The Morall.

Wherein is approued, that hee which offereth ſhame and diſgrace to his neighbor, may receiue the like iniury (if not worſe) by the ſame man.

The Argument of the Ninth Nouell.

Maeſtro Simone, *an idle headed Doctor of Phyſicke, was thrown by* Bruno *and* Buffalmaco *into a common Leyſtall of filth: the Phyſitian fondly beleeuing, that (in the night time) he ſhould be made one of a new created company, who vſually went to ſee wonders at* Corſica, *and there in the Leyſtall they left him.*

The Morall.

Approuing, that titles of honour, learning, and dignity, are not alwayes beſtowne on the wiſeſt men.

The Argument of the tenth Nouell.

A Cicilian Curtezan, named Madam Biancafiore, *by her ſubtle policy deceiued a yong Merchant called* Salabetto, *of all his mony he had taken for his wares at* Palermo. *Afterward he making ſhew of coming thither againe with far richer Merchandiſes then before: made the meanes to borrow a great ſumme of money, leauing her ſo baſe a pawne, as well requited her for her former couſenage.*

The Morall.

Approuing, that ſuch as meet with cunning Harlots, ſuffering themſelues to be deceyued, muſt ſharpen their wits, to make them requital in the ſame kind.

THE

THE NINTH DAY, Gouerned vnder Madame ÆMILLIA.

Whereon, the Argument of each ſeverall Diſcourſe, is not limited to any one peculiar ſubiect: but euerie one remaineth at liberty, to ſpeake of whatſoeuer themſelues beſt pleaſeth.

The Argument of the firſt Nouell.

MAdam Franceſca, *a Widow of* Piſtoya, *being affected by two Florentine Gentlewomen, the one named* Rinuccio Palermini, *and the other* Aleſſandro Chiarmonteſi, *and ſhe bearing no good will to either of them, ingeniouſly freed her ſelfe from both their importunate ſuites. One of them ſhee cauſed to lye as dead in a graue, and the other to fetch him from thence: ſo neither of them accompliſhing what they were enioyned, failed of their expectation.*

The Morall.

Approuing, that chaſt and honeſt women, ought rather to deny importunate ſuiters, by ſubtle and ingenious means, then fall into the danger of ſcandall and ſlander.

The Argument of the ſecond Nouell.

Madame Vſimbalda, *Lady Abbeſſe of a Monaſtery of Nuns in* Lombardie, *ariſing haſtily in the night time without a Candle, to take one of her Daughter Nunnes in bed with a yong Gentleman, whereof ſhe was enuiouſly accuſed, by certaine of her other Siſters: The Abbeſſe her ſelfe (being at the ſame time in bed with a Prieſt) imagining to haue put on her head her plaited vayle, put on the Prieſts breeches. Which when the poore Nunne perceyued; by cauſing the Abbeſſe to ſee her owne error, ſhe got her ſelfe to be abſolued, and had the freer liberty afterward, to be more familiar with her frend, then formerly ſhe had bin.*

The

Whereby is declared, that whosoeuer is desirous to reprehend sinne in other men, should first examine himselfe, that he be not guiltie of the same crime.

The Argument of the third Nouell.

Master Simon *the Physitian, by the perswasions of* Bruno, Buffalmaco, *and a third Companion, named* Nello, *made* Calandrino *to beleeue, that he was conceiued great with childe. And hauing Physicke ministred to him for the disease: they got both good fatte Capons and money of him, and so cured him, without any other manner of deliuerance.*

Discouering the simplicity of some silly witted men, and how easie a matter it is to abuse and beguile them.

The Argument of the Fourth Nouell,

Francesco Fortarigo, *played away all that he had at* Buonconuento. *and likewise the money of* Francesco Aniolliero, *being his Master: Then running after him in his shirt, and auouching that hee had robbed him: he caused him to be taken by Pezants of the Country, clothed himselfe in his Masters wearing garments, and (mounted on his horse) rode thence to* Sienna, *leauing* Aniolliero *in his shirt, and walked bare-footed.*

Seruing as an admonition to all men, for taking Gamesters and Drunkards into their seruice.

The Argument of the fifte Nouell.

Calandrino *became extraordinarily enamoured of a young Damosell, named* Nicholetta. Bruno *prepared a Charme or writing for him, auouching constantly to him, that so soone as he touched the Damosell therewith, she should follow him whithersoeuer hee would haue her. She being gone to an appointed place with him, hee was found there by his wife, and dealt withall according to his deseruing.*

Iniust reprehension of those vaine-headed fooles, that are led and gouerned by idle perswasions.

The Argument of the Sixth Nouell.

Two yong Gentlemen, the one named Panuccio, *and the other* Adriano, *lodged one night in a poore Inne, whereof one of them went to bed to the Hostes daughter, and the other (by mistaking his way in the darke) to the Hostes wife. He which lay with the daughter, happened afterward to the Hostes bed, and told him what he had done, as thinking*

thinking he ſpake to his owne companion. Diſcontentment growing betweene them, the mother perceiuing her errour, went to bed to her daughter, and with diſcreete language, made a generall pacification.

Wherein is manifeſted, that an offence committed ignorantly, and by miſtaking, ought to be couered with good aduiſe, and ciuill diſcretion.

The Argument of the ſeauenth Nouell.

Talano de Moleſe *dreamed, That a wolfe rent and tore his wiues face and throate. Which dreame he told to her, with aduiſe to keep her ſelfe out of danger; which ſhe refuſing to doe, receiued vvhat followed.*

Whereby (with ſome indifferent reaſon) it is concluded, that Dreames do not alwayes fall out to be leaſings.

The Argument of the Eight Nouell.

Blondello *(in a merry maner) cauſed* Guiotto *to beguile himſelfe of a good dinner: for which deceit,* Guiotto *became cunningly reuenged, by procuring* Blondello *to be vnreaſonably beaten and miſuſed.*

Whereby plainly appeareth, that they which take delight in deceiuing others, do well deſerue to be deceiued themſelues.

The Argument of the Ninth Nouell,

Two yong Gentlemen, the one named Meliſſo, *borne in the City of* Laiazzo: *and the other* Gioſefo *of* Antioche, *trauailed together vnto* Salomon, *the famous King of* Great Britaine. *The one deſiring to learne what he ſhould do, whereby to compaſſe and winne the loue of men. The other craued to be inſtructed, by what meanes hee might reclaime an headſtrong and vnruly wife. And what anſweres the wiſe King gaue vnto them both, before they departed away from him.*

Containing an excellent admonition, that ſuch as couet to haue the loue of other men, muſt firſt learne themſelues, how to loue: Alſo, by what meanes ſuch women as are curſt and ſelf-willed, may be reduced to ciuill obedience.

The Argument of the tenth Nouell.

Iohn de Barolo, *at the inſtance and requeſt of his Goſsip* Pietro da Treſanti, *made an enchantment, to haue his Wife become a Mule. And when it came to the faſtening on of the taile, Goſsip* Pietro *by ſaying ſhe ſhould haue no taile at all, ſpoyled the whole enchantment.*

In iuſt reproofe of ſuch fooliſh men, as will be gouerned by ouer-light beleefe.

The

THE TENTH DAY, Gouerned vnder Pamphilus.

Whereon the ſeuerall Arguments doe Concerne ſuch perſons, as other by way of Liberality, or in Magnificent manner, performed any worthy action, for loue, fauor, friendſhip, or any other honourable occaſion.

The Argument of the Firſt Nouell.

A *Florentine knight, named Signior* Rogiero de Figiouanni, *became a ſeruant to* Alphonſo, *King of* Spaine, *who (in his owne opinion) ſeemed but ſleightly to reſpect and reward him. In regard whereof, by a notable experiment, the King gaue him a manifeſt teſtimony, that it was not through any defect in him, but onely occaſioned by the Knights ill fortune; moſt bountifully recompencing him afterward.*

Wherin may euidently be diſcerned, that Seruants to Princes and great Lords, are many times recompenced, rather by their good fortune, then in any regard of their dutifull ſeruices.

The Argument of the ſecond Nouell.

Ghinotto di Tacco, *tooke the Lord Abbot of* Clugni *as his priſoner, and cured him of a grieuous diſeaſe, which he had in his ſtomacke, and afterward ſet him at liberty. The ſame Lord Abbot, when hee returned from the Court of Rome, reconciled* Ghinotto *to Pope* Boniface; *who made him a Knight, and Lord Prior of a goodly Hoſpitall.*

Wherein is declared that good men doe ſometimes fall into bad conditions, onely occaſioned thereto by neceſsity: And what meanes are to be vſed, for their reducing to goodneſſe againe.

¶¶¶ The

The Argument of the third Nouell.

Mithridanes *enuying the life and liberality of* Nathan, *and trauelling thither, with a ſetled reſolution to kill him: chaunceth to conferre with* Nathan *vnknowne. And being inſtructed by him, in vvhat manner he might beſt performe the bloody deede, according as hee gaue direction, hee meeteth with him in a ſmall Thicket or woode, where knowing him to be the ſame man, that taught him how to take away his life: Confounded with ſhame, hee acknowledgeth his horrible intention, and becommeth his loyall friend.*

Shewing in an excellent and liuely demonſtration, that any eſpeciall honourable vertue, perſeuering and dwelling in a truly noble ſoule, cannot be violenced or confounded, by the moſt politicke attemptes of malice and enuy.

The Argument of the fourth Nouell.

Signior Gentile de Cariſendi, *being come from* Modena, *took a Gentlewoman, named Madam* Catharina, *forth of a graue, wherin ſhe was buried for dead: which act he did, in regard of his former honeſt affection to the ſaid Gentlewoman. Madame* Catharina *remaining there afterward, and deliuered of a goodly Sonne: was (by* Signior Gentile*) deliuered to her owne Husband, named* Signior Nicoluccio Caccianimico, *and the yong infant with her.*

Wherein is ſhewne, That true louc hath alwayes bin, and ſo ſtill is, the occaſion of many great and worthy courteſies.

The Argument of the Fift Nouell.

Madame Dianora, *the Wife of Signior* Gilberto, *being immodeſtly affected by Signior* Anſaldo, *to free her ſelfe from his tedious importunity, ſhe appointed him to performe (in her iudgement) an act of impoſſibility; namely, to giue her a Garden, as plentifully ſtored with fragrant Flowers in Ianuary, as in the flouriſhing moneth of* May. Anſaldo, *by meanes of a bond which he made to a Magitian, performed her requeſt. Signior* Gilberto, *the Ladyes Husband, gaue conſent, that his Wife ſhould fulfill her promiſe made to* Anſaldo. *Who hearing the bountifull mind of her Husband; releaſed her of her promiſe: And the Magitian likewiſe diſcharged Signior* Anſaldo, *without taking any thing of him.*

Admoniſhing all Ladies and Gentlewomen, that are deſirous to preſerue their chaſtity, free from all blemiſh and taxation: to make no promiſe of yeelding to any, vnder a compact or couenant, how impoſſible ſoeuer it may ſeeme to be.

The

The Table.

The Argument of the Sixt Nouell.

Victorious King Charles, *ſirnamed the Aged, and firſt of that Name, fell in loue with a yong Maiden, named* Geneuera, *daughter to an ancient Knight, called Signior* Neri degli Vberti. *And waxing aſhamed of his amorous folly, cauſed both* Geneuera, *and her fayre Siſter* Iſotta, *to be ioyned in marriage with two Noble Gentlemen; the one named* Signior Maffeo da Palizzi, *and the other,* Signior Gulielmo della Magna.

Sufficiently declaring, that how mighty ſoeuer the power of Loue is: yet a magnanimous and truly generous heart, it can by no meanes fully conquer.

The Argument of the ſeauenth Nouell.

Liſana, *the Daughter of a Florentine Apothecary, named* Bernardo Puccino, *being at* Palermo, *and ſeeing* Piero, *King of* Aragon *run at the Tilt; fell ſo affectionately enamored of him, that ſhe languiſhed in an extreame and long ſickeneſſe. By her owne deuiſe, and means of a Song, ſung in the hearing of the King: he vouchſafed to viſite her, and giuing her a kiſſe, terming himſelfe alſo to bee her Knight for euer after, hee honourably beſtowed her in marriage on a young Gentleman, who was called* Perdicano, *and gaue him liberall endowments with her.*

Wherein is couertly giuen to vnderſtand, that howſoeuer a Prince may make vſe of his abſolute power and authority, towards Maides or Wiues that are his Subiects: yet he ought to deny and reiect all things, as ſhall make him forgetfull of himſelfe, and his true honour.

The Argument of the Eight Nouell.

Sopronia, *thinking her ſelfe to be the maried wife of* Giſippus, *was (indeed) the wife of* Titus Quintus Fuluius, *& departed thence with him to Rome. Within a while after,* Giſippus *alſo came thither in very poore condition, and thinking that he was deſpiſed by* Titus, *grew weary of his life, and confeſſed that he had murdred a man, with ful intent to die for the fact. But* Titus *taking knowledge of him, and deſiring to ſaue the life of* Giſippus, *charged himſelf to haue done the bloody deed. Which the murderer himſelf (ſtanding then among the multitude) ſeeing, truly confeſſed the deed. By meanes whereof, all three were deliuered by the Emperor* Octauius; *and* Titus *gaue his Siſter in mariage to* Giſippus, *giuing them alſo the moſt part of his goods & inheritances.*

Declaring, that notwithſtanding the frownes of Fortune, diuerſity of occurrences, and contrary accidents happening: yet loue and frendſhip ought to be precioufly preſerued among men.

The

The Argument of the Ninth Nouell,

Saladine, *the great* Soldan *of* Babylon, *in the habite of a Merchant, was houourably receiued and welcommed, into the houſe of Signior* Thorello d'Iſtria. *Who trauelling to the Holy Land, prefixed a certaine time to his Wife, for his returne backe to her againe, wherein, if he failed, it was lawfull for her to take another Husband. By clouding himſelfe in the diſguiſe of a Faulkner, the* Soldan *tooke notice of him, and did him many great honours. Afterward,* Thorello *falling ſicke, by Magicall Art, he was conueighed in one night to* Pauia, *when his Wife was to be married on the morrow: where making himſelfe knowne to her, all was diſappointed, and ſhee went home with him to his owne houſe.*

Declaring what an honourable vertue Courteſie is, in them that truely know how to vſe them.

The Argument of the tenth Nouell.

The Marqueſſe of Saluzzo, *named* Gualtiero, *being conſtrained by the importunate ſolliciting of his Lords, and other inferiour people, to ioyne himſelfe in marriage; tooke a woman according to his owne liking, called* Grizelda, *ſhe being the daughter of a poore Countriman, named* Ianiculo, *by whom he had two children, which he pretended to be ſecretly murdered. Afterward, they being grown to yeres of more ſtature, and making ſhew of taking in marriage another wife, more worthy of his high degree and Calling: made a ſeeming publique liking of his owne daughter, expulſing his wife* Grizelda *poorely from him. But finding her incomparable patience; more dearely (then before) hee receiued her into fauour againe, brought her home to his owne Pallace, where (with her children) hee cauſed her and them to be reſpectiuely honoured, in deſpight of all her aduerſe enemies.*

Set downe as an example or warning to all wealthie men, how to haue care of marrying themſelues. And likwiſe to poore and meane women, to be patient in their fortunes, and obedient to their husbands.

THE

THE DECAMERON,
Containing, an Hundred pleasant Nouelles.

Wherein, after demonstration made by the Author, vpon what occasion it happened, that the persons (of whom we shall speake hereafter) should thus meet together to make so queint a Narration of Nouels: Hee declareth vnto you, that they first begin to deuise and conferre vnder the gouernment of Madam Pampinea, & of such matters as may be most pleasing to them all.

The Induction of the Author, to the *following Discourses.*

GRacious Ladies, so often as I consider with my selfe, and obserue respectiuely, how naturally you are enclined to compassion; as many times doe I acknowledge, that this present worke of mine, will (in your iudgement) appeare to haue but a harsh and offensiue beginning, in regard of the mournfull remembrance it beareth at the verie entrance of the last Pestilentiall mortality, vniuersally hurtfull to all that beheld it, or otherwise came to knowledge of it. But for all that, I desire it may not be so dreadfull to you, to hinder your further proceeding in reading, as if none were to looke thereon, but with sighes and teares. For, I could rather wish, that so fearefull a beginning, should seeme but as an high and steepy hil appeares to them, that attempt to trauell farre on foote, and ascending the same with some difficulty, come afterward to walk vpon a goodly euen plaine, which causeth the more contentment in them, because the attayning thereto was hard and painfull. For euen as pleasures are cut off by griefe and anguish; so sorrowes cease by ioyes most sweete and happie arriuing.

After this briefe mollestation; briefe I say, because it is contained within small compasse of Writing; immediately followeth the most sweete and pleasant taste of pleasure, whereof (before) I made promise to you. Which (peraduenture) could not bee expected by such a beginning, if promise stood not thereunto engaged. And indeed, if I could well haue conueyed you to the center of my desire, by any other way, then so rude

and rocky a paſſage as this is, I would gladly haue done it. But becauſe without this Narration, we could not demonſtrate the occaſion how and wherefore the matters hapned, which you ſhall reade in the enſuing Diſcourſes : I muſt ſet them downe (euen as conſtrained thereto by meere neceſſity) in writing after this manner.

The yeare of our bleſſed Sauiours incarnation, 1348. that memorable mortality happened in the excellent City, farre beyond all the reſt in *Italy*; which plague, by operation of the ſuperiour bodies, or rather for our enormous iniquities, by the iuſt anger of God was ſent vpon vs mortals. Some few yeeres before, it tooke beginning in the Eaſterne partes, ſweeping thence an innumerable quantity of liuing ſoules : extending it ſelfe afterward from place to place Weſtward, vntill it ſeized on the ſaid City. Where neither humane skill or prouidence, could vſe any preuention, notwithſtanding it was cleanſed of many annoyances, by diligent Officers thereto deputed : beſides prohibition of all ſickly perſons enterance, and all poſſible prouiſion dayly vſed for conſeruation of ſuch as were in health, with inceſſant prayers and ſupplications of deuoute people, for the aſſwaging of ſo dangerous a ſickneſſe.

About the beginning of the yeare, it alſo began in very ſtrange manner, as appeared by diuers admirable effects; yet not as it had done in the Eaſt Countries, where Lord or Lady being touched therewith, manifeſt ſignes of ineuitable death followed thereon, by bleeding at the noſe. But here it began with yong children, male and female, either vnder the armepits, or in the groine by certaine ſwellings, in ſome to the bigneſſe of an Apple, in others like an Egge, and ſo in diuers greater or leſſer, which (in their vulgar Language) they termed to be a Botch or Byle. In very ſhort time after, thoſe two infected parts were growne mortiferous, and would diſperſe abroad indifferently, to all parts of the body; whereupon, ſuch was the quality of the diſeaſe, to ſhew it ſelfe by blacke or blew ſpottes, which would appeare on the armes of many, others on their thighes, and euery part elſe of the body : in ſome great and few, in others ſmall and thicke.

Now, as the Byle (at the beginning) was an aſſured ſigne of neere approaching death; ſo prooued the ſpots likewiſe to ſuch as had them : for the curing of which ſickneſſe it ſeemed, that the Phyſitians counſell, the vertue of Medicines, or any application elſe, could not yeeld any remedy : but rather it plainely appeared, that either the nature of the diſeaſe would not endure it, or ignorance in the Phyſitians could not comprehend from whence the cauſe proceeded, and ſo by conſequent, no reſolution was to be determined. Moreouer, beſide the number of ſuch as were skilfull in Art, many more both women and men, without euer hauing any knowledge in Phyſicke, became Phyſitians : ſo that not onely few were healed, but (well-neere) all dyed, within three dayes after the ſaide ſignes were ſeene; ſome ſooner, and others later, commonly without either Feauer, or any other accident.

And this peſtilence was yet of farre greater power or violence; for, not onely

onely healthfull perſons ſpeaking to the ſicke, comming to ſee them, or ayring cloathes in kindneſſe to comfort them, was an occaſion of enſuing death : but touching their garments, or any foode whereon the ſicke perſon fed, or any thing elſe vſed in his ſeruice, ſeemed to transferre the diſeaſe from the ſicke to the ſound, in very rare and miraculous manner. Among which matter of marueil, let me tell you one thing, which if the eyes of many (as well as mine owne) had not ſeene, hardly could I be perſwaded to write it, much leſſe to beleeue it, albeit a man of good credit ſhould report it. I ſay, that the quality of this contagious peſtilence was not onely of ſuch efficacy, in taking and catching it one of another, either men or women : but it extended further, euen in the apparent view of many, that the cloathes, or any thing elſe, wherein one died of that diſeaſe, being toucht, or lyen on by any beaſt, farre from the kind or quality of man, they did not onely contaminate and infect the ſaid beaſt, were it Dogge, Cat, or any other; but alſo it died very ſoone after.

Mine owne eyes (as formerly I haue ſaid) among diuers other, one day had euident experience heereof : for ſome poore ragged cloathes of linnen and wollen, torne from a wretched body dead of that diſeaſe, and hurled in the open ſtreete; two Swine going by, and (according to their naturall inclination) ſeeking for foode on euery dung-hill, toſſed and tumbled the cloaths with their ſnouts, rubbing their heads likewiſe vpon them; and immediately, each turning twice or thrice about, they both fell downe dead on the ſaide cloathes, as being fully infected with the contagion of them: which accident, and other the like, if not far greater, begat diuers feares and imaginations in them that beheld them, all tending to a moſt inhumane and vncharitable end; namely, to flie thence from the ſicke, and touching any thing of theirs, by which meanes they thought their health ſhould be ſafely warranted.

Some there were, who conſidered with themſelues, that liuing ſoberly, with abſtinence from all ſuperfluity; it would be a ſufficient reſiſtance againſt all hurtfull accidents. So combining themſelues in a ſociable manner, they liued as ſeparatiſts from all other company, being ſhut vp in ſuch houſes, where no ſicke body ſhould be neere them. And there, for their more ſecurity, they vſed delicate viands and excellent wines, auoiding luxurie, and refuſing ſpeech to one another, not looking forth at the windowes, to heare no cries of dying people, or ſee any coarſes carried to buriall; but hauing muſicall inſtruments, liued there in all poſſible pleaſure. Others, were of a contrary opinion, who auouched, that there was no other phyſicke more certaine, for a diſeaſe ſo deſperate, then to drinke hard, be merry among themſelues, ſinging continually, walking euery where, and ſatisfying their appetites with whatſoeuer they deſired, laughing,, and mocking at euery mournefull accident, and ſo they vowed to ſpend day and night: for now they would goe to one Tauerne, then to another, liuing without any rule or meaſure; which they might very eaſily doe, becauſe euery one of them, (as if he were to liue no longer in this World) had euen forſaken all things that hee had. By meanes whereof,

the moſt part of the houſes were become common, and all ſtrangers, might do the like (if they pleaſed to aduenture it) euen as boldly as the Lord or owner, without any let or contradiction.

Yet in all this their beaſtly behauiour, they were wiſe enough, to ſhun (ſo much as they might) the weake and ſickly: In miſery and affliction of our City, the venerable authority of the Lawes, as well diuine as humane, was euen deſtroyed, as it were, through want of the lawfull Miniſters of them. For they being all dead, or lying ſicke with the reſt, or elſe liued ſo ſolitary, in ſuch great neceſſity of ſeruants and attendants, as they could not execute any office, whereby it was lawfull for euery one to do as he liſted.

Betweene theſe two rehearſed extremities of life, there were other of a more moderate temper, not being ſo daintily dieted as the firſt, nor drinking ſo diſſolutely as the ſecond; but vſed all things ſufficient for their appetites, and without ſhutting vp themſelues, walked abroad, ſome carrying ſweete noſe-gayes of flowers in their hands; others odoriferous herbes, and others diuers kinds of ſpiceries, holding them to their noſes, and thinking them moſt comfortable for the braine, becauſe the ayre ſeemed to be much infected by the noyſome ſmell of dead carkaſes, and other hurtfull ſauours. Some other there were alſo of more inhumane minde (howbeit peraduenture it might be the ſureſt) ſaying, that there was no better phyſicke againſt the peſtilence, nor yet ſo good, as to flie away from it, which argument mainely mouing them, and caring for no body but themſelues, very many, both men and women, forſooke the City, their owne houſes, their Parents, Kindred, Friends, and Goods, flying to other mens dwellings elſe-where. As if the wrath of God, in punniſhing the ſinnes of men with this plague, would fall heauily vpon none, but ſuch as were encloſed within the City wals; or elſe perſwading themſelues, that not any ſhould there bee left aliue, but that the finall ending of all things was come.

Now albeit theſe perſons in their diuerſity of opinions died not all, ſo vndoubtedly they did not all eſcape; but many among them becomming ſicke, and making a generall example of their flight and folly, among them that could not ſtirre out of their beds, they languiſhed more perplexedly then the other did. Let vs omit, that one Citizen fled after another, and one neighbour had not any care of another, Parents nor kinred neuer viſiting them, but vtterly they were forſaken on all ſides: this tribulation pierced into the hearts of men, and with ſuch a dreadfull terrour, that one Brother forſooke another, the Vnkle the Nephew, the Siſter the Brother, and the Wife her Husband: nay, a matter much greater, and almoſt incredible; Fathers and Mothers fled away from their owne Children, euen as if they had no way appertained to them. In regard whereof, it could be no otherwiſe, but that a countleſſe multitude of men and women fell ſicke; finding no charity among their friends, except a very few, and ſubiect to the auarice of ſeruants, who attended them conſtrainedly, (for great and vnreaſonable wages) yet few of thoſe attendants

dants to be found any where too. And they were men or women but of baſe condition, as alſo of groſer vnderſtanding, who neuer before had ſerued in any ſuch neceſſities, nor indeed were any way elſe to be imployed, but to giue the ſicke perſon ſuch things as hee called for, or to awaite the houre of his death; in the performance of which ſeruice, oftentimes for gaine, they loſt their owne liues.

In this extreame calamity, the ſicke being thus forſaken of neighbors, kinred, and friends, ſtanding alſo in ſuch need of ſeruants; a cuſtome came vp among them, neuer heard of before, that there was not any woman, how noble, young, or faire ſoeuer ſhee was, but falling ſicke, ſhee muſt of neceſſity haue a man to attend her, were hee young or orherwiſe, reſpect of ſhame or modeſty no way preuailing, but all parts of her body muſt be diſcouered to him, which (in the like vrgency) was not to be ſeene by any but women: whereon enſued afterward, that vpon the parties healing and recouery, it was the occaſion of further diſhoneſty, which many being more modeſtly curious of, refuſed ſuch di gracefull attending, chuſing rather to die, then by ſuch helpe to bee healed. In regard whereof, as well through the want of conuenient remedies, (which the ſicke by no meanes could attaine vnto) as alſo the violence of the contagion, the multitude of them that died night and day, was ſo great, that it was a dreadfull ſight to behold, and as much to heare ſpoken of. So that meere neceſſity (among them that remained liuing) begat new behauiours, quite contrary to all which had beene in former times, and frequently vſed among the City Inhabitants.

The cuſtome of precedent dayes (as now againe it is) was, that women, kinred, neighbours, and friends, would meete together at the deceaſed parties houſe, and there, with them that were of neereſt alliance, expreſſe their hearts ſorrow for their friends loſſe. If not thus, they would aſſemble before the doore, with many of the beſt Cittizens and kindred, and (according to the quality of the deceaſed) the Cleargy met there likewiſe, and the dead body was carried (in comely manner) on mens ſhoulders, with funerall pompe of Torch light, and ſinging, to the Church appointed by the deceaſed. But theſe ſeemely orders, after that the fury of the peſtilence began to encreaſe, they in like manner altogether ceaſed, and other new cuſtomes came in their place; becauſe not onely people died, without hauing any women about them, but infinites alſo paſt out of this life, not hauing any witneſſe, how, when, or in what manner they departed. So that few or none there were, to deliuer outward ſhew of ſorrow and grieuing: but inſteed thereof, diuers declared idle ioy and reioycing, a vſe ſoone learned of immodeſt women, hauing put off all feminine compaſſion, yea, or regard of their owne welfare.

Very few alſo would accompany the body to the graue, and they not any of the Neighbours, although it had beene an honourable Citizen, but onely the meaneſt kinde of people, ſuch as were graue-makers, coffin-bearers, or the like, that did theſe ſeruices onely for money, and the beere being mounted on their ſhoulders, in all haſt they would runne away

with it, not perhaps to the Church appointed by the dead, but to the neereſt at hand, hauing ſome foure or ſixe poore Prieſts following, with lights or no lights, and thoſe of the ſillieſt; ſhort ſeruice being ſaid at the buriall, and the body vnreuerently throwne into the firſt open graue they found. Such was the pittifull miſery of poore people, and diuers, who were of better condition, as it was moſt lamentable to behold; becauſe the greater number of them, vnder hope of healing, or compelled by pouerty, kept ſtill within their houſe weake and faint, thouſands falling ſicke daily, and hauing no helpe, or being ſuccoured any way with foode or phyſicke, all of them died, few or none eſcaping.

Great ſtore there were, that died in the ſtreetes by day or night, and many more beſide, although they died in their houſes; yet firſt they made it knowne to their neighbours, that their liues periſhed, rather by the noyſome ſmell of dead and putrified bodies, then by any violence of the diſeaſe in themſelues. So that of theſe and the reſt, dying in this manner euery where, the neighbours obſerued one courſe of behauiour, (moued thereto no leſſe by feare, that the ſmell and corruption of dead bodies ſhould harme them, then charitable reſpect of the dead) that themſelues when they could, or being aſſiſted by ſome bearers of coarſes, when they were able to procure thē, would hale the bodies (already dead) out of their houſes, laying them before their doores, where ſuch as paſſed by, eſpecially in the mornings, might ſee them lying in no meane numbers. Afterward, Bieres were brought thither, and ſuch as might not haue the helpe of Bieres, were glad to lay them on tables; and Bieres haue bin obſerued, not onely to be charged with two or three dead bodies at once, but many times it was ſeene alſo, that the wife with the husband, two or three Brethren together; yea, the Father and the Mother, haue thus beene carried along to the graue vpon one Biere.

Moreouer, oftentimes it hath beene ſeene, that when two Prieſts went with one Croſſe to fetch the body; there would follow (behind) three or foure bearers with their Bieres, and when the Prieſts intended the buriall but of one body, ſixe or eight more haue made vp the aduantage, and yet none of them being attended by any ſeemly company, lights, teares, or the very leaſt decencie, but it plainly appeared, that the very like account was then made of Men or Women, as if they had bene Dogges or Swine. Wherein might manifeſtly bee noted, that that which the naturall courſe of things could not ſhew to the wiſe, with rare and little loſſe, to wit, the patient ſupport of miſeries and misfortunes, euen in their greateſt height: not onely the wiſe might now learne, but alſo the very ſimpleſt people; and in ſuch ſort, that they ſhould alwaies bee prepared againſt all infelicities whatſoeuer.

Hallowed ground could not now ſuffice, for the great multitude of dead bodies, which were daily brought to euery Church in the City, and euery houre in the day; neither could the bodies haue proper place of buriall, according to our ancient cuſtome: wherefore, after that the Churches and Church-yards were filled, they were conſtrained to make vſe of

great

great deepe ditches, wherein they were buried by hundreds at once, ranking dead bodies along in graues, as Merchandizes are laide along in ſhips, couering each after other with a ſmall quantity of earth, and ſo they filled at laſt vp the whole ditch to the brim.

Now, becauſe I would wander no further in euerie particularity, concerning the miſeries happening in our Citie: I tell you, that extremities running on in ſuch manner as you haue heard, little leſſe ſpare was made in the Villages round about; wherein (ſetting aſide encloſed Caſtles which were now filled like to ſmall Cities) poore Labourers and Huſband-men, with their whole Families, dyed moſt miſerably in outhouſes, yea, and in the open fieldes alſo; without any aſſiſtance of phyſicke, or helpe of ſeruants; and likewiſe in the high-wayes, or their ploughed landes, by day or night indifferently, yet not as men, but like brute beaſts.

By meanes whereof, they became lazie and ſlothfull in their dayly endeuours, euen like to our Citizens; not minding or medling with their wonted affaires: but, as a waiting for death euery houre, imployed all their paines, not in caring any way for themſelues, their cattle, or gathering the fruits of the earth, or any of their accuſtomed labours; but rather waſted and conſumed, euen ſuch as were for their inſtant ſuſtenance. Whereupon, it fell ſo out, that their Oxen, Aſſes, Sheepe, and Goates, their Swine, Pullen, yea their verie Dogges, the trueſt and faithfulleſt ſeruants to men, being beaten and baniſhed from their houſes, went wildly wandring abroad in the fields, where the Corne grew ſtill on the ground without gathering, or being ſo much as reapt or cut. Many of the foreſaid beaſts (as endued with reaſon) after they had paſtured themſelues in the day time, would returne full fed at night home to their houſes, without any gouernment of Heardſmen, or any other.

How many faire Palaces! How many goodly Houſes! How many noble habitations, filled before with families of Lords and Ladies, were then to be ſeene emptie, without any one there dwelling, except ſome ſilly ſeruant? How many Kindreds, worthy of memory! How many great inheritances! And what plenty of riches, were left without any true ſucceſſours? How many good men! How many woorthy Women! How many valiant and comely young men, whom none but *Galen*, *Hippocrates*, and *Aſculapius* (if they were liuing) could haue bene reputed any way vnhealthfull; were ſeene to dine at morning with their Parents, Friends, and familiar confederates, and went to ſup in another world with their Predeceſſors?

It is no meane breach to my braine, to make repetition of ſo many miſeries; wherefore, being willing to part with them as eaſily as I may: I ſay that our Citie being in this caſe, voide of inhabitants, it came to paſſe (as afterward I vnderſtoode by ſome of good credite) that in the venerable Church of S. *Marie la Neufue*, on a Tueſday morning, there being then no other perſon, after the hearing of diuine Sernice, in mourning habits (as the ſeaſon required) returned thence ſeuen diſcrete young Gentle-

Gentlewomen, all allyed together, either by friendſhip, neighbor-hood, or parentage. She among them that was moſt entred into yeares, exceeded not eight and twenty; and the yongeſt was no leſſe then eighteene; being of Noble deſcent, faire forme, adorned with exquiſite behauiour, and gracious modeſty.

Their names I could report, if iuſt occaſion did not forbid it, in regard of the occaſions following by them related, and becauſe times heereafter ſhall not taxe them with reproofe; the lawes of pleaſure being more ſtraited now adayes (for the matters before reuealed) then at that time they were, not onely to their yeares but to many much riper. Neither will I likewiſe miniſter matter to raſh heades (ouer-readie in cenſuring commendable life) any way to impaire the honeſtie of Ladies, by their idle detracting ſpeeches. And therefore, to the end that what each of thē ſaith, may be comprehended without confuſion; I purpoſe to ſtile them by names, wholly agreeing, or (in part) conformable to their qualities. The firſt and moſt aged, we will name *Pampinea*; the ſecond *Fiametta*; the third *Philamena*; the fourth *Æmilia*; the fift *Lauretta*; the ſixt *Neiphila*; and the laſt we terme (not without occaſion) *Eliſſa*, or *Eliza*. All of them being aſſembled at a corner of the Church, not by any deliberation formerly appointed, but meerely by accident, and ſitting as it were in a round ring: after diuers ſighs ſeuerelly deliuered, they conferred on ſundry matters anſwerable to the ſad qualitie of the time, and within a while after, Madam *Pampinea* began in this manner.

Faire Ladies, you may (no doubt as well as I) haue often heard, that no iniury is offer'd to any one, by ſuch as make vſe but of their owne right. It is a thing naturall for euerie one which is borne in this World, to aide, conſerue, and defend her life ſo long as ſhee can; and this right hath bene ſo powerfully permitted, that although it hath ſometimes happened, that (to defend themſelues) men haue beene ſlaine without any offence: yet Lawes haue allowed it to be ſo, in whoſe ſolicitude lieth the beſt liuing of all mortals. How much more honeſt and iuſt is it then for vs, and for euery other well-diſpoſed perſon, to ſeeke for (without wronging any) and to practiſe all remedies that wee can, for the conſeruation of our liues? When I well conſider, what we haue heere done this morning, and many other already paſt (remembring (withall) what likewiſe is proper and conuenient for vs: I conceiue (as all you may do the like) that euerie one of vs hath a due reſpect of her ſelfe, and then I meruaile not, but rather am much amazed (knowing none of vs to be depriued of a Womans beſt iudgement) that wee ſeeke not after ſome remedies for our ſelues, againſt that, which euerie one among vs, ought (in reaſon) to feare.

Heere we meete and remaine (as it ſeemeth to mee) in no other manner, then as if we would or ſhould be witneſſes, to all the dead bodies at reſt in their graue; or elſe to liſten, when the religious Siſters heere dwelling (whoſe number now are well-neere come to bee none at all) ſing Seruice at ſuch houres as they ought to doe; or elſe to acquaint all commers

hither

hither (by our mourning habits) with the quality and quantitie of our hearts miſeries. And when we part hence, we meete with none but dead bodies; or ſicke perſons tranſported from one place to another; or elſe we ſee running thorow the City (in moſt offenſiue fury) ſuch as (by authoritie of publike Lawes) were baniſhed hence, onely for their bad and brutiſh behauiour in contempt of thoſe Lawes, becauſe now they know, that the executors of them are dead and ſicke. And if not theſe, more lamentable ſpectacles preſent themſelues to vs, by the baſe raſcality of the City; who being fatted with our blood, tearme themſelues Graue-makers, and in meere contemptible mockeries of vs, are mounted on horſe-backe, gallopping euery where, reproaching vs with our loſſes and miſfortunes, with lewd and diſhoneſt ſongs: ſo that we can heare nothing elſe but ſuch and ſuch are dead, and ſuch and ſuch lie a dying: here hands wringing, and euery where moſt pittifull complaining.

If we returne home to our houſes (I know not whether your caſe be anſwerable to mine) when I can finde none of all my Family, but onely my poore waiting Chamber-maide; ſo great are my feares, that the very haire on my head declareth my amazement, and whereſoeuer I go or ſit downe, me thinkes I ſee the ghoſtes and ſhadowes of deceaſed friends, not with ſuch louely lookes as I was wont to behold them, but with moſt horrid and dreadfull regards, newly ſtolne vpon them I know not how. In theſe reſpects, both heere, elſe-where, and at home in my houſe, me-thinkes I am alwaies ill, and much more (in mine owne opinion) then any other body, not hauing meanes or place of retirement, as all we haue, and none to remaine heere but onely we.

Moreouer, I haue often heard it ſaid, that in tarrying or departing, no diſtinction is made in things honeſt or diſhoneſt; onely appetite will be ſerued; and be they alone or in company, by day or night, they do whatſoeuer their appetite deſireth: not ſecular perſons onely, but ſuch as are recluſes, and ſhut vp within Monaſteries, breaking the Lawes of obedience, and being addicted to pleaſures of the fleſh, are become laſciuious and diſſolute, making the world beleeue, that whatſoeuer is conuenient for other women, is no way vnbeſeeming them, as thinking in that manner to eſcape.

If it be ſo, as manifeſtly it maketh ſhew of it ſelfe; What do we here? What ſtay we for? And whereon do we dreame? Why are we more reſpectleſſe of our health, then all the reſt of the Citizens? Repute we our ſelues leſſe precious then all the other? Or do we beleeue, that life is linked to our bodies with ſtronger chaines, then to others, and that therefore we ſhould not feare any thing that hath power to offend vs? Wee erre therein, and are deceiued. What brutiſhneſſe were it in vs, if we ſhould vrge any ſuch beleefe? So often as we call to minde, what and how many gallant yong men and women, haue beene deuoured by this cruell peſtilence; we may euidently obſerue a contrary argument.

Wherefore, to the end, that by being ouer-ſcrupulous and careleſſe, we fall not into ſuch danger, whence when we would (perhaps) we cannot

recouer

recouer our ſelues by any meanes: I thinke it meete (if your iudgement therein ſhall iumpe with mine) that all of vs as we are (at leaſt, if we will doe as diuers before vs haue done, and yet daily endeauour to doe) ſhunning death by the honeſt example of other, make our retreate to our Country houſes, wherewith all of vs are ſufficiently furniſhed, and there to delight our ſelues as beſt we may, yet without tranſgreſſing (in any act) the limits of reaſon. There ſhall we heare the pretty birds ſweetly ſinging, ſee the hilles and plaines verdantly flouring; the Corne wauing in the field like the billowes of the Sea, infinite ſtore of goodly trees, and the Heauens more fairely open to vs, then here we can behold them. And although they are iuſtly diſpleaſed, yet will they not there deny vs better beauties to gaze on, then the walles in our City (emptied of Inhabitants) can affoord vs.

Moreouer, the Ayre is much freſh and cleere, and generally, there is farre greater abundance of all things whatſoeuer, needefull at this time for preſeruation of our health, and leſſe offence or molleſtation then we find here.

And although Country people die, as well as heere our Citizens doe, the griefe notwithſtanding is ſo much the leſſe, as the houſes and dwellers there are rare, in compariſon of them in our City. And beſide, if we well obſerue it, here we forſake no particular perſon, but rather we may tearme our ſelues forſaken; in regard that our Husbands, Kinred, and Friends, either dying, or flying from the dead, haue left vs alone in this great affliction, euen as if we were no way belonging vnto them. And therefore, by following this counſell, we cannot fall into any reprehenſion; whereas if we neglect and refuſe it, danger, diſtreſſe, and death (perhaps) may enſue thereon.

Wherefore, if you thinke good, I would allow it for well done, to take our waiting women, with all ſuch things as are needfull for vs, and (as this day) betake our ſelues to one place, to morrow to another, taking there ſuch pleaſure and recreation, as ſo ſweete a ſeaſon liberally beſtoweth on vs. In which manner we may remaine, till we ſee (if death otherwiſe preuent vs not) what end the gracious Heauens haue reſerued for vs. I would haue you alſo to conſider, that it is no leſſe ſeemely for vs to part hence honeſtly, then a great number of other Women to remaine here immodeſtly.

The other Ladies and Gentlewomen, hauing heard Madam *Pampinea*, not onely commended her counſell, but deſiring alſo to put it in execution; had already particularly conſulted with themſelues, by what meanes they might inſtantly depart from thence. Neuertheleſſe, Madam, *Philomena*, who was very wiſe, ſpake thus.

Albeit faire Ladies, the caſe propounded by Madam *Pampinea* hath beene very well deliuered; yet (for all that) it is againſt reaſon for vs to ruſh on, as we are ouer-ready to doe. Remember that we are all women, and no one among vs is ſo childiſh, but may conſider, that when wee

ſhall

ſhall be ſo aſſembled together, without prouidence or conduct of ſome man, we can hardly gouerne our ſelues. Wee are fraile, offenſiue, ſuſpitious, weake ſpirited, and fearefull: in regard of which imperfections, I greatly doubt (if we haue no better direction then our owne) this ſociety will ſooner diſſolue it ſelfe, and (perchance) with leſſe honour to vs, then if we neuer had begunne it. And therefore it ſhall bee expedient for vs, to prouide before we proceede any further. Madam *Eliza* hereon thus replyed.

Moſt true it is, that men are the chiefe or head of women, & without their order, ſildome times do any matters of ours ſort to recommendable end. But what meanes ſhal we make for men? We all know well enough, that the moſt part of our friends are dead, and ſuch as are liuing, ſome be diſperſed heere, others there, into diuers places and companies, vvhere we haue no knowledge of their being; and to accept of ſtrangers, would ſeeme very inconuenient: wherefore as we haue ſuch care of our health, ſo ſhould we bee as reſpectiue withall, in ordering our intention, that whereſoeuer we ayme at our pleaſure and contentment, reproofe and ſcandall may by no meanes purſue vs.

While this diſcourſe thus held among the Ladies, three young Gentlemen came foorth of the Church (yet not ſo young, but the youngeſt had attained to fiue and twenty yeares:) in whom neyther malice of the time, loſſe of friends or kindred, nor any fearefull conceit in themſelues, had the power to quench affection, but (perhaps) might a little coole it, in regard of the queazie ſeaſon. One of them called himſelfe *Pamphilus*, the ſecond *Philoſtratus*, and the laſt *Dioneus*. Each of them was very affable and well conditioned, and walked abroad (for their greater comfort in ſuch a time of tribulation) to try if they could meete with their fayre friends, who (happily) might all three be among theſe ſeauen, and the reſt kinne vnto them in one degree or other. No ſooner were theſe Ladies eſpyed by them, but they met with them alſo in the ſame aduantage; whereupon Madam *Pampinea* (amiably ſmiling) ſaid.

See how graciouſly Fortune is fauourable to our beginning, by preſenting our eyes with three ſo wiſe and worthy young Gentlemen, who will gladly be our guides and ſeruants, if wee doe not diſdaine them the office. Madam *Neiphila* began immediatly to bluſh, becauſe one of them had a Loue in the company, and ſaid; Good Madam *Pampinea* take heed what you ſay, becauſe (of mine owne knowledge) nothing can be ſpoken but good of them all; and I thinke them all to be abſolutely ſufficient for a farre greater employment then is here intended: as being well worthy to keepe company not onely with vs, but them of more faire and precious eſteeme then we are. But becauſe it appeareth plainly enough, that they beare affection to ſome heere among vs, I feare, if wee ſhould make the motion, that ſome diſhonor or reproofe may enſue thereby, and yet without blame either in vs or them. That is nothing at all, anſwered Madam *Philomena*, let me liue honeſtly, and my Conſcience not checke me with any crime; ſpeake then who can to the contrary, God and truth ſhall

enter

enter armes for me. I wiſh that they were as willing to come, as all we are to bid them welcome: for truly (as Madam *Pampinea* ſaide) we may very well hope, that Fortune will bee furtherous to our purpoſed iourney.

The other Ladies hearing them ſpeake in ſuch manner, not only were ſilent to themſelues, but all with one accord and conſent ſaid, that it were well done to call them, and to acquaint them with their intention, entreating their company in ſo pleaſant a voyage. Whereupon, without any more words, Madam *Pampinea* mounting on her feete (becauſe one of the three was her Kinſman) went towards them, as they ſtood reſpectiuely obſerning them; and (with a pleaſing countenance) giuing them a gracious ſalutation, declared to them their deliberation, deſiring (in behalfe of all the reſt) that with a brotherly and modeſt mind, they would vouchſafe to beare them company.

The Gentlemen imagined at the firſt apprehenſion, that this was ſpoken in mockage of them; but when they better perceiued that her words tended to ſolemne earneſt, they made anſwer, That they were all hartily ready to doe them any ſeruice. And without any further delaying, before they departed thence, took order for their apteſt furniſhing with all conuenient neceſſaries, and ſent word to the place of their firſt appointment. On the morrow, being Wedneſday, about breake of day, the Ladies, with certaine of their attending Gentlewomen, and the three Gentlemen, hauing three ſeruants to waite on them, left the Citie to beginne their iourney, and hauing trauelled about a leagues diſtance, arriued at the place of their firſt purpoſe of ſtay, which was ſeated on a little hill, diſtant (on all ſides) from any high way, plentifully ſtored with faire ſpreading Trees, affoording no meane delight to the eye. On the top of all, ſtood a ſtately Palace, hauing a large and ſpacious Court in the middeſt round engirt with Galleries, Hals, and Chambers, euery one ſeparate alone by themſelues, and beautified with Pictures of admirable cunning. Nor was there any want of Gardens, Meadowes, and other moſt pleaſant Walkes, with Welles and Springs of faire running waters, all encompaſſed with branching Vines, fitter for curious and quaffing bibbers, then women ſober, and ſingularly modeſt.

This Pallace the company found fully fitted and prepared, the beddes in the Chambers made and daintily ordred, thickly ſtrewed with variety of flowers, which could not but giue them the greater contentment. *Dioneus*, who (aboue the other) was a pleaſant young gallant, and full of infinite witty conceits, ſaide; Your wit (faire Ladies) hath better guided vs hither, then our prouidence: I know not how you haue determined to diſpoſe of your cares; as for mine owne, I left them at the Cittie gate, when I came thence with you: and therefore let your reſolution bee, to ſpend the time here in ſmiles and ſinging, (I meane, as may fitteſt agree with your dignity) or elſe giue me leaue to go ſeeke my ſorrowes againe, and ſo to remaine diſcontented in our deſolate City. Madam *Pampinea* hauing in like manner ſhaken off her ſorrowes, deliuering a modeſt and

baſhfull

baſhfull ſmile, replyed in this manner.

Dioneus, well haue you ſpoken, it is fit to liue merrily, and no other occaſion made vs forſake the ſicke and ſad Cittie. But, becauſe ſuch things as are without meane or meaſure, are ſubiect to no long continuance: I, who began the motion, whereby this ſocietie is thus aſſembled, and ayme at the long laſting thereof, doe hold it verie conuenient, that wee ſhould all agree, to haue one chiefe Commander among vs, in whom the care and prouidence ſhould conſiſt, for direction of our merriment, performing honour and obedience to the partie, as to our Patrone and ſole Gouernour. And becauſe euery one may feele the burthen of ſolicitude, as alſo the pleaſure of commanding, and conſequently haue a ſenſible taſte of both, whereby no enuy may ariſe on any ſide, I could wiſh, that each one of vs (for a day onely) ſhould feele both the burthen and honour, and the perſon ſo to be aduanced, ſhall receiue it from the election of vs all. As for ſuch as are to ſucceed, after him or her that hath had the dayes of dominion, the party thought fit for ſucceſſion, muſt be named ſo ſoone as night approacheth. And being in this eminency (according as he or ſhe ſhall pleaſe) he may order and diſpoſe how long the time of his rule ſhall laſt, as alſo of the place and maner, where beſt we may continue our delight.

Theſe words were highly pleaſing to them all, and by generall voice, Madame *Pampinea* was choſen Queene for the firſt day. Whereupon, Madame *Philomena* ranne preſently to a Bay-tree, becauſe ſhe had often heard what honor belonged to thoſe branches, and how worthy of honour they were, that rightfully were crowned with them, plucking off diuers branches, ſhee made of them an apparant and honourable Chaplet, placing it (by generall conſent) vpon her head; and this ſo long as their company continued, manifeſted to all the reſt, the ſignall of Dominion, and Royall greatneſſe.

After that Madame *Pampinea* was thus made Queen, ſhe commanded publique ſilence, & cauſing the Gentlemens three ſeruants, and the wayting women alſo (being foure in number) to be brought before her, thus ſhe beganne. Becauſe I am to giue the firſt example to you all, whereby proceeding on from good to better, our company may liue in order and pleaſure, acceptable to all, and without ſhame to any; I create *Parmeno* (ſeruant to *Dioneus*) Maiſter of the Houſhold, hee taking the care and charge of all our Trayne, and for whatſoeuer appertayneth to our Hall ſeruice. I appoint alſo, that *Siliſco* ſeruant to *Pamphilus*, ſhall bee our Diſpenſer and Treaſurer, performing that which *Parmeno* ſhal command him. Likewiſe that *Tindaro* ſerue as Groome of the Chamber, to *Philoſtratus* his Maſter, and the other two, when his fellowes impeached by their offices, cannot be preſent. *Miſia* my Chambermaid, and *Liciſca* belonging to *Philomena*, ſhall ſerue continually in the Kitchin, and diligently make ready ſuch Vyands, as ſhal be deliuered them by *Parmeno*. *Chimera*, waiting-woman to *Lauretta*, and *Stratilia* appertaining to *Fiammetta*, ſhall haue the charge and gouernement of the Ladies Cham-

bers, and preparing all places where we ſhall be preſent. Moreouer, we will and commaund euerie one of them (as they deſire to deſerue our grace) that whereſoeuer they goe or come, or whatſoeuer they heare or ſee: they eſpecially reſpect to bring vs tydings of them. After ſhee had ſummarily deliuered them theſe orders, very much commended of euerie one, ſhe aroſe fairely, ſaying: Heere we haue Gardens, Orchardes, Medowes, and other places of ſufficient pleaſure, where euery one may ſport and recreate themſelues: but ſo ſoone as the ninth houre ſtriketh, then all to meet here againe, to dine in the coole ſhade.

This iocund company hauing receiued licence from their Queene to diſport themſelues, the Gentlemen walked with the Ladies into a goodly Garden, making Chaplets and Noſegayes of diuers flowers, and ſinging ſilently to themſelues. When they had ſpent the time limitted by the Queene, they returned into the houſe, where they found that *Parmeno* had effectually executed his office. For, when they entred into the hall, they ſaw the Tables couered with delicate white Napery, and the glaſſes looking like ſiluer, they were ſo tranſparantly cleere, all the roome beſide ſtrewed with Flowers of Iuniper. When the Queen and all the reſt had waſhed, according as *Parmeno* gaue order, ſo euery one was ſeated at the Table: the Viands (delicately dreſt) were ſerued in, and excellent wines plentifully deliuered, none attending but the three ſeruants, and little or no lowd Table-talke paſſing among them.

Dinner being ended, and the Tables withdrawne (all the Ladies, and the Gentlemen likewiſe, being skilfull both in ſinging and dancing, and playing on inſtruments artificially) the Queene commanded, that diuers Inſtruments ſhould be brought, and (as ſhe gaue charge) *Dioneus* tooke a Lute, and *Fiammetta* a *Violl de gamba*, and began to play an excellent daunce. Whereupon, the Queene with the reſt of the Ladies, and the other two young Gentlemen (hauing ſent their attending Seruants to dinner) paced foorth a daunce very maieſtically. And when the dance was ended, they ſung ſundry excellent Canzonets, out-wearing ſo the time, vntill the Queene commanded them all to reſt, becauſe the houre did neceſſarily require it. The Gentlemen hauing their Chambers farre ſeuered from the Ladies, curiouſly ſtrewed with flowers, and their beds adorned in exquiſite manner, as thoſe of the Ladies were not a iotte inferiour to them; the ſilence of the night beſtowed ſweet reſt on them al. In the morning, the Queene and all the reſt being riſen, accounting ouer much ſleepe to be very hurtfull, they walked abroad into a goodly Meadow, where the graſſe grew verdantly, and the beames of the Sun heated not ouer-violently, becauſe the ſhades of faire ſpreading Trees, gaue a temperate calmneſſe, coole and gentle winds fanning their ſweet breath pleaſingly among them. All of them being there ſet downe in a round ring, and the Queen in the middeſt, as being the appointed place of eminency, ſhe ſpake in this manner.

You ſee (faire company) that the Sunne is highly mounted, the heate (elſewhere) too extreme for vs, and therefore here is our fitteſt refuge, the

ayre

aire being ſo coole, delicate, and acceptable, and our folly well worthy reprehenſion, if we ſhould walke further, and ſpeede worſe. Heere are Tables, Cards, and Cheſſe, as your diſpoſitions may bee addicted. But if mine aduice might paſſe for currant, I would admit none of thoſe exerciſes, becauſe they are too troubleſome both to them that play, and ſuch as looke on. I could rather wiſh, that ſome quaint diſcourſe might paſſe among vs, a tale or fable related by ſome one, to vrge the attention of all the reſt. And ſo wearing out the warmth of the day, one prety Nouell will draw on another, vntill the Sun be lower declined, and the heates extremity more diminiſhed, to ſolace our ſelues in ſome other place, as to our minds ſhall ſeeme conuenient. If therefore what I haue ſayde bee acceptable to you (I purpoſing to follow in the ſame courſe of pleaſure,) let it appeare by your immediate anſwere; for, till the Euening, I thinke we can deuiſe no exerciſe more commodious for vs.

The Ladies and Gentlemen allowed of the motion, to ſpend the time in telling pleaſant tales; whereupon the Queene ſaide: Seeing you haue approued mine aduice, I grant free permiſſion for this firſt day, that euery one ſhall relate, what to him or her is beſt pleaſing. And turning her ſelfe to *Pamphilus* (who was ſeated on her right hand) gaue him fauour, with one of his Nouels, to begin the recreation: which he not daring to deny, and perceiuing generall attention prepared for him, thus he began.

Meſsire Chappelet du Prat, by making a falſe confeſsion, beguyled an holy Religious man, and after dyed. And hauing (during his life time) bene a very bad man, at his death, was reputed for a Saint, and called S. Chappelet.

The firſt Nouell.

Wherein is contained, how hard a thing it is, to diſtinguiſh goodneſſe from hypocriſie; and how (vnder the ſhadow of holineſſe) the wickedneſſe of one man, may deceiue many.

IT is a matter moſt conuenient (deare Ladies) that a man ought to begin whatſoeuer he doth, in the great and glorious name of him, who was the Creator of all things. Wherefore, ſeeing that I am the man appointed, to begin this your inuention of diſcourſing Nouelties: I intend to begin alſo with one of his wonderfull workes. To the end, that this being heard, our hope may remaine on him, as the thing onely permanent, and his name for euer to be praiſed bv vs. Now, as there is nothing more certaine, but that euen as temporall things are mortall and tranſitory, ſo are they both in and out of themſelues, full of ſorrow, paine, and anguiſh, and ſubiected to infinite dangers: So in the ſame manner, we liue mingled among them, ſeeming as part of them, and cannot (without ſome error) continue or defend our ſelues, if God by his eſpeciall grace and fauour, giue vs not ſtrength and good vnderſtanding. Which power we may not beleeue, that either it deſcendeth

to vs, or liueth in vs, by any merites of our owne; but of his onely moſt gracious benignity. Mooued neuertheleſſe, and entreated by the interceſſions of them, who were (as we are) mortals; and hauingly diligently obſerued his commandements, are now with him in eternall bleſſednes. To whom (as to aduocates and procurators, informed by the experience of our frailty) wee are not to preſent our prayers in the preſence of ſo great a Iudge; but onely to himſelfe, for the obtaining of all ſuch things as his wiſedome knoweth to be moſt expedient for vs. And well may we credit, that his goodneſſe is more fully enclined towards vs, in his continuall bounty and liberality; then the ſubtilty of mortall eye, can reach into the ſecret of ſo diuine a thought: and ſometimes therefore we may be beguiled in opinion, by electing ſuch and ſuch as our interceſſors before his high Maieſty, who perhaps are farre off from him, or driuen into perpetuall exile, as vnworthy to appeare in ſo glorious a preſence. For he, from whom nothing can be hidden, more regardeth the ſincerity of him that prayeth, then ignorant deuotion, committed to the truſt of a heedleſſe interceſſor; and ſuch prayers haue alwaies gracious acceptation in his ſight. As manifeſtly will appeare, by the Nouell which I intend to relate; manifeſtly (I ſay) not as in the iudgement of God, but according to the apprehenſion of men.



There was one named, *Muſciatto Franceſi*, who from beeing a moſt rich and great Merchant in *France*, was become a Knight, and preparing to goe into *Tuſcany*, vvith Mounſieur *Charles vvithout Land*, Brother to the King of France (who was deſired and incited to come thither by Pope *Boniface*) found his affaires greatly intricated heere and there (as oftentimes the matters of Merchants fall out to bee) and that very hardly hee ſhould ſodainly vnintangle them, without referring the charge of them to diuers perſons. And for all he tooke indifferent good order, onely he remained doubtfull, whom he might ſufficiently leaue, to recouer his debts among many *Burgundians*. And the rather was his care the more heerein, becauſe he knew the *Burgundians* to be people of badde nature, rioters, brablers, full of calumny, and without any faithfulneſſe: ſo that he could not bethinke himſelfe of any man (how wicked ſoeuer he was)

was) in whom he might repoſe truſt to meete with their lewdneſſe. Hauing a long while examined his thoughts vpon this point, at laſt hee remembred one Maſter *Chappelet du Prat*, who ofttimes had reſorted to his houſe in *Paris*. And becauſe he was a man of little ſtature, yet handſome enough, the French not knowing what this word *Chappelet* might meane, eſteeming he ſhould be called rather (in their tongue) *Chappell*; imagined, that in regard of his ſmall ſtature, they termed him *Chappelet*, and not *Chappell*, and ſo by the name of *Chappelet* he was euery where known, and by few or none acknowledged for *Chappell*.

This Maſter *Chappelet*, was of ſo good and commendable life; that, being a Notarie, he held it in high diſdaine, that any of his Contractes (although he made but few) ſhould be found without falſhoode. And looke how many ſoeuer hee dealt withall, he would be vrged and required thereto, offering them his paines and trauaile for nothing, but to bee requited otherwiſe then by money; which prooued to bee his much larger recompencing, and returned to him the farre greater benefit. Hee tooke the onely pleaſure of the world, to beare falſe witneſſe, if hee were thereto entreated, and (oftentimes) when hee was not requeſted at all. Likewiſe becauſe in thoſe times, great truſt and beleefe was giuen to an oath, he making no care or conſcience to be periured: greatly aduantaged himſelfe by Law ſuites, in regard that many matters relyed vpon his oath, and deliuering the truth according to his knowledge.

He delighted (beyond meaſure) and addicted his beſt ſtudies, to cauſe enmities and ſcandals betweene kindred and friends, or any other perſons, agreeing well together; and the more miſchiefe he could procure in this kind, ſo much the more pleaſure and delight tooke he therein. If he were called to kill any one, or to do any other villanous deede, he neuer would make deniall, but go to it very willingly; and diuers times it was well knowen, that many were cruelly beaten, ye ſlaine by his hands. Hee was a moſt horrible blaſphemer of God and his Saints, vpon the very leaſt occaſion, as being more addicted to choller, then any other man could be. Neuer would he frequent the Church, but baſely contemned it, with the Sacraments and religious rites therein adminiſtred, accounting them for vile and vnprofitable things: but very voluntarily would viſit Tauernes, and other places of diſhoneſt acceſſe, which were continually pleaſing vnto him, to ſatisfie his luſt and inordinate lubricitie. Hee would ſteale both in publike and priuate, euen with ſuch a conſcience, as if it were giuen to him by nature ſo to do. He was a great glutton and a drunkarde, euen till he was not able to take any more: being alſo a continuall gameſter, and carrier of falſe Dice, to cheate with them the very beſt Friends he had.

But why do I waſte time in ſuch extent of words? When it may ſuffice to ſay, that neuer was there a worſe man borne; whoſe wickedneſſe was for long time ſupported, by the fauour, power, and Authoritie of Monſieur *Muſciatto*, for whoſe ſake many wrongs and iniuries were patiently endured, as well by priuate perſons (whom hee would abuſe

notoriously) as others of the Court, betweene whom he made no difference at all in his vile dealing. This Master *Chappelet*, being thus remembred by *Musciatto* (who very well knew his life and behauiour) he perfectly perswaded himselfe, that this was a man apt in all respects, to meete with the treachery of the Burgundians: whereupon, hauing sent for him, thus he beganne.

Chappelet, thou knowest how I am wholly to retreate my selfe from hence, and hauing some affaires among the Burgundians, men full of wickednesse and deceite; I can bethinke my selfe of no meeter a man then *Chappelet*, to recouer such debts as are due to mee among them. And because it falleth out so well, that thou art not now hindered by any other businesse; if thou wilt vndergoe this office for me, I will procure thee fauourable Letters from the Court, and giue thee a reasonable portion in all thou recouerest. Master *Chappelet*, seeing himselfe idle, and greedy after worldly goods, considering that *Mounsieur Musciatto* (who had beene alwayes his best buckler) was now to depart from thence, without any dreaming on the matter, and constrained thereto (as it were) by necessity, set downe his resolution, and answered, that hee would gladly doe it.

Hauing made their agreement together, and receiued from *Musciatto* his expresse procuration, and also the Kings gracious Letters; after that *Musciatto* was gone on his iourney, Master *Chappelet* went to *Dijon*, where he was vnknowne (well-neere) of any. And there (quite from his naturall disposition) he beganne benignely and graciously, in recouering the debts due; which course he tooke the rather, because they should haue a further feeling of him in the end. Being lodged in the house of two Florentine brethren, that liuing on their monies vsance; and (for *Mounsieur Musciattoes* sake) vsing him with honour and respect: it fortuned that he fell sicke, and the two brethren sent for Physitions to attend him, allowing their seruants to be diligent about him, making no spare of any thing, which gaue the best likelyhood of restoring his health. But all their paines proued to no purpose, because he (honest man) being now growne aged, and hauing liued all his life time very disorderly, fell day by day (according to the Physicions iudgement) from bad to worse, as no other way appeared but death, whereat the brethren greatly grieued.

Vpon a day, neere to the Chamber where the sicke man lay, they entred into this communication. What shall we doe (quoth the one to the other) with this man? We are much hindered by him: for to send him away (sicke as he is) we shall be greatly blamed thereby, and it will be a manifest note of our weake wisedome; the people knowing that first of all we gaue him entertainement, and haue allowed him honest physicall attendance, and he not hauing any way iniuried or offended vs, to let him be suddenly expulsed our house (sicke to death as he is) it can be no way for our credit.

On the other side, we are to consider also, that hee hath bin so badde a man, as he will not now make any confession thereof, neither receiue the

blessed

bleſſed Sacrament of the Church, and dying ſo without confeſſion; there is no Church that will accept his body, but it muſt be buried in prophane ground, like to a Dogge. And yet if hee would confeſſe himſelfe, his ſinnes are ſo many and monſtrous, as the like caſe alſo may happen, becauſe there is not any Prieſt or Religious perſon, that can or will abſolue him. And being not abſolued, he muſt be caſt into ſome ditch or pit, and then the people of the Towne, as well in regard of the account we carry heere, (which to them appeareth ſo little pleaſing, as we are daily purſued with their worſt words) as alſo coueting our ſpoile and ouerthrow, vpon this accident will cry out and mutiny againſt vs; *Behold theſe Lombard dogs, which are not to be receiued into the Church, why ſhould we ſuffer them to liue heere among vs?* In furious madneſſe will they come vpon vs, and our houſe, where (peraduenture) not contended with robbing vs of our goods, our liues will remaine in their mercy and danger; ſo that, in what ſort ſoeuer it happen, this mans dying here, muſt needs be banefull to vs.

Maſter *Chappelet*, who (as we haue formerly ſaide) was lodged neere to the place where they thus conferred, hauing a ſubtle attention (as oftentimes we ſee ſicke perſons to be poſſeſſed withall) heard all theſe ſpeeches ſpoken of him, and cauſing them to bee called vnto him, thus hee ſpake.

I would not haue you to be any way doubtfull of me; neither that you ſhould receiue the leaſt damage by me: I haue heard what you haue ſaid, and am certaine, that it will happen according to your words, if matters ſhould fall out as you conceite; but I am minded to deale otherwiſe. I haue committed ſo many offences againſt our Lord God, in the whole current of my life; that now I intend one action at the houre of my death, which I truſt will make amends for all. Procure therefore, I pray you, that the moſt holy and religious man that is to be found (if there bee any one at all) may come vnto me, and referre the caſe then to me, for I will deale in ſuch ſort for you and my ſelfe, that all ſhall be well, and you no way diſcontented.

The two Brethren, although they had no great hope in his ſpeeches, went yet to a Monaſtery of Gray-Friars, and requeſted; that ſome one holy and learned man, might come to heare the confeſſion of a *Lombard*, that lay very weake and ſicke in their houſe. And one was granted vnto them, being an aged religious Frier, a great read maſter in the ſacred Scripture, a very venerable perſon, who being of good and ſanctified life, all the Citizens held him in great reſpect and eſteeme, and on hee went with them to their houſe. When he was come vp into the Chamber where Maſter *Chappelet* lay, and being there ſeated downe by him; he beganne firſt to comfort him very louingly, demanding alſo of him, how many times he had bin at confeſſion? Whereto Maſter *Chappelet* (who neuer had bin ſhriued in all his life time) thus replied.

Holy Father, I alwayes vſed (as a common cuſtome) to bee confeſſed once (at the leaſt) euery weeke, albeit ſometimes much more often; but

true

true it is, that being falne into this ſickneſſe, now eight daies ſince I haue not beene confeſt, ſo violent hath bene the extremity of my weakneſſe. My ſonne (anſwered the good old man) thou haſt done well, and ſo keep thee ſtill hereafter in that minde: but I plainly perceiue, ſeeing thou haſt ſo often confeſſed thy ſelfe, that I ſhall take the leſſe labour in vrging queſtions to thee.

Maſter *Chappelet* replyed; Say not ſo good Father, for albeit I haue bene ſo oftentimes confeſſed, yet am I willing now to make a generall confeſſion, euen of all ſinnes comming to my remembrance, from the very day of my birth, vntil this inſtant houre of my ſhrift. And therefore I entreat you (holy Father) to make a particular demand of euerie thing, euen as if I had neuer bene confeſſed at all, and to make no reſpect of my ſickneſſe: for I had rather be offenſiue to mine owne fleſh, then by fauoring or allowing it eaſe, to hazard the perdition of my ſoule, which my Redeemer bought with ſo precious a price.

Theſe words were highly pleaſing to the holy Friar, and ſeemed to him as an argument of a good conſcience: Wherefore, after hee had much commended this forwardneſſe in him, he began to demand of him if he had neuer offended with any Woman? Whereunto maſter *Chappelet* (breathing forth a great ſigh) anſwered.

Holy Father, I am halfe aſhamed to tell you the truth in this caſe, as fearing leaſt I ſhould ſinne in vaine-glory. Whereto the Confeſſor replyed; Speake boldly ſonne, and feare not, for in telling the truth, bee it in confeſſion or otherwiſe, a man can neuer ſinne. Then ſayde Maiſter *Chappelet*, Father, ſeeing you giue me ſo good an aſſurance, I will reſolue you faithfully heerein. I am ſo true a Virgin-man in this matter, euen as when I iſſued forth of my mothers Wombe. O ſonne (quoth the Friar) how happy and bleſſed of God art thou? Well haſt thou liued, & therein haſt thou not meanly merited, hauing had ſo much libertie to doe the contrary if thou wouldeſt, wherein verie few of vs can ſo anſwer for our ſelues.

Afterward, he demanded of him, how much diſpleaſing to God hee had beene in the ſinne of Gluttony? When (ſighing againe greatly) hee anſwered: Too much, and too often, good Father. For, ouer and beſide the Faſts of our Lent ſeaſon, which euerie yeare ought to bee duely obſerued by deuout people, I brought my ſelfe to ſuch a cuſtomarie vſe, that I could faſt three dayes in euery Weeke, with Bread and Water. But indeede (holy Father) I confeſſe, that I haue drunke water with ſuch a pleaſing appetite and delight (eſpecially in praying, or walking on pilgrimages) euen as greedy drunkards doe, in drinking good Wine. And many times I haue deſired ſuch Sallades of ſmall hearbes, as Women do gather abroad in the open fields, and feeding onely vpon them, without coueting after any other kinde of ſuſtenance, hath ſeemed much more pleaſing to me, then I thought to agree with the nature of Faſting, eſpecially, when as it ſwerueth from deuotion, or is not done as it ought to bee.

Sonne

Sonne, Sonne, replied the Confeſſour, theſe ſinnes are naturall, and very light, and therefore I would not haue thee to charge thy conſcience with them, more then is needfull. It happeneth to euery man (how holy ſoeuer he be) that after he hath faſted ouer-long, feeding will be welcome to him, and drinking good drinke after his trauaile. O Sir, (ſaid Maiſter *Chappelet*) neuer tell me this to comfort me, for well you know, and I am not ignorant therein, that ſuch things as are done for the ſeruice of God, ought all to be performed purely, and without any blemiſh of the minde; what otherwiſe is done, ſauoureth of ſinne. The Friar being well contented with his words, ſaid: It is not amiſſe that thou vnderſtandeſt it in this manner, and thy conſcience thus purely cleared, is no little comfort to me. But tell me now concerning Auarice, haſt thou ſinned therein, by deſiring more then was reaſonable, or withholding from others, ſuch things as thou oughteſt not to detaine? Wherein Maiſter *Chappelet* anſwered. Good Father, I would not haue you to imagine, becauſe you ſee me lodged heere in the houſe of two Vſurers, that therefore I am of any ſuch diſpoſition. No truely Sir, I came hither to no other end, but onely to chaſtiſe and admoniſh them in friendly manner, to cleanſe their mindes from ſuch abhominable profit: And aſſuredly, I ſhould haue preuailed therein, had not this violent ſickneſſe hindered mine intention. But vnderſtand (holy Father) that my parents left me a rich man, and immediatly after my Fathers death, the greater part of his goods I gaue away for Gods ſake, and then, to ſuſtaine mine owne life, and to helpe the poore members of Ieſus Chriſt, I betooke my ſelfe to a meane eſtate of Merchandiſe, deſiring none other then honeſt gaine thereby, and euermore whatſoeuer benefit came to me; I imparted halfe thereof to the poore, conuerting mine owne ſmall portion about my neceſſary affaires, which that other part would ſcarſely ſerue to ſupply: yet alwayes God gaue thereto ſuch a merciſull bleſſing, that my buſineſſe dayly thriued more and more, ariſing ſtill from good to better.

Well haſt thou done therein good Sonne, ſaid the Confeſſour: but how oftentimes haſt thou beene angry? Oh Sir (ſaid Maiſter *Chappelet*) therein I aſſure yee, I haue often tranſgreſſed. And what man is able to forbeare it; beholding the dayly actions of men to be ſo diſhoneſt? No care of keeping Gods Commandements, nor any feare of his dreadfull iudgements. Many times in a day, I haue rather wiſhed my ſelfe dead then liuing, beholding youth purſuing idle vanities, to ſweare and forſweare themſelues, tipling in Tauernes, and neuer haunting Churches; but rather affecting the worlds follies, then any ſuch duties as they owe to God. Alas Sonne (quoth the Friar) this is a good and holy anger, and I can impoſe no penance on thee for it. But tell me, hath not rage or furie at any time ſo ouer-ruled thee, as to commit murther or man-ſlaughter, or to ſpeake euill of any man, or to doe any other ſuch kinde of iniurie? Oh Father (anſwered Maiſter *Chappelet*) you that ſeeme to be a man of God, how dare you vſe any ſuch vile words? If I had had the very leaſt thought, to doe any ſuch act as you ſpeake, doe you thinke that God would

would haue ſuffered me to liue? Theſe are deeds of darkneſſe, fit for villaines and wicked liuers, of which helliſh crew, when at any time I haue happened to meet with ſome one of them, I haue ſaid; Goe, God conuert thee.

Worthy, and charitable words, replied the Friar: but tell me Sonne, Didſt thou euer beare falſe witnes againſt any man, or haſt ſpoken falſly, or taken ought from any one, contrary to the will of the owner? Yes indeed Father, ſaid Maiſter *Chappelet*, I haue ſpoken ill of another, becauſe I haue ſometime ſeene one of my neighbors, who with no meane ſhame of the world, would do nothing elſe but beat his wife: and of him once I complained to the poore mans parents, ſaying, that he neuer did it but when he was ouercome with drinke. Thoſe were no ill words, quoth the Friar; but I remember you ſaid, that you were a Merchant: Did you euer deceiue any, as ſome Merchants vſe to doe? Truely Father, anſwered M. *Chappelet*, I thinke not any, except one man, who one day brought me money which he owed me for a certaine peece of cloath I ſold him, and I put it into a purſe without accounting it. About a moneth afterward, I found that there were foure ſmall pence more then was due to mee: and neuer happening to meete with the man againe, after I had kept them the ſpace of a whole yeare, I then gaue them away vnto foure poore people, for Gods ſake.

A ſmall matter, ſaid the Friar, and truly payed backe againe to the owner, in beſtowing them on the poore. Many other queſtions he demanded of him, whereto ſtill he anſwered in the ſame manner. But before he proceeded to abſolution, Maſter *Chappelet* ſpake thus: I haue yet one ſinne more, which I haue not reuealed to you: when being vrged by the Friar to confeſſe it, he ſaid. I remember, that I ſhould afford one day in the weeke, to cleanſe the houſe of my ſoule, for better entertainement to my Lord and Sauiour, and yet I haue done no ſuch reuerence to the Sunday or Sabbath, as I ought to haue done. A ſmall fault Sonne, replyed the Friar. O no (quoth Maſter *Chappelet*) doe not terme it a ſmall fault, becauſe Sunday being a holy day, is highly to be reuerenced: for as on that day, our bleſſed Lord aroſe from death to life. But (quoth the Confeſſor) haſt thou done nothing elſe on that day? Yes, ſaid he, being forgetfull of my ſelfe, once I did ſpet in Gods Church. The Friar ſmiling, ſaid: Alas Sonne, that is a matter of no moment; for wee that are Religious perſons, doe vſe to ſpet there euery day. The more is your ſhame, anſwered Maſter *Chappelet*, for no place ought to bee kept more pure and cleane then the ſacred Temple, wherein our daily ſacrifices are offered vp to God.

In this manner he held on an houre and more, vttering the like tranſgreſſions as theſe; and at laſt began to ſigh very paſſionately, & to ſhed a few teares, as one that was skilfull enough in ſuch diſſembling pranks: whereat the Confeſſor being much mooued, ſaide: Alas Sonne, what ayleſt thou? Oh Father (quoth *Chappelet*) there remaineth yet one ſinne more vpon my conſcience, wherof I neuer at any time made confeſſion,

ſo

ſo ſhamefull it appeareth to mee to diſcloſe it; and I am partly perſwaded, that God will neuer pardon me for that ſinne. How now Sonne? ſaid the Friar, neuer ſay ſo; for if all the ſinnes that euer were committed by men, or ſhall be committed ſo long as the World endureth, were onely in one man, and he repenting them, and being ſo contrite for them, as I ſee thou art; the grace and mercy of God is ſo great, that vpon penitent confeſſion, he will freely pardon him, and therefore ſpare not to ſpeake it boldly. Alas Father (ſaid *Chappelet*, ſtill in pretended weeping) this ſinne of mine is ſo great, that I can hardly beleeue (if your earneſt prayers do not aſſiſt me) that euer I ſhall obtaine remiſſion for it. Speake it Sonne, ſaid the Friar, and feare not, I promiſe that I will pray to God for thee.

Maſter *Chappelet* ſtill wept and ſighed, and continued ſilent, notwithſtanding all the Confeſſors comfortable perſwaſions; but after hee had helde him a long while in ſuſpence, breathing forth a ſighe, euen as if his very heart would haue broken, he ſaide; Holy Father, ſeeing you promiſe to pray to God for me, I will reueale it to you: Know then, that when I was a little boy, I did once curſe my Mother; which he had no ſooner ſpoken, but he wrung his hands, and greeued extraordinarily. Oh good Son, ſaide the Friar: doth that ſeeme ſo great a ſinne to thee? Why, men doe daily blaſpheme our Lord God, and yet neuertheleſſe, vpon their hearty repentance, he is alwayes ready to forgiue them; and wilt not thou beleeue to obtaine remiſſion, for a ſinne ſo ignorantly committed? Weepe no more deare Sonne, but comfort thy ſelfe, and reſt reſolued, that if thou wert one of them, who nayled our bleſſed Sauiour to his Croſſe; yet being ſo truly repentant, as I ſee thou art, he would freely forgiue thee. Say you ſo Father? quoth *Chappelet*. What mine owne deare Mother? that bare me in her wombe nine moneths, day and night, and afterwards fed me with her breaſts a thouſand times, can I be pardoned for curſing her? Oh no, it is too haynous a ſinne, and except you pray to God very inſtantly for me, he will not forgiue me.

When the religious man perceiued, that nothing more was to bee confeſſed by Maſter *Chappelet*; he gaue him abſolution, and his owne benediction beſide, reputing him to be a moſt holy man, as verily beleeuing all that hee had ſaid. And who would not haue done the like, hearing a man to ſpeake in this manner, and being vpon the very point of death? Afterward, he ſaide vnto him, Maſter *Chappelet*, by Gods grace you may be ſoone reſtored to health, but if it ſo come to paſſe, that God doe take your bleſſed and well diſpoſed ſoule to his mercy, will it pleaſe you to haue your body buried in our Conuent? Whereto Maſter *Chappelet* anſwered; I thanke you Father for your good motion, and ſorry ſhould I be, if my friends did bury me any where elſe, becauſe you haue promiſed to pray to God for me; and beſide, I haue alwayes carried a religious deuotion to your Order. Wherefore, I beſeech you, ſo ſoone as you are come home to your Conuent, preuaile ſo much by your good meanes, that the holy Euchariſt, conſecrated this morning on your high Altar, may be brought vnto me: for although I confeſſe my ſelfe vtterly vnwor-

thy

thy, yet I purpoſe (by your reuerend permiſſion) to receiue it, as alſo your holy and lateſt vnction, to this ende, that hauing liued a greeuous ſinner, I may yet (at the laſt) die a Chriſtian. Theſe words were pleaſing to the good olde man, and he cauſed euery thing to be performed, according as Maſter *Chappelet* had requeſted.

The two Brethren, who much doubted the diſſembling of *Chappelet*, being both in a ſmall partition, which ſundered the ſicke mans Chamber from theirs, heard and vnderſtood the paſſage of all, betweene him and the ghoſtly Father, being many times ſcarcely able to refraine from laughter, at the fraudulent courſe of his confeſſion. And often they ſaid within themſelues (what manner of man is this, whom neither age, ſickeneſſe, nor terror of death ſo neere approaching, and ſenſible to his owne ſoule, nor that which is much more, God, before whoſe iudgement he knowes not how ſoone he ſhall appeare, or elſe be ſent to a more fearefull place; none of theſe can alter his wicked diſpoſition, but that he will needes die according as he hath liued? Notwithſtanding, ſeeing he had ſo ordered the matter, that he had buriall freely allowed him, they cared for no more.

After that *Chappelet* had receiued the Communion, and the other Ceremonies appointed for him; weakeneſſe encreaſing on him more and more, the very ſame day of his goodly confeſſion, he died (not long after) towards the euening. Whereupon the two Brethren tooke order, that all needefull things ſhould be in a readineſſe, to haue him buried honourably; ſending to acquaint the Fathers of the Conuent therewith, that they might come to ſay their *Vigilles*, according to precedent cuſtome, and then on the morrow to fetch the body. The honeſt Friar that had confeſſed him, hearing he was dead, went to the Prior of the Conuent, and by ſound of the houſe Bell, cauſed all the Brethren to aſſemble together, giuing them credibly to vnderſtand, that Maſter *Chappelet* was a very holy man, as appeared by all the parts of his confeſſion, and made no doubt, but that many miracles would be wrought by his ſanctified body, perſwading them to fetch it thither with all deuoute ſolemnity and reuerence: whereto the Prior, and all the credulous Brethren preſently condiſcended very gladly.

When night was come, they went all to viſit the dead body of Maſter *Chappelet*, where they vſed an eſpeciall and ſolemne *Vigill*; and on the morrow, apparelled in their richeſt Coapes and Veſtiments, with bookes in their hands, and the Croſſe borne before them, ſinging in the forme of a very deuoute proceſſion, they brought the body pompeouſly into their Church, accompanied with all the people of the Towne, both men and women. The Father Confeſſor, aſcending vp into the Pulpit, preached wonderfull things of him, and the rare holineſſe of his life; his faſtes, his virginity, ſimplicity, innocency, and true ſanctity, recounting alſo (among other eſpeciall obſeruations) what *Chappelet* had confeſſed, as this moſt great and greeuous ſinne, and how hardly he could be perſwaded, that God would grant him pardon for it. Whereby he tooke occaſion to reproue the people then preſent, ſaying; And you (accurſed of God) for the

verie leaſt and trifling matter hapning, will not ſpare to blaſpheme God, his bleſſed Mother, and the whole Court of heauenly Paradiſe: Oh, take example by this ſingular man, this Saint-like man, nay, a very Saint indeede.

Many additions more he made, concerning his faithfulneſſe, truth, and integrity; ſo that, by the vehement aſſeueration of his words (whereto all the people there preſent gaue credible beleefe) he prouoked them vnto ſuch zeale and earneſt deuotion; that the Sermon was no ſooner ended, but (in mighty crowds and throngs) they preſſed about the Biere, kiſſing his hands and feete, and all the garments about him were torne in peeces, as precious Reliques of ſo holy a perſon, and happy they thought themſelues, that could get the ſmalleſt peece or ſhred of any thing that came neere to his body: and thus they continued all the day, the body lying ſtill open, to be viſited in this manner.

When night was come, they buried him in a goodly Marble tombe, erected in a faire Chappell purpoſely; and for many dayes after following, it was moſt ſtrange to ſee, how the people of the Country came thither on heapes, with holy Candles and other offerings, with Images of waxe faſtened to the Tombe, in ſigne of Sacred and ſolemne Vowes, to this new created Saint. And ſo farre was ſpread the fame and renowne of his ſanctity, deuotion, and integrity of life, maintained conſtantly by the Fathers of the Conuent; that if any one fell ſicke in neede, diſtreſſe, or aduerſity, they would make their Vowes to no other Saint but him: naming him (as yet to this day they do) Saint *Chappelet*, affirming vpon their Oathes, that infinite miracles were there daily performed by him, and eſpecially on ſuch, as came in deuotion to viſit his ſhrine.

In this manner liued and died Maſter *Chappelet du Prat*, who before he became a Saint, was as you haue heard: and I will not deny it to be impoſſible, but that he may bee at reſt among other bleſſed bodies. For although he liued lewdly and wickedly, yet ſuch might be his contrition in the lateſt extreamity, that (queſtionleſſe) he might finde mercie. But, becauſe ſuch things remaine vnknowne to vs, and ſpeaking by outward appearance, vulgar iudgement will cenſure otherwiſe of him, and thinke him to be rather in perdition, then in ſo bleſſed a place as Paradice. But referring that to the Omnipotents appointment, whoſe clemencie hath alwayes beene ſo great to vs, that he regards not our errors, but the integrity of our Faith, making (by meanes of our continuall Mediator) of an open enemy, a conuerted ſonne and ſeruant. And as I began in his name, ſo will I conclude, deſiring that it may euermore be had in due reuerence, and referre we our ſelues thereto in all our neceſſities, with this ſetled aſſurance, that he is alwayes ready to heare vs. And ſo ſhe ceaſed.

Abraham a Iew, being admoniſhed or aduiſed by a friend of his, named Iehannot de Cheuigny, trauailed from Paris vnto Rome : And beholding there the wicked behauiour of men in the Church, returned backe to Paris againe, where yet (neuertheleſſe) he became a Chriſtian.

The Second Nouell.

Wherein is contained and expreſſed, the liberality and goodneſſe of God, extended to the Christian Faith.

THE Nouell recited by *Pamphilus*, was highly pleaſing to the company, and much commended by the Ladies : and after it had beene diligently obſerued among them, the Queene commanded Madam *Neiphila* (who was ſeated neereſt to *Pamphilus*) that, in relating another of hers, ſhe ſhould follow on in the paſtime thus begun. She being no leſſe gracious in countenance, then merrily diſpoſed; made anſwere, that ſhee would obey her charge, and began in this manner.



Pamphilus hath declared to vs, by his Tale, how the goodneſſe of God regardeth not our errors, when they proceede from things which wee cannot diſcerne. And I intend to approoue by mine, what argument of infallible truth, the ſame benignity deliuereth of it ſelfe, by enduring patiently the faults of them, that (both in word and worke) ſhould declare vnfaigned teſtimony of ſuch gracious goodneſſe, and not to liue ſo diſſolutely as they doe. To the end, that others illumined by their light of life, may beleeue with the ſtronger conſtancy of minde.

As I haue heeretofore heard (Gracious Ladies) there liued a wealthy Marchant in *Paris*, being a Mercer, or ſeller of Silkes, named *Iehannot de Cheuig-*

Cheuigny, a man of faithfull, honeſt, and vpright dealing; who held great affection and friendſhip with a very rich Iew, named *Abraham*, that was a Merchant alſo, and a man of very direct conuerſation. *Iehannot* well noting the honeſty and loyall dealing of this Iew, began to haue a Religious kinde of compaſſion in his ſoule, much pittying that a man ſo good in behauiour, ſo wiſe and diſcreete in all his actions, ſhould be in danger of perdition thorow want of Faith. In which regard, louingly he began to intreate him, that he would leaue the errors of his Iewiſh beleefe, and follow the truth of Chriſtianity, which he euidently ſaw (as being good and holy) daily to proſper and enlarge it ſelfe, whereas on the contrary, his profeſſion decreaſed, and grew to nothing.

The Iew made anſwer, that he beleeued nothing to be ſo good and holy, as the Iewiſh Religion, and hauing beene borne therein, therein alſo he purpoſed to liue and dye, no matter whatſoeuer being able to remoue him from that reſolution. For all this ſtiffe deniall, *Iehannot* would not ſo giue him ouer; but purſued him ſtill day by day, reitterating continually his former ſpeeches to him: deliuering infinite excellent and pregnant reaſons, that Merchants themſelues were not ignorant, how farre the Chriſtian faith excelled the Iewith falſhoods. And albeit the Iew was a very learned man in his owne Law, yet notwithſtanding the intire amity he bare to *Iehannot*, or (perhaps) his words fortified by the bleſſed Spirit, were ſo preuailant with him, that the Iew felt a pleaſing apprehenſion in them, though as yet his obſtinacie ſtoode farre off from Conuerſion. But as he thus continued ſtrong in opinion, ſo *Iehannot* lefte not hourely to labour him: inſomuch, that the Iew being conquered by ſuch earneſt and continuall importunity, one day ſpake to *Iehannot*, ſaying.

My worthy friend *Iehannot*, thou art extremely deſirous, that I ſhould conuert to Chriſtianitie, and I am well contented to doe it; onely vpon this condition: That firſt I wil iourney to Rome, to ſee him whom thou ſayeſt, is Gods general Vicar here on earth, and to conſider on the courſe of his life and manners, and likewiſe of his Colledge of Cardinals. If be and they doe appeare ſuch men to mee, as thy ſpeeches affirme them to be, and thereby I may comprehend that thy Faith and Religion is better then mine, as with no meane paines thou endeuoureſt to perſwade mee, I will become a Chriſtian as thou art: but if I finde it otherwiſe, I will continue as I am, a Iew.

Iehannot hearing theſe words, became exceeding ſorrowfull, and ſayd within himſelfe; I haue loſt all the paines which I did thinke to be well employed, as hoping to haue this man conuerted heere. For, if he go to the Court of Rome, and behold there the wickednes of the Prieſts liues, farewell all hope in me, of euer ſeeing him to become a Chriſtian. But rather, were he already a Chriſtian, without all queſtion he would turne a Iew. And ſo going neerer to *Abraham*, he ſaid. Alas my louing friend, why ſhouldſt thou vndertake ſuch a tedious trauel, and ſo great a charge, as thy iourney from hence to Rome will coſt thee? Conſider, that to a

rich man (as thou art) trauaile by land or Sea is full of infinite dangers. Doest thou not thinke, that here are Religious men enow, who wil gladly bestow Baptisme vpon thee. To mee therefore it plainely appeareth, that such a voyage is to no purpose. If thou standest vpon any doubt or scruple, concerning the faith whereto I wish thee; where canst thou desire conference with greater Doctours, or men more learned in all respects, then this famous Cittie doth affoord thee, to resolue thee in any questionable case? Thou must thinke, that the Prelates are such there, as heere thou seest them to be, and yet they must needes be in much better condition at Rome, because they are neere to the principall Pastor. And therefore, if thou wilt credit my counsell, reserue this iourney to some time more conuenient, when the Iubilee of generall Pardon happeneth, and then (perchance) I will beare thee company, and go along with thee as in vowed Pilgrimage.

Whereto the Iew replyed: I beleeue *Iehannot* that all which thou hast said, may be so. But, to make short with thee, I am fully determined (if thou wouldst haue me a Christian, as thou instantly vrgest me to bee) to goe thither, for otherwise, I will continue as I am. *Iehannot* perceyuing his setled purpose, said: Goe then in Gods name. But perswaded himselfe, that hee would neuer become a Christian, after he had once seene the Court of Rome: neuertheless, he counted his labour not altogither lost, in regard he bestowed it to a good end, and honest intentions are to be commended.

The Iew mounted on horse-backe, and made no lingering in his iourney to Rome; where being arriued, he was very honourably entertained by other Iewes dwelling in Rome. And during the time of his abiding there (without reuealing to any one the reason of his comming thither) very heedfully he obserued the maner of the Popes life, of the Cardinals, Prelates, and all the Courtiers. And being a man very discreet and iudicious, hee apparantly perceiued, both by his owne eye, and further information of friends; that from the highest to the lowest (without any restraint, remorse of conscience, shame, or feare of punishment) all sinned in abhominable luxurie, and not naturally onely, but in foule Sodomie, so that the credite of Strumpets and Boyes was not small, and yet might be too easily obtayned. Moreouer, drunkards, belly-Gods, and seruants of the paunch, more then of any thing else (euen like brutish beasts after their luxury) were euery where to be met withall. And vpon further obseruation, hee saw all men so couetous and greedie of Coyne, that euery thing was bought and solde for ready money, not onely the blood of men, but (in plaine termes) the faith of Christians, yea, and matters of diuinest qualities, how, or to whomsoeuer appertaining, were it for Sacrifices or Benefices, whereof was made no mean merchandize, and more Brokers were there to be found (then in *Paris* attending vpon all Trades) of manifest Symonie, vnder the nice name of Negotiation, and for gluttony, not sustentation: euen as if God had not knowne the signification of vocables, nor the intentions of wicked hearts, but would

suffer

ſuffer himſelfe to bee deceiued by the outward names of things, as wretched men commonly vſe to doe.

Theſe things, and many more (fitter for ſilence, then for publication) were ſo deepely diſpleaſing to the Iew, being a moſt ſober and modeſt man; that he had ſoone ſeene enough, reſoluing on his returne to *Paris*, which very ſpeedily he performed. And when *Iehannot* heard of his arriuall, crediting much rather other newes from him, then euer to ſee him a conuerted Chriſtian; he went to welcome him, and kindly they feaſted one another. After ſome few dayes of reſting, *Iehannot* demanded of him; what he thought of our holy Father the Pope and his Cardinals, and generally of all the other Courtiers? Whereto the Iew readily anſwered; It is ſtrange *Iehannot*, that God ſhould giue them ſo much as he doth. For I will truely tell thee, that if I had beene able to conſider all thoſe things, which there I haue both heard and ſeene: I could then haue reſolued my ſelfe, neuer to haue found in any Prieſt, either ſanctity, deuotion, good worke, example of honeſt life, or any good thing elſe beſide. But if a man deſire to ſee luxury, auarice, gluttony, and ſuch wicked things, yea, worſe, if worſe may be, and held in generall eſtimation of all men; let him but goe to *Rome*, which I thinke rather to be the forge of damnable actions, then any way leaning to grace or goodneſſe. And, for ought I could perceiue, me thinkes your chiefe Paſtour, and (conſequently) all the reſt of his dependants, doe ſtriue ſo much as they may (with all their engine arte and endeuour) to bring to nothing, or elſe to baniſh quite out of the world, Chriſtian Religion, whereof they ſhould be the ſupport and foundation.

But becauſe I perceiue, that their wicked intent will neuer come to paſſe, but contrariwiſe, that your faith enlargeth it ſelfe, ſhining euery day much more cleare and ſplendant: I gather thereby euidently, that the bleſſed Spirit is the true ground and defence thereof, as being more true and holy then any other. In which reſpect, whereas I ſtood ſtiffe and obſtinate againſt the good admonitions, and neuer minded to become a Chriſtian: now I freely open my heart vnto thee, that nothing in the world can or ſhall hinder me, but I will be a Chriſtian, as thou art. Let vs therefore preſently goe to the Church, and there (according to the true cuſtome of your holy faiths) helpe me to be baptized.

Iehannot, who expected a farre contrary concluſion then this, hearing him ſpeake it with ſuch conſtancy; was the very gladdeſt man in the world, and went with him to the Church of *Noſtre Dame* in *Paris*, where he requeſted the Prieſts there abiding, to beſtow baptiſme on *Abraham*, which they ioyfully did, hearing him ſo earneſtly to deſire it. *Iehannot* was his Godfather, and named him *Iohn*, and afterward, by learned Diuines he was more fully inſtructed in the grounds of our faith; wherein he grew of great vnderſtanding, and led a very vertuous life.

Melchiſedech a Iew, by recounting a Tale of three Rings, to the great Soldan, named Saladine, preuented a great danger which was prepared for him.

The third Nouell.

Whereby the Author, approuing the Chriſtian Faith, ſheweth, how beneficiall a ſodaine and ingenious anſwere may fall out to bee, eſpecially when a man finds himſelfe in ſome euident danger.

MAdame *Neiphila* hauing ended her Diſcourſe, which was well allowed of by all the company; it pleaſed the Queene, that Madam *Philomena* ſhould next ſucceede in order, who thus began.



The Tale deliuered by *Neiphila*, maketh mee remember a doubtfull caſe, which ſometime hapned to another Iew. And becauſe that God, and the truth of his holy Faith, hath bene already very well diſcourſed on: it ſhall not ſeeme vnfitting (in my poore opinion) to deſcend now into the accidents of men. Wherefore, I will relate a matter vnto you, which being attentiuely heard and conſidered; may make you much more circumſpect, in anſwering to diuers queſtions and demands, then (perhaps) otherwiſe you would be. Conſider then (moſt woorthy aſſembly) that like as folly or dulneſſe, many times hath ouerthrowne ſome men from place of eminencie, into moſt great and greeuous miſeries: euen ſo, diſcreet ſenſe and good vnderſtanding, hath deliuered many out of irkſome perils, and ſeated them in ſafeſt ſecurity. And to proue it true, that folly hath made many fall from high authority, into poore and deſpiſed calamity; may be auouched by infinite examples, which now were needeleſſe to remember: But, that good ſenſe and able vnderſtanding, may prooue to be the occaſion of great deſolation, without happy preuenti-

on,

on, I will declare vnto you in very few words, and make it good according to my promiſe.

Saladine, was a man ſo powerfull and valiant, as not onely his very valour made him Soldan of Babylon, and alſo gaue him many ſignall victories, ouer Kings of the Sarrazens, and of Chriſtians likewiſe. Hauing in diuers Warres, and other magnificent employments, of his owne, waſted all his treaſure, and (by reaſon of ſome ſodaine accident happening to him) ſtanding in neede to vſe ſome great ſumme of money, yet not readily knowing where, or how to procure it; he remembred a rich Iew named *Melchiſedech*, that lent out money to vſe or intereſt in the City of *Alexandria*. This man he imagined beſt able to furniſh him, if he could be won to do it willingly: but he was knowne to be ſo gripple and miſerable, that hardly any meanes would drawe him to it. In the end, conſtrained by neceſſity, and labouring his wits for ſome apt deuice whereby he might haue it: he concluded, though hee might not compell him to do it, yet by a practiſe ſhadowed with good reaſon to enſnare him. And hauing ſent for him, entertained him very familiarly in his Court, and ſitting downe by him, thus began.

Honeſt man, I haue often heard it reported by many, that thou art very skilfull, and in caſes concerning God, thou goeſt beyond all other of theſe times: wherefore, I would gladly bee informed by thee, which of thoſe three Lawes or Religions, thou takeſt to be trueſt; that of the Iew, the oher of the Sarazen, or that of the Chriſtian? The Iew, being a very wiſe man, plainely perceiued; that *Saladine* ſought to entrap him in his anſwere, and ſo to raiſe ſome quarrell againſt him. For, if he commended any one of thoſe Lawes aboue the other, he knew that *Saladine* had what he aymed at. Wherefore, bethinking himſelfe to ſhape ſuch an anſwere, as might no way trouble or entangle him: ſummoning all his ſences together, and conſidering, that dallying with the Soldane might redound to his no meane danger, thus he replied.

My Lord, the queſtion propounded by you, is faire and worthy, and to anſwere my opinion truely thereof, doth neceſſarily require ſome time of conſideration, if it might ſtand with your liking to allow it: but if not, let me firſt make entrance to my reply, with a pretty tale, and well worth the hearing. I haue oftentimes heard it reported, that (long ſince) there was a very wealthy man, who (among other precious Iewels of his owne) had a goodly Ring of great valew; the beauty and eſtimation whereof, made him earneſtly deſirous to leaue it as a perpetuall memory and honour to his ſucceſſors. Whereupon, he willed and ordained, that he among his male children, with whom this Ring (being left by the Father) ſhould be found in cuſtody after his death; hee and none other, was to bee reputed his heire, and to be honoured and reuerenced by all the reſt, as being the prime and worthieſt perſon. That Sonne, to whom this Ring was left by him, kept the ſame courſe to his poſterity, dealing (in all reſpects) as his predeceſſor had done; ſo that (in ſhort time) the Ring (from hand to hand) had many owners by Legacie.

At length, came to the hand of one, who had three ſonnes, all of them goodly and vertuous perſons, and verie obedient to their Father: in which regard, he affected them all equally, without any difference or partiall reſpect. The cuſtome of this Ring being knowne to them, each one of them (coueting to beare eſteeme aboue the other) deſired (as hee could beſt make his meanes) his Father, that in regard he was now growne very old, he would leaue that Ring to him, whereby he ſhould bee acknowledged for his heire. The good man, who loued no one of them more then the other, knew not how to make his choiſe, nor to which of them he ſhould leaue the Ring: yet hauing paſt his promiſe to them ſeuerally, he ſtudied by what meanes to ſatisfie them all three. Wherefore, ſecretly hauing conferred with a curious and excellent Goldſmith, hee cauſed two other Rings to bee made, ſo really reſembling the firſt made Ring, that himſelfe (when he had them in his hand) could not diſtinguiſh which was the right one.

Lying vpon his death-bed, and his Sonnes then plying him by their beſt opportunities, he gaue to each of them a Ring. And they (after his death) preſuming ſeuerally vpon their right to the inheritance and honor, grew to great contradiction and ſquare: each man producing then his Ring, which were ſo truely all alike in reſemblance, as no one could know the right Ring from the other. And therefore, ſuite in Law, to diſtinguiſh the true heire to his Father, continued long time, and ſo it dooth yet to this very day. In like manner my good Lord, concerning thoſe three Lawes giuen by God the Father, to three ſuch people as you haue propounded: each of them do imagine that they haue the heritage of God, and his true Law, and alſo duely to performe his Commandements; but which of them do ſo indeede, the queſtion (as of the three Rings) is yet remaining.

Saladine well perceyuing, that the Iew was too cunning to bee caught in his ſnare, and had anſwered ſo well, that to doe him further violence, would redound vnto his perpetuall diſhonour; reſolued to reueale his neede and extremity, and try if hee would therein friendly ſted him. Hauing diſcloſed the matter, and how he purpoſed to haue dealt with him, if he had not returned ſo wiſe an anſwere; the Iew lent him ſo great a ſum of money as hee demanded, and *Saladine* repayed it againe to him iuſtly, giuing him other great gifts beſide: reſpecting him as his eſpeciall friend, and maintaining him in very honourable condition, neere vnto his owne perſon.

A Monke hauing committed an offence, deseruing to be very greeuously punished, freed himselfe from the paine to be inflicted on him, by wittily reprehending his Abbot, with the very same fault.

The Fourth Nouell.

Wherein may bee noted, that such men as will reproue those errours in others, which remaine in themselues, commonly are the Authors of their owne reprehension.

SO ceased Madame *Philomena*, after the conclusion of her Tale: when *Dioneus* sitting next vnto her, (without tarrying for any other command from the Queene, knowing by the order formerly begun, that hee was to follow in the same course) spake in this manner.



Gracious Ladies, if I faile not in vnderstanding your generall intention, we are purposely assembled heere to tell Tales; and especially such as may please our selues. In which respect, because nothing should be done disorderly, I hold it lawfull for euery one (as our Queene decreed before her Dignity) to relate such a Nouelle, as in their owne iudgement may cause most contentment. Wherefore hauing heard that by the good admonitions of *Iehannot de Cheuigny*, *Abraham* the Iew was aduised to the saluation of his soule, and *Melchisedech* (by his witty vnderstanding) defended his riches from the traines of *Saladine*: I now purpose to tell you in a few plaine words, without feare of receiuing any reprehension, how cunningly a Monke compassed his deliuerance, from a punishment intended towards him.

There was in the Country of *Lunigiana* (which is not far distant from our owne) a Monastery, which sometime was better furnished with holinesse

lineſſe and Religion, then now adayes they are: wherein liued (among diuers other) a yong Nouice Monke, whoſe hot and luſty diſpoſition (being in the vigour of his yeeres) was ſuch, as neither Faſts nor prayers had any great power ouer him. It chanced on a faſting day about high noon, when all the other Monkes were aſleep in their Dormitaries or Dorters, this frolicke Friar was walking alone in their Church, which ſtoode in a very ſolitarie place, where ruminating on many matters by himſelfe, hee eſpyed a prettie handſome Wench (ſome Husbandmans daughter in the Countrey, that had beene gathering rootes and hearbes in the field) vpon her knees before an Altar; whom he had no ſooner ſeene, but immediately hee felt effeminate temptations, and ſuch as ill fitted with his profeſſion.

Laſciuious deſire, and no religious deuotion, made him draw neere her, and whether vnder ſhrift (the onely cloake to compaſſe carnal affections) or ſome other as cloſe conference to as pernitious and vile a purpoſe, I know not: but ſo farre he prevailed vpon her frailety, and ſuch a bargaine paſſed betweene them, that from the Church, he wonne her to his Chamber, before any perſon could perceiue it. Now, while this yong luſty Monke (tranſported with ouer-fond affection) was more careleſſe of his dalliance, then he ſhould haue bene: the Lord Abbot being newly ariſen from ſleepe, and walking ſoftly about the Cloyſter, came to the Monkes Dorter doore, where hearing what noyſe was made betweene them, and a feminine voyce more ſtrange then hee was wont to heare; he layed his eare cloſe to the Chamber doore, and plainly perceiued that a woman was within. Wherewith being much moued, he intended ſodainly to make him open the doore; but (vpon better conſideration) hee conceyued it farre more fitting for him, to returne backe to his owne Chamber, and tarry till the Monke ſhould come forth.

The Monke, though his delight with the Damoſell was extraordinary, yet feare and ſuſpition followed vpon it; for, in the very height of all his wantonneſſe, he heard a ſoft treading about the doore. And prying thorow a ſmall creuice in the ſame dore, perceiued apparantly, that the Abbot himſelfe ſtood liſtening there, and could not be ignorant but that the Maide was with him in the Chamber. As after pleaſure enſueth paine, for the veniall Monke knew well enough (though wanton heate would not let him heede it before) that moſt greeuous puniſhment muſt bee inflicted on him, which made him ſad beyond all meaſure: Neuertheleſſe, without diſcloſing his diſmay to the yong Maiden, he began to conſider with himſelfe on many meanes, whereby to find out one that might beſt fit his turne. And ſuddenly conceited an apt ſtratagem, which ſorted to ſuch effect as he would haue it: whereupon, ſeeming ſatisfied for that ſeaſon, he tolde the Damoſell, that (being carefull of her credit) as hee had brought her in vnſeene of any, ſo he would free her from thence againe, deſiring her to tarrie there (without making any noyſe at all) vntill ſuch time as he returned to her.

Going forth of the chamber, and locking it faſt with the key, he went directly

directly to the Lord Abbots lodging, and deliuering him the saide key(as euery Monke vsed to doe the like,when he went abroade out of the Conuent) setting a good countenance on the matter, boldly saide; My Lord, I haue not yet brought in all my part of the wood, which lieth ready cut downe in the Forrest; and hauing now conuenient time to doe it, if you please to giue me leaue, I will goe and fetch it. The Abbot perswading himselfe, that he had not beene discouered by the Monke, and to be resolued more assuredly in the offence committed; being not a little iocund of so happy an accident,gladly tooke the key,and gaue him leaue to fetch the wood.

No sooner was he gone,but the Abbot beganne to consider with himselfe,what he were best to doe in this case,either(in the presence of all the other Monkes) to open the Chamber doore, that so the offence being knowne to them all, they might haue no occasion of murmuring against him,when he proceeded in the Monkes punishment; or rather should first vnderstand of the Damosell her selfe, how, and in what manner shee was brought thither. Furthermore, he considered, that shee might be a woman of respect, or some such mans daughter, as would not take it well, to haue her disgraced before all the Monkes. Wherefore hee concluded, first to see (himselfe) what shee was, and then(afterward)to resolue vpon the rest. So going very softly to the Chamber, and entring in, locked the doore fast with the key, when the poore Damosell thinking it had beene the gallant young Monke; but finding it to be the Lord Abbot, shee fell on her knees weeping, as fearing now to receiue publike shame, by being betrayed in this vnkinde manner.

My Lord Abbot looking demurely on the Maide, and perceiuing her to be faire, feate, and louely; felt immediately (although he was olde)no lesse spurring on to fleshly desires, then the young Monke before had done; whereupon he beganne to conferre thus priuately with himselfe. Why should I not take pleasure, when I may freely haue it? Cares and molestations I endure euery day, but sildome find such delights prepared for me. This is a delicate sweete young Damosell, and here is no eye that can discouer me. If I can enduce her to doe as I would haue her, I know no reason why I should gaine-say it. No man can know it, or any tongue blaze it abroade; and sinne so concealed,is halfe pardoned. Such a faire fortune as this is,perhaps hereafter will neuer befall me; and therefore I hold it wisedome, to take such a benefit when a man may enioy it.

Vpon this immodest meditation, and his purpose quite altered which became for; he went neerer to her, and very kindly began to comfort her, desiring her to forbeare weeping: and (by further insinuating speeches) acquainted her with his amorous intention. The Maide, who was made neither of yron nor diamond, and seeking to preuent one shame by another, was easily wonne to the Abbots will,which caused him to embrace and kisse her often.

Our lusty young nouice Monke, whom the Abbot imagined to bee gone for wood, had hid himselfe aloft vpon the roofe of the Dorter, where,

where, when he saw the Abbot enter alone into the Chamber, he lost a great part of his former feare, promising to himselfe a kinde of perswasion, that somewhat would ensue to his better comfort; but when he beheld him lockt into the Chamber, then his hope grew to vndoubted certainty. A little chincke or creuice fauoured him, whereat he could both heare and see, whatsoeuer was done or spoken by them: so, when the Abbot thought hee had staide long enough with the Damosell, leauing her still there, and locking the doore fast againe, hee returned thence to his owne Chamber.

Within some short while after, the Abbot knowing the Monke to be in the Conuent, and supposing him to be lately returned with the wood, determined to reproue him sharpely, and to haue him closely imprisoned, that the Damosell might remaine solie to himselfe. And causing him to be called presently before him, with a very stearne and angry countenance, giuing him many harsh and bitter speeches, commanded, that he should be clapt in prison.

The Monke very readily answered, saying. My good Lord, I haue not yet beene so long in the Order of Saint *Benedict*, as to learne all the particularities thereto belonging. And beside Sir, you neuer shewed mee or any of my Brethren, in what manner we young Monkes ought to vse women, as you haue otherwise done for our custome of prayer and fasting. But seeing you haue so lately therein instructed mee, and by your owne example how to doe it: I heere solemnely promise you, if you please to pardon me but this one error, I will neuer faile therein againe, but dayly follow what I haue seene you doe.

The Abbot, being a man of quicke apprehension, perceiued instantly by this answere; that the Monke not onely knew as much as he did, but also had seene (what was intended) that hee should not. Wherefore, finding himselfe to be as faulty as the Monke, and that hee could not shame him, but worthily had deserued as much himselfe; pardoning him, and imposing silence on eithers offence: they conuayed the poore abused Damosell forth of their doores, she purposing (neuer after) to transgresse in the like manner.

The Lady Marquesse of Montferrat, *with a Banquet of Hennes, and diuers other gracious speeches beside, represseth the fond loue of the King of* France.

The fift Nouell.

Declaring, that wise and vertuous Ladies, ought to hold their chastitie in more esteeme, then the greatnesse and treasures of Princes: and that a discreete Lord should not offer modestie violence.

THE Tale reported by *Dioneus*, at the first hearing of the Ladies, began to rellish of some immodestie, as the bashfull blood mounting vp into their faces, deliuered by apparant testimonie. And beholding one another with scarse-pleasing lookes, during all the time it was in discoursing, no sooner

ſooner had he concluded : but with a few milde and gentle ſpeeches, they gaue him a modeſt reprehenſion, and meaning to let him know that ſuch tales ought not to be tolde among women. Afterward, the Queene commaunded Madam *Fiammetta*, (ſitting on a banke of flowers before her) to take her turne as next in order; and ſhe, ſmiling with ſuch a virgin bluſh, as very beautifully became her, began in this manner.



It is no little ioy to mee, that we vnderſtand ſo well (by the diſcourſes already paſt) what power conſiſteth in the deliuery of wiſe and readie anſweres; And becauſe it is a great part of ſence and iudgement in men, to affect women of greater birth and quality then themſelues, as alſo an admirable fore-ſight in women, to keepe off from being ſurprized in loue, by Lords going beyond them in degree : a matter offereth it ſelfe to my memory, well deſeruing my ſpeech and your attention, how a Gentlewoman (both in word and deede) ſhould defend her honor in that kind, when importunity laboureth to betray it.

The Marqueſſe of *Montferrat* was a worthy and valiant Knight, who being Captaine Generall for the Church, the neceſſary ſeruice required his company on the Seas, in a goodly Army of the Chriſtians againſt the Turkes. Vpon a day, in the Court of King *Philip*, ſirnamed the one-eyed King (who likewiſe made preparation in France, for a royall aſſiſtance to that expedition) as many ſpeeches were deliuered, concerning the valour and manhoode of this Marqueſſe : it fortuned, that a Knight vvas then preſent, who knew him very familiarly, and he gaue an addition to the former commendation, that the whole world contained not a more equall couple in marriage, then the Marqueſſe & his Lady. For, as among all knights, the Marqueſſe could hardly be paraleld for Armes and Ho-

nour; euen ſo his wife, in compariſon of all other Ladies, was ſcarcely matchable for beauty and vertue. Which words were ſo weighty in the apprehenſion of King *Philip*, that ſodainly (hauing as yet neuer ſeen her) he began to affect her very earneſtly, concluding to embarke himſelfe at *Gennes* or *Genoua*, there to ſet forward on the intended voyage, & iournying thither by land, hee would ſhape ſome honeſt excuſe to ſee the Lady Marqueſſe, whoſe Lord being then from home, opinion perſwaded him ouer fondly, that he ſhould eaſily obtaine the iſſue of his amorous deſire.

When hee was come within a dayes iourney, where the Ladie Marqueſſe then lay; he ſent her word that ſhe ſhould expect his company on the morrow at dinner. The Lady, being ſingularly wiſe and iudicious, anſwered the Meſſenger, that ſhe reputed the Kings comming to her, as an extraordinary grace and fauour, and that he ſhould bee moſt heartily welcome. Afterward, entring into further conſideration with her ſelfe, what the King might meane by his priuate viſitation, knowing her Huſband to be from home, and it to bee no meane barre to his apter entertainement: at laſt ſhe diſcreetly conceited (and therin was not deceiued) that babling report of her beauty and perfections, might thus occaſion the Kings comming thither, his iourney lying elſe a quite contrary way. Notwithſtanding, being a Princely Lady, & ſo loyal a wife as euer liued ſhee intended to giue him her beſt entertainement: ſummoning the chiefeſt Gentlemen in the Country together, to take due order (by their aduice) for giuing the King a gracious Welcome. But concerning the dinner, and diet for ſeruice to his Table, that remained onely at her own diſpoſing.

Sending preſently abroad, and buying all the Hennes that the Country affoorded, ſhee commaunded her Cookes, that onely of them (without any other prouiſion beſide) they ſhould prepare all the ſeruices that they could deuiſe. On the morrow, the King came according to his promiſe, and was moſt honourably welcomed by the Lady, who ſeemed in his eye (far beyond the Knights ſpeeches of her) the faireſt creature that euer he had ſeene before; whereat he meruailed not a little, extolling her perfections to be peereleſſe, which much the more enflamed his affections, and (almoſt) made his deſires impatient. The King beeing withdrawne into ſuch Chambers, as orderly were prepared for him, and as beſeemed ſo great a Prince: the houre of dinner drawing on, the King and the Lady Marqueſſe were ſeated at one Table, and his attendants placed at other tables, anſwerable to their degrees of honour.

Plenty of diſhes being ſerued in, and the rareſt Wines that the Countrey yeelded, the King had more minde to the faire Lady Marques, then any meate that ſtood on the Table. Neuertheleſſe, obſeruing each ſeruice after other, and that all the Viands (though variouſly cooked, and in diuers kindes) were nothing elſe but Hennes onely, he began to wonder; and ſo much the rather, becauſe he knew the Country to be of ſuch quality, that it afforded all plenty both of Fowles and Veniſon: beſide, after

the

the time of his comming was heard, they had reſpite enough, both for hawking and hunting; and therefore it encreaſed his maruell the more, that nothing was prouided for him, but Hennes onely: wherein to be the better reſolued, turning a merry countenance to the Lady, thus he ſpake. Madam, are Hennes onely bred in this Country, and no Cockes? The Lady Marqueſſe, very well vnderſtanding his demand, which fitted her with an apt opportunity, to thwart his idle hope, and defend her owne honour; boldly returned the King this anſwere. Not ſo my Lord, but women and wiues, howſoeuer they differ in garments and graces one from another; yet notwithſtanding, they are all heere as they bee in other places.

When the King heard this reply, he knew well enough the occaſion of his Henne dinner, as alſo, what vertue lay couched vnder her anſwere; perceiuing apparantly, that wanton words would proue but in vaine, and ſuch a woman was not eaſily to be ſeduced; wherefore, as hee grew enamored on her inconſiderately, ſo he found it beſt fitting for his honour, to quench this heate with wiſedome diſcreetly. And ſo, without any more words, or further hope of ſpeeding in ſo vnkingly a purpoſe, dinner being ended, by a ſudden departing, he ſmoothly ſhadowed the cauſe of his comming, and thanking her for the honour ſhee had done him, commended her to her chaſte diſpoſition, and poſted away with ſpeede to *Gennes*.

An honeſt plaine meaning man, (ſimply and conſcionably) reprehended the malignity, hypocriſie, and miſdemeanour of many Religious perſons.

The ſixt Nouell.

Declaring, that in few, diſcreete, and well placed words, the couered craft of Church-men may bee iuſtly reproued, and their hypocriſie honeſtly diſcouered.

MAdam *Æmilia* ſitting next to the gentle Lady *Fiammetta*, perceiuing the modeſt chaſtiſement, which the vertuous Lady Marqueſſe had giuen to the King of *France*, was generally graced by the whole Aſſembly; began (after the Queene had thereto appointed her) in theſe words. Nor will I conceale the deſerued reprehenſion, which an honeſt ſimple lay-man, gaue to a couetous holy Father, in very few words; yet more to be commended, then derided.

Not long ſince (worthy Ladies) there dwelt in our owne natiue City, a Friar Minor, an Inquiſitor after matters of Faith; who, although he laboured greatly to ſeeme a ſanctified man, and an earneſt affecter of Chriſtian Religion, (as all of them appeare to be in outward ſhew;) yet he was a much better Inquiſitor after them that had their purſes plenteouſly ſtored with money, then of ſuch as were ſlenderly grounded in Faith. By which diligent continued care in him, he found out a man, more rich in purſe, then vnderſtanding; and yet not ſo defectiue in matters of faith, as miſguided by his owne ſimple ſpeaking, and (perhaps) when his braine

was well warmed with wine, words fell more fooliſhly from him, then in better iudgement they could haue done.



Being on a day in company, (very little differing in quality from him ſelfe) he chanced to ſay; that he had beene at ſuch good wine, as God himſelfe did neuer drink better. Which words (by ſome Sicophant then in preſence) being carried to this curious Inquiſitor, and he well knowing, that the mans faculties were great, and his bagges ſwolne vp full with no meane abundance: *Cum gladijs & fuſtibus*; With Booke, Bell, and Candle, he rayſed an hoaſt of execrations againſt him, and the Sumner cited him with a ſolemne Proceſſe to appeare before him, vnderſtanding ſufficiently, that this courſe would ſooner fetch money from him, then amend any misbeliefe in the man; for no further reformation did he ſeeke after.

The man comming before him, hee demanded, if the accuſation intimated againſt him, was true or no? Whereto the honeſt man anſwered, that he could not denie the ſpeaking of ſuch words, and declared in what manner they were vttered. Preſently the Inquiſitor, moſt deuoutly addicted to Saint *Iohn* with the golden beard, ſaide; What? Doeſt thou make our Lord a drinker, and a curious quaffer of wines, as if he were a glutton, a belly god, or a Tauerne haunter, as thou, and other drunkards are. Being an hypocrite, as thou art, thou thinkeſt this to be but a light matter, becauſe it may ſeeme ſo in thine owne opinion: but I tell thee plainely, that it deſerueth fire and faggot, if I ſhould proceede in Iuſtice to inflict it on thee: with theſe, and other ſuch like threatning words, as alſo a very ſtearne and angry countenance, he made the man beleeue himſelfe to be an Epicure, and that hee denied the eternity of the ſoule; whereby he fell into

ſuch

ſuch a trembling feare, as doubting indeede, leaſt he ſhould be burned; that, to be more mercifully dealt withal, he rounded him in the eare, and by ſecret meanes, ſo annointed his hands with Saint *Iohns* golden greaſe (a verie ſingular remedie againſt the Diſeaſe Peſtilentiall in couetous Prieſts, eſpecially Friars Minors, that dare touch no money) as the caſe became very quickly altered.

This ſoueraigne Vnction was of ſuch vertue (though *Galen* ſpeakes not a word thereof among all his cheefeſt Medicines) and ſo farre preuailed, that the terrible threatning words of fire and faggot, became meerly frozen vp, and gracious language blew a more gentle and calmer ayre; the Inquiſitor deliuering him an hallowed Crucifixe, creating him a Soldier of the Croſſe (becauſe he had payed Croſſes good ſtore for it,) and euen as if he were to trauell vnder that Standard to the holy Land; ſo did hee appoint him a home-paying pennance, namely, to viſit him thrice euery weeke in his Chamber, and to annoint his hands with the ſelfe-ſame yellow vnguent, and afterward, to heare Maſſe of the holy Croſſe, viſiting him alſo at dinner time, which being ended, to do nothing all the reſt of the day, but according as he directed him.

The ſimple man, yet not ſo ſimple, but ſeeing that this weekely greazing the Inquiſitors hands, would in time graſpe away all his gold, grew weary of this annointing, and began to conſider with himſelfe, how to ſtay the courſe of this chargeable pennance. And comming one morning (according to his iniunction) to heare Maſſe, in the Goſpell he obſerued theſe words; *You ſhall receiue an hundred for one, and ſo poſſeſſe eternall life*; which ſaying, he kept perfectly in his memory: and as he was commanded, at dinner time, he came to the Inquiſitor, finding him (among his fellowes) ſeated at the Table. The Inquiſitor preſently demaunded of him, whether he had heard Maſſe that morning, or no? Yes Sir, replyed the man verily readily. Haſt thou heard any thing therein (quoth the Inquiſitor) whereof thou art doubtfull, or deſirſt to be further informed? Surely Sir, anſwered the plaine-meaning man, I make no doubt of any thing I haue heard, but do beleeue all conſtantly: onely one thing troubleth me much, and maketh me very compaſſionate of you, & of all theſe holy Fathers your brethren, perceiuing in what wofull and wretched eſtate you will be, when you ſhall come into another world. What words are theſe, quoth the Inquiſitor? And why art thou moued to ſuch compaſſion of vs? O good Sir, ſaide the man, do you remember the wordes in the Goſpell this morning, You ſhall receiue an hundred for one? That is verie true replyed the Inquiſitor, but what mooueth thee to vrge thoſe words?

I will tell you Sir, anſwered the plain fellow, ſo it might pleaſe you not to be offended. Since the time of my reſorting hither, I haue daily ſeene many poore people at your doore, and (out of your abundance) when you and your Brethren haue fed ſufficiently, euery one hath had a good meſſe of Pottage: now Sir, if for euery diſhfull giuen, you are ſure to receiue an hundred againe, you will all be meerely drowned in pottage. Al-

though the reſt (ſitting at the Table with the Inquiſitor) laughed heartily at this ieſt; yet he found himſelfe toucht in another nature, hauing hypocritically receiued for one poore offence, aboue three hundred peeces of Gold, and not a mite to be reſtored againe. But fearing to be further diſcloſed, yet threatning him with another Proceſſe in law, for abuſing the words of the Goſpel, he was content to diſmiſſe him for altogither, without any more golden greaſing in the hand.

Bergamino, by telling a tale of a skilfull man, named Primaſſo, *and of an Abbot of Clugni; honeſtly checked a new kinde of Couetouſneſſe, in Mayſter* Can de la Scala.

The Seuenth Nouell.

Approuing, that it is much vnfitting for a Prince, or great perſon, to bee couetous; but rather to be liberall to all men.

THe courteous demeanor of Madam *Æmilia*, and the quaintneſſe of her diſcourſe, cauſed both the Queene, and the reſt of the company, to commend the inuention of carrying the Croſſe, and the golden oyntment appointed for pennance. Afterward, *Philoſtratus*, who was in order to ſpeake next, began in this manner.



It is a commendable thing (faire Ladies) to hit a But that neuer ſtirreth out of his place: but it is a matter much more admirable, to ſee a thing ſuddainely appearing, and ſildome or neuer frequented before, to bee as ſuddenly hit by an ordinary Archer. The vicious and polluted liues of Prieſts, yeeldeth matter of it ſelfe in many things, deſeruing ſpeech and reprehenſion, as a true But of wickednes, and well worthy to be ſharply

ſhot

ſhot at. And therefore, though that honeſt meaning man did wiſely, in touching Maſter Inquiſitor to the quicke, with the hypocriticall charity of Monkes and Friars, in giuing ſuch things to the poore, as were more meete for Swine, or to be worſe throwne away, yet I hold him more to be commended, who (by occaſion of a former tale, and which I purpoſe to relate) pleaſantly reproued Maſter *Can de la Scala*, a Magnifico and mighty Lord, for a ſudden and vnaccuſtomed couetouſneſſe appearing in him, figuring by other men, that which hee intended to ſay of him, in manner following.

Maſter *Can de la Scala*, as fame ranne abroad of him in all places, was (beyond the infinite fauours of Fortune towards him) one of the moſt notable and magnificent Lords that euer liued in Italy, ſince the daies of *Fredericke* the ſecond, Emperor. He determining to procure a very ſolemne aſſembly at Verona, and many people being met there from diuers places, eſpecially Gentlemen of all degrees; ſuddenly (vpon what occaſion I know not) his minde altred, and hee would not goe forward with his intention. Moſt of them he partly recompenced which were come thither, and they diſmiſſed to depart at their pleaſure, one onely man remained vnreſpected, or in any kinde ſort ſent away, whoſe name was *Bergamino*, a man very pleaſantly diſpoſed, and ſo wittily readie in ſpeaking and anſwering, as none could eaſily credit it, but ſuch as heard him; and although his recompence ſeemed ouer-long delayed, yet hee made no doubt of a beneficiall ending.

By ſome enemies of his Maſter *Can de la Scala* was incenſed, that whatſoeuer he gaue or beſtowed on him, was as ill imployed and vtterly loſt, as if it were throwne into the fire, and therefore he neither did or ſpake any thing to him. Some few dayes being paſſed ouer, and *Bergamino* perceiuing, that hee was neither called, nor any account made of, notwithſtanding many manly good parts in him; obſeruing beſide, that hee found a ſhrewd conſumption in his purſe, his Inne, horſes, and ſeruants, being chargeable to him, he began to grow extremely melancholy, and yet hee attended in expectation day by day, as thinking it farre vnfitting for him, to depart before he was bidden farewell.

Hauing brought with him thither three goodly rich garments, which had beene giuen him by ſundrie Lords, for his more ſightly appearance at this great meeting; the importunate Hoſt being greedie of payment, firſt he deliuered him one of them, & yet not halfe the ſcore being wiped off, the ſecond muſt needes follow; and beſide, except he meant to leaue his lodging, hee muſt liue vpon the third ſo long as it would laſt, till hee ſaw what end his hopes would ſort too. It fortuned, during the time of liuing thus vpon his laſt refuge, that hee met with Maiſter *Can* one day at dinner, where he preſented himſelfe before him, with a diſcontented countenance: which Maiſter *Can* well obſeruing, more to diſtaſte him, then take delight in any thing that could come from him, he ſayd. *Bergamino*, how cheereſt thou? Thou art very melancholly, I prythee tell vs why? *Bergamino* ſuddenly, without any premeditation, yet ſeeming as if

he

he had long considered thereon, reported this Tale.

Sir, I haue heard of a certaine man, named *Primasso*, one skilfully learned in the Grammar, and (beyond all other) a very witty and ready versifier: in regard whereof, he was so much admired, and farre renowned, that such as neuer saw him, but onely heard of him, could easily say, this is *Primasso*. It came to passe, that being once at *Paris*, in poore estate, as commonly he could light on no better fortune (because vertue is slenderly rewarded, by such as haue the greatest possessions) he heard much fame of the Abbot of *Clugni*, a man reputed (next to the Pope) to be the richest Prelate of the Church. Of him he heard wonderfull and magnificent matters, that he alwayes kept an open and hospitable Court, and neuer made refusall of any (from whence soeuer hee came or went) but they did eate and drinke freely there; prouided, that they came when the Abbot was set at the Table. *Primasso* hearing this, and being an earnest desirer to see magnificent and vertuous men, hee resolued to goe see this rare bounty of the Abbot, demanding how far he dwelt from *Paris*? Being answered, about some three Leagues thence. *Primasso* made account, that if he went on betimes in the morning, he should easily reach thither before the houre for dinner.

Being instructed in the way, and not finding any to walke along with him; fearing, if he went without some furnishment, and should stay long there for his dinner, he might (perhaps) complaine of hunger: he therefore carried three loaues of bread with him, knowing that he could meet with water euery where, albeit he vsed to drinke but little. Hauing aptly conueyed his bread about him, he went on his iourny, and arriued at the Lord Abbots Court, an indifferent while before dinner time: wherefore entering into the great Hall, and so from place to place, beholding the great multitude of Tables, bountifull preparation in the Kitchin, and what admirable prouision there was for dinner, he said to himselfe; Truly this man is more magnificent then fame hath made him, because shee speakes too sparingly of him.

While thus he went about, consideting on all these things very respectiuely, he saw the Maister of the Abbots Houshold (because then it was the houre of dinner) command water to be brought for washing hands, so euerie one sitting down at the Table, it fell to the lot of *Primasso*, to sit directly against the doore, whereat the Abbot must enter into the Hall. The custome in this Court was such, that no manner of Foode should be serued to any of the Table, vntill such time as the Lord Abbot was himselfe set: whereupon, euery thing being fit and ready, the Master of the Houshold went to tell his Lord, that nothing now wanted but his onely presence.

The Abbot comming from his Chamber to enter the Hall, looking about him, as hee was wont to doe; the first man hee saw was *Primasso*, who being but in homely habite, and he hauing not seene him before to his remembrance, a present bad conceite possessed his braine, that he neuer saw an vnworthier person, saying within himselfe: See how I giue my

my goods away to bee deuoured. So returning backe to his Chamber againe; commaunded the doore to be made faſt, demaunding of euery man neere about him, if they knew the baſe Knaue that ſate before his entrance into the Hall, and all his ſeruants anſwered no. *Primaſſo* being extreamely hungry, with trauailing on foote ſo farre, and neuer vſed to faſt ſo long; expecting ſtill when meate would be ſerued in, and that the Abbot came not at all: drew out one of his loaues which hee brought with him, and very heartily fell to feeding.

My Lord Abbot, after hee had ſtayed within an indifferent while, ſent forth one of his men, to ſee if the poore fellow was gone, or no. The ſeruant told him, that he ſtayed there, and fed vpon dry bread, which it ſeemed he had brought thither with him. Let him feede on his owne (replyed the Abbot) for he ſhall taſte of none of mine this day. Gladly wold the Abbot, that *Primaſſo* ſhould haue gone thence of himſelfe, and yet held it ſcarſely honeſt in his Lordſhip, to diſmiſſe him by his owne command. *Primaſſo* hauing eaten one of his Loaues, and yet the Abbot was not come; began to feede vpon the ſecond: the Abbot ſtill ſending to expect his abſence, and anſwered as he was before. At length, the Abbot not comming, and *Primaſſo* hauing eaten vp his ſecond loafe, hunger compeld him to begin with the third.

When theſe newes were carried to the Abbot, ſodainly he brake forth and ſaide. What new kinde of needy tricke hath my braine begotte this day? Why do I grow diſdainfull againſt any man whatſoeuer? I haue long time allowed my meate to be eaten by all commers that did pleaſe to viſit me, without exception againſt any perſon, Gentlemen, Yeoman, poore or rich, Marchant or Minſtrill, honeſt man or knaue, neuer refraining my preſence in the Hall, by baſely contemning one poore man. Beleeue me, couetouſneſſe of one mans meate, doth ill agree with mine eſtate and calling. What though he appeareth a wretched fellow to me? He may be of greater merit then I can imagine, and deſerue more honor then I am able to giue him.

Hauing thus diſcourſed with himſelfe, he would needs vnderſtand of whence, and what he was, and finding him to be *Primaſſo*, come onely to ſee the magnificence which he had reported of him, knowing alſo (by the generall fame noyſed euery where of him) that he was reputed to be a learned, honeſt, and ingenious man: he grew greatly aſhamed of his owne folly, and being deſirous to make him an amends, ſtroue many waies how to do him honor. When dinner was ended, the Abbot beſtowed honorable garments on him, ſuch as beſeemed his degree and merit, and putting good ſtore of money in his purſe, as alſo giuing him a good horſe to ride on, left it at his owne free election, whether he would ſtay there ſtill with him, or depart at his pleaſure. Wherewith *Primaſſo* being highly contented, yeelding him the heartieſt thankes he could deuiſe to do, returned to *Paris* on horſe-backe, albeit he came poorely thether on foot.

Maſter *Can de la Scala*, who was a man of good vnderſtanding, perceiued immediately (without any further interpretation) what *Bergamino* meant

meant by this morall, and ſmiling on him, ſaide: *Bergamino*, thou haſt honeſtly expreſſed thy vertue and neceſſities, and iuſtly reproued mine auarice, niggardneſſe, and baſe folly. And truſt me *Bergamino*, I neuer felt ſuch a fit of couetouſneſſe come vpon me, as this which I haue diſhoneſtly declared to thee: and which I will now baniſh from me, with the ſame correction as thou haſt taught mee. So, hauing payed the Hoſt all his charges, redeeming alſo his robes or garments, mounting him on a good Gelding, and putting plenty of Crownes in his purſe, he referd it to his owne choiſe to depart, or dwell there ſtill with him.

Guillaume Bourſier, with a few quaint and familiar words, checkt the miſerable couetouſneſſe of Signior Herminio de Grimaldi.

The eight Nouell.

Which plainly declareth, that a couetous Gentleman, is not worthy of any honor or reſpect.

MAdam *Lauretta*, ſitting next to *Philoſtratus*, when ſhe had heard the witty conceite of *Bergamino*; knowing, that ſhe was to ſay ſomewhat, without iniunction or command, pleaſantly thus began.



This laſt diſcourſe (faire and vertuous company) induceth me to tell you, how an honeſt Courtier reprehended in like manner (and nothing vnprofitably) baſe couetouſneſſe in a Merchant of extraordinary wealth. Which Tale, although (in effect) it may ſeeme to reſemble the former; yet perhaps, it will proue no leſſe pleaſing to you, in regard it ſorted to as good an end.

It is no long time ſince, that there liued in *Gemes* or *Geneway*, a Gentleman

man named Signior *Herminio de Grimaldo*, who(as euery one wel knew) was more rich in inheritances, and ready ſummes of currant money then any other knowne Citizen in *Italy*. And as hee ſurpaſſed other men in wealth, ſo did he likewiſe excell them in wretched Auarice, being ſo miſerably greedy and couetous, as no man in the world could be more wicked that way; becauſe, not onely he kept his purſe lockt vp from pleaſuring any, but denied needfull things to himſelfe, enduring many miſeries onely to auoid expences, contrary to the *Genewayes* generall cuſtom, who alwayes delighted to be decently cloathed, and to haue their dyet of the beſt. By reaſon of which moſt miſerable baſeneſſe, they tooke away from him the Sirname of *Grimaldi*, whereof he was in right deſcended, and called him maſter *Herminio* the couetous Mizer, a nickname very notably agreeing with his gripple nature.

It came to paſſe, that in this time of his ſpending nothing, but multiplying daily by infinite meanes, that a ciuill honeſt Gentleman (a Courtier of ready wit, and diſcourſiue in Languages) came to *Geneway*, being named *Guillaume Bourſier*. A man very farre differing from diuers Courtiers in theſe dayes, who for ſoothing ſhamefull and graceleſſe maners in ſuch as allow them maintenance, are called and reputed to bee Gentlemen, yea ſpeciall fauourites: whereas much more worthily, they ſhould be accounted as knaues and villaines, being borne and bred in all filthineſſe, and skilfull in euery kinde of baſeſt behauiour, not fit to come in Princes Courts. For, whereas in paſſed times, they ſpent their dayes and paines in making peace, when Gentlemen were at warre or diſſenſion, or treating on honeſt marriages, betweene friends and familiars, and (with louing ſpeeches) would recreate diſturbed mindes, deſiring none but commendable exerciſes in Court, and ſharpely reproouing (like Fathers) diſordred life, or ill actions in any, albeit with recompence little, or none at all; theſe vpſtarts now adayes, employ all their paines in detractions, ſowing queſtions and quarrels betweene one another, making no ſpare of lyes & falſhoods. Nay which is worſe, they wil do this in the preſence of any man, vpbraiding him with iniuries, ſhames, and ſcandals (true or not true) vpon the very leaſt occaſion. And by falſe and deceitful flatteries and villanies of their owne inuenting, they make Gentlemen to become as vile as themſelues. For which deteſtable qualities, they are better beloued and reſpected of their miſdemeanored Lords, and recompenced in more bountifull maner, then men of vertuous carriage and deſert. Which is an argument ſufficient, that goodneſſe is gone vp to heauen, and hath quite forſaken theſe loathed lower Regions, where men are drowned in the mud of all abhominable vices.

But returning where I left (being led out of my way by a iuſt and religious anger againſt ſuch deformity) this Gentleman, Maſter *Guillaume Bourſier*, was willingly ſeene, and gladly welcommed by all the beſt men in *Geneway*. Hauing remained ſome few daies in the City, and amongſt other matters, heard much talke of the miſerable couetouſneſſe of maſter *Herminio*, he grew very deſirous to haue a ſight of him. Maſter *Herminio*

had

had already vnderſtood, that this Gentleman, Maſter *Guillaume Bourſier* was vertuouſly diſpoſed, and (how couetouſly ſoeuer hee was inclined) hauing in him ſome ſparkes of noble nature, gaue him very good words, and gracious entertainment, diſcourſing with him on diuers occaſions.

In company of other Geneways with him, he brought him to a new erected houſe of his, a building of great coſt and beauty; where, after he had ſhewne him all the variable rarieties, he beganne thus. Maſter *Guillaume*, no doubt but you haue heard and ſeene many things, and you can inſtruct me in ſome queint conceit or deuice, to be fairly figured in painting, at the entrance into the great Hall of my Houſe. Maſter *Guillaume* hearing him ſpeake ſo ſimply, returned him this anſwer: Sir, I cannot aduiſe you in any thing, ſo rare or vnſeene as you talk of: but how to ſneeze (after a new manner) vpon a full and ouer-cloyed ſtomacke, to auoyde baſe humours that ſtupifie the braine, or other matters of the like quality. But if you would be taught a good one indeede, and had a diſpoſition to ſee it fairely effected, I could inſtruct you in an excellent Emblem, wherwith (as yet) you neuer came acquainted.

Maſter *Herminio* hearing him ſay ſo, and expecting no ſuch anſwer as he had, ſaide, Good Maſter *Guillaume*, tell me what it is, and on my faith I will haue it fairely painted. Whereto Maſter *Guillaume* ſuddenly replied; Do nothing but this Sir: Paint ouer the Portall of your Halles enterance, the liuely picture of Liberality, to bid all your friends better welcome, then hitherto they haue beene. When Maſter *Herminio* heard theſe words, he becam poſſeſſed with ſuch a ſudden ſhame, that his complexion changed from the former paleneſſe, and anſwered thus. Maſter *Guillaume*, I will haue your aduice ſo truly figured ouer my gate, and ſhee ſhall giue ſo good welcome to all my gueſts, that both you, and all theſe Gentlemen ſhall ſay, I haue both ſeene her, and am become reaſonably acquainted with her. From that time forward, the words of Maſter *Guillaume* were ſo effectuall with Signior *Herminio*, that he became the moſt bountifull and beſt houſe-keeper, which liued in his time in *Geneway*: no man more honouring and friendly welcoming both ſtrangers and Citizens, then he continually vſed to do.

The King of Cyprus was wittily reprehended, by the words of a Gentlewoman of Gaſcoigne, and became vertuouſly altered from his vicious diſpoſition.

The Ninth Nouell.

Giuing all men to vnderſtand, that Iuſtice is neceſſary in a King aboue al things elſe whatſoeuer.

THe laſt command of the Queene, remained vpon Madam *Eliſſa*, or *Eliza*, who (without any delaying) thus beganne. Young Ladies, it hath often beene ſeene, that much paine hath beene beſtowed, and many reprehenſions ſpent in vaine, till a word happening at aduenture, and perhaps not purpoſely determined, hath effectually done the deede: as appeareth by the Tale of Madame *Lauretta*, and another of mine owne, where-

wherewith I intend briefly to acquaint you, approuing that when good words are discreetly obserued, they are of soueraigne power and vertue.



In the dayes of the first King of *Cyprus*, after the Conquest made in the holy Land by *Godfrey* of *Bulien*, it tortuned that a Gentlewoman of *Gascoignie*, trauelling in pilgrimage to visit the sacred Sepulcher in *Ierusalem*, returning home againe, arriued at *Cyprus*, where shee was villanously abused by certaine base wretches. Complaining thereof, without any comfort or redresse, shee intended to make her moane to the King of the Country. Whereupon it was tolde her, that therein shee should but loose her labour, because hee was so womanish, and faint-hearted; that not onely he refused to punish with iustice the offence of others, but also suffered shamefull iniuries done to himselfe. And therefore, such as were displeased by his negligence, might easily discharge their spleene against him, and doe him what dishonour they would.

When the Gentlewoman heard this, despairing of any consolation, or reuenge for her wrongs, shee resolued to checke the Kings deniall of iustice, and comming before him weeping, spake in this manner. Sir, I presume not into your presence, as hoping to haue redresse by you, for diuers dishonourable iniuries done vnto me; but, as full satisfaction for them, doe but teach me how you suffer such vile abuses, as daily are offered to your selfe. To the end, that being therein instructed by you, I may the more patiently beare mine owne; which (as God knoweth) I would bestow on you very gladly, because you know so well how to endure them.

The King, who (till then) had beene very bad, dull, and slothfull, euen as sleeping out his time of gouernement, beganne to reuenge the

wrongs done to this Gentlewoman very ſeuerely, and (thence forward) became a moſt ſharpe Iuſticer, for the leaſt offence offered againſt the honour of his Crowne, or to any of his ſubiects beſide.

Maſter Albert *of Bullen, honeſtly made a Lady to bluſh, that thought to haue done as much to him, becauſe ſhee perceiued him, to be amorouſly affected towards her.*

The tenth Nouell.

Wherein is declared, that honeſt loue agreeth with people of all ages.

AFter that Madam *Eliza* ſate ſilent, the laſt charge and labour of the like employment, remained to the Queene her ſelfe; whereupon ſhee beganne thus to ſpeake: Honeſt and vertuous young Ladies, like as the



Starres (when the Ayre is faire and cleere) are the adorning and beauty of Heauen, and flowers (while the Spring time laſteth) doe graciouſly embelliſh the Meadowes; euen ſo ſweete ſpeeches and pleaſing conferences, to paſſe the time with commendable diſcourſes, are the beſt habit of the minde, and an outward beauty to the body: which ornaments of words, when they appeare to be ſhort and ſweete, are much more ſeemely in women, then in men; becauſe long and tedious talking (when it may be done in leſſer time) is a greater blemiſh in women, then in men.

Among vs women, this day, I thinke few or none haue therein offended, but as readily haue vnderſtood ſhort and pithy ſpeeches, as they haue beene quicke and quaintly deliuered. But when anſwering ſuteth not with vnderſtanding, it is generally a ſhame in vs, and all ſuch as liue; becauſe our moderne times haue conuerted that vertue, which was within them

them who liued before vs, into garments of the body, and ſhew whoſe habites were noted to bee moſt gaudy, fulleſt of imbroyderies and fantaſtick faſhions: ſhe was reputed to haue moſt matter in her, and therefore to be more honoured and eſteemed. Neuer conſidering, that whoſoeuer loadeth the backe of an Aſſe, or puts vpon him the richeſt brauerie; he becommeth not thereby a iot the wiſer, or meriteth any more honor then an Aſſe ſhould haue. I am aſhamed to ſpeake it, becauſe in detecting other, I may (perhaps) as iuſtly taxe my ſelfe.

Such imbroydered bodies, tricked and trimmed in ſuch boaſting brauery, are they any thing elſe but as Marble Statues, dumbe, dull, and vtterly inſenſible? Or if (perchaunce) they make an anſwere, when ſome queſtion is demanded of them; it were much better for them to be ſilent. For defence of honeſt deuiſe and conference among men and women, they would haue the world to thinke, that it proceedeth but from ſimplicity and preciſe opinion, couering their owne folly with the name of honeſty: as if there were no other honeſt woman, but ſhee that conferres onely with her Chamber-maide, Laundreſſe, or Kitchin-woman: as if nature had allowed them, (in their owne idle conceite) no other kinde of talking.

Moſt true it is, that as there is a reſpect to be vſed in the action of other things; ſo, time and place are neceſſarily to be conſidered, and alſo whom we conuerſe withall; becauſe ſometimes it happeneth, that a man or woman, intending (by a word of ieſt and merriment) to make another body bluſh or be aſhamed: not knowing what ſtrength of wit remaineth in the oppoſite, doe conuert the ſame diſgrace vpon themſelues. Therefore, that we may the more aduiſedly ſtand vpon our owne guard, and to preuent the common prouerbe, *That Women (in all things) make chayſe of the worſt*: I deſire that this dayes laſt tale, which is to come from my ſelfe, may make vs all wiſe. To the end, that as in gentleneſſe of minde we conferre with other; ſo by excellency in good manners, we may ſhew our ſelues not inferiour to them.

It is not many yeares ſince (worthy aſſembly) that in *Bulloigne* there dwelt a learned Phyſitian, a man famous for skill, and farre renowned, whoſe name was Maſter *Albert*, and being growne aged, to the eſtimate of threeſcore and tenne yeares: hee had yet ſuch a ſprightly diſpoſition, that though naturall heate and vigour had quite ſhaken hands with him, yet amorous flames and deſires had not wholly forſaken him. Hauing ſeene (at a Banquet) a very beautifull woman, being then in the eſtate of widdowhood, named (as ſome ſay) Madam *Margaret de Chiſolieri*, ſhee appeared ſo pleaſing in his eye; that his ſences became no leſſe diſturbed, then as if he had beene of farre younger temper, and no night could any quietneſſe poſſeſſe his ſoule, except (the day before) he had ſeene the ſweet countenance of this louely widdow. In regard whereof, his dayly paſſage was by her doore, one while on horſebacke, and then againe on foot; as beſt might declare his plaine purpoſe to ſee her.

Both ſhee and other Gentlewomen, perceiuing the occaſion of his

passing and repassing; would priuately iest thereat together, to see a man of such yeares and discretion, to be amorously addicted, or ouer-swayed by effeminate passions. For they were partly perswaded, that such wanton Ague fits of Loue, were fit for none but youthfull apprehensions, as best agreeing with their chearefull complexion. Master *Albert* continuing his dayly walkes by the widdowes lodging, it chaunced vpon a Feastiuall day, that shee (accompanied with diuers other women of great account) being sitting at her doore; espied Master *Albert* (farre off) comming thitherward, and a resolued determination among themselues was set downe, to allow him fauourable entertainement, and to iest (in some merry manner) at his louing folly, as afterward they did indeede.

No sooner was he come neere, but they all arose, and courteously inuited him to enter with them, conducting him into a goodly Garden, where readily was prepared choyse of delicate wines and banquetting. At length, among other pleasant and delightfull discourses, they demanded of him; how it was possible for him, to be amorously affected towards so beautifull a woman, both knowing and seeing, how earnestly she was sollicited by many gracious, gallant, and youthfull spirits, aptly suting with her yeares and desires? Master *Albert* perceiuing, that they had drawne him in among them, onely to scoffe and make a mockery of him; set a merry countenance on the matter, and honestly thus answered.

Beleeue mee Gentlewoman (speaking to the widdowe her selfe) it should not appeare strange to any of wisedome and discretion, that I am amorously enclined, and especially to you, because you are well worthy of it. And although those powers, which naturally appertaine to the exercises of Loue, are bereft and gone from aged people; yet good will thereto cannot be taken from them, neither iudgement to know such as deserue to be affected: for, by how much they exceede youth in knowledge and experience, by so much the more hath nature made them meet for respect and reuerence. The hope which incited me (being aged) to loue you, that are affected of so many youthfull Gallants, grew thus. I haue often chaunced into diuers places, where I haue seene Ladies and Gentlwomen, being disposed to a Collation or rere-banquet after dinner, to feede on Lupines, and young Onions or Leekes, and although it may be so, that there is little or no goodnesse at all in them; yet the heads of them are least hurtfull, and most pleasing in the mouth. And you Genltewomen generally (guided by vnreasonable appetite) will hold the heads of them in your hands, and feede vpon the blades or stalkes: which not onely are not good for any thing, but also are of very bad sauour. And what know I (Lady) whether among the choise of friends, it may fit your fancy to doe the like? For, if you did so, it were no fault of mine to be chosen of you, but thereby were all the rest of your suters the sooner answered.

The widdowed Gentlewoman, and all the rest in her company, being bashfully ashamed of her owne and their folly, presently said. Master *Albert*, you haue both well and worthily chastised our ouer-bold presumption,

ſumption, and beleeue me Sir, I repute your loue and kindneſſe of no meane merrit, comming from a man ſo wiſe and vertuous : And therefore (mine honour reſerued) commaund my vttermoſt, as alwayes ready to do you any honeſt ſeruice. Maſter *Albert*, ariſing from his ſeat, thanking the faire widdow for her gentle offer; tooke leaue of her and all the company, and ſhe bluſhing, as all the reſt were therein not much behinde her, thinking to checke him, became chidden her ſelfe, whereby (if we be wiſe) let vs all take warning.

The Sunne was now ſomewhat farre declined, and the heates extremity well worne away: when the Tales of the ſeauen Ladies and three Gentlemen were thus finiſhed, whereupon their Queene pleaſantly ſaid. For this day (faire company) there remaineth nothing more to be done vnder my regiment, but onely to beſtow a new Queene vpon you, who (according to her iudgement) muſt take her turne, and diſpoſe what next is to be done, for continuing our time in honeſt pleaſure. And although the day ſhould endure till darke night; in regard, that when ſome time is taken before, the better preparation may bee made for occaſions to follow, to the end alſo, that whatſoeuer the new Queene ſhall pleaſe to appoint, may be the better fitted for the morrow: I am of opinion, that at the ſame houre as we now ceaſe, the following dayes ſhall ſeuerally begin. And therefore, in reuerence to him that giueth life to all things, and in hope of comfort by our ſecond day; Madam *Philomena*, a moſt wiſe young Lady, ſhall gouerne as Queene this our Kingdome.

So ſoone as ſhe had thus ſpoken, ariſing from her ſeate of dignity, and taking the Lawrell Crowne from off her owne head; ſhe reuerently placed it vpon Madam *Philomenaes*, ſhee firſt of all humbly ſaluting her, and then all the reſt, openly confeſſing her to be their Queene, made gracious offer to obey whatſoeuer ſhe commanded. *Philomena*, her cheekes deliuering a ſcarlet tincture, to ſee her ſelfe thus honoured as their Queene, and well remembring the words, ſo lately vttered by Madam *Pampinea*; that dulneſſe or neglect might not be noted in her, tooke cheerefull courage to her, and firſt of all, ſhe confirmed the officers, which *Pampinea* had appointed the day before, then ſhe ordained for the morrowes prouiſion, as alſo for the ſupper ſo neere approaching, before they departed away from thence, and then thus began.

Louely Companions, although that Madam *Pampinea*, more in her owne courteſie, then any matter of merit remaining in me, hath made me your Queene: I am not determined, to alter the forme of our intended life, nor to be guided by mine owne iudgement, but to aſſociate the ſame with your aſſiſtance. And becauſe you may know what I intend to do, and ſo (conſequently) adde or diminiſh at your pleaſure; in very few words, you ſhall plainly vnderſtand my meaning. If you haue well conſidered on the courſe, which this day hath bene kept by Madam *Pampinea*, me thinkes it hath bene very pleaſing and commendable; in which regard, vntill by ouer-tedious continuation, or other occaſions of irkeſome offence, it ſhall ſeeme iniurious, I am of the minde, not to alter it.

Holding on the order then as we haue begun to doe, will depart from hence to recreate our selues a while, and when the Sun groweth towards setting, we will sup in the fresh and open ayre: afterward, with Canzonets and other pastimes, we will out-weare the houres till bed time. To morrow morning, in the fresh and gentle breath thereof, we will rise and walke to such places, as euery one shall finde fittest for them, euen as already this day we haue done; vntill due time shall summon vs hither againe, to continue our discoursiue Tales, wherein (me thinkes) consisteth both pleasure and profit, especially by discreete obseruation.

Very true it is, that some things which Madam *Pampinea* could not accomplish, by reason of her so small time of authority, I will begin to vndergo, to wit, in restraining some matters whereon we are to speake, that better premeditation may passe vpon them. For, when respite and a little leysure goeth before them, each discourse will sauour of the more formality; and if it might so please you, thus would I direct the order. As since the beginning of the world, all men haue bene guided (by Fortune) thorow diuers accidents and occasions: so beyond all hope and expectation, the issue and successe hath bin good and successfull, and accordingly should euery one of our arguments be chosen.

The Ladies, and the yong Gentlemen likewise, commended her aduice, and promised to imitate it; onely *Dioneus* excepted, who when euery one was silent, spake thus. Madam, I say as all the rest haue done, that the order by you appointed, is most pleasing and worthy to bee allowed. But I intreate one speciall fauour for my selfe, and to haue it confirmed to mee, so long as our company continueth; namely, that I may not be constrained to this Law of direction, but to tell my Tale at liberty, after mine owne minde, and according to the freedome first instituted. And because no one shall imagine, that I vrge this grace of you, as being vnfurnished of discourses in this kinde, I am well contented to bee the last in euery dayes exercise.

The Queene, knowing him to be a man full of mirth and matter, began to consider very aduisedly, that he would not haue mooued this request, but onely to the end, that if the company grew wearied by any of the Tales re-counted, hee would shut vp the dayes disport with some mirthfull accident. Wherefore willingly, and with consent of all the rest he had his suite granted. So, arising all, they walked to a Christall riuer, descending downe a little hill into a valley, graciously shaded with goodly Trees; where washing both their hands and feete, much pretty pleasure passed among them; till supper time drawing neere, made them returne home to the Palace. When supper was ended, and bookes and instruments being laide before them, the Queene commanded a dance, and that Madam *Amilia*, assisted by Madam *Lauretta* and *Dioneus*, should sing a sweet ditty. At which command, *Lauretta* vndertooke the dance, and led it, *Amilia* singing this song ensuing.

The Song.

SO much delight my beauty yeelds to mee,
That any other Loue,
To wiſh or proue;
Can neuer ſute it ſelfe with my deſire.

Therein I ſee, vpon good obſeruation,
What ſweet content due vnderſtanding lends:
Old or new thoughts cannot in any faſhion
Rob me of that, which mine owne ſoule commends.
What obiect then,
(mongſt infinites of men)
Can I neuer finde
to diſpoſſeſſe my minde,
And plaint therein another new deſire?
So much delight, &c.

But were it ſo, the bliſſe that I would chuſe,
Is, by continuall ſight to comfort me:
So rare a preſence neuer to refuſe,
Which mortall tongue or thought, what ere it be
Muſt ſtill conceale,
not able to reueale,
Such a ſacred ſweete,
for none other meete,
But hearts enflamed with the ſame deſire.
So much delight, &c.

The Song being ended, the Chorus whereof was anſwered by them all, it paſſed with generall applauſe: and after a few other daunces, the night being well run on, the Queene gaue ending to this firſt dayes Recreation. So, lights being brought, they departed to their ſeuerall Lodgings, to take their reſt till the next morning.

The End of the firſt Day.

The Second Day.



Wherein, all the Diſcourſes are vnder the gouernment of Madam Philomena: Concerning ſuch men or women, as (in diuers accidents) haue been much molleſted by Fortune, and yet afterward (contrary to their hope and expectation) haue had a happy and ſucceſſefull deliuerance.

ALready had the bright Sunne renewed the day euery where with his ſplendant beames, and the Birds ſate merrily ſinging on the blooming branches, yeelding teſtimony thereof to the eares of all hearers; when the ſeuen Ladies, and the three Gentlemen (after they were riſen) entered the Gardens, and there ſpent ſome time in walking, as alſo making of Noſe-gayes and Chaplets of Flowers. And euen as they had done the day before, ſo did they now follow the ſame courſe; for, after they had dined, in a coole and pleaſing aire they fell to dancing, and then went to ſleepe a while, from which being awaked, they tooke their places (according as it pleaſed the Queene to appoint) in the ſame faire Meadow about her. And ſhe, being a goodly creature, and highly pleaſing to behold, hauing put on her Crowne of Lawrell, and giuing a gracious countenance to the whole company; commanded Madam *Neiphila* that her Tale ſhould begin this daies delight. Whereupon ſhe, without returning any excuſe or deniall, began in this manner.

Martellino

Martellino *counterfeitting to be lame of his members, cauſed himſelfe to be ſet on the body of Saint* Arriguo, *where he made ſhew of his ſudden recouery; but when his diſſimulation was diſcouered, he was well beaten, being afterward taken priſoner, and in great danger of being hanged and ſtrangled by the necke, and yet he eſcaped in the end.*

The firſt Nouell.

Wherein is ſignified, how eaſie a thing it is, for wicked men to deceiue the world, vnder the ſhadow and colour of miracles: and that ſuch treachery (oftentimes) redoundeth to the harme of the deuiſer.

FAire Ladies, it hath happened many times, that he who ſtriueth to ſcorne and floute other men, and eſpecially in occaſions deſeruing to be reſpected, proueth to mocke himſelfe with the ſelfe ſame matter, yea, and to his no meane danger beſide. As you ſhall perceiue by a Tale, which I intend to tell you, obeying therein the command of our Queene, and according to the ſubiect by her enioyned. In which diſcourſe, you may firſt obſerue, what great miſchance happened to one of our Citizens; and yet afterward, how (beyond all hope) he happily eſcaped.

Not long ſince, there liued in the City of *Treuers*, an *Almaine* or *Germaine*, named *Arriguo*, who being a poore man, ſerued as a Porter, or burden-bearer for money, when any man pleaſed to employ him. And yet, notwithſtanding his poore and meane condition, he was generally reputed, to be of good and ſanctified life. In which regard (whether it were true or no, I know not) it happened, that when he died (at leaſt as the men of *Treuers* themſelues affirmed) in the very inſtant houre of his departing, all the Belles in the great Church of *Treuers*, (not being pulled by the helpe of any hand) beganne to ring: which being accounted for a miracle, euery one ſaide; that this *Arriguo* had bene, and was a Saint. And preſently all the people of the City ran to the houſe where the dead body lay, and carried it (as a ſanctified body) into the great Church, where people, halt, lame, and blind, or troubled with any other diſeaſes, were brought about it, euen as if euery one ſhould forth-with be holpen, onely by their touching the body.

It came to paſſe, that in ſo great a concourſe of people, as reſorted thither from all parts; three of our Citizens went to *Treuers*, one of them being named *Stechio*, the ſecond *Martellino*, and the third *Marquiſo*, all being men of ſuch condition, as frequented Princes Courts, to giue them delight by pleaſant and counterfetted qualities. None of theſe men hauing euer beene at *Treuers* before, ſeeing how the people crowded thorow the ſtreetes, wondered greatly thereat: but when they knew the reaſon why the throngs ranne on heapes in ſuch ſort together, they grew as deſirous to ſee the Shrine, as any of the reſt. Hauing ordered all affaires at their lodging, *Marquiſo* ſaide; It is fit for vs to ſee this Saint, but I know not how we ſhall attaine thereto, becauſe (as I haue heard) the place is guarded by Germaine Souldiers, and other warlike men, commanded thither by

by the Gouernour of this City, leaſt any outrage ſhould be there committed: And beſide, the Church is ſo full of people, as we ſhall neuer compaſſe to get neere. *Martellino* being alſo as forward in deſire to ſee it, preſently replied. All this difficulty cannot diſmay me, but I will go to the very body of the Saint it ſelfe. But how? quoth *Marquiſo*. I will tell thee, anſwered *Martellino*. I purpoſe to go in the diſguiſe of an impotent lame perſon, ſupported on the one ſide by thy ſelfe, and on the other by *Stechio*, as if I were not able to walke of my ſelfe: And you two thus ſuſtaining me, deſiring to come neere the Saint to cure me; euery one will make way, and freely giue you leaue to go on.

This deuiſe was very pleaſing to *Marquiſo* and *Stechio*, ſo that (without any further delaying) they all three left their lodging, and reſorting into a ſecret corner aſide, *Martellino* ſo writhed and miſhaped his hands, fingers, and armes, his legges, mouth, eyes, and whole countenance, that it was a dreadfull ſight to looke vpon him, and whoſoeuer beheld him, would verily haue imagined, that hee was vtterly lame of his limbes, and greatly deformed in his body. *Marquiſo* and *Stechio*, ſeeing all ſorted ſo well as they could wiſh, tooke and led him towards the Church, making very pitious moane, and humbly deſiring (for Gods ſake) of euery one that they met, to grant them free paſſage: whereto they charitably condiſcended.

Thus leading him on, crying; Beware there before, and giue way for Gods ſake, they arriued at the body of Saint *Arriguo*, that (by his helpe) he might be healed. And while all eyes were diligently obſeruing, what miracle would be wrought on *Martellino*, he hauing ſitten a ſmall ſpace vpon the Saints body, and being ſufficiently skilfull in counterfeiting, began firſt to extend forth the one of his fingers, next his hand, then his arme, and ſo (by degrees) the reſt of his body. Which when the people ſaw, they made ſuch a wonderfull noyſe in praiſe of Saint *Arrigue*, euen as if it had thundered in the Church.

Now it chanced by ill fortune, that there ſtood a *Florentine* neere to the body, who knew *Martellino* very perfectly; but appearing ſo monſtrouſly miſhapen, when he was brought into the Church, hee could take no knowledge of him. But when he ſaw him ſtand vp and walke, hee knew him then to be the man indeede; whereupon he ſaide. How commeth it to paſſe, that this fellow ſhould be ſo miraculouſly cured, that neuer truly was any way impotent? Certaine men of the City hearing theſe words, entred into further queſtioning with him, demanding, how he knew that the man had no ſuch imperfection? Well enough (anſwered the *Florentine*) I know him to be as direct in his limbes and body, as you; I, or any of vs all are: but indeede, he knowes better how to diſſemble counterfet trickes, then any man elſe that euer I ſaw.

When they heard this, they diſcourſed no further with the *Florentine*, but preſſed on mainely to the place where *Martellino* ſtood, crying out aloude. Lay hold on this Traytor, a mocker of God, and his holy Saints, that had no lameneſſe in his limbes; but to make a mocke of our Saint and

vs, came hither in falſe and counterfeit manner. So laying hands vppon him, they threw him againſt the ground, hauing him by the haire on his head, and tearing the garments from his backe, ſpurning him with their feete, and beating him with their fiſts, that many were much aſhamed to ſee it.

Poore *Martellino* was in a pittifull caſe, crying out for mercy, but no man would heare him; for, the more he cryed, the more ſtill they did beat him, as meaning to leaue no life in him: which *Stechio* and *Marquiſo* ſeeing, conſidered with themſelues, that they were likewiſe in a deſperate caſe; and therefore, fearing to be as much miſvſed, they cryed out among the reſt, Kill the counterfet knaue, lay on loade, and ſpare him not; neuertheleſſe, they tooke care how to get him out of the peoples handes, as doubting, leaſt they would kill him indeede, by their extreame violence.

Sodainly, *Marquiſo* bethought him how to do it, and proceeded thus. All the Sergeants for Iuſtice ſtanding at the Church doore, hee ran with all poſſible ſpeede to the *Poteſtates* Lieutenant, and ſaid vnto him. Good my Lord Iuſtice, helpe me in an hard caſe; yonder is a villaine that hath cut my purſe, I deſire he may bee brought before you, that I may haue my money againe. He hearing this, ſent for a dozen of the Sergeants, who went to apprehend vnhappy *Martellino*, and recouer him from the peoples fury, leading him on with them to the Palace, no meane crowds thronging after him, when they heard that he was accuſed to bee a Cutpurſe. Now durſt they meddle no more with him, but aſſiſted the Officers; ſome of them charging him in like manner, that hee had cut their purſes alſo.

Vpon theſe clamours and complaints, the *Poteſtates* Lieutenant (being a man of rude quality) tooke him ſodainly aſide, and examined him of the crimes wherewith he was charged. But *Martellino*, as making no account of theſe accuſations, laughed, and returned ſcoffing anſweres. Whereat the Iudge, waxing much diſpleaſed, deliuered him ouer to the Strappado, and ſtood by himſelfe, to haue him confeſſe the crimes impoſed on him, and then to hang him afterward. Being let downe to the ground, the Iudge ſtill demaunded of him, whether the accuſations againſt him were true, or no? Affirming, that it nothing auayled him to deny it: whereupon hee thus ſpake to the Iudge. My Lord, I am heere ready before you, to confeſſe the truth; but I pray you, demaund of all them that accuſe me, when and where I did cut their purſes, and then I wil tell you that, which (as yet) I haue not done, otherwiſe I purpoſe to make you no more anſwers.

Well (quoth the Iudge) thou requireſt but reaſon; and calling diuers of the accuſers, one of them ſaide, that he loſt his purſe eight dayes before; another ſaide ſix, another foure, and ſome ſaide the very ſame day. Which *Martellino* hearing, replyed. My Lord, they all lie in their throats, as I will plainly proue before you. I would to God I had neuer ſet foot within this City, as it is not many houres ſince my firſt entrance, and pet-

ſently

ſently after mine arriuall, I went (in euill houre I may ſay for me) to ſee the Saints body, where I was thus beaten as you may beholde. That all this is true which I ſay vnto you, the Seigneurie Officer that keeps your Booke of preſentations, will teſtifie for me, as alſo the Hoſt where I am lodged. Wherefore good my Lord, if you finde all no otherwiſe, then as I haue ſaid, I humbly entreate you, that vpon theſe bad mens reportes and falſe informations, I may not be thus tormented, and put in perill of my life.

While matters proceeded in this manner, *Marquiſo* and *Stechio*, vnderſtanding how roughly the *Poteſtates* Lieutenant dealt with *Martellino*, and that he had already giuen him the Strappado; were in heauy perplexity, ſaying to themſelues; we haue carried this buſineſſe very badly, redeeming him out of the Frying pan, and flinging him into the fire. Whereupon, trudging about from place to place, and meeting at length with their Hoſt, they told him truly how all had happened, whereat hee could not refraine from laughing. Afterward, he went with them to one Maſter *Alexander Agolante*, who dwelt in *Treuers*, and was in great credite with the Cities cheefe Magiſtrate, to whom hee related the whole Diſcourſe; all three earneſtly entreating him, to commiſſerate the caſe of poore *Martellino*.

Maſter *Alexander*, after he had laughed heartily at this hotte peece of ſeruice, went with him to the Lord of *Treuers*; preuailing ſo well with him, that he ſent to haue *Martellino* brought before him. The Meſſengers that went for him, found him ſtanding in his ſhirt before the Iudge, very ſhrewdly ſhaken with the Strappado, trembling and quaking pitifully. For the Iudge would not heare any thing in his excuſe; but hating him (perhaps) becauſe hee was a Florentine: flatly determined to haue him hanged by the necke, and would not deliuer him to the Lord, vntill in meere deſpight he was compeld to do it.

The Lord of *Treuers*, when *Martellino* came before him, and had acquainted him truly with euery particular: Maſter *Alexander* requeſted, that he might be diſpatched thence for *Florence*, becauſe he thought the halter to be about his necke, and that there was no other helpe but hanging. The Lord, ſmiling (a long while) at the accident, and cauſing *Martellino* to be handſomely apparrelled, deliuering them alſo his Paſſe, they eſcaped out of further danger, and tarried no where, till they came vnto *Florence*.

Rinaldo de Este, after hee was robbed by Theeues, arriued at Chasteau Guillaume, where he was friendly lodged by a faire Widdow, and recompenced likewise for all his losses; returning afterward safe and well home vnto his owne house.

The second Nouell.

Whereby wee may learne, that such things as sometime seeme hurtfull to vs, may turne to our benefit and commodity.

MVch merriment was among the Ladies, hearing this Tale of *Martellinos* misfortunes, so familiarly reported by Madam *Neiphila*, and of the men, it was best respected by *Philostratus*, who sitting neerest vnto *Neiphila*, the Queene commanded his Tale to be the next, when presently he began to speake thus.



Gracious Ladies, I am to speake of vniuersall occasions, mingled with some misfortunes in part, and partly with matters leaning to loue, as many times may happen to such people, that trace the dangerous pathes of amorous desires, or haue not learned perfectly, to say S. *Iulians pater noster*, hauing good beddes of their owne, yet casually meete with worser Lodging.

In the time of *Azzo*, Marquesse of *Ferrara*, there was a Marchant named *Rinaldo de Este*, who being one day at *Bologna*, about some especiall businesse of his owne: his occasions there ended, and riding from thence towards *Verona*, he fell in company with other Horsemen, seeming to be Merchants like himselfe, but indeede were Theeues, men of most badde life and conuersation; yet he hauing no such mistrust of them, rode on,

conferring with them very familiarly. They perceiuing him to be a Merchant, and likely to haue ſome ſtore of money about him, concluded betweene themſelues to rob him, ſo ſoone as they found apt place and opportunity. But becauſe he ſhould conceiue no ſuch ſuſpition, they rode on like modeſt men, talking honeſtly & friendly with him, of good parts and diſpoſition appearing in him, offering him all humble and gracious ſeruice, accounting themſelues happy by his companie, as hee returned the ſame courteſie to them, becauſe hee was alone, and but one ſeruant with him.

Falling from one diſcourſe to another, they beganne to talke of ſuch prayers, as men (in iourney) vſe to ſalute God withall; and one of the Theeues (they being three in number) ſpake thus to *Rinaldo*. Sir, let it be no offence to you, that I deſire to know, what prayer you moſt vſe when thus you trauell on the way? Whereto *Rinaldo* replyed in this manner. To tell you true Sir, I am a man groſſe enough in ſuch Diuine matters, as medling more with Merchandize, then I do with Bookes. Neuertheleſſe, at all times when I am thus in iourney, in the morning before I depart my Chamber, I ſay a *Pater noſter*, and an *Aue Maria* for the ſoules of the father and mother of Saint *Iulian*; and after that, I pray God and S. *Iulian* to ſend me a good lodging at night. And let me tell you Sir, that very oftentimes heeretofore, I haue met with many great dangers vpon the way, from all which I ſtill eſcaped, and euermore (when night drew on) I came to an exceeding good Lodging. Which makes mee firmely beleeue, that Saint *Iulian* (in honour of whom I ſpeake it) hath beggd of God ſuch great grace for me; and mee thinkes, that if any day I ſhould faile of this prayer in the morning: I cannot trauaile ſecurely, nor come to a good lodging. No doubt then Sir (quoth the other) but you haue ſaide that prayer this morning? I would be ſory elſe, ſaid *Rinaldo*, ſuch an eſpeciall matter is not to be neglected.

He and the reſt, who had already determined how to handle him before they parted, ſaide within themſelues: Look thou haſt ſaid thy prayer, for when we haue thy money, Saint *Iulian* and thou ſhift for thy lodging. Afterward, the ſame man thus againe conferd with him. As you Sir, ſo I haue ridden many iournies, and yet I neuer vſed any ſuch prayer, although I haue heard it very much commended, & my lodging hath proued neuer the worſer. Perhaps this verie night will therein reſolue vs both, whether of vs two ſhall be the beſt lodged, you that haue ſaide the Prayer, or I that neuer vſed it at all. But I muſt not deny, that in ſted thereof, I haue made vſe of ſome verſes; as *Dirupiſti*, or the *Iutemerata*, or *De profundis*, which are (as my Grandmother hath often told mee) of very great vertue and efficacy.

Continuing thus in talke of diuers things, winning way, and beguiling the time, ſtill waiting when their purpoſe ſhould ſort to effect: it fortuned, that the Theeues ſeeing they were come neere to a Towne, called *Chaſteau Guillaume*, by the foord of a Riuer, the houre ſomewhat late, the place ſolitarie, and thickely ſhaded with Trees, they made their aſſault; and

and hauing robd him, left him there on foote, ſtript into his ſhirt, ſaying to him. Goe now and ſee, whether thy Saint *Iulian* will allow thee this night a good lodging, or no, for our owne we are ſufficiently prouided; ſo paſſing the Riuer, away they rode. *Rinaldoes* ſeruant, ſeeing his Maſter ſo ſharply aſſayled, like a wicked villaine, would not aſſiſt him in any ſort: but giuing his horſe the ſpurres, neuer left galloping, vntill hee came to *Chaſteau Guillaume*, where hee entred vpon the point of night, prouiding himſelfe of a lodging, but not caring what became of his Maſter.

Rinaldo remaining there in his ſhirt, bare-foot and bare-legged, the weather extremely colde, and ſnowing inceſſantly, not knowing what to doe, darke night drawing on, and looking round about him, for ſome place where to abide that night, to the end he might not dye with colde: he found no helpe at all there for him, in regard that (no long while before) the late warre had burnt and waſted all, and not ſo much as the leaſt Cottage left. Compelled by the coldes violence, his teeth quaking, and all his body trembling, hee trotted on towards *Chauſteau Guillaume*, not knowing, whether his man was gone thither or no, or to what place elſe: but perſwaded himſelfe, that if he could get entrance, there was no feare of finding ſuccour. But before he came within halfe a mile of the Towne, the nights grew extreamely darke, and arriuing there ſo late, hee found the gates faſt lockt, and the Bridges drawne vp, ſo that no entrance might be admitted.

Grieuing greatly heereat, and being much diſcomforted, rufully hee went ſpying about the walls, for ſome place wherein to ſhrowd himſelfe, at leaſt, to keepe the ſnow from falling vpon him. By good hap, hee eſpied an houſe vpon the wall of the Towne, which had a terrace iutting out as a penthouſe, vnder which he purpoſed to ſtand all the night, and then to get him gone in the morning. At length, hee found a doore in the wall, but very faſt ſhut, and ſome ſmall ſtore of ſtrawe lying by it, which he gathered together, and ſitting downe thereon very penſiuely; made many ſad complaints to Saint *Iulian*, ſaying: This was not according to the truſt he repoſed in her. But Saint *Iulian*, taking compaſſion vpon him, without any ouer-long tarying; prouided him of a good lodging, as you ſhall heare how.

In this towne of *Chaſteau Guillaume*, liued a young Lady, who was a widdow, ſo beautifull and comely of her perſon, as ſildome was ſeene a more louely creature. The Marqueſſe *Azzo* moſt dearely affected her, and (as his choyſeſt Iewell of delight) gaue her that houſe to liue in, vnder the terrace whereof poore *Rinaldo* made his ſhelter. It chaunced the day before, that the Marqueſſe was come thither, according to his frequent cuſtome, to weare away that night in her company, ſhe hauing ſecretly prepared a Bath for him, and a coſtly ſupper beſide. All things being ready, and nothing wanting but the Marqueſſe his preſence: ſuddenly a Poſt brought him ſuch Letters, which commanded him inſtantly to horſebacke, and word hee ſent to the Lady, to ſpare him for that night,

becauſe vrgent occaſions called him thence, and hee rode away immediately.

Much diſcontented was the Lady at this vnpected accident,and not knowing now how to ſpend the time, reſolued to vſe the Bath which hee had made for the Marqueſſe, and (after ſupper) betake her ſelfe to reſt, and ſo ſhe entred into the Bath. Cloſe to the doore where poore *Rinaldo* ſate, ſtoode the Bath, by which meanes, ſhee being therein, heard all his quiuering moanes, and complaints, ſeeming to be ſuch, as the Swanne ſinging before her death: whereupon, ſhee called her Chamber-maide, ſaying to her. Goe vp aboue, and looke ouer the terrace on the wall downe to this doore,and ſee who is there,and what he doth. The Chamber-maide went vp aloft,and by a little glimmering in the ayre, ſhe ſaw a man ſitting in his ſhirt, bare on feete and legges,trembling in manner before rehearſed. She demanding of whence, and what he was; *Rinaldoes* teeth ſo trembled in his head, as very hardly could he forme any words, but(ſo well as he could) told her what he was, and how he came thither: moſt pittifully entreating her,that if ſhe could affoord him any helpe,nor to ſuffer him to ſtarue there to death with cold.

The Chamber-maide, being much moued to compaſſion, returned to her Lady, and tolde her all; ſhe likewiſe pittying his diſtreſſe, and remembring ſhee had the key of that doore, whereby the Marqueſſe both entred and returned, when he intended not to be ſeene of any, ſaid to her Maide. Goe,and open the doore ſoftly for him; we haue a good ſupper, and none to helpe to eate it, and if he be a man likely, we can allow him one nights lodging too. The Chamber-maide, commending her Lady for this charitable kindneſſe, opened the doore, and ſeeing hee appeared as halfe frozen, ſhee ſaid vnto him. Make haſt good man, get thee into this Bath, which yet is good and warme, for my Lady her ſelfe came but newly out of it. Whereto very gladly he condiſcended,as not tarrying to be bidden twiſe; finding himſelfe ſo ſingularly comforted with the heate thereof,euen as if hee had beene reſtored from death to life. Then the Lady ſent him garments, which lately were her deceaſed husbands, and fitted him ſo aptly in all reſpects,as if purpoſely they had beene made for him.

Attending in further expectation, to know what elſe the Lady would commaund him; hee began to remember God and Saint *Iulian*, hartily thanking her, for deliuering him from ſo bad a night as was threatned towards him, and bringing him to ſo good entertainment. After all this, the Lady cauſing a faire fire to be made in the neereſt Chamber beneath, went and ſate by it her ſelfe, demaunding how the honeſt man fared. Madame, anſwered the Chamber-maide, now that he is in your deceaſed Lords garments,he appeareth to be a very goodly Gentleman,and (queſtionleſſe) is of reſpectiue birth and breeding, well deſeruing this gracious fauour which you haue affoorded him. Goe then (quoth the Lady) and conduct him hither, to ſit by this fire, and ſup heere with mee,for I feare he hath had but a ſorrie ſupper. When *Rinaldo* was entred into the

Chamber,

Chamber, and beheld her to be ſuch a beautifull Lady, accounting his fortune to exceede all compariſon, he did her moſt humble reuerence, expreſſing ſo much thankefulneſſe as poſſibly he could, for this her extraordinary grace and fauour.

The Lady fixing a ſtedfaſt eye vpon him, well liking his gentle language and behauiour, perceiuing alſo, how fitly her deceaſed husbands apparell was formed to his perſon, and reſembling him in all familiar reſpects, he appeared (in her iudgement) farre beyond the Chambermaides commendations of him; ſo praying him to ſit downe by her before the fire, ſhe queſtioned with him, concerning this vnhappy nights accident befalne him, wherein he fully reſolued her, and ſhee was the more perſwaded, by reaſon of his ſeruants comming into the Towne before night, aſſuring him, that he ſhould be found for him early in the morning.

Supper being ſerued in to the Table, and hee ſeated according as the Lady commanded; ſhee began to obſerue him very conſiderately; for he was a goodly man, compleate in all perfection of perſon, a delicate pleaſing countenance, a quicke alluring eye, fixed and conſtant, not wantonly gadding, in the iouiall youthfulneſſe of his time, and trueſt temper for amorous apprehenſion; all theſe were as battering engines againſt a Bulwarke of no ſtrong reſiſtance, and wrought ſtrangely vpon her flexible affections. And though ſhee fed heartily, as occaſion conſtrained, yet her thoughts had entertained a new kinde of diet, digeſted onely by the eye; yet ſo cunningly concealed, that no motiue to immodeſty could be diſcerned. Her mercy thus extended to him in miſery, drew on (by Table diſcourſe) his birth, education, parents, friends, and alies; his wealthy poſſeſſions by Merchandize, and a ſound ſtability in his eſtate, but aboue all (and beſt of all) the ſingle and ſole condition of a batcheler; an apt and eaſie ſteele to ſtrike fire, eſpecially vpon ſuch quicke taking tinder, and in a time fauoured by Fortune.

No imbarment remained, but remembrance of the Marqueſſe, and that being ſummoned to her more aduiſed conſideration, her youth and beauty ſtood vp as conſcious accuſers, for blemiſhing her honour and faire repute, with lewd and luxurious life, far vnfit for a Lady of her degree, and well worthy of generall condemnation. What ſhould I further ſay? vpon a ſhort conference with her Chamber-maide, repentance for ſinne paſt, and ſolemne promiſe of a conſtant conuerſion, thus ſhee deliuered her minde to *Rinaldo*.

Sir, as you haue related your Fortunes to mee, by this your caſuall happening hither, if you can like the motion ſo well as ſhee that makes it, my deceaſed Lord and Husband liuing ſo perfectly in your perſon; this houſe, and all mine is yours; and of a widdow I will become your wife, except (vnmanly) you deny me. *Rinaldo* hearing theſe words, & proceeding from a Lady of ſuch abſolute perfections, preſuming vpon ſo proud an offer, and condemning himſelfe of folly if he ſhould refuſe it, thus replied. Madam, conſidering that I ſtand bound for euer heereafter, to confeſſe that you are the gracious preſeruer of my life, and I no way able to

returne requitall; if you pleaſe ſo to ſhadow mine inſufficiencie, and to accept me and my faireſt fortunes to doe you ſeruice: let me die before a thought of deniall, or any way to yeeld you the leaſt diſcontentment.

Heere wanted but a Prieſt to ioyne their hands, as mutuall affection already had done their hearts, which being ſealed with infinit kiſſes, the Chamber-maide called vp Friar *Roger* her Confeſſor, and wedding and bedding were both effected before the bright morning. In breefe, the Marqueſſe hauing heard of the marriage, did not miſlike it, but confirmed it by great and honourable giftes; and hauing ſent for his diſhoneſt Seruant, he diſpatched him (after ſound reprehenſion) to *Ferrara*, with Letters to *Rinaldoes* Father and Friends, of all the accidents that had befalne him. Moreouer, the very ſame morning, the three Theeues that had robbed, and ſo ill intreated *Rinaldo*, for another facte by them the ſame night committed, were taken, and brought to the Towne of *Chaſteau Guillaume*, where they were hanged for their offences, and *Rinaldo* with his wife rode to *Ferrara*.

Three young Gentlemen, being Brethren, and hauing ſpent all their Lands and poſſeſsions vainely, became poore. A Nephew of theirs (falling almoſt into as deſperate a condition) became acquainted with an Abbot, whom he afterward found to be the King of Englands Daughter, and made him her Huſband in mariage, recompencing all his Vncles loſſes, and ſeating them againe in good eſtate.

The Third Nouell.

Wherein is declared the dangers of Prodigalitie, & the manifold mutabilities of Fortune.



THe fortunes of *Rinaldo de Eſte*, being heard by the Ladies and Gentlemen, they admired his happineſſe, and commended his deuotion

to

to Saint *Iulian*, who (in ſuch extreame neceſſity) ſent him ſo good ſuccour. Nor was the Lady to be blamed, for leauing baſe liberty, and conuerting to the chaſte embraces of the marriage bed, the dignity of Womens honour, and eternall diſgrace liuing otherwiſe. While thus they deſcanted on the happy night betweene her and *Rinaldo*, Madam *Pampinea* ſitting next to *Philoſtratus*, conſidering, that her Diſcourſe muſt follow in order, and thinking on what ſhee was to ſay; the Queene had no ſooner ſent out her command, but ſhe being no leſſe faire then forward, began in this manner.

Ladies of great reſpect, the more we conferre on the accidents of Fortune, ſo much the more remaineth to conſider on her mutabilities, wherein there is no need of wonder, if diſcreetly we obſerue that al ſuch things as we fondly tearme to be our owne, are in her power, and ſo (conſequently) change from one to another, without any ſtay or arreſt (according to her concealed iudgement) or ſetled order (at leaſt) that can bee knowne to vs. Now, although theſe things appeare thus dayly to vs, euen apparantly in all occaſions, and as hath beene diſcerned by ſome of our precedent Diſcourſes; yet notwithſtanding, ſeeing it pleaſeth the Queene, that our arguments ſhould aime at theſe ends, I will adde to the former tales another of my owne, perhaps not vnprofitable for the hearers, nor vnpleaſing in obſeruation.

Sometime heeretofore, there dwelt in our Cittie, a Knight named Signior *Theobaldo*, who (according as ſome report) iſſued from the Family of *Lamberti*, but others deriue him of the *Agolanti*; guiding (perhaps) their opinion heerein, more from the traine of Children, belonging to the ſaide *Theobaldo* (euermore equall to that of the *Agolanti*) then any other matter elſe. But ſetting aſide from which of theſe two houſes he came, I ſay, that in his time he was a very wealthy Knight, & had three ſonnes; the firſt being named *Lamberto*, the ſecond *Theobaldo*, & the third *Agolanto*, all goodly and gracefull youths: howbeit, the eldeſt had not compleated eighteene yeares, when Signior *Theobaldo* the Father deceaſed, who left them all his goods and inheritances. And they, ſeeing themſelues rich in ready monies and reuennewes, without any other gouernement then their owne voluntary diſpoſition, kept no reſtraint vpon their expences, but maintained many ſeruants, and ſtore of vnvalewable Horſes, beſide Hawkes and Hounds, with open houſe for all commers; and not onely all delights elſe fit for Gentlemen, but what vanities beſide beſt agreed with their wanton and youthfull appetites.

Not long had they run on this race, but the Treaſures lefte them by their Father, began greatly to diminiſh; and their Reuennewes ſuffiſed not, to report ſuch lauiſh expences as they had begun: but they fell to engaging and pawning their inheritances, ſelling one to day, and another to morrow, ſo that they ſaw themſelues quickely come to nothing, and then pouerty opened their eyes, which prodigality had before clozed vp. Hereupon, *Lamberto* (on a day) calling his Brethren to him, ſhewed them what the honors of their Father had beene, to what height his

wealth

wealth amounted, and now to what an ebbe of pouerty it was falne, only thorow their inordinate expences. Wherefore hee counſelled them, (as beſt he could) before further miſery inſulted ouer them, to make ſale of the ſmall remainder that was left, and then to betake themſelues vnto ſome other abiding, where fairer Fortune might chance to ſhine vppon them.

This aduice preuailed with them; and ſo, without taking leaue of any body, or other ſolemnity then cloſeſt ſecrecie, they departed from *Florence*, not tarrying in any place vntill they were arriued in *England*. Comming to the City of London, and taking there a ſmall houſe vpon yearely rent, liuing on ſo little charge as poſſibly might be, they began to lend out money at vſe: wherein Fortune was ſo fauourable to them, that (in few yeares) they had gathered a great ſumme of mony: by means whereof it came to paſſe, that one while one of them, and afterward another, returned backe againe to *Florence*: where, with thoſe ſummes, a great part of their inheritances were redeemed, and many other bought beſide. Linking themſelues in marriage, and yet continuing their vſances in England; they ſent a Nephew of theirs thither, named *Aleſſandro*, a yong man, and of faire demeanor, to maintaine their ſtocke in employment: while they three remained ſtil in *Florence*, and growing forgetful of their former miſery, fell againe into as vnreaſonable expences as euer, neuer reſpecting their houſhold charges, becauſe they had good credite among the Merchants, and the monies ſtill ſent from *Aleſſandro*, ſupporting their expences diuers yeeres.

The dealings of *Aleſſandro* in England grew verie great, for hee lent out much money to many Gentlemen, Lords, and Barons of the Land, vpon engagement of their Mannors; Caſtles, and other reuennues: from whence he deriued immeaſurable benefite. While the three Brethren held on in their lauiſh expences, borrowing moneys when they wanted vntill their ſupplies came from England, whereon (indeede) was theyr onely dependance: it fortuned, that (contrary to the opinion of all men) warre happened betweene the King of England, and one of his ſonnes, which occaſioned much trouble in the whole Countrey, by taking part on either ſide, ſome with the ſonne, and other with the Father. In regard whereof, thoſe Caſtles and places pawned to *Aleſſandro*, were ſodainely ſeized from him, nothing then remaining, that turned him any profite. But liuing in hope day by day, that peace would be concluded betweene the Father and the Sonne, he neuer doubted, but all things then ſhould be reſtored to him, both the principall and intereſt, & therfore he would not depart out of the Countrey.

The three Brethren at *Florence*, bounding within no limites their diſordered ſpending; borrowed dayly more and more. And after ſome few yeares, the creditors ſeeing no effect of their hopes to come from them, all credit being loſt with them, and no repayment of promiſed dues, they were impriſoned, their Landes and all they had, not ſuffiſing to pay the moitie of Debts, but their bodies remained in priſon for the reſt, theyr

Wiues

Wiues and young children being ſent thence, ſome to one village, ſome to another, ſo that nothing now was to be expected, but pouerty and miſery of life for euer.

As for honeſt *Aleſſandro*, who had awaited long time for peace in England, perceyuing there was no likelyhoode of it; and conſidering alſo, that (beſide his tarrying there in vaine to recouer his dues) he was in danger of his life; without any further deferring, he ſet away for *Italy*. It came to paſſe, that as he yſſued foorth of *Bruges*, hee ſaw a young Abbot alſo iourneying thence, being cloathed in white, accompanied with diuers Monkes, and a great traine before, conducting the needfull Carriage. Two auncient Knights, kinſmen to the King, followed after; with whom *Aleſſandro* acquainted himſelfe, as hauing formerly known them, and was kindely accepted into their company. *Aleſſandro* riding along with them, courteouſly requeſted to know, what thoſe Monks were that rode before, and ſuch a traine attending on them? Whereto one of the Knights thus anſwered.

He that rideth before, is a yong Gentleman, and our Kinſman, who is newly elected Abbot of one of the beſt Abbeys in England, and becauſe he is more yong in yeeres, then the decrees for ſuch a dignity do allow, we trauaile with him to Rome, to entreat our Holy Father, that his youth may be diſpenſed withall, and he confirmed in the ſaid dignitie; but hee is not to ſpeake a word to any perſon. On rode this new Abbot, ſometimes before his Traine, and other whiles after, as we ſee great Lords vſe to do, when they ride vpon the High-wayes.

It chanced on a day, that *Aleſſandro* rode ſomewhat neere to the Abbot, who ſtedfaſtly beholding him, perceiued that he was a very comely young man, ſo affable, louely, and gracious, that euen in this firſt encounter, he had neuer ſeene any man before that better pleaſed him. Calling him a little cloſer, he began to conferre familiarly with him, demanding what he was, whence he came, and whether he trauelled. *Aleſſandro* imparted freely to him all his affaires, in euery thing ſatisfying his demands, and offering (although his power was ſmall) to doe him all the ſeruice he could.

When the Abbot had heard his gentle anſweres, ſo wiſely & diſcreetly deliuered, conſidering alſo (more particularly) his commendable carriage, hee tooke him to be (at the leaſt) a well-borne Gentleman, and far differing from his owne logger headed traine. Wherefore, taking compaſſion on his great misfortunes, he comforted him very kindly, wiſhing him to liue alwayes in good hope. For, if he were vertuous and honeſt, he ſhould ſurely attaine to the ſeate from whence Fortune had throwne him, or rather much higher. Intreating him alſo, that ſeeing he iournied towards *Tuſcany*, as he himſelfe did the like, to continue ſtil (if he pleaſed) in his company. *Aleſſandro* moſt humbly thanked him for ſuch gracious comfort; proteſting, that he would be alwaies readie to do whatſoeuer he commanded.

The Abbot riding on, with newer crotchets in his braine then he had before

before the ſight of *Aleſſandro*, it fortuned, that after diuers dayes of trauaile, they came to a ſmall Country Village, which affoorded little ſtore of Lodging, and yet the Abbot would needes lye there. *Aleſſandro*, being well acquainted with the Hoſte of the houſe, willed him to prouide for the Abbot and his people, and then to lodge him where hee thought it meeteſt. Now before the Abbots comming thither, the Harbenger that marſhalled all ſuch matters, had prouided for his Traine in the Village, ſome in one place, and others elſewhere, in the beſt maner that the Towne could yeelde. But when the Abbot had ſupt, a great part of the night being ſpent, and euery one elſe at his reſt ; *Aleſſandro* demaunded of the Hoſte, what prouiſion he had made for him, and how hee ſhould be lodged that night ?

In good ſadneſſe Sir (quoth the Hoſt) you ſee that my houſe is full of Gueſts, ſo that I and my people, muſt gladly ſleepe on the tables & benches : Neuertheleſſe, next adioyning to my Lord Abbots Chamber, there are certaine Corn-lofts, whether I can cloſely bring you, and making ſhift there with a ſlender Pallet bed, it may ſerue for one night, inſted of a better. But mine Hoſt (quoth *Aleſſandro)* how can I paſſe thorow my Lords Chamber, which is ſo little, as it would not allow Lodging for any of his Monkes? If I had remembred ſo much (ſaid the Hoſt) before the Curtaines were drawne, I could haue lodged his Monkes in the Corne-lofts, and then both you and I might haue ſlept where now they doe. But feare you not, my Lords Curtaines are cloſe drawne, hee ſleepeth (no doubt) ſoundly, and I can conueigh you thither quietly enough, without the leaſt diſturbance to him, and a Pallet-bed ſhall be fitted there for you. *Aleſſandro* perceiuing that all this might be eaſily done, and no diſeaſe offered to the Abbot, accepted it willingly, and went thither without any noyſe at all.

My Lord Abbot, whoſe thoughts were ſo buſied about amorous deſires, that no ſleepe at all could enter his eyes, heard all this talke between the Hoſt and *Aleſſandro*, and alſo where hee was appointed to Lodge, he ſaide thus within himſelfe. Seeing Fortune hath fitted me with a propitious time, to compaſſe the happineſſe of my hearts deſire ; I know no reaſon why I ſhould refuſe it. Perhaps, I ſhall neuer haue the like offer againe, or euer be enabled with ſuch an opportunitie. So, beeing fully determined to proſecute his intention, and perſwading himſelf alſo, that the ſilence of the night had beſtowed ſleepe on all the reſt ; with a lowe and trembling voyce, he called *Aleſſandro*, aduiſing him to come and lye downe by him, which (after ſome few faint excuſes) he did, and putting off his cloaths, lay downe by the Abbot, being not a little proude of ſo gracious a fauour.

The Abbot, laying his arme ouer the others body, began to imbrace and hugge him ; euen as amorous friends (prouoked by earneſt affection) vſe to doe. Whereat *Aleſſandro* verie much meruayling, and being an Italian himſelfe, fearing leaſt this folly in the Abbot, would conuert to foule and diſhoneſt action, ſhrunke modeſtly from him. Which the

Abbot

Abbot perceiuing, and doubting leaſt *Aleſſandro* would depart and leaue him, pleaſantly ſmiling,and with baſhfull behauiour baring his ſtomack, he tooke *Aleſſandroes* hand, and laying it thereon, ſaide; *Aleſſandro*,let all bad thoughts of beſtiall abuſe be farre off from thee,and feele here,to reſolue thee from all ſuch feare. *Alleſſandro* feeling the Abbots breſt,found there two pretty little mountaines, round, plumpe, and ſmooth, appearing as if they had beene of poliſhed Iuory; whereby he perceiued, that the Abbot was a woman: which,ſetting an edge on his youthful deſires, made him fall to embracing, and immediately he offered to kiſſe her;but ſhe ſomewhat rudely repulſing him, as halfe offended, ſaide.

Aleſſandro, forbeare ſuch boldneſſe, vppon thy liues perill, and before thou further preſume to touch me,vnderſtand what I ſhall tell thee. I am (as thou perceiueſt) no man,but a woman; and departing a Virgin from my Fathers Houſe,am trauelling towards the Popes holineſſe,to the end that he ſhould beſtow me in marriage. But the other day,when firſt I beheld thee, whether it proceeded from thy happineſſe in fortune, or the fatall houre of my owne infelicity for euer,I know not; I conceyued ſuch an effectuall kinde of liking towardes thee, as neuer did Woman loue a man more truely then I doe thee, hauing ſworn within my ſoule to make thee my Husband before any other; and if thou wilt not accept me as thy wife,ſet a locke vpon thy lippes concerning what thou haſt heard,and depart henee to thine owne bed againe.

No doubt, but that theſe were ſtrange newes to *Aleſſandro*, and ſeemed meerely as a miracle to him. What ſhee was, he knew not, but in regard of her traine and company, hee reputed her to be both noble and rich, as alſo ſhe was wonderfull faire and beautifull. His owne fortunes ſtood out of future expectation by his kinſmens ouerthrow, & his great loſſea is England; wherefore, upon an opportunity ſo fairely offered, he held it no wiſedome to returne refuſall, but accepted her gracious motion, and referred all to her diſpoſing. Shee ariſing out of her bed, called him to a little Table ſtanding by, where hung a faire Crucifixe vpon the wall; before which, and calling him to witneſſe,that ſuffered ſuch bitter and cruell torments on his Croſſe, putting a Ring vpon his finger, there ſhe faithfully eſpouſed him, refuſing all the world,to be onely his:which being on either ſide confirmed ſolemnly,by an holy Vow,and chaſte kiſſes; ſhee commanded him backe to his Chamber,and ſhe returned to her bed againe, ſufficiently ſatisfied with her Loues acceptation, and ſo they iournied on till they came to Rome.

When they had reſted themſelues there for ſome few dayes, the ſuppoſed Abbot, with the two Knights,and none elſe in company but *Aleſſandro*,went before the Pope,and hauing done him ſuch reuerence as beſeemed,the Abbot began to ſpeake in this manner.

Holy Father (as you know much better then any other) euerie one that deſireth to liue well and vertuouſly, ought to ſhunne (ſo farre as in them lyeth) all occaſions that may induce to the contrarie. To the end therefore, that I(who deſire nothing more)then to liue within the com-

paſſe

paſſe of a vertuous conuerſation, may perfect my hopes in this behalfe: I haue fled from my Fathers Court, and am come hither in this habite as you ſee, to craue therein your holy and fatherly furtherance. I am daughter to the King of England, and haue ſufficiently furniſhed my ſelfe with ſome of his Treaſures, that your Holineſſe may beſtow me in marriage; becauſe mine vnkind Father, neuer regarding my youth and beauty (inferior to few in my natiue country) would marry me to the King of *North-Wales*, an aged, impotent, and ſickely man. Yet let me tell your ſanctity, that his age and weakeneſſe hath not ſo much occaſioned my flight, as feare of mine owne youth and frailety; when being married to him, inſtead of loyall and vnſtained life, lewd and diſhoneſt deſires might make me to wander, by breaking the diuine Lawes of wedlocke, and abuſing the royall blood of my Father.

As I trauailed hither with this vertuous intention, our Lord, who onely knoweth perfectly, what is beſt fitting for all his creatures; preſented mine eyes (no doubt in his meere mercy and goodneſſe) with a man meete to be my husband, which (pointing to *Aleſſandro*) is this young Gentleman ſtanding by me, whoſe honeſt, vertuous, and ciuill demeanour, deſerueth a Lady of farre greater worth, although (perhaps) Nobility in blood be denied him, and may make him ſeeme not ſo excellent, as one deriued from Royall diſcent. Holy and religious vowes haue paſt betweene vs both, and the Ring on his finger, is the firme pledge of my faith and conſtancie, neuer to accept any other man in marriage, but him onely, although my Father, or any elſe doe diſlike it. Wherefore (holy Father) the principall cauſe of my comming hither, being already effectually concluded on, I deſire to compleat the reſt of my Pilgrimage, by viſiting the ſanctified places in this City, wherof there are great plenty: And alſo, that ſacred marriage, being contracted in the preſence of God onely, betweene *Aleſſandro* and my ſelfe, may by you be publikely confirmed, and in an open congregation. For, ſeeing God hath ſo appointed it, and our ſoules haue ſo ſolemnely vowed it, that no diſaſter whatſoeuer can alter it: you being Gods Vicar here on earth, I hope will not gaine-ſay, but confirme it with your fatherly benediction, that wee may liue in Gods feare, and dye in his fauour.

Perſwade your ſelues (faire Ladies) that *Aleſſandro* was in no meane admiration, when hee heard, that his wife was daughter to the King of England, vnſpeakable ioy (queſtionleſſe) wholly ouercame him: but the two Knights were not a little troubled and offended, at ſuch a ſtraunge and vnexpected accident, yea, ſo violent were their paſſions, that had they beene any where elſe, then in the Popes preſence, *Aleſſandro* had felt their furie, and (perhaps) the Princeſſe her ſelfe too. On the other ſide, the Pope was much amazed at the habite ſhe went diſguiſed in, and likewiſe at the election of her husband; but, perceiuing there was no reſiſtance to be made againſt it, hee yeelded the more willingly to ſatisfie her deſire. And therefore, hauing firſt comforted the two Knights, and made peace betweene them, the Princeſſe, and *Aleſſandro*, he gaue order

for

for the reſt that was to be done.

When the appointed day for the ſolemnity was come, hee cauſed the Princeſſe (cloathed in moſt rich and royall garments) to appeare before all the Cardinals, and many other great perſons then in preſence, who were come to this worthy Feaſt, which hee had cauſed purpoſely to bee prepared, where ſhe ſeemed ſo faire and goodly a Lady, that euery eye was highly delighted to behold her, commending her with no meane admiration. In like manner was *Aleſſandro* greatly honoured by the two Knights, being moſt ſumptuous in appearance, and not like a man that had lent money to vſury, but rather of very royall quality; the Pope himſelfe celebrating the marriage betweene them, which being finiſhed, with the moſt magnificent pompe that could be deuiſed, hee gaue them his benediction, and licenced their departure thence.

Aleſſandro, his Princeſſe and her traine thus leauing *Rome*, they would needes viſite *Florence*, where the newes of this accident was (long before) noyſed, and they receiued by the Citizens in royall manner. There did ſhee deliuer the three brethren out of priſon, hauing firſt payed all their debts, and reſeated them againe (with their wiues) in their former inheritances and poſſeſſions. Afterward, departing from *Florence*, and *Agolanto*, one of the Vncles trauailing with them to *Paris*; they were there alſo moſt honourably entertained by the King of *France*. From whence the two Knights went before for *England*, and preuailed ſo ſucceſſefully with the King; that hee receiued his daughter into grace and fauour, as alſo his Sonne in law her husband, to whom hee gaue the order of Knighthoode, and (for his greater dignitie) created him Earle of *Cornewall*.

And ſuch was the noble ſpirit of *Aleſſandro*, that he pacified the troubles betweene the King and his ſonne, whereon enſued great comfort to the Kingdome, winning the loue and fauour of all the people; and *Agolanto* (by the meanes of *Aleſſandro*) recouered all that was due to him and his brethren in *England*, returning richly home to *Florence*, Count *Aleſſandro* (his kinſman) hauing firſt dub'd him Knight. Long time he liued in peace and tranquility, with the faire Princeſſe his wife, prouing to be ſo abſolute in wiſedome, and ſo famous a Souldier; that (as ſome report) by aſſiſtance of his Father in law, he conquered the Realme of *Ireland*, and was crowned King thereof.

Landolpho Ruffolo, *falling into pouerty, became a Pirate on the Seas, and being taken by the Genewayes, hardly eſcaped drowning: Which yet (neuertheleſſe) he did, vpon a little Cheſt or Coffer, full of very rich Iewels, being carried thereon to* Corfu, *where he was well entertained by a good woman; And afterward, returned richly home to his owne houſe.*

The fourth Nouell.

Whereby may be diſcerned, into how many dangers a man may fall, through a couetous deſire to enrich himſelfe.

MAdam *Lauretta*, ſitting next to Madam *Pampinea*, and ſeeing how triumphantly ſhe had finiſhed her diſcourſe; without attending any thing elſe, ſpake thus. Gracious Ladies, we ſhall neuer behold (in mine opinion) a greater act of Fortune, then to ſee a man ſo ſuddainly exalted, euen from the loweſt depth of pouerty, to a Royall eſtate of dignity; as the diſcourſe of Madam *Pampinea* hath made good, by the happy aduancement of *Aleſſandro*. And becauſe it appeareth neceſſary, that whoſoeuer diſcourſeth on the ſubiect propoſed, ſhould no way vary from the very ſame termes; I ſhall not ſhame to tell a tale, which, though it containe far greater miſhapes then the former, may ſort to as happy an iſſue, albeit not ſo noble and magnificent. In which reſpect, it may (perhaps) merit the leſſe attention; but howſoeuer that fault ſhall be found in you, I meane to diſcharge mine owne duty.



Opinion hath made it famous for long time, that the Sea-coaſt of *Rhegium* to *Gaieta*, is the onely delactable part of all *Italy*, wherein, ſomewhat neere to *Salerno*, is a ſhore looking vpon the Sea, which the inhabitants there

there dwelling, doe call the coaſt of *Malfy*, full of ſmall Townes, Gardens, Springs, and wealthy men, trading in as many kindes of Merchandizes, as any other people that I know. Among which Townes, there is one, named *Rauello*, wherein (as yet to this day there are rich people) there was (not long ſince) a very wealthy man, named *Landolpho Ruffolo*, who being not contented with his riches, but coueting to multiply them double and trebble, fell in danger, to looſe both himſelfe and wealth together.

This man (as other Merchants are wont to doe) after hee had conſidered on his affaires, bought him a very goodly Ship, lading it with diuers ſorts of Merchandizes, all belonging to himſelfe onely, and making his voyage to the Iſle of *Cyprus*. Where he found, ouer and beſide the Merchandizes he had brought thither, many Ships more there arriued, and all laden with the ſame commodities, in regard whereof, it was needefull for him, not onely to make a good Mart of his goods; but alſo was further conſtrained (if hee meant to vent his commodities) to ſell them away (almoſt) for nothing, endangering his vtter deſtruction and ouerthrow. Whereupon, grieuing exceedingly at ſo great a loſſe, not knowing what to doe, and ſeeing, that from very aboundant wealth, hee was likely to fall into as low pouerty: he reſolued to die, or to recompence his loſſes vpon others, becauſe he would not returne home poore, hauing departed thence ſo rich.

Meeting with a Merchant, that bought his great Ship of him; with the money made thereof, and alſo his other Merchandizes, hee purchaſed another, being a lighter veſſell, apt and proper for the vſe of a Pirate, arming and furniſhing it in ample manner, for rouing and robbing vpon the Seas. Thus hee began to make other mens goods his owne, eſpecially from the Turkes he tooke much wealth, Fortune being alwayes therein ſo fauourable to him, that hee could neuer compaſſe the like by trading. So that, within the ſpace of one yeare, hee had robd and taken ſo many Gallies from the Turke; that he found himſelfe well recouered, not onely of all his loſſes by Merchandize, but likewiſe his wealth was wholly redoubled. Finding his loſſes to be very liberally requited, and hauing now ſufficient, it were folly to hazard a ſecond fall; wherefore, conferring with his owne thoughts, and finding that he had enough, and needed not to couet after more: he fully concluded, now to returne home to his owne houſe againe, and liue vpon his goods thus gotten.

Continuing ſtill in feare of the loſſes he had ſuſtained by traffique, and minding neuer more to imploy his money that way, but to keep this light veſſell, which had holpen him to all his wealth: he commanded his men to put forth their Oares, and ſhape their courſe for his owne dwelling. Being aloft in the higher Seas, darke night ouer-taking them, and a mighty winde ſuddainly comming vpon them: it not onely was contrary to their courſe, but held on with ſuch impetuous violence; that the ſmall veſſell, being vnable to endure it, made to land-ward ſpeedily, and in expectation of a more friendly wind, entred a little port of the Sea, directing

vp into a ſmall Iſland, and there ſafely ſheltred it ſelfe. Into the ſame port which *Landolpho* had thus taken for his refuge, entred (ſoone after) two great Carrackes of *Genewayes*, lately come from *Conſtantinople*. When the men in them had eſpied the ſmall Barke, and lockt vp her paſſage from getting forth; vnderſtanding the Owners name, and that report had famed him to be very rich, they determined (as men euermore addicted naturally, to couet after money and ſpoile) to make it their owne as a prize at Sea.

Landing ſome ſtore of their men, well armed with Croſſe-bowes and other weapons, they tooke poſſeſſion of ſuch a place, where none durſt iſſue forth of the ſmall Barke, but endangered his life with their Darts and Arrowes. Entering aboord the Barke, and making it their owne by full poſſeſſion, all the men they threw ouer-boord, without ſparing any but *Landolpho* himſelfe, whom they mounted into one of the Carrackes, leauing him nothing but a poore ſhirt of Maile on his backe, and hauing rifled the Barke of all her riches, ſunke it into the bottome of the ſea. The day following, the rough windes being calmed, the Carrackes ſet ſaile againe, hauing a proſperous paſſage all the day long; but vpon the entrance of darke night, the windes blew more tempeſtuouſly then before, and ſweld the Sea in ſuch rude ſtormes, that the two Carracks were ſundered each from other, and by violence of the tempeſt it came to paſſe, that the Carracke wherein lay poore miſerable *Landolpho* (beneath the Iſle of *Cephalonia*) ran againſt a rocke, and euen as a glaſſe againſt a wall, ſo ſplit the Carracke in peeces, the goods and merchandize floating on the Sea, Cheſts, Coffers, Beds, and ſuch like other things, as often hapneth in ſuch lamentable accidents.

Now, notwithſtanding the nights obſcurity, and impetuous violence of the billowes; ſuch as could ſwimme, made ſhift to ſaue their liues by ſwimming. Others caught hold on ſuch things, as by Fortunes fauour, floated neereſt to them, among whom, diſtreſſed *Landolpho*, deſirous to ſaue his life, if poſſibly it might be, eſpied a Cheſt or Coffer before him, ordained (no doubt) to be the meanes of his ſafety from drowning. Now although the day before, he had wiſhed for death infinite times, rather then to returne home in ſuch wretched pouerty; yet, ſeeing how other men ſtroue for ſafety of their liues by any helpe, were it neuer ſo little, hee tooke aduantage of this fauour offred him, and the rather in a neceſſitie ſo vrgent. Keeping faſt vpon the Coffer ſo well as he could, and being driuen by the winds and waues, one while this way, and anon quite contrary, he made ſhift for himſelfe till day appeared; when looking euery way about him, ſeeing nothing but clouds, the ſeas and the Coffer, which one while ſhrunke from vnder him, and another while ſupported him, according as the windes and billowes carried it: all that day and night thus he floated vp and downe, drinking more then willingly hee would, but almoſt hunger-ſtarued thorow want of foode. The next morning, either by the appointment of heauen or power of the Windes, *Landolpho* who was (well-neere) become a Spundge, holding his armes ſtrongly

about

about the Cheſt,as we haue ſeene ſome doe, who (dreading drowning) take hold on any the very ſmalleſt helpe;drew neere vnto the ſhore of the Iland *Corfu*, where (by good fortune) a poore woman was ſcowring diſhes with the ſalt water and ſand,to make them(houſe-wife like)neate and cleane.

When ſhee ſaw the Cheſts drawing neere her, and not diſcerning the ſhape of any man, ſhee grew fearefull,and retyring from it, cried out aloude. He had no power of ſpeaking to her, neither did his ſight doe him the ſmalleſt ſeruice; but euen as the waues and windes pleaſed, the Cheſt was driuen ſtill neerer to the Land,and then the woman perceyued that it had the forme of a Cofer,and looking more aduiſedly, beheld two armes extended ouer it,and afterward, ſhe eſpied the face of a man, not being able to iudge, whether he were aliue, or no. Moued by charitable and womanly compaſſion, ſhee ſtept in among the billowes, and getting faſt holde on the hayre of his head, drew both the Cheſt and him to the Land, and calling forth her Daughters to helpe her, with much adoe ſhe vnfolded his armes from the Cheſt, ſetting it vp on her Daughters head, and then betweene them, *Landolpho* was led into the Towne,and there conueyed into a warme Stoue,where quickly he recouered (by her pains, his ſtrength benummed with extreame cold.

Good wines and comfortable broathes ſhee cheriſhed him withall, that his ſences being indifferently reſtored, hee knew the place where hee was; but not in what manner he was brought thither, till the good woman ſhewed him the Cofer that had kept him floating vpon the waues, and (next vnder God) had ſaued his life. The Cheſt ſeemed of ſuch ſledder weight, that nothing of any value could be expected in it, either to recompence the womans great paines and kindneſſe beſtowne on him, or any matter of his owne benefit. Neuertheleſſe,the woman being abſent, he opened the Cheſt, and found innumerable precious ſtones therein, ſome coſtly and curiouſly ſet in Gold,and others not fixed in any mettall. Hauing knowledge of their great worth and value (being a Merchant, and skil'd in ſuch matters) he became much comforted, prayſing God for this good ſucceſſe, and ſuch an admirable meanes of deliuerance from danger.

Then conſidering with himſelfe, that (in a ſhort time) hee had beene twice well buffeted and beaten by Fortune, and fearing, leaſt a third miſhap might follow in like manner; hee conſulted with his thoughts, how he might ſafeſt order the buſineſſe, and bring ſo rich a booty (without perill) to his owne home. Wherefore, wrapping vp the Iewels in very vnſightly coloures, that no ſuſpition at all ſhould be conceiued of them,hee ſaide to the good woman, that the Cheſt would not doe him any further ſeruice; but if ſhee pleaſed to lende him a ſmall ſacke or bagge, ſhee might keepe the Cofer, for in her houſe it would diuers way ſtead her. The woman gladly did as he deſired, and *Landolpho* returning her infinite thankes, for the louing kindneſſe ſhee had affoorded him, throwing the ſacke on his necke, paſſed by a Barke to *Brunduſium*, and from thence to

Tranium, where Merchants in the City beſtowed good garments on him, he acquainting them with his diſaſterous fortunes, but not a word concerning his laſt good ſucceſſe.

Being come home in ſafety to *Rauello*, he fell on his knees, and thanked God for all his mercies towards him. Then opening the ſacke, and viewing the Iewels at more leyſure then formerly he had done, he found them to be of ſo great eſtimation, that ſelling them but at ordinary and reaſonable rates, he was three times richer, then when hee departed firſt from his houſe. And hauing vented them all, he ſent a great ſumme of money to the good woman at *Corfu*, that had reſcued him out of the Sea, and ſaued his life in a danger ſo dreadfull. The like he did to *Tranium*, to the Merchants that had newly cloathed him; liuing richly vpon the remainder, and neuer aduenturing more to the Sea, but ended his dayes in wealth and honour.

Andrea de Piero, *trauelling from* Perouſe *to* Naples *to buy Horſes, was (in the ſpace of one night) ſurpriſed by three admirable accidents, out of all which he fortunately eſcaped, and with a rich Ring, returned home to his owne houſe.*

The fift Nouell:

Comprehending, how needfull a thing it is, for a man that trauelleth in affaires of the world, to be prouident and well aduiſed, and carefully to keepe himſelfe from the crafty and deceitfull allurements of Strumpets.



THe precious Stones and Iewels found by *Landolpho*, maketh mee to remember (ſaid Madam *Fiammetta*, who was next to deliuer her diſcourſe) a Tale, containing no leſſe perils, then that reported by Madam *Lauretta:*

Lauretta: but somewhat different from it, because the one happened in sundry yeeres, and this other had no longer time, then the compasse of one poore night, as instantly I will relate vnto you.

As I haue heard reported by many, there sometime liued in *Peronse* or *Perugia*, a young man, named *Andrea de Piero*, whose profession was to trade about Horses, in the nature of a Horse-courser, or Horse-master, who hearing of a good Faire or Market (for his purpose) at *Naples*, did put fiue hundred Crownes of gold in his purse, and iourneyed thither in the company of other Horse-coursers, arriuing there on a Sunday in the euening. According to instructions giuen him by his Host, he went the next day into the Horse market, where he saw very many Horses that he liked, cheapening their prices as he went vp and downe, but could fall to no agreement; yet to manifest that he came purposely to buy, and not as a cheapener onely, oftentimes (like a shallow-braine trader in the world) he shewed his purse of gold before all passengers, neuer respecting who, or what they were that obserued his follie.

It came to passe, that a young *Sicillian* wench (very beautifull, but at commaund of whosoeuer would, and for small hire) passing then by, and (without his perceiuing) seeing such store of gold in his purse; presently she said to her selfe: why should not all those crownes be mine, when the foole that owes them, can keepe them no closer? And so she went on. With this young wanton there was (at the same time) an olde woman (as commonly such stuffe is alwayes so attended) seeming to be a *Sicillian* also, who so soone as shee saw *Andrea*, knew him, and leauing her youthfull commodity, ranne to him, and embraced him very kindly. Which when the younger Lasse perceiued, without proceeding any further, she stayed to see what would ensue thereon. *Andrea* conferring with the olde Bawde, and knowing her (but not for any such creature) declared himselfe very affable to her; she making him promise, that shee would come and drinke with him at his lodging. So breaking off further speeches for that time, shee returned to her young *Cammerado*; and *Andrea* went about buying his horses, still cheapning good store, but did not buy any all that morning.

The Punke that had taken notice of *Andraes* purse, vpon the olde womans comming backe to her (hauing formerly studied, how shee might get all the gold, or the greater part thereof) cunningly questioned with her, what the man was, whence hee came, and the occasion of his businesse there? wherein she fully informed her particularly, and in as ample manner as himselfe could haue done: That shee had long time dwelt in *Sicily* with his Father, and afterward at *Perouse*; recounting also, at what time she came thence, and the cause which now had drawne him to *Naples*. The witty young housewife, being thorowly instructed, concerning the Parents and kindred of *Andrea*, their names, quality, and all other circumstances thereto leading; began to frame the foundation of her purpose thereupon, setting her resolution downe constantly, that the purse and gold was (already) more then halfe her owne.

Being

Being come home to her owne houſe, away ſhee ſent the olde Pandreſſe about other buſineſſe, which might hold her time long enough of employment, and hinder her returning to *Andrea* according to promiſe, purpoſing, not to truſt her in this ſerious piece of ſeruice. Calling a young crafty Girle to her, whom ſhe had well tutoured in the like ambaſſages, when euening drew on, ſhe ſent her to *Andreas* lodging, where (by good fortune) ſhe found him ſitting alone at the doore, and demanding of him, if he knew an honeſt Gentleman lodging there, whoſe name was *Signior Andrea de Piero*; he made her anſwere, that himſelfe was the man. Then taking him aſide, ſhe ſaid. Sir, there is a worthy Gentlewoman of this Citie, that would gladly ſpeake with you, if you pleaſed to vouchſafe her ſo much fauour.

Andrea, hearing ſuch a kinde of ſalutation, and from a Gentlewoman, named of worth; began to grow proud in his owne imaginations, and to make no meane eſtimation of himſelfe: As (vndoubtedly) that he was an hanſome proper man, and of ſuch cariage and perfections, as had attracted the amorous eye of this Gentlewoman, and induced her to like and loue him beyond all other, *Naples* not containing a man of better merit. Whereupon he anſwered the Mayde, that he was ready to attend her Miſtreſſe, deſiring to know, when it ſhould be, and where the Gentlewoman would ſpeake with him? So ſoone as you pleaſe Sir, replied the Damoſell, for ſhe tarrieth your comming in her owne houſe.

Inſtantly *Andrea* (without leauing any direction of his departure in his lodging, or when he intended to returne againe) ſaid to the Girle: Goe before, and I will follow. This little Chamber-commodity, conducted him to her Miſtreſſes dwelling, which was in a ſtreete named *Malpertuis*, a title manifeſting ſufficiently the ſtreetes honeſty: but hee, hauing no ſuch knowledge thereof, neither ſuſpecting any harme at all, but that he went to a moſt honeſt houſe, and to a Gentlewoman of good reſpect; entred boldly: the Mayde going in before, and guiding him vp a faire payre of ſtayres, which he hauing more then halfe aſcended, the cunning young Queane gaue a call to her Miſtreſſe, ſaying; *Signior Andrea* is come already, whereupon, ſhe appeared at the ſtayres-head, as if ſhe had ſtayed there purpoſely to entertaine him. She was young, very beautifull, comely of perſon, and rich in adornements, which *Andrea* well obſeruing, and ſeeing her deſcend two or three ſteps, with open armes to embrace him, catching faſt hold about his neck; he ſtood as a man confounded with admiration, and ſhe contained a cunning kinde of ſilence, euen as if ſhe were vnable to vtter one word, ſeeming hindered by extremity of ioy at his preſence, and to make him effectually admire her extraordinary kindneſſe, hauing teares plenteouſly at commaund, intermixed with ſighes and broken ſpeeches, at laſt, thus ſhe ſpake.

Signior Andrea, you are the moſt welcome friend to me in the world; ſealing this ſalutation with infinite ſweet kiſſes and embraces: whereat (in wonderfull amazement) he being ſtrangely tranſported, replied; Madame, you honour me beyond all compaſſe of merit. Then, taking him by

her the hand, ſhee guided him thorough a goodly Hall, into her owne amber, which was delicately embalmed with Roſes, Orenge flowers, all other pleaſing ſmelles, and a coſtly bed in the middeſt, curtained and about, verie artificiall Pictures beautifying the walles, with many ier embelliſhments, ſuch as thoſe Countries are liberally ſtored with-. He being meerely a nouice in theſe kinds of wanton carriages of the orld, and free from any baſe or degenerate conceite; firmely perſwad himſelfe, that (queſtionleſſe) ſhe was a Lady of no meane eſteeme, d he more then happy, to be thus reſpected and honored by her. They th being ſeated on a curious Cheſt at the beds feete, teares cunningly ckling downe her Cheekes, and ſighes intermedled with inward ſobngs, breathed foorth in ſad, but verie ſeemely manner, thus ſhee beinne.

I am ſure *Andrea*, that you greatly maruell at me, in gracing you vvith is ſolemne and kinde entertainment, and why I ſhould ſo melt my ſelfe ſighes and teares, at a man that hath no knowledge of mee, or perhaps, dome or neuer heard any ſpeeches of mee: but you ſhall inſtantly reiue from mee matter to augment your greater maruaile, meeting heere ith your owne Siſter, beyond all hope or expectation in eyther of vs both. But ſeeing that Heauen hath beene ſo gracious to me, to let mee ſee one of my Brethren before I dye (though gladly I would haue ſeene them all) which is ſome addition of comfort to me, and that which (happily) thou haſt neuer heard before, in plaine and trueſt manner, I will reueale vnto thee.

Piero, my Father and thine, dwelt long time (as thou canſt not chooſe but to haue vnderſtood) in *Palermo*; where, through the bounty, and other gracious good parts remaining in him, he was much renowned, and to this day, is no doubt remembred, by many of his louing Friends and Well-willers. Among them that moſt intimately affected *Piero*, my mother (who was a Gentlewoman, and at that time a widow) did deereſt of all other loue him; ſo that forgetting the feare of her Father, Brethren, yea, and her owne honour, they became ſo priuately acquainted, that I was begotten, and am heere now ſuch as thou ſeeſt me. Afterward, occaſions fo befalling our Father, to abandon *Palermo*, and returne to *Perouſe*, he left my mother and me his little daughter, neuer after (for ought that I could learne) once remembring either her or me: ſo that (if he had not beene my Father) I could haue much condemned him, in regard of his ingratitude to my mother, and loue which hee ought to haue ſhewne me as his childe, being borne of no Chamber maide, neyther of a Citty ſinner; albeit I muſt needes ſay, that ſhe was blame-worthy, without any further knowledge of him (moued onely thereto by moſt loyal affection) to commit both her ſelfe, and all the wealth ſhee had, into his hands: but things ill done, and ſo long time ſince, are more eaſily controulled, then amended.

Being left ſo young at *Palermo*, and growing (well neere) to the ſtature as now you ſee me; my Mother (being wealthy) gaue me in marriage to

one

one of the *Gergentes* Family, a Gentleman, and of great reuennues, who in his loue to me and my mother, went and dwelt at *Palermo*: where falling into the *Guelphes* Faction, and making one in the enterprize with *Charles* our King; it came to paſſe, that they were diſcouered to *Fredericke* King of *Arragon*, before their intent could be put in execution: Whereupon, we were enforced to flye from *Sicily*, euen when my hope ſtoode fairely, to haue beene the greateſt Lady in all the Iſland. Packing vp then ſuch few things as wee could take with vs, (few I may well call them, in regard of our wealthy poſſeſſions, both in Pallaces, Houſes, and Lands, all which we were conſtrained to forgo:) we made our recourſe to this Citty, where we found King *Charles* ſo benigne and gracious to vs, that recompencing the greater part of our loſſes, he beſtowed Lands and houſes on vs here, beſide a continuall large penſion to my husband your brother in Law, as heereafter himſelfe ſhall better acquaint you withal. Thus came I hither, and thus remaine here, where I am able to welcome my brother *Andrea*, thankes more to Fortune, then any friendlineſſe in him. With which words ſhe embraced and kiſſed him many times, ſighing and weeping as ſhe did before.

Andrea hearing this Fable ſo artificially deliuered, compoſed from point to point with ſuch likely proteſtations, without faltring or failing in any one words vtterance; and remembring perfectly for truth, that his Father had formerly dwelt at *Palermo*; knowing alſo (by ſome ſenſible feeling in himſelfe) the cuſtome of young people, who are eaſily conquered by affection in their youthfull heate, ſeeing beſide the tears, trembling ſpeeches, and earneſt embracings of this cunning commodity; he tooke all to be true by her thus ſpoken, and vpon her ſilence, thus replyed. Lady, let it not ſeeme ſtrange to you, that your words haue rayſed maruell in me, becauſe (indeed) I had no knowledge of you, euen no more then as if I had neuer ſeene you: neuer alſo hauing heard my father ſpeak either of you or your mother (for ſome conſiderations beſt known vnto himſelfe:) or if at any time he vſed ſuch language, either my youth then, or defectiue memory ſince, hath vtterly loſt it. But truely, it is no little ioy and comfort to me, to finde a ſiſter here, where I had no ſuch hope or expectation, and where alſo my ſelfe am a meere ſtranger. For to ſpeake my minde freely of you, and the perfections gracefully appearing in you I know not any man of how great repute or qualitie ſoeuer, but you may well beſeeme his acceptance, much rather then mine, that am but a mean Merchant. But faire Siſter, I deſire to be reſolued in one thing, to wit; by what means you had vnderſtanding of my being in this City? whereto readily ſhe returned him this anſwer.

Brother, a poore Woman of this City, whom I employ ſometimes in houſhold occaſions, came to mee this morning, and (hauing ſeene you) tolde me, that ſhee dwelt a long while with our Father, both at *Palermo* and *Perouſe*. And becauſe I held it much better beſeeming my condition, to haue you viſite me in mine owne dwelling, then I to come ſee you at a common Inne, I made the bolder to ſend for you hither. After which words,

words, in very orderly manner, ſhe enquired of his chiefeſt kindred and friends, calling them readily by their proper names, according to her former inſtructions. Whereto *Andrea* ſtill made her anſwere, confirming thereby his beliefe of her the more ſtrongly, and crediting whatſoeuer ſhe ſaide, farre better then before.

Their conference hauing long time continued, and the heate of the day being ſomewhat extraordinary, ſhe called for *Greeke* wine, and banquetting ſtuffe, drinking to *Andrea*; and he pledging her very contentedly. After which, he would haue returned to his lodging, becauſe it drew neere ſupper time; which by no meanes ſhee would permit, but ſeeming more then halfe diſpleaſed, ſhee ſaide. Now I plainely perceiue brother, how little account you make of me, conſidering, you are with your owne Siſter, who (you ſay) you neuer ſaw before, and in her owne Houſe, whether you ſhould alwayes reſort when you come to this City; and would you now refuſe her, to goe and ſup at a common Inne? Beleeue me Brother, you ſhall ſup with me, for although my Husband is now from home, to my no little diſcontentment: yet you ſhall find Brother, that his wife, can bid you welcome, and make you good cheere beſide.

Now was *Andrea* ſo confounded with this extremity of courteſie, that he knew not what to ſay, but onely thus replied. I loue you as a Siſter ought to be loued, and accept of your exceeding kindneſſe: but if I returne not to my lodging, I ſhall wrong mine Hoſt and his gueſts too much, becauſe they will not ſup vntill I come. For that (quoth ſhee) we haue a preſent remedy, one of my ſeruants ſhall goe and giue warning, whereby they ſhall not tarry your comming. Albeit, you might doe me a great kindneſſe, to ſend for your friends to ſup with vs here, where I aſſure ye, they ſhall finde that your Siſter (for your ſake) will bid them welcome, and after ſupper, you may all walke together to your Inne. *Andrea* anſwered, that he had no ſuch friends there, as ſhould be ſo burthenous to her: but ſeeing ſhe vrged him ſo farre, he would ſtay to ſup with her, and referred himſelfe ſolely to her diſpoſition.

Ceremonious ſhew was made, of ſending a ſeruant to the Inne, for not expecting *Andreas* preſence at Supper, though no ſuch matter was performed; but, after diuers other diſcourſings, the table being couered, and variety of coſtly viands placed thereon, downe they ſate to feeding, with plenty of curious Wines liberally walking about, ſo that it was darke night before they aroſe from the table. *Andrea* then offring to take his leaue, ſhe would (by no meanes) ſuffer it, but tolde him, that *Naples* was a Citie of ſuch ſtrict Lawes and Ordinances, as admitted no night-walkers, although they were Natiues, much leſſe ſtrangers, but punniſhed them with great ſeuerity. And therefore, as ſhe had formerly ſent word to his Inne, that they ſhould not expect his comming to ſupper, the like had ſhe done concerning his bed, intending to giue her Brother *Andrea* one nights lodging, which as eaſily ſhe could affoord him, as ſhee had done a Supper. All which this new-caught Woodcocke verily crediting, and that he was in company of his owne Siſter *Fiordeliza* (for ſo did

ſhee

ſhe cunningly ſtile her ſelfe, and in which beleefe he was meerely deluded) he accepted the more gladly her gentle offer, and concluded to ſtay there all that night.

After ſupper, their conference laſted very long, purpoſely dilated out in length, that a great part of the night might therein be waſted: when, leauing *Andrea* to his Chamber, and a Lad to attend, that he ſhould lacke nothing; ſhe with her women went to their lodgings, and thus our Brother and ſuppoſed Siſter were parted. The ſeaſon then being ſomewhat hot and ſoultry, *Andrea* put off his hoſe and doublet, and being in his ſhirt alone, layed them vnderneath the beds boulſter, as ſeeming carefull of his money. But finding a prouocation to the houſe of Office, he demanded of the Lad, where hee might find it; who ſhewed him a little doore in a corner of the Chamber, appointing him to enter there. Safely enough he went in, but chanced to tread vpon a board, which was faſtened at neither ende to the ioynts whereon it lay, being a pit-fall made of purpoſe, to entrap any ſuch coxcombe, as would be trained to ſo baſe a place of lodging, ſo that both he and the board fell downe together into the draught; yet ſuch being his good fortune, to receiue no harme in the fall (although it was of extraordinary height) onely the filth of the place, (it being ouer full) had fowly myred him.

Now for your better vnderſtanding the quality of the place, and what enſued thereupon, it is not vnneceſſary to deſcribe it, according to a common vſe obſerued in thoſe parts. There was a narrow paſſage or entrie, as often we ſee reſerued betweene two houſes, for eithers benefit to ſuch a needfull place; and boards looſely lay vpon the ioynts, which ſuch as were acquainted withall, could eaſily auoide any perill, in paſſing to or from the ſtoole. But our ſo newly created Brother, not dreaming to find a Queane to his Siſter, receiuing ſo foule a fall into the vault, and knowing not how to helpe himſelfe, being ſorrowfull beyond meaſure; cryed out to the boy for light and aide, who intended not to giue him any. For the crafty wag, (a meete attendant for ſo honeſt a Miſtreſſe) no ſooner heard him to be fallen, but preſently he ran to enforme her thereof, and ſhee as ſpeedily returned to the Chamber, where finding his cloathes vnder the beds head, ſhee needed no inſtruction for ſearch of his pockets. But hauing found the gold, which *Andrea* indiſcreetely carried alwayes about him, as thinking it could no where elſe be ſo ſafe: This was all ſhee aymed at, and for which ſhee had enſnared him, faigning her ſelfe to be of *Palermo*, and Daughter to *Piero* of *Perouſe*, ſo that not regarding him any longer, but making faſt the houſe of Office doore, there ſhe left him in that miſerable taking.

Poore *Andrea* perceiuing, that his calles could get no anſwere from the Lad; cryed out louder, but all to no purpoſe: when ſeeing into his owne ſimplicity, and vnderſtanding his error, though ſomewhat too late, hee made ſuch meanes conſtrainedly, that he got ouer a wall, which ſeuered that foule ſinke from the Worlds eye; and being in the open ſtreete, went to the doore of the Houſe, which then he knew too well to his coſt, making

king loud exclaimes with rapping and knocking, but all as fruiteleſſe as before. Sorrowing exceedingly, and manifeſtly beholding his misfortune; Alas (quoth he) how ſoone haue I loſt a Siſter, and fiue hundred Crownes beſides? With many other words, loud calles, and beatings vpon the doore without intermiſſion, the neighbours finding themſelues diſturbed, & vnable to endure any ſuch ceaſeleſſe vexation, roſe from their bedds, and called to him, deſiring him to be gone, and let them reſt. A Maide alſo of the ſame houſe, looking forth at the window, and ſeeming as newly raiſed from ſleepe, called to him, ſaying, What noyſe is that beneath? Why Virgin (anſwered *Andrea*) know you not me? I am *Andrea de Piero*, Brother to your Miſtreſſe *Fiordeliza*. Thou art a drunken knaue replyed the Maide, more full of drinke then wit: goe ſleepe, goe ſleepe, and come againe to morrow: for I know no *Andrea de Piero*, neither hath my Miſtreſſe any ſuch Brother. Get thee gone good man, and ſuffer vs to ſleepe I prythee. How now (quoth *Andrea*) doeſt thou not vnderſtand what I ſay? Thou knoweſt that I ſupt with thy Miſtreſſe this night; but if our Sicilian kindred be ſo ſoone forgot, I prythee giue mee my Cloathes which I left in my Chamber, and then verie gladly will I get mee gone. Hereat the Maide laughing out aloude, ſaide; Surely the man is mad, or walketh the ſtreetes in a dreame: and ſo claſping faſt the Window, away ſhe went and left him.

Now could *Andrea* aſſure himſelfe, that his Golde and cloathes were paſt recouery, which mouing him to the more impatience, his former interceſſions became conuerted into furie, and what hee could not compaſſe by faire intreats, he intended to winne by outrage and violence: ſo that taking vp a great ſtone in his hand, hee layed vpon the doore verie powerfull ſtrokes. The neighbors hearing this molleſtation ſtill, admitting them not the leaſt reſpite of reſt, reputed him for a troubleſome fellow, & that he vſed thoſe counterfet words, onely to diſturbe the Miſtreſſe of the houſe, and all that dwelled neere about her; looking againe out at their windowes, they altogether beganne to rate and reproue him, euen like ſo many bawling Curres, barking at a ſtrange dog paſſing through the ſtreet. This is ſhamefull villany (quoth one) and not to be ſuffered, that honeſt women ſhould thus be moleſted in their houſes, with fooliſh idle words, and at ſuch an vnſeaſonable time of the night. For Gods ſake (good man) be gone, and let vs ſleepe; if thou haue any thing to ſay to the Gentlewoman of the houſe, come to morrow in the day time, and no doubt but ſhe will make thee ſufficient anſwer.

Andrea, being ſome-what pacified with theſe ſpeeches, a ſhagge-hayr'd ſwaſh-buckler, a grim viſagde Ruffian (as ſildome bawdy houſes are without ſuch ſwaggering Champions) not ſeene or heard by *Andrea*, all the while of his being in the houſe; rapping out two or three terrible Oathes, opening a Caſement, and with a ſtearne dreadfull voyce, demanded, who durſt keepe that noyſe beneath? *Andrea* fearefully looking vp, and (by a little glimmering of the Moone) ſeeing ſuch a rough fellow, with a blacke beard, ſtrowting like the quilles of a Porcupine, and patches on his face,

for hurts receiued in no honeſt quarrels, yawning alſo and ſtretching, as angry to haue his ſleepe diſturbed: trembling and quaking, anſwered; I am the Gentlewomans brother of the houſe. The Ruffian interrupting him, and ſpeaking more fiercely then before; ſealing his words with horrible Oathes, ſaid. Sirra, Raſcall, I know not of whence, or what thou art; but if I come downe to thee, I will ſo bumbaſt thy prating Coxecombe, as thou waſt neuer ſo beaten in all thy life, like a drunken ſlaue and beaſt as thou art, that all this night wilt not let vs ſleepe. And ſo hee clapt to the window againe.

The Neighbours well acquainted with this Ruffians rude conditions, ſpeaking in gentle manner to *Andrea*, ſaid. Shift for thy ſelfe (good man) in time, and tarrie not for his comming downe to thee; except thou art weary of thy life: Be gone therefore, and ſay thou haſt a friendly warning. Theſe words diſmaying *Andrea*, but much more the ſterne oathes and ougly ſight of the Ruffian, incited alſo by the Neighbours counſell, whom he imagined to aduiſe him in charitable manner: it cauſed him to depart thence, taking the way home-ward to his Inne, in no mean affliction and torment of minde, for the monſtrous abuſe offered him, and loſſe of his money. Well he remembred the paſſages, whereby the day before the young Gyrle had guided him, but the loathſome ſmell about him, was ſo extreamely offenſiue to himſelfe, that deſiring to waſh him at the Sea ſide, he ſtrayed too farre wide on the contrary hand, wandring vp the ſtreet called *Ruga Gatellana*.

Proceeding on ſtill, euen to the higheſt part of the Citie, hee eſpyed a Lanthorne and light, as alſo a man carrying it, and another man vvith him in company, both of them comming towards him. Now, becauſe he ſuſpected them two of the watch, or ſome perſons that would apprehend him, he ſtept aſide to ſhunne them, and entred into an olde houſe hard by at hand. The other mens intention was to the very ſame place; and going in, without any knowledge of *Andreaes* being there, one of them layde downe diuers inſtruments of Iron which he had brought thither on his backe, and had much talke with his fellow concerning thoſe Engines. At laſt one of them ſaide; I ſmell the moſt abhominable ſtinke that euer I felt in all my life. So, lifting vp the Lanthorn, he eſpied poore pittifull *Andrea*, cloſely couched behinde the wall. Which ſight ſomewhat affrighting him, he yet boldly demaunded, what and who he was? Whereto *Andrea* anſwered nothing, but lay ſtill and held his peace. Neerer they drew towards him with their light, demanding how hee came thither, and in that filthy manner.

Conſtraint hauing now no other euaſion, but that (of neceſſitie) all muſt out: hee related to them the whole aduenture, in the ſame ſort as it had befalne him. They greatly pittying his misfortune, one of them ſaid to the other: Queſtionleſſe, this villanie was done in the houſe of *Scarabone Buttafucco*. And then turning to *Andrea*, proceeded thus. In good faith poore man, albeit thou haſt loſt thy money, yet art thou much beholding to Fortune, for falling (though in a foule place) yet in a ſucceſſull

manner,

manner, and entring no more backe into the houſe. For beleeue mee friend, if thou haddeſt not falne, but quietly gone to ſleepe in the houſe, that ſleepe had beene thy laſt in this world, and with thy money, thou hadſt loſt thy life likewiſe. But teares and lamentations are now helpeleſſe, becauſe as eaſily mayeſt thou plucke the Starres from the Firmament, as get againe the leaſt doyt of thy loſſe. And for that ſhag haird Slaue in the houſe, he will be thy deaths-man, if hee but vnderſtand that thou makeſt any enquirie after thy money. When he had thus admoniſhed him, he began alſo in this manner to comfort him. Honeſt fellow, we cannot but pitty thy preſent condition: wherfore if thou wilt frendly aſſociate vs, in a buſineſſe which we are inſtantly going to effect, thy loſſe hath not bene ſo great, but on our words we will warrant thee, that thine immediate gaine ſhall farre exceede it. What will not a man (in deſperate extremity) both well like and allow of, eſpecially when it carryeth apparance of preſent comfort. So fared it with *Andrea*, hee perſwaded himſelfe, worſe then had already happened, could not befall him; and therefore he would gladly aduenture with them.

The ſelfe ſame day preceding this diſaſtrous night to *Andrea*, in the cheefe Church of the Cittie, had beene buried the Archbiſhop of *Naples* named *Signior Phillippo Minutulo*, in his richeſt pontificall Robes and Ornaments, and a Ruby on his finger valued to be worth fiue hundred duckets of gold: this dead body they purpoſed to rob and rifle, acquainting *Andrea* with their whole intent, whoſe neceſſitie (coupled with a couetous deſire) made him more forward then well aduiſed, to ioyne vvith them in this ſacriligious enterprize. On they went towards the great Church, *Andreaes* vnſauourie perfume much diſpleaſing them, whereupon the one ſaid to his fellow: Can we deuiſe no eaſe for this foule & noyſome inconueniences? the very ſmell of him will be a meanes to betray vs. There is a Well-pit hard by, anſwered the other, with a pulley and bucket deſcending downe into it, and there we may waſh him from this filthineſſe. To the Well-pit they came, where they found the rope and pulley hanging readie, but the bucket for ſafety was taken away; whereon they concluded, to faſten the rope about him, and ſo let him downe into the Well-pit, and when he had waſhed himſelfe, hee ſhould wagge the rope, and then they would draw him vp againe, which accordingly they forthwith performed.

Now it came to paſſe, that while he was thus waſhing himſelfe in the Well-pit, the Watch of the Citie walking the round, and finding it to bee a very hote and ſweltring night, they grew dry and thirſty, and therefore went to the Well to drinke. The other two men, perceiuing the Watch ſo neere vpon them, left *Andrea* in the pit to ſhift for himſelfe, running away to ſhelter themſelues. Their flight was not diſcouered by the Watch, but they comming to the Well-pit, *Andrea* remained ſtill in the bottome, and hauing cleanſed himſelfe ſo well as hee could, ſate wagging the rope, expecting when hee ſhould be haled vp. This dumbe ſigne the Watch diſcerned not, but ſitting downe by the Welles ſide,

they layde downe their Billes and other weapons, tugging to draw vp the rope, thinking the Bucket was faſtened thereto, and full of water. *Andrea* being haled vp to the Pits brim, left holding the rope any longer, catching faſt hold with his hands for his better ſafety: and the Watch at the ſight hereof being greatly affrighted, as thinking that they had dragd vp a Spirit; not daring to ſpeake one word, ran away with all the haſt they could make.

Andrea hereat was not a little amazed, ſo that if he had not taken very good hold on the brim: he might haue falne to the bottome, and doubtleſſe there his life had periſhed. Being come forth of the Well, and treading on Billes and Halbards, which he well knew that his companions had not brought thither with them; his meruaile ſo much the more encreaſed, ignorance and feare ſtill ſeizing him, with ſilent bemoaning his many misfortunes, away thence he wandred, but hee wiſt not whither. As he went on, he met his two fellowes, who purpoſely returned to drag him out of the Well, and ſeeing their intent already performed, deſired to know who had done it: wherein *Andrea* could not reſolue them, rehearſing what hee could, and what weapons hee found lying about the Well. Whereat they ſmiled, as knowing, that the Watch had haled him vp, for feare of whom they left him, and ſo declared to him the reaſon of their returne.

Leauing off all further talke, becauſe now it was about midnight, they went to the great Church, where finding their enterance to be eaſie: they approached neere the Tombe, which was very great, being tall of Marble, and the couer-ſtone weighty, yet with crowes of yron and other helps, they raiſed it ſo high, that a man might without perill paſſe into it. Now began they to queſtion one another, which of the three ſhould enter into the Tombe. Not I, ſaid the firſt; ſo ſaid the ſecond: No nor I, anſwered *Andrea*. Which when the other two heard, they caught faſt hold of him, ſaying. Wilt not thou goe into the Tombe? Be aduiſed what thou ſayeſt, for, if thou wilt not goe in: we will ſo beat thee with one of theſe yron crowes, that thou ſhalt neuer goe out of this Church aliue.

Thus poore *Andrea* is ſtill made a property, and Fortune (this fatall night) will haue no other foole but he, as delighting in his hourly diſaſters. Feare of their fury makes him obedient, into the graue he goes, and being within, thus conſults with himſelfe. Theſe cunning companions ſuppoſe me to be ſimple, and make me enter the Tombe, hauing an abſolute intention to deceiue me. For, when I haue giuen them all the riches that I finde here, and am ready to come forth for mine equall portion: away will they runne for their owne ſafety, and leauing me heere, not onely ſhall I looſe my right among them, but muſt remaine to what danger may follow after. Hauing thus meditated, he reſolued to make ſure of his owne ſhare firſt, and remembring the rich Ring, whereof they had tolde him: forthwith hee tooke it from the Archbiſhops finger, finding it indifferently fitte for his owne. Afterward, hee tooke the Croſſe, Miter, rich garments, Gloues and all, leauing him nothing but his ſhirt, giuing them

all

all theſe ſeuerall parcels,proteſting that there was nothing elſe. Still they preſſed vpon him, affirming that there was a Ring beſide,vrging him to ſearch diligently for it ; yet ſtill he anſwered, that he could not finde it, and for their longer tarrying with him,ſeemed as if he ſerched very carefully,but all appeared to no purpoſe.

The other two fellowes, as cunning in craft as the third could be, ſtill willed him to ſearch, and watching their apteſt opportunity: tooke away the proppes that ſupported the Tombe ſtone, and running thence with their got booty, left poore *Andrea* mewed vp in the graue. Which when he perceiued, and ſaw this miſerie to exceede all the reſt, it is farre eaſier for you to gueſſe at his greefe, then I am any way able to expreſſe it. His head, ſhoulders, yea all his vtmoſt ſtrength he employeth, to remoue that ouer-heauy hinderer of his libertie : but all his labour beeing ſpent in vaine, ſorrow threw him in a ſwoond vpon the Byſhoppes dead body,where if both of them might at that inſtant haue bin obſerued, the Arch-byſhops dead bodie, and *Andrea* in greefe dying, very hardly had bene diſtinguiſhed. But his ſenſes regaining their formes offices,among his ſilent complaints, conſideration preſented him with choyſe of theſe two vnauoydable extremities : Dye ſtaruing muſt he in the Tombe with putrifaction of the dead bodie; or if any man came to open the Graue, then muſt he be apprehended as a ſacrilegious Theefe, and ſo be hanged, according to the Lawes in that caſe prouided.

As hee continued in theſe ſtrange afflictions of minde, ſodainely hee heard a noiſe in the Church of diuers men, who (as he imagined) came about the like buſineſſe, as hee and his fellowes had vndertaken before; wherein he was not a iot deceiued,albeit his feare the more augmented. Hauing opened the Tombe, and ſupported the ſtone, they varied alſo among themſelues for entrance, and an indiffrent while contended about it. At length,a Prieſt being one in the company,boldly ſaid Why how now you white-liuer'd Raſcals? What are you affraid of? Do you thinke he will eate you? Dead men cannot bite, and therefore I my ſelfe vvill go in. Hauing thus ſpoken,he prepared his entrance to the tomb in ſuch order, that he thruſt in his feete before, for his eaſier deſcending downe into it.

Andrea ſitting vpright in the Tombe, and deſiring to make vſe of this happy opportunity, caught the Prieſt faſt by one of his legges, making ſhew as if he meant to dragge him downe. Which when the Prieſt felt, he cryed out aloud, getting out with all the haſte he could make, and all his companions, being well-neere frighted out of their wits, ranne away amaine, as if they had bene followed by a thouſand diuels. *Andrea* little dreaming on ſuch fortunate ſucceſſe, made meanes to get out of the graue, and afterward forth of the Church, at the very ſame place where he entred.

Now began day-light to appeare, when he (hauing the rich Ring on his finger) wandred on hee knew not whether : till comming to the Sea ſide, he found the way directing to his Inne,where al his company were

with his Hoſt, who had bene verie carefull for him. Hauing related his manifold miſchances, his Hoſte friendly aduiſed him with ſpeede to get him out of *Naples*. As inſtantly he did, returning home to *Perouſe*, hauing aduentured his fiue hundred Crownes on a Ring, wherewith hee purpoſed to haue bought Horſes, according to the intent of his iourney thither.

Madame Beritola Caracalla, was found in an Iſland with two Goates, hauing loſt her two Sonnes, and thence trauailed into Lunigiana: where one of her Sonnes became ſeruant to the Lord thereof, and was found ſomewhat ouer-familiar with his Maſters daughter, who therefore cauſed him to be impriſoned. Afterward, when the country of Sicely rebelled againſt King Charles, the aforeſaid Sonne chanced to bee knowne by his Mother, and was married to his Maſters daughter. And his Brother being found likewiſe, they both returned to great eſtate and credit.

The Sixt Nouell.

Heerein all men are admoniſhed, neuer to diſtruſt the powerfull hand of Heauen, when Fortune ſeemeth to be moſt aduerſe againſt them.



THe Ladies and Gentlemen alſo, hauing ſmiled ſufficiently at the ſeuerall accidents which did befall the poore Traueller *Andrea*, reported at large by Madam *Fiammetta*, the Lady *Æmillia* ſeeing her tale to be fully concluded, began (by commandement of the Queene) to ſpeak in this manner.

The diuerſitie of changes and alterations in Fortune as they are great, ſo muſt they needs be greeuous; and as often as we take occaſion to talke of them, ſo often do they awake and quicken our vnderſtandings, auou-

ching

ching, that it is no easie matter to depend vpon her flatteries. And I am of opinion, that to heare them recounted, ought not any way to offend vs, be it of men wretched, or fortunate; because, as they instruct the one with good aduice, so they animate the other with comfort. And therefore, although great occasions haue beene already related, yet I purpose to tell a Tale, no lesse true then lamentable; which albeit it sorted to a successefull ending, yet notwithstanding, such and so many were the bitter thwartings, as hardly can I beleeue, that euer any sorrow was more ioyfully sweetned.

You must vnderstand then (most gracious Ladies) that after the death of *Fredericke* the second Emperour, one named *Manfred*, was crowned King of *Sicily*, about whom, liued in great account and authority, a *Neapolitane* Gentleman, called *Henriet Capece*, who had to Wife a beautifull Gentlewoman, and a *Neapolitane* also, named Madam *Beritola Caracalla*. This *Henriet* held the gouernment of the Kingdome of *Sicily*, & vnderstanding that King *Charles* the first, had wonne the battle at *Beneuentum*, and slaine King *Manfred*, the whole Kingdome reuolting also to his deuotion, and little trust to be reposed in the *Sicillians*, or he willing to subiect himselfe to his Lordes enemie; prouided for his secret flight from thence. But this being discouered to the *Sicillians*, he and many more, who had beene loyall seruants to King *Manfred*, were suddenly taken & imprisoned by King *Charles*, and the sole possession of the Iland confirmed to him.

Madam *Beritola* not knowing (in so sudden and strange an alteration of State affaires) what was become of her Husband, fearing also greatly before, those inconueniences which afterward followed; being ouercome with many passionate considerations, hauing left and forsaken all her goods, going aboord a small Barke with a Sonne of hers, aged about some eight yeeres, named *Geoffrey*, and growne great with child with another, she fled thence to *Lapary*, where she was brought to bed of another Sonne, whom she named (answerable both to his and her hard fortune,) *The poore expelled.*

Hauing prouided her selfe of a Nurse, they altogether went aboard againe, setting sayle for *Naples* to visit her Parents; but it chanced quite contrary to her expectation, because by stormie windes and weather, the vessell being bound for *Naples*, was hurried to the Ile of *Ponzo*, where entring into a small Port of the Sea, they concluded to make their aboade, till a time more furtherous should fauour their voyage.

As the rest, so did Madam *Beritola* goe on shore in the Iland, where hauing found a separate and solitary place, fit for her silent and sad meditations, secretly by her selfe, shee sorrowed for the absence of her husband. Resorting daily to this her sad exercise, and continuing there her complaints, vnseene by any of the Marriners, or whosoeuer else: there arriued suddenly a Galley of Pyrates, who seazing on the small Barke, carried it and all the rest in it away with them. When *Beritola* had finished her wofull complaints, as daily shee was accustomed to doe, shee returned backe

to her children againe; but finding no perſon there remayning, whereat ſhe wondered not a little: immediately (ſuſpecting what had happened indeede) ſhe lent her lookes on the Sea, and ſaw the Galley, which as yet had not gone farre, drawing the ſmaller veſſell after her. Here by plainly ſhe perceyued, that now ſhe had loſt her children, as formerly ſhee had done her husband; being left there poore, forſaken, and miſerable, not knowing when, where, or how to finde any of them againe; and calling for her Husband and Children, ſhee fell downe in a ſwound vppon the ſhore.

Now was not any body neere, with coole water or any other remedy to helpe the recouery of her loſt powers; wherefore her ſpirits might the more freely wander at their owne pleaſure: but after they were returned backe againe, and had won their wonted offices in her body, drowned in teares, and wringing her hands, ſhe did nothing but call for her children and husband, ſtraying all about in hope to finde them, ſeeking in caues, dens, and euery where elſe, that preſented the verie leaſt glimpſe of comfort. But when ſhe ſaw all her paines ſort to no purpoſe, & darke night drawing ſwiftly on, hope and diſmay raiſing infinite perturbations, made her yet to be ſomewhat reſpectiue of her ſelfe, and therefore departing from the ſea-ſhore, ſhe returned to the ſolitary place, where ſhe vſed to ſigh and mourne alone by her ſelfe.

The night being ouer-paſt with infinite feares and afrights, and bright day ſaluting the world againe, with the expence of nine houres & more, ſhe fell to her former fruitleſſe trauailes. Being ſomewhat ſharply bitten with hunger, becauſe the former day and night ſhee had not taſted any foode: ſhee made therefore a benefit of neceſſity, and fed on the greene hearbes ſo well as ſhe could, not without any piercing afflictions, what ſhould become of her in this extraordinary miſery. As ſhee walked in theſe penſiue meditations, ſhe ſaw a Goate enter into a Caue, and (within a while after) come forth againe, wandring along thorow the woods. Whereupon ſhe ſtayed, and entred where ſhe ſaw the beaſt iſſue foorth, where ſhe found two yong Kids, yeaned (as it ſeemed) the ſelfeſame day, which ſight was very pleaſing to her, and nothing in that diſtreſſe could more content her.

As yet, ſhe had milke freſhly running in both her breſts, by reaſon of her ſo late deliuery in child bed; wherefore ſhee lay downe vnto the two yong Kids, and taking them tenderly in her armes, ſuffered each of them to ſucke a teate, whereof they made not any refuſall, but tooke them as louingly as their dammes, and from that time forward, they made no diſtinguiſhing betweene their damme and her. Thus this vnfortunate Lady, hauing found ſome company in this ſolitary deſart, fed on herbes and roots, drinking faire running water, and weeping ſilently to her ſelfe, ſo often as ſhe remembred her husband, children, and former dayes paſt in much better manner. Heere ſhe reſolued now to liue and dye, being at laſt depriued both of the damme and yonger Kids alſo, by theyr wandering further into the neere adioyning Woods, according to their natu-

rall

rall inclinations; whereby the poore diſtreſſed Ladie became more ſauage and wilde in her daily conditions, then otherwiſe ſhee would haue bene.

After many monthes were ouer-paſſed, at the very ſame place where ſhe tooke landing; by chance, there arriued another ſmall veſſell of certaine *Piſans*, which remained there diuers daies. In this Barke was a Gentleman, named *Conrado de Marcheſi Maleſpini*, with his holy & vertuous wife, who were returned backe from a Pilgrimage, hauing viſited all the ſanctified places that then were in the kingdome of *Apulia*, & now were bound homeward to their owne abiding. This Gentleman, for the expelling of melancholly perturbations, one eſpeciall day amongſt other, with his wife, ſeruants, and wainting hounds, wandred vp into the Iland not far from the place of Madam *Beritolaes* deſert dwelling. The hounds queſting after game, at laſt happened on the two Kids where they were feeding, and (by this time) had attained to indifferent growth; and finding themſelues thus purſued by the hounds, fled to no other part of the wood, then to the cane where *Beritola* remained, and ſeeming as if they ſought to be reſcued only by her, ſhe ſodainly caught vp a ſtaffe, and forced the hounds thence to flight.

By this time, *Conrado* and his wife, who had followed cloſely after the hounds, was come thither, and ſeeing what had hapned, looking on the Lady, who was become blacke, ſwarthy, meager, and hairy, they wondered not a little at her, and ſhe a great deale more at them. When (vppon her requeſt) *Conrado* had checkt backe his hounds, they preuailed ſo much by earneſt intreaties, to know what ſhe was, and the reaſon of her liuing there; that ſhe intirely related her quality, vnfortunate accidents, and ſtrange determination for liuing there. Which when the Gentleman had heard, who very well knew her husband, compaſſion forced teares from his eyes, and earneſtly he laboured by kinde perſwaſions, to alter ſo cruell a deliberation; making an honourable offer, for conducting her home to his owne dwelling, where ſhee ſhould remaine with him in noble reſpect, as if ſhe were his owne ſiſter, without parting from him, till Fortune ſhould ſmile as fairely on her, as euer ſhe had done before.

When theſe gentle offers could not preuaile with her, the Gentleman left his wife in her company, ſaying, that he would go fetch ſome foode for her; and becauſe her garments were all rent and torne, hee would bring her other of his wiues, not doubting but to winne her thence with them. His wife abode there with *Beritola*, verie much bemoaning her great diſaſters: and when both viands and garments were brought, by extremitie of interceſſion, they cauſed her to put them on, and alſo to feede with them, albeit ſhee proteſted, that ſhee would not part thence into any place, where any knowledge ſhould be taken of her. In the end, they perſwaded her to go with them into *Lunigiana*, carrying alſo with her the two yong Goats and their damme, which were then in the caue altogether, prettily playing before *Beritola*, to the great admiration of *Conrado* and his wife, as alſo the ſeruants attending on them.

When

When the windes and weather grew fauourable for them, Madame *Beritola* went aboord with *Conrado* and his Wife, being followed by the two young Goates and their Damme; and becauſe her name ſhould bee knowne to none but *Conrado*, and his wife onely, ſhee would be ſtiled no otherwiſe but the Goatherdeſſe. Merrily, yet gently blew the gale, which brought them to enter the Riuer of *Maira*, where going on ſhore, and into their owne Caſtle, *Beritola* kept company with the wife of *Conrado*, but in a mourning habite; and a waiting Gentlewoman of theirs, honeſt, humble, and very dutifull, the Goates alwayes familiarly keeping them company.

Returne wee now to the Pyrates, which at *Ponzo* ſeized on the ſmall Barke wherein Madame *Beritola* was brought thither, and carried thence away, without any ſight or knowledge of her. With ſuch other ſpoyles as they had taken, they ſhaped their courſe for *Geneway*, and there (by conſent of the Patrones of the Galley) made a diuiſion of their booties. It came to paſſe, that (among other things) the Nurſe that attended on *Beritola*, and the two Children with her, fell to the ſhare of one *Meſſer Gaſparino d'Oria*, who ſent them together to his owne Houſe, there to be employed in ſeruice as Seruants. The Nurſe weeping beyond meaſure for the loſſe of her Ladie, and bemoaning her owne miſerable Fortune, whereinto ſhee was now fallen with the two young Laddes; after long lamenting, which ſhee found vtterly fruitleſſe and to none effect, though ſhe was vſed as a ſeruant with them, and being but a very poore woman, yet was ſhee wiſe and diſcreetly aduiſed. Wherefore, comforting both her ſelfe and them ſo well as ſhe could, and conſidering the depth of their diſaſter, ſhee conceited thus, that if the Children ſhould be knowne, it might redound to their greater danger, and ſhee be no way aduantaged thereby.

Hereupon, hoping that Fortune (earely or late) would alter her ſtearne malice, and that they might (if they liued) regaine once more their former condition, ſhee would not diſcloſe them to any one whatſoeuer, till ſhee ſhould ſee the time aptly diſpoſed for it. Being thus determined, to all ſuch as queſtioned her concerning them, ſhe anſwered that they were her owne Children, naming the eldeſt not *Geoffrey*, but *Iehannot de Procida*. As for the yongeſt, ſhee cared not greatly for changing his name, and therefore wiſely informed *Geoffrey*, vpon what reaſon ſhee had altered his name, and what danger he might fall into, if he ſhould otherwiſe be diſcouered; being not ſatisfied with thus telling him once, but remembring him thereof verie often, which the gentle youth (being ſo well inſtructed by the wiſe and carefull Nurſe) did very warily obſerue.

The two young Laddes, verie poorely garmented, but much worſe hoſed and ſhodde, continued thus in the houſe of *Gaſparino*, where both they and the Nurſe were long time employed about verie baſe and drudging Offices, which yet they endured with admirable patience. But *Iehannot*, aged already about ſixteene yeeres, hauing a loftier ſpirit, then belonged to a ſlauiſh ſeruant, deſpiſing the baſeneſſe of his ſeruile condi-

tion;

tion; departed from the drudgery of *Messer Gasparino*, and going aboord the Gallies which were bound for *Alexandria*, fortuned into many places, yet none of them affoording him any aduancement. In the end, about three or foure yeeres after his departure from *Gasparino*, being now a braue yong man, and of very goodly forme: he vnderstood, that his father (whom he supposed to be dead) was as yet liuing, but in captiuity, and prisoner to King *Charles*. Wherefore, despairing of any successefull fortune, he wandred here and there, till he came to *Lunigiana*, and there (by strange accident) he became seruant to *Messer Conrado Malespino*, where the seruice proued well liking to them both.

Very seldome times hee had a sight of his Mother, because shee alwayes kept company with *Conradoes* wife; and yet when they came within view of each other, shee knew not him, nor he her, so much yeres had altred them both from what they were wont to be, and when they saw each other last. *Iehannot* being thus in the seruice of *Messer Conrado*, it fortuned that a daughter of his, named *Sophia*, being the widdow of one *Messer Nicolas Grignam*, returned home to her Fathers house. Very beautifull and amiable she was, young likewise, aged but little aboue sixteene; growing wonderously amorous of *Iehannot*, and he of her, in extraordinary and most feruent manner: which loue was not long without full effect, continuing many moneths before any person could perceyue it: which making them to build on the more assurance, they began to carry their meanes with lesse discretion then is required in such nice cases, and which cannot be too prouidently managed.

Vpon a day, he and she walking to a goodly Wood, plentifully furnished with spreading Trees: hauing out-gone the rest of their company, they made choise of a pleasant place, very daintily shaded and beautified with all sorts of flowers. There they spent some time in amorous talking, beside some other sweete embraces, which though it seemed ouer-short to them, yet was it so vnaduisedly prolonged, that they were on a sodain surprized, first by the mother, and next by *Messer Conrado* himselfe; who greeuing beyond measure, to be thus treacherously dealt withall, caused them to be apprehended by three of his seruants; and (without telling them any reason why) led bound to another Castle of his, and fretting with extremity of rage, concluded in his minde, that they should both shamefully be put to death.

The Mother vnto this regardlesse daughter, hauing heard the angrie wordes of her Husband, and how hee would be reuenged on the faulty; could not endure that he should be so seuere: wherefore, although shee was likewise much afflicted in minde, and reputed her Daughter worthy (for so great an offence) of all cruell punnishment, yet she hasted to her displeased husband, and began to entreate, that hee would not runne on in such a furious spleene, now in his aged yeeres to be the murtherer of his owne childe, and soile his hands in the blood of his seruant. Rather he might finde out some milde course for the satisfaction of his anger, by committing them to close imprisonment, there to remaine and mourne

for

for their folly committed. The vertuous and religious Lady alledged so many commendable examples, and vsed such plenty of mouing perswasions, that she quite altred his minde from putting them to death, and hee commanded onely, that they should separately be imprisoned, with little store of food, and lodging of the vneasiest, vntill he should otherwise determine of them; and so it was done. What their life now was in captiuity and continuall teares, with stricter abstinence then was needefull for them, all this I must commit to your consideration.

Iehannot and *Spina* remaining in this comfortlesse condition, and an whole yeere being now out-worne, yet *Conrado* keeping them thus still imprisoned: it came to passe, that *Don Pedro* King of *Arragon*, by the meanes of *Messer Iohn de Procida*, caused the Isle of Sicily to reuolt, and tooke it away from King *Charles*; whereat *Conrado* (he being of the *Ghibbiline* faction) not a little reioyced. *Iehannot* hauing intelligence thereof, by some of them that had him in custody, breathing foorth a vehement sighe, spake in this manner. Alas poore miserable wretch as I am! that haue already gone begging thorough the world aboue foureteene yeeres, in expectation of nothing else but this opportunity; and now it is come, must I be in prison, to the end, that I should neuer more hope for any future happinesse? And how can I get forth of this prison, except it bee by death onely? How now, replyed the Officer of the Guard? What doth this businesse of great Kings concerne thee? What affayres hast thou in Sicily?

Once more *Iehannot* sighed extreamly, and returned him this answer. Me thinkes my heart (quoth hee) doeth cleaue in sunder, when I call to minde the charge which my Father had there; for although I was but a little boy when I fled thence, yet I can well remember, that I saw him Gouernor there, at such time as King *Manfred* liued. The Guard, pursuing on still his purpose, demanded of him, what and who his Father was? My Father (replied *Iehannot*?) I may now securely speake of him, being out of the perill which neerely concerned me if I had beene discouered: he was the named (and so still if he be liuing) *Henriet Capece*, and my name is *Geoffrey*, and not *Iehannot*; and I make no doubt, but if I were freed from hence, and might be returned home to Sicily, I should (for his sake) be placed in some authority.

The honest man of the Guard, without seeking after any further information; so soone as he could compasse any leysure, reported all to *Messer Conrado*, who hauing heard these newes (albeit he made no shew thereof to the reuealer) went to Madam *Beritola*, graciously demaunding of her, if she had any sonne by her husband, who was called *Geoffrey*. The Lady replyed in teares, that if her eldest sonne were as yet liuing, he was so named, and now aged about two and twenty yeeres. *Conrado* hearing this, imagined this same to be the man; considering further withall, that if it fell out to proue so, hee might haue the better meanes of mercie, and closely concealing his daughters shame, ioyfully ioyne them in marriage together.

Heere-

Hereupon,he ſecretly called *Iehannot* before him,examining him particularly of all his paſſed life, and finding (by moſt manifeſt arguments) that his name was truly *Geoffrey*, and the eldeſt ſon of *Henriet Capece*, he ſpake thus to him. *Iehannot*, thou knoweſt how great the iniuries are that thou haſt done me, and my deere daughter; gently intreating thee (as became an honeſt ſeruant) that thou ſhouldeſt alwayes haue bene reſpectiue of mine honor, and all that appertaine vnto me. There are many noble Gentlemen, who ſuſtaining the wrong which thou haſt offred me, they would haue procured thy ſhamefull death, which pitty & compaſſion will not ſuffer in me. Wherefore ſeeing(as thou informeſt me)that thou art honourably deriued both by father and mother, I will giue end to all thy anguiſhes, euen when thy ſelfe art ſo pleaſed, releaſing thee from that captiuity wherein I haue ſo long kept thee, and in one inſtant, reduce thine honor and mine into compleat perfection. As thou knoweſt my daughter *Spina*,whom thou haſt embraced as a friend (although far vnfitting for thee,or her)is a widdow,and her marriage is both great and good; what her manners and conditions are,thou indifferently knoweſt, and art not ignorant of her father and mother: concerning thine owne eſtate, as now I purpoſe not to ſpeake any thing. Therefore, when thou wilt,I am determined, that whereas thou haſt immodeſtly affected her, ſhe ſhall become thy honeſt wife,and accepting thee as my ſonne, to remaine with me ſo long as you both pleaſe.

Impriſonment had ſomwhat miſhapen *Iehannot* in his outward forme, but not impaired a iot of his noble ſpirit; much leſſe the true loue which he bare his friend. And although moſt earneſtly he deſired that which now *Conrado* had ſo frankly offered him, and was in his power onely to beſtow on him; yet could he not cloud any part of his greatnes,but with a reſolued iudgement,thus replied. My Lord, affectation of rule, deſire of welthy poſſeſſions,or any other matter whatſoeuer,could neuer make me a traitor to you or yours; but that I haue loued,do loue, and for euer ſhal loue your beauteous daughter: if that be treaſon,I do freely confeſſe it, and will die a thouſand deaths before you or any elſe ſhall enforce me to deny it, for I hold her highly worthy of my loue. If I haue bin more vnmannerly with her then became me, I haue committed but that error, which euermore is ſo attendant vppon youth; that to deny, is to denie youth alſo. And if reuerend age would but remember, that once he was yong,& meaſure others offences by his owne,they would not be thoght ſo great,as you(and many more)account them to be, mine being committed as a friend,and not as an enemy. What you make offer of ſo willingly, I haue alwayes deſired; and if I had thought it would haue beene granted,long ſince I had moſt humbly requeſted it: & ſo much the more acceptable would it haue bin to me,by how much the further off it ſtood from my hopes. But if you bee ſo forward as your words doe witneſſe, then feed me not with any furrher fruitleſſe expectation; but rather ſend me backe to priſon,and lay as many afflictions on me as you pleaſe. For my endeered loue to your daughter *Spina*, maketh mee to loue you the

more for her ſake, how hardly ſoeuer you intreat me; and bindeth me in the greater reuerence to you, as being the Father of my faireſt friend.

Meſſer Conrado hearing theſe words, ſtood as one confounded with admiration, reputing him to be a man of loftie ſpirit, and his affection moſt feruent to his Daughter, which was not a little to his liking. Wherefore, embracing him, and kiſſing his cheeke, without any longer dallying, hee ſent in like manner for his Daughter. Her reſtraint in priſon, had made her lookes meager, pale, and wanne, and very weake was ſhe alſo of her perſon, farre differing from the Woman ſhe was wont to be, before her affection to *Iehannot*. There in preſence of her Father, and with free conſent of either, they were contracted as man and wife, and the eſpouſals agreed on according to cuſtome. Some few dayes after, (without any ones knowledge of that which was done) hauing furniſhed them with all things fit for the purpoſe, and time aptly ſeruing, that the Mothers ſhould be partakers in this ioy; he called his wife, and Madam *Beritola*, to whom firſt he ſpake in this manner.

What will you ſay Madame, if I cauſe you to ſee your eldeſt Son, not long ſince married to one of my daughters? Whereunto *Beritola* thus replied. My Lord, I can ſay nothing elſe vnto you, but that I ſhal be much more obliged to you, then already I am; and the rather, becauſe you will let me ſee the thing which is deerer then mine owne life; and rendering it vnto me in ſuch manner as you ſpeake of, you will recall backe ſome part of my former loſt hopes: and with theſe words, the teares ſtreamed aboundantly from her eyes. Then turning to his wife, he ſaid: And you deere Loue, if I ſhew you ſuch a Son in law, what will you thinke of it? Sir (quoth ſhe) what pleaſeth you, muſt and ſhall ſatisfie me, be he gentleman or beggar. Well ſaid Madam, anſwered *Meſſer Conrado*, I hope ſhortly, to make you both ioyfull. So when the amorous couple had recouered their former feature, and honorable garments prepared for them, priuately thus he ſaid to *Geoffrey*; Beyond the ioy which already thou art inriched withall, how would it pleaſe thee to meete thine owne Mother here? I cannot beleeue Sir (replied *Geoffrey*) that her greeuous misfortunes haue ſuffered her to liue ſo long; and yet, if heauen hath bin ſo mercifull to her; my ioyes were incomparable, for by her gracious counſel, I might well hope to recouer no meane happines in Sicily. Soone after, both the mothers were ſent for, who were ttanſported with vnſpeakable ioy, when they beheld the ſo lately married couple: being much amazed what inſpiration had guided *Meſſer Conrado* to this extraordinary benignity, in ioyning *Iehannot* in marriage with *Spina*.

Hereupon, Madam *Beritola* remembring the ſpeeches betweene her and *Meſſer Conrado*, began to obſerue him very aduiſedly; and by a hidden vertue which long had ſilently ſlept in her, and now with ioy of ſpirit awaked, calling to mind the lineatures of her ſonnes infancy, without awaiting for any other demonſtration, ſhe folded him in her armes with earneſt affection. Motherly ioy & pity now contended ſo violently togither, that ſhe was not able to vtter one word, the ſenſitiue vertues being

ſo

ſo cloſely combined, that (euen as dead) ſhe fell downe in the armes of her Son. And he wondering greatly thereat, making a better recollection of his thoughts, did well remember, that hee had often before ſeene her in the Caſtle, without any other knowledge of her. Neuertheleſſe, by meere inſtinct of Nature, whoſe power in ſuch actions declares it ſelfe to be high ly predominant; his very ſoule aſſured him, that ſhe was his Mother, and blaming his vnderſtanding, that he had not before bene better aduiſed, he threw his armes about her, and wept exceedingly.

Afterward, by the louing paines of *Conradoes* wife, as alſo her daughter *Spina*, Madam *Beritola* (being recouered from her paſſionate traunce, and her vitall ſpirits executing their Offices againe) fell once more to the embracing of her Sonne, kiſſing him infinite times, with teares and ſpeeches of motherly kindneſſe, he likewiſe expreſſing the ſame dutifull humanity to her. Which ceremonious courteſies being paſſed ouer and ouer, to no little ioy in all the beholders, beſide repetition of their ſeuerall misfortunes. *Meſſer Conrado* made all knowne to his friends, who were very glad of this new alliance made by him, which was honoured with many ſolemne feaſtings. Which being all concluded, *Geoffrey* hauing found out fit place and opportunity, for conference with his new created Father, without any ſiniſter oppoſition, began as followeth.

Honourable Father, you haue raiſed my contentment to the higheſt degree, and haue heaped alſo many gracious fauours on my Noble Mother; but now in the finall concluſion, that nothing may remaine vneffected, which conſiſteth in your power to performe: I would humbly entreate you, to honour my Mother with your company, at a Feaſt of my making, where I would gladly alſo haue my Brother preſent. *Meſſer Gaſparino d'Oria* (as I haue heretofore told you) queſting as a common Pyrat on the Seas, tooke vs and ſent vs home to his houſe as ſlaues, where (as yet) he detaineth him. I would likewiſe haue you ſend into Sicily, who informing himſelfe more amply in the ſtate of the Countrey, may vnderſtand what is become of *Henriet* my Father, and whether he be liuing or no. If he be aliue, then to know in what condition he is; and being ſecretly inſtructed in all things, then to returne backe againe to you.

This motion made by *Geoffrey*, was ſo pleaſing to *Conrado*, that without any reference to further leyſure, hee diſpatched thence two diſcreete perſons, the one to *Geneway*, and the other to *Sicily*: he which went for *Geneway*, hauing met with *Gaſparino*, earneſtly entreated him (on the behalfe of *Conrado*) to ſend him the *Prore expelled*; and his Nurſe recounting euery thing in order, which *Conrado* had tolde him, concerning *Geoffrey* and his mother. When *Gaſparino* had heard the whole diſcourſe, he marueiled greatly thereat, and ſaide; Trud it is, that I will doe any thing for *Meſſer Conrado*, which may bee to his loue and liking, prouided; that it lye in my power to performe; and (about ſome foureteene yeeres ſince) I brought ſuch a Lad as you ſeeke for, with his mother, home to my houſe, whom I will gladly ſend vnto him. But you may tell him from me, that I aduiſe him from ouer-raſh crediting the Fables of *Iehannot*, that now

termes himſelfe by the name of *Geoffrey*, becauſe he is a more wicked boy then he taketh him to be, and ſo did I finde him.

Hauing thus ſpoken, and giuing kinde welcome to the Meſſenger, ſecretly he called the Nurſe vnto him, whom hee heedfully examined concerning this caſe. She hauing heard the rebellion in the Kingdome of Sicily; and vnderſtanding withall that *Henriet* was yet liuing, ioyfully threw off all her former feare, relating euery thing to him orderly, and the reaſons mouing her to conceale the whole buſineſſe in ſuch manner as ſhee had done. *Gaſparino* well perceiuing, that the report of the Nurſe, and the meſſage receiued from *Conrado*, varied not in any one circumſtance, began the better to credit her words. And being a man moſt ingenious, making further inquiſition into the buſineſſe, by all the poſſible meanes hee could deuiſe; and finding euery thing to yeeld vndoubted aſſurance, aſhamed of the vile and baſe vſage wherein he had ſo long time kept the Lad, and deſiring (by his beſt meanes) to make him amends, he had a beautifull daughter, aged about thirteene yeares, and knowing what manner of man he was, his Father *Henriet* alſo yet liuing, he gaue her to him in marriage, with a very bountifull and honourable dowry.

The iouiall dayes of feaſting being paſt, he went aboord a Galley with the *Poore expelled*, his Daughter, the Ambaſſador, and the Nurſe, departing thence to *Lericy*, where they were nobly welcommed by *Meſſer Conrado*, and his Caſtle being not farre from thence, with an honourable traine they were conducted thither, & entertained with all poſſible kindneſſe. Now concerning the comfort of the Mother, meeting ſo happily with both her ſonnes, the ioy of the brethren and mother together, hauing alſo found the faithful Nurſe, *Gaſparino* and his daughter, in company now with *Conrado* and his wife, friends, familiars, and all generally in a Iubilee of reioycing: it exceedeth capacity in mee to expreſſe it, and therefore I referre it to your more able imagination.

In the time of this mutuall contentment, to the end that nothing might be wanting to compleat and perfect this vniuerſall ioy; our Lord, a moſt abundant beſtower where he beginneth, added long wiſhed tydings concerning the life and good eſtate of *Henry Capece*. For, euen as they were feaſting, and the concourſe great of worthy gueſts, both Lords & Ladies; the firſt ſeruice was ſcarſely ſet on the Tables, but the Ambaſſador which was ſent to Sicily, arriued there before them. Among many other important matters, he ſpake of *Henriet*, who being ſo long a time detained in priſon by King *Charles*, when the commotion aroſe in the Citty againſt the King; the people (grudging at *Henriets* long impriſonment) ſlew the Guards, and ſet him at liberty. Then as capitall enemie to King *Charles*, hee was created Captaine Generall, following the chaſe, and killing the French.

Now by this meanes, he grew great in the grace of King *Pedro*, who replanted him in all the goods and honours which he had before, with verie high and eminent authority. Hereunto the Ambaſſador added, that hee was entertayned with extraordinary grace, and deliuery of publike ioy

and

and exaltation, when his Wife and Sonne were knowne to be liuing, of whom no tydings had at any time bene heard, ſince the houre of his ſurpriſall. Moreouer, that a ſwift winged Bark was now ſent thither (vpon the happy hearing of this newes) well furniſhed with noble Gentlemen, to attend till their returning backe. We neede to make no doubt concerning the tydings brought by this Ambaſſadour, nor of the Gentlemens welcome, thus ſent to Madame *Beritola* and *Geoffrey*; who before they would ſit downe at the Table, ſaluted *Meſſer Conrado* and his kinde Lady (on the behalfe of *Henriet*) for all the great graces extended to her and her Sonne, with promiſe of any thing, lying in the power of *Henriet*, to reſt continually at their command. The like they did to *Signior Gaſparino* (whoſe liberall fauours came vnlooked for) with certaine aſſurance, that when *Henriet* ſhould vnderſtand what he had done for his other Sonne, the *Poore ezpelled*, there would be no defaylance of reciprocall courteſies.

As the longeſt ioyes haue no perpetuity of laſting, ſo all theſe graceful ceremonies had their concluſion, with as many ſighes and teares at parting, as ioyes abounded at their firſt encountring. Imagine then, that you ſee ſuch aboord, as were to haue here no longer abiding, Madam *Beritola* and *Geoffrey*, with the reſt; as the *Poore expelled*, the ſo late married Wiues, and the faithfull Nurſe bearing them company. With proſperous windes they arriued in *Sicily*, where the Wife, Sonnes, and Daughters, were ioyfully met by *Henriet* at *Palermo*, and with ſuch honourable pompe, as a caſe ſo important equally deſerued. The Hiſtories make further mention, that there they liued (a long while after) in much felicitie, with thankfull hearts (no doubt) in Heauen, in acknowledgement of ſo many great mercies receiued.

The Soldan of Babylon ſent one of his Daughters, to be ioyned in marriage with the King of Cholcos, *who by diuers accidents (in the ſpace of foure yeeres) happened into the cuſtodie of nine men, and in ſundry places. At length, being reſtored backe to her Father, ſhe went to the ſaide King of* Cholcos, *as a Maid, and as at firſt ſhe was intended to be his wife.*

The Seuenth Nouell.

A liuely demonſtration, that the beauty of a Woman (oftentimes) is very hurtfull to her ſelfe, and the occaſion of many euils, yea, and of death, to diuers men.

PEraduenture the Nouell related by Madam *Æmillia*, did not extend it ſelfe ſo farre in length, as it mooued compaſſion in the dies mindes, hearing the hard fortunes of *Beritola* & her Children, which had incited them to weeping: but that it pleaſed the Queen (vpon the Tales concluſion) to command *Pamphilus*, to follow next in order with his Diſcourſe; and he being thereto very obedient, began in this manner.



It is a matter of no meane difficulty (vertuous Ladies) for vs to take intire knowledge of euery thing we doe, becauſe (as oftentimes hath bene obſerued) many men, imagining if they were rich, they ſhould liue ſecurely, and without any cares. And therefore, not onely haue theyr prayers and interceſſions aimed at that end, but alſo their ſtudies and daily endeuours, without refuſall of any paines or perils haue not meanely expreſſed their hourely ſolicitude. And although it hath happened accordingly to them, and their couetous deſires fully accompliſhed; yet at length they haue mette with ſuch kinde people, who likewiſe thirſting after their wealthy poſſeſſions, haue bereft them of life, being their kinde and intimate friends, before they attained to ſuch riches. Some other, being of lowe and baſe condition, by aduenturing in many skirmiſhes and foughten battels, trampling in the bloud of their brethren and friends, haue bene mounted to the ſoueraigne dignity of Kingdomes (beleeuing that therein conſiſted the trueſt happineſſe) but bought with the deereſt price of their liues. For, beſide their infinit cares and feares wherewith ſuch greatneſſe is continually attended, at they royall Tables, they haue drunke poyſon in a Golden pot. Many other in like manner (with moſt earneſt appetite) haue coueted beauty & bodily ſtrength, not foreſeeing with any iudgement, that theſe wiſhes were not without perill; when being endued with them, they either haue bene the occaſion of their death, or ſuch a lingering lamentable eſtate of life, as death vvere a thouſand times more welcome to them.

But, becauſe I would not ſpeake particularly of all our fraile and humane affections, I dare aſſure ye, that there is not any one of theſe deſires to be elected among vs mortals, with entire forſight or prouidence, warrantable

rantable against their ominous yſſue. Wherefore, if we would walke directly, wee ſhould diſpoſe our willes and affections, to be guided onely by him, who beſt knoweth what is needfull for vs, and will beſtow them at his good pleaſure. Nor let me lay this blamefull imputation vppon men onely, for offending in many things through our lauiſh deſires: becauſe you your ſelues (gracious Ladies) ſinne highly in one, as namely, in coueting to be beautifull. So that it is not ſufficient for you, to enioy thoſe beauties beſtowne on you by Nature; but you practice to increaſe them by the rarities of Art. Wherefore, let it not offend you, that I tell you the hard fortune of a faire Sarazine, to whom it hapned by ſtraunge aduentures, that within the compaſſe of foure yeares, nine ſeuerall times to be married, and onely for her beauty.

It is now a long time ſince, that there liued a Soldane in Babylon, named *Beminidab*, to whom (while he liued) many things happened, anſwerable to his owne deſires. Among diuers other Children both male and female, hee had a daughter called *Alathiella*, and ſhee (according to the common voyce of euery one that ſaw her) was the fayreſt Lady then liuing in all the world. And becauſe the King of *Cholcos* had wonderfully aſſiſted him, in a moſt valiant foughten battell againſt a mighty Armie of Arabians, who on a ſodaine had aſſailed him; he demanded his faire daughter in marriage, which likewiſe was kindly granted to him. Whereupon a goodly and well-armed Ship was prepared for her, with full furniſhment of all neceſſary prouiſion, and accompanied with an honourable traine both of Lords and Ladies, as alſo moſt coſtly and ſumptuous accouſtrements; commending her to the mercy of heauen, in this maner was ſhe ſent away.

The time being propitious for their parting thence, the Mariners hoiſed their ſayles, leauing the part of *Alexandria*, and ſayling proſperouſly many dayes together. When they had paſt the Countrey of *Sardinia*, and (as they imagined) were well neere to their iourneyes end; ſodainely aroſe boyſterous and contrary windes, which were ſo impetuous beyond all meaſure, and ſo tormented the Ship wherein the Lady was; that the Mariners ſeeing no ſigne of comfort, gaue ouer all hope of eſcaping with life. Neuertheleſſe, as men moſt expert in implacable dangers, they laboured to their vttermoſt power, and contended with infinite bluſtring tempeſts, for the ſpace of two dayes and nights together, hoping the third day would proue more fauourable. But therein they ſaw themſelues deceyued, for the violence continued ſtill, encreaſing in the night time more and more, being not any way able to comprehend either vvhere they were, or what courſe they tooke, neither by Marinall iudgement, or any apprehenſion elſe whatſoeuer, the heauens were ſo clouded, and the nights darkeneſſe ſo extreame.

Beeing (vnknowne to them) neere the Iſle of *Maiorica*, they felt the Shippe to ſplit in the bottome: by meanes whereof, perceiuing now no hope of eſcaping (euery one caring for himſelfe, and not any other) they threw foorth a Squiffe on the troubled waues, repoſing more confidence

of

of ſafety that way, then abiding any longer in the broken ſhip. Howbeit ſuch as were firſt deſcended downe, made ſtout reſiſtance againſt all other followers, with their drawne weapons: but ſafety of life ſo far preuayled, that what with the Tempeſts violence, and ouer lading of the Squiffe, it ſunke to the bottome, and all periſhed that were therein. The Ship being thus ſplit, and more then halfe full of water, toſſed & tormented by the bluſtring windes, firſt one way, and then another: was at laſt driuen into a ſtrond of the Iſle *Maiorica*, no other perſons therein remaining, but onely the Lady and her women, all of them (through the rude tempeſt, and their owne conceiued feare) lying ſtill, as if they were more then halfe dead. And there, within a ſtones caſt of the neighboring ſhore the ſhip (by the rough ſurging billowes) was fixed faſt in the ſands, and ſo continued all the reſt of the night, without any further moleſtation of the windes.

When day appeared, and the violent ſtormes were more mildly appeaſed, the Ladie, who ſeemed well-neere dead, lifted vp her head, and began (weake as ſhe was) to call firſt one, and then another: but ſhee called in vaine, for ſuch as ſhe named were farre enough from her. Wherefore, hearing no anſwere, nor ſeeing any one, ſhe wondred greatly, her feares encreaſing then more and more. Raiſing her ſelfe ſo well as ſhee could, ſhe beheld the Ladies that were of her company, and ſome other of her women, lying ſtill without any ſtirring: whereupon, firſt iogging one, and then another, and calling them ſeuerally by their names; ſhee found them bereft of vnderſtanding, and euen as if they were dead, their heartr were ſo quayled, and their feare ſo ouer-ruling, which was no meane diſmay to the poore Lady her ſelfe. Neuertheleſſe, neceſſity now being her beſt counſellor, ſeeing her ſelfe thus all alone, and not knowing in what place ſhee was, ſhee vſed ſuch meanes to them that were liuing, that (at the laſt) they came to better knowledge of themſelues. And being vnable to gueſſe, what was become of the men and Marriners, ſeeing the Ship alſo driuen on the ſands, and filled with water, ſhe began with them to lament moſt greeuouſly: and now it was about the houre of mid day, before they could deſcry any perſon on the ſhore, or any els to pity them in ſo vrgent a neceſſity.

At length, noone being paſt, a Gentleman named *Baiazeth*, attended by diuers of his followers on horſebacke, and returning from a Countrie houſe belonging to him, chanced to ride by on the ſands. Vppon ſight of the Ship lying in that caſe, he imagined truely what had hapned, and commanded one of his men to enter aboord it, which (with ſome difficultie) hee did, to reſolue his Lord what remained therein. There hee found the faire yong Lady, with ſuch ſmall ſtore of company as was left her, fearefully hidden vnder the prow of the Ship. So ſoone as they ſaw him, they held vp their hands, wofully deſiring mercy of him: but he perceiuing their lamentable condition, and that hee vnderſtoode not what they ſaide to him, their affliction grew the greater, labouring by ſignes and geſtures, to giue him knowledge of their misfortune.

The

The ſeruant gathering what he could by their outward behauiour, declared to his Lord what hee had ſeene in the Ship; who cauſed the Women to be brought on ſhore, and all the precious things remaining vvith them; conducting them with him to a place not far off, where with food and warmth he gaue them comfort. By the rich garments which the Lady was cloathed withall, he reputed her to be a Gentlewoman well deriued, as the great reuerence done to her by the reſt, gaue him good reaſon to conceiue. And although her lookes were pale and wan, as alſo her perſon mightily altered, by the tempeſtuous violence of the Sea: yet notwithſtanding, ſhe appeared faire and louely in the eye of *Baiazeth*, whereupon forthwith he determined, that if ſhe were not married, hee would enioy her at his owne in marriage: or if he could not winne her to bee his wife, yet (at the leaſt) ſhee ſhould be his friend, becauſe ſhe remained now in his power.

Baiazeth was a man of ſtearne lookes, rough and harſh both in ſpeech and behauiour; yet cauſing the Lady to be honourably vſed diuers dayes together, ſhee became thereby well comforted and recouered. And ſeeing her beautie to exceede all compariſon, he was afflicted beyond meaſure, that he could not vnderſtand her, nor ſhe him, whereby hee could not know of whence or what ſhe was. His amorous flames encreaſing more and more; by kinde, courteous, and affable actions, he laboured to compaſſe what he aymed at. But all his endeauour proued to no purpoſe, for ſhe refuſed all familiar priuacie with him, which ſo much the more kindled the fury of his fire. This being well obſerued by the Lady, hauing now remained there a moneth and more, and collecting by the cuſtomes of the Countrey, that ſhe was among Turkes; and in ſuch a place, where although ſhe were knowne, yet it would little aduantage her; beſide, that long protraction of time would prouoke *Baiazeth* by faire meanes or force to obtaine his will: ſhe propounded to her ſelfe (with magnanimity of ſpirit) to tread all misfortunes vnder her feete, commanding her Women (whereof ſhee had but three now remaining aliue) that they ſhould not diſcloſe what ſhe was, except it were in ſome ſuch place, where manifeſt ſignes might yeeld hope of regaining their liberty. Moreouer, ſhe admoniſhed them ſtoutly to defend their honour and chaſtity; affirming, that ſhe had abſolutely reſolued with her ſelfe, that neuer any other ſhould enioy her, but her intended husband: wherein her women did much commend her, promiſing to preſerue their reputation, according as ſhee had commanded.

Day by day, were the torments of *Baiazeth* wonderfully augmented, yet ſtill his kinde offers ſcornefully refuſed, and he as farre off from compaſſing his deſires, as when he firſt beganne to mooue the matter: wherefore, perceiuing that all faire courſes ſerued to no effect, hee reſolued to compaſſe his purpoſe by craft and ſubtilty, reſeruing rigorous extremitie for his finall concluſion. And hauing once obſerued, that wine was verie pleaſing to the Lady, ſhe being neuer vſed to drinke any at all, becauſe (by her Countries Law) it was forbidden her: and no meane ſtore hauing

beene

beene lately brought to *Baiazeth* in a Barke of *Geneway*: hee reſolued to ſurprize her by meanes thereof, as a cheefe miniſter of Venus, to heate the cooleſt blood. And ſeeming now in his outward behauiour, as if hee had giuen ouer his amorous purſuite, and which ſhe ſtroue by all her beſt endeauours to withſtand: one night, after a very maieſticke and ſolemne manner, hee prepared a delicate and ſumptuous ſupper, whereto the Lady was inuited: and hee had giuen order, that hee who attended on her Cup, ſhould ſerue her with many Wines compounded and mingled together; which hee accordingly performed, as being cunning enough in ſuch occaſions.

Alothiella miſtruſting no ſuch trechery intended againſt her, and liking the Wines pleaſing taſte extraordinarily; dranke more then ſtoode with her precedent modeſt reſolution, and forgetting all her paſſed aduerſities, became very frolicke and merry: ſo that ſeeing ſome women dance after the manner obſerued there in *Maiorica*, ſhe alſo fell to dauncing according to the *Alexandrian* cuſtome. Which when *Baiazeth* beheld, he imagined the victory to be more then halfe wonne, and his hearts deſire verie neere the obtaining: plying her ſtill with wine vpon wine, and continuing this reuelling the moſt part of the night.

At the length, the inuited gueſts being all gone, the Lady retyred then to her chamber, attended on by none but *Baiazeth* himſelfe, and as familiarly as if he had bene one of her women, ſhee no way contradicting his bold intruſion, ſo farre had wine ouer-gone her ſences, and preuailed againſt all modeſt baſhfulneſſe. Theſe wanton embracings, ſtrange to her that had neuer taſted them before, yet pleaſing beyond meaſure, by reaſon of his treacherous aduantage; afterward drew on many more of the like carowſing meetings, without ſo much as thought of her paſſed miſeries, or thoſe more honourable and chaſte reſpects, that euer ought to attend on Ladies.

Now, Fortune enuying thus their ſtollen pleaſures, and that ſhee, being the purpoſed wife of a potent King, ſhould thus become the wanton friend of a much meaner man, whoſe onely glory was her ſhame; altered the courſe of their too common paſtimes, by preparing a farre greater infelicity for them. This *Baiazeth* had a Brother, aged about fiue and twenty yeeres, of moſt compleate perſon, in the very beauty of his time, and freſh as the ſweeteſt ſmelling Roſe, he being named *Amurath*. After he had once ſeene this Ladie (whoſe faire feature pleaſed him beyond all womens elſe) ſhee ſeemed in his ſodaine apprehenſion, both by her outward behauiour and ciuill apparancie, highly to deſerue his verie beſt opinion, for ſhe was not meanely entred into his fauour. Now hee found nothing to his hinderance, in obtaining the heighth of his hearts deſire, but onely the ſtrict cuſtodie and guard, wherein his brother *Baiazeth* kept her: which raiſed a cruell conceite in his minde, wherein followed (not long after) as cruell an effect.

It came to paſſe, that at the ſame time; in the Port of the Cittie, called *Caffa*, there lay then a Ship laden with Merchandize, being bound thence

for

for *Smyrna*, of which Ship two *Geneway* Merchants (being brethren) were the Patrons and Owners, who had giuen direction for hoysing the sailes to depart thence when the winde should serue. With these two *Geneways Amurath* had couenanted, for himselfe to goe aboord the ship the night ensuing, and the Lady in his company. When night vvas come, hauing resolued with himselfe what was to be done: in a disguised habite hee went to the house of *Baiazeth*, who stood not any way doubtfull of him, and with certaine of his most faithfull Confederates (whom he had sworne to the intended action) they hid themselues closely in the house. After some part of the night was ouer-past, he knowing the seuerall lodgings both of *Baiazeth* and *Alathiella*, slew his brother soundly sleeping; and seizing on the Lady, whom he found awake and weeping, threatned to kill her also, if she made any noyse. So, being well furnished with the greater part of worldly Iewels belonging to *Baiazeth*, vnheard or vndescried by any body, they went presently to the Port, and there (without any further delay) *Amurath* and the Lady were receiued into the Ship, but his companions returned backe againe; when the Mariners, hauing their sailes ready set, and the winde aptly fitting for them, lanched forth merrily into the maine.

You may well imagine, that the Ladie was extraordinarily afflicted with greefe for her first misfortune; and now this second chancing so sodainely, must needs offend her in greater manner: but *Amurath* did so kindely comfort her with milde, modest, and manly perswasions, that all remembrance of *Baiazeth* was quickely forgotten, and shee became conuerted to louely demeanor, euen when Fortune prepared a fresh miserie for her, as not satisfied with those whereof shee had tasted already. The Lady being vnequalled for beauty (as I said before) her behauiour also in such exquisit and commendable kinde expressed; the two Brethren owners of the Ship, became so deeply enamored of her, that forgetting all their more serious affaires, they studied by all possible meanes, to be pleasing and gracious in her eye, yet with such a carefull carriage, that *Amurath* should neither see, or suspect it.

When the Brethren had imparted their loues extreamity each to the other, and plainely perceyued, that though they were equally in their fiery torments, yet their desires were vtterly contrary: they began seuerally to consider, that gaine gotten by Merchandize, admitted an equall and honest diuision, but this purchase was of a different quality, pleading the title of a sole possession, without any partner or intruder. Fearefull and iealous were they both, least either should ayme at the others intention, yet willing enough to shake hands, in ridding *Amurath* out of the way, who onely was the hinderer of their hopes. Whereupon they concluded together, that on a day when the Ship sayled on very swiftly, and *Amurath* was sitting vpon the Decke, studiously obseruing how the Billowes combatted each with other, and not suspecting any such treason in them towards him: stealing softly behinde him, sodainely they threw him into the Sea, the shippe floating on aboue halfe a Leagues distance,

before

before any perceiued his fall into the Sea.

When the Ladie heard thereof, and ſaw no likely meanes of recouering him againe, ſhe fell to her wonted teares and lamentations: but the two Louers came quickely to comfort her, vſing kinde words and pithy perſwaſions (albeit ſhe vnderſtood them not, or at the moſt very little) to appeaſe the violence of her paſſions; and, to ſpeak vprightly, ſhe did not ſo much bemoane the loſſe of *Amurath*, as the multiplying of her owne misfortunes, ſtill one ſucceeding in the necke of another. After diuers long and well deliuered Orations, as alſo very faire and courteous behauiour, they had indifferently pacified her complainings: they beganne to diſcourſe and commune with themſelues, which of them had moſt right and title to *Alathiella*, and conſequently ought to enioy her. Now that *Amurath* was gone, each pleaded his priuiledge to bee as good as the others, both in the Ship, Goods, and all aduantages elſe whatſoeuer happening: which the elder brother abſolutely denied, alleadging firſt his propriety of birth, a reaſon ſufficient, whereby his younger ought to giue him place: Likewiſe, his right and intereſt both in the ſhip and goods, to be more then the others, as being heire to his father, and therefore in iuſtice to be higheſt preferred. Laſt of all, that his ſtrength onely threw *Amurath* into the Sea, and therefore gaue him the full poſſeſſion of his prize, no right at all remaining to his brother.

From temperate and calme ſpeeches, they fell to frownes and ruder Language, which heated their blood in ſuch violent manner, that forgetting brotherly affection, and all reſpect of Parents or Friends, they drew forth their Ponyards, ſtabbing each other ſo often and deſperately, that before any in the ſhippe had the power or meanes to part them, both of them being very dangerouſly wounded, the younger brother fell downe dead: the elder being in little better caſe, by receiuing ſo many perilous hurts, remained (neuertheleſſe) liuing. This vnhappy accident diſpleaſed the Lady very highly, ſeeing her ſelfe thus left alone, without the help or counſell of any bodie; and fearing greatly, leaſt the anger of the two Brethrens Parents and Friends, ſhould now bee laide to her charge, and thereon follow ſeuerity of puniſhment. But the earneſt entreaties of the wounded ſuruiuer, and their arriuall at *Smirna* ſoone after, deliuered him from the danger of death, gaue ſome eaſe to her ſorrow, and there with him ſhe went on ſhore.

Remaining there with him in a common Inne, while he continued in the Chirurgians cure, the fame of her ſingular and much admired beauty was ſoone ſpread abroad throughout all the City: and amongſt the reſt, to the hearing of the Prince of *Ionia*, who lately before (on very vrgent occaſions) was come to *Smyrna*. This rare rumour, made him deſirous to ſee her, and after he had ſeene her, ſhee ſeemed farre fairer in his eye, then common report had noiſed her to be, and ſuddenly grew ſo enamored of her, that ſhe was the onely Idea of his beſt deſires. Afterward, vnderſtanding in what manner ſhee was brought thither, he deuiſed how to make her his own, practiſing all poſſible meanes to accompliſh it: which

when

when the wounded Brothers Parents heard of, they not onely made tender of their willingneſſe therein, but alſo immediately ſent her to him: a matter moſt highly pleaſing to the Prince, and likewiſe to the Lady her ſelfe; becauſe ſhe thought now to be freed from no meane perill, which (otherwiſe) the wounded Merchants friends might haue inflicted vppon her.

The Prince perceiuing, that beſide her matchleſſe beauty, ſhee had the true character of Royall behauiour; greeued the more, that he could not be further informed of what Countrey ſhee was. His opinion being ſo ſtedfaſtly grounded, that (leſſe then Noble) ſhe could not be, was a motiue to ſet a keener edge on his affection towardes her, yet not to enioy her as in honourable and louing complement onely, but as his eſpouſed Lady and Wife. Which appearing to her by apparant demonſtrations, though entercourſe of ſpeech wanted to confirme it; remembrance of her ſo many ſad diſaſters, and being now in a moſt noble and reſpected condition, her comfort enlarged it ſelfe with a ſetled hope, her feares grew free from any more molleſtations, and her beauties became the onely theame and argument of priuate and publike conference in all *Natolia*, that (well-neere) ahere was no other diſcourſe, in any Aſſembly whatſoeuer.

Heereupon the Duke of Athens, beeing young, goodly, and valiant of perſon, as alſo a neere Kinſman to the Prince, had a deſire to ſee her; and vnder colour of viſiting his noble Kinſman, (as oftentimes before he had done) attended with an honourable traine, to *Smirna* he came, being there moſt royally welcommed, and bounteouſly feaſted. Within ſome few dayes of his there being, conference paſſed betweene them, concerning the rare beauty of the Ladie; the Duke queſtioning the Prince, whether ſhee was of ſuch wonder, as fame had acquainted the World withall? Whereto the Prince replyed; Much more (Noble kinſman) then can bee ſpoken of, as your owne eyes ſhall witneſſe, without crediting any words of mine. The Duke ſoliciting the Prince thereto very earneſtly, they both went together to ſee her; and ſhe hauing before heard of their comming, adorned her ſelfe the more Maieſtically, entertaining them with ceremonious demeanor (after her Countries cuſtome) which gaue moſt gracious and vnſpeakable acceptation.

At the Princes affable motion, ſhee ſate downe betweene them, their delight being beyond expreſſion, to behold her, but abridged of much more felicitie, becauſe they vnderſtood not any part of her Language: ſo that they could haue no other conference, but by lookes and outward ſignes onely; and the more they beheld her, the more they maruelled at her rare perfections, eſpecially the Duke, who hardly credited that ſhee was a mortall creature. Thus not perceyuing, what deepe carowſes of amorous poyſon his eyes dranke downe by the meere ſight of her, yet thinking thereby onely to bee ſatisfied, hee loſt both himſelfe and his beſt ſences, growing in loue (beyond all meaſure) with her. When the Prince and he were parted from her, and hee was at his owne priuate amorous

meditations in his Chamber, he reputed the Prince farre happier then any man elſe whatſoeuer, by the enioying of ſuch a peereleſſe beauty.

After many intricate and diſtracted cogitations, which moleſted his braines inceſſantly, regarding more his loues wanton heate, then reaſon, kindred, and honourable hoſpitality; he reſolutely determined (whatſoeuer enſued thereupon) to bereaue the Prince of his faire felicity, that none but himſelfe might poſſeſſe ſuch a treaſure, which he eſteemed to bee the height of all happineſſe. His courage being conformable to his bad intent, with all haſt it muſt be put in execution; ſo that equity, iuſtice, and honeſty, being quite abandoned, nothing but ſubtile ſtratagems were now his meditations. On a day, according to a fore-compacted treachery which he had ordered with a Gentleman of the Princes Chamber, who was named *Churiacy*, he prepared his horſes to be in readineſſe, and diſpatched all his affaires elſe for a ſodaine departure. The night following, hee was ſecretly conueyed by the ſaid *Churiacy*, and a friend of his with him (being both armed) into the Princes Chamber, where he (while the Ladie was ſoundly ſleeping) ſtood at a gazing window towards the Sea, naked in his ſhirt, to take the coole ayre, becauſe the ſeaſon was exceeding hot. Hauing formerly enſtructed his friend what was to be done, very ſoftly they ſtept to the Prince, and running their weapons quite thorow his bodie, immediately they threw him forth of the window.

Here you are to obſerue, that the Pallace was ſeated on the Sea ſhore, and verie high, and the Window whereat the Prince then ſtood looking foorth, was directly ouer diuers houſes, which the long continuance of time, and inceſſant beating on by the ſurges of the Sea, had ſo defaced and ruined them, as ſeldome they were viſited by any perſon; whereof the Duke hauing knowledge before, was the eaſier perſwaded that the falling of the Princes body in ſo vaſt a place, could neither bee heard or deſcryed by any. The Duke and his Companion, hauing thus executed what they came for, proceeded yet in their cunning a little further; caſting a ſtrangling Cord about the necke of *Churiacy*, ſeemed as if they hugged and imbraced him: but drew it with ſo main ſtrength, that he neuer ſpake word after, and ſo threw him downe after the Prince.

This done, and plainely perceiuing that they were not heard or ſeene, either by the Lady, or any other: the Duke tooke a light in his hand, going on to the bed, where the Lady lay moſt ſweetely ſleeping; whom the more he beheld, the more he admired and commended: but if in her garments ſhee appeared ſo pleaſing, what did ſhee now in a bed of ſuch ſtate and Maieſtie? Being no way daunted with his ſo late committed ſin, but ſwimming rather in ſurfet of ioy, his hands all bloody, and his ſoule much more vgly; he laide him downe on the bed by her, beſtowing infinite kiſſes and embraces on her, ſhe ſuppoſing him to be the Prince all this while, not opening her eyes to bee otherwiſe reſolued. But this was not the delight he aymed at, neither did he thinke it ſafe for him, to delay time with any longer tarrying there: Wherefore, hauing his agents at hand fit and conuenient for the purpoſe, they ſurprized her in ſuch ſort, that ſhee could

not

not make any noyſe or outcry, and carrying her through the ſame falſe poſterne, whereat themſelues had entred, laying her in a Princely litter; away they went with all poſſible ſpeede, not tarrying in any place, vntill they were arriued neere Athens. But thither he would not bring her, becauſe himſelfe was a married man, but rather to a goodly Caſtle of his owne, not diſtant farre from the City; where he cauſed her to bee kept very ſecretly (to her no little greefe and ſorrow) yet attended on and ſerued in moſt honourable manner.

The Gentlemen vſually attending on the Prince, hauing waited all the next morning till noone, in expectation of his riſing, and hearing no ſtirring in the Chamber, did thruſt at the doore, which was but onely cloſed together, and finding no body there, they preſently imagined, that he was priuately gone to ſome other place, where (with the Ladie, whom he ſo deerely affected) hee might remaine ſome few dayes for his more contentment, and ſo they reſted verily perſwaded. Within ſome few dayes following, while no other doubt came in queſtion, the Princes Foole, entering by chance among the ruined houſes, where lay the dead bodies of the Prince and *Churiacy*: tooke hold of the cord about *Churiacyes* necke, and ſo went along dragging it after him. The dead body being knowne to many, with no meane meruaile how he ſhould bee murthered in ſo vile manner: by gifts and faire perſwaſions they wonne him to bring them to the place where he found it. And there (to the no little greefe of the whole Cittie) they found the Princes body alſo, which they cauſed to bee interred with all the moſt Maieſticke pompe that might be.

Vpon further inquiſition, who ſhould commit ſo horrid a deede, perceyuing likewiſe that the Duke of Athens was not to be found, but was cloſely gone: they iudged (according to the truth) that he had his hand in this bloody buſineſſe, and had carried away the Lady with him. Immediately, they elected the Princes brother to bee their Lord and Soueraigne, inciting him to reuenge ſo horrid a wrong, and promiſing to aſſiſt him with their vtmoſt power. The new choſen Prince being aſſured afterward, by other more apparant and remarkeable proofes, that his people informed him with nothing but truth: ſodainly, and according as they had concluded, with the help of neighbors, kindred and frends, collected from diuers places; he muſtred a good and powerfull army, marching on towards Athens, to make war againſt the Duke.

No ſooner heard he of this warlike preparation made againſt him, but he likewiſe leuied forces for his owne defence, and to his ſuccour came many great States: among whom, the Emperor of *Conſtantinople* ſent his ſonne *Conſtantine*, attended on by his Nephew *Emanuell*, with Troopes of faire and towardly force, who were honourably welcommed and entertained by the Duke, but much more by the Dutcheſſe, becauſe ſhee was their ſiſter in Law.

Military prouiſion thus proceeding on daily more and more, the Dutches making choiſe of a fit and conuenient houre, took theſe two Princes

with her to a with-drawing Chamber; and there in flouds of teares flowing from her eyes, wringing her hands, and fighing inceſſantly, ſhe recounted the whole Hiſtory, occaſion of the warre, and how diſhonoubly the Duke dealt with her about this ſtrange woman, whom hee purpoſed to keepe in deſpight of her, as thinking that ſhe knew nothing therof, and complaining very earneſtly vnto them, entreated that for the Dukes honour, and her comfort, they would giue their beſt aſſiſtance in this caſe.

The two young Lords knew all this matter, before ſhee thus reported it to them; and therefore, without ſtaying to liſten her any longer, but comforting her ſo wel as they could, with promiſe of their beſt emploied paines: being informd by her, in what place the Lady was ſo cloſely kept they took their leaue, and parted from her. Often they had heard the Lady much commended, and her incomparable beauty highly extolled, yea euen by the Duke himſelfe; which made them the more deſirous to ſee her: wherfore earneſtly they ſolicited him to let them haue a ſight of her, and he (forgetting what happened to the Prince, by ſhewing her ſo vnaduiſedly to him) made them promiſe to grant their requeſt. Cauſing a very magnificent dinner to be prepared, and in a goodly garden, at the Caſtle where the Lady was kept: on the morrow, attended on by a ſmal traine, away they rode to dine with her.

Conſtantine being ſeated at the Table, hee began (as one confounded with admiration) to obſerue her iudiciouſly, affirming ſecretly to his ſoule that he had neuer ſeene ſo compleat a woman before; and allowing it for iuſtice, that the Duke or any other whoſoeuer, if (to enioy ſo rare a beauty) they had committed treaſon, or any miſcheefe els beſide, yet in reaſon they ought to be held excuſed. Nor did he beſtow ſo many lookes vpon her, but his praiſes infinitely ſurpaſſed them, as thinking that he could not ſufficiently commend her, following the Duke ſtep by ſtep in affection; for being now growne amorous of her, and remembrance of the intended warre vtterly abandoned; no other thoughts could come neerer him but how to bereaue the Duke of her, yet concealing his loue, and not imparting it to any one.

While his fancies were thus amorouſly ſet on fire, the time came, that they muſt make head againſt the Prince, who already was marching with in the Dukes dominions: wherfore the Duke, *Conſtantine*, and all the reſt, according to a counſel held among them, went to defend certaine of the Frontiers, to the end that the Prince might paſſe no farther. Remaining there diuers dayes together, *Conſtantine* (who could thinke on nothing elſe but the beautiful Lady) conſidered with himſelf, that while the Duke was now ſo farre from her, it was an eaſie matter to compaſſe his intent: Hereupon, the better to colour his preſent returne to Athens, he ſeemed to be ſurprized with a ſudden extreame ſickneſſe, in regard whereof (by the Dukes free-licenſe, and leauing all his power to his Coſen *Emanuel*) forthwith he iourneyed backe to Athens. After ſome conference had with his ſiſter, abont her diſhonourable wrongs endured at his hands onely,

by

by the Lady, he ſolemnly proteſted, that if ſhe were ſo pleaſed, hee would aide her powerfully in the matter, by taking her from the place where ſhee was, and neuer more afterward, to be ſeene in that Country any more.

The Dutcheſſe being faithfully perſwaded, that he would do this onely for her ſake, and not in any affection he bare to the Lady, anſwered, that it highly pleaſed her; alwayes prouided, that it might be performed in ſuch ſort, as the Duke her husband ſhould neuer vnderſtand, that euer ſhe gaue any conſent thereto; which *Conſtantine* ſware vnto her by many deepe oaths, whereby ſhe referred all to his owne diſpoſition. *Conſtantine* heereupon ſecretly prepared in a readineſſe a ſubtile Barke, ſending it in an euening, neere to the Garden where the Lady reſorted, hauing firſt informed the people which were in it, fully what was to be done. Afterwards, accompanied with ſome other of his attendants, he went to the Palace to the Lady, where he was gladly entertained, not onely by ſuch as wayted on her, but alſo by the Lady her ſelfe.

Leading her along by the arme towards the Garden, attended on by two of her ſeruants, and two of his owne; ſeeming as if he was ſent from the Duke, to conferre with her: they walked alone to a Port opening on the Sea, which ſtanding ready open, vpon a ſigne giuen by him to one of his complices, the Barke was brought cloſe to the ſhore; and the Ladie being ſodainly ſeized on, was immediately conueyed into it; and he returning backe to her people, with his ſword drawne, ſaid: Let no man ſtirre, or ſpeake a word, except he be willing to looſe his life: for I intend not to rob the Duke of his faire friend, but to expell the ſhame and diſhonor that he hath offered to my Siſter: no one being ſo hardy as to returne him any anſwer. Aboord went *Conſtantine* with his conſorts, and ſitting neere to the Lady, who wrung her hands, and wept bitterly; he commaunded the Mariners to launch forth, flying away on the wings of the winde, till about the breake of day following, they arriued at *Melaſſo*. There they tooke landing, and repoſed on ſhore for ſome few dayes, *Conſtantine* labouring to comfort the Lady, euen as if ſhe had bene his owne Siſter, ſhee hauing good cauſe to curſe her infortunate beauty.

Going aboord the Barke againe, within few dayes they came to *Setalia*, and there fearing the reprehenſion of his father, and leaſt the Lady ſhould be taken from him; it pleaſed *Conſtantine* to make his ſtay, as in a place of no meane ſecurity. And (as before) after much kinde behauiour vſed towards the Lady, without any meanes in her ſelfe to redreſſe the leaſt of all theſe great extremities, ſhe became more milde and affable, for diſcontentment did not a iot quaile her.

While occurrences paſſed on in this manner, it fortuned, that *Osbech* the King of Turky (who was in continuall war with the Emperour) came by accident to *Laiazzo*: and hearing there how laſciuiouſly *Conſtantine* ſpent his time in *Setalia*, with a Lady which he had ſtolne, being but weake and ſlenderly guarded; in the night with certaine well prouided ſhips, his men and he entred the town, and ſurprized many people in their beds, before they knew of their enimies comming, killing ſuch as ſtood vpon their

defence againſt them, (among whom was *Conſtantine*) and burning the whole Towne, brought their booty and priſoners aboord their Shippes, wherewith they returned backe to *Laiazzo*. Being thus come to *Laiazzo*, *Osbech* who was a braue and gallant young man, vpon a reuiew of the pillage, found the faire Lady, whom he knew to be the beloued of *Conſtantine*, becauſe ſhee was found lying on his bed. Without any further delay, he made choice of her to be his wife; cauſing his nuptials to be honourably ſolemnized, and many moneths he liued there in great ioy with her.

But before occaſions grew to this effect, the Emperour made a confederacie with *Baſſano*, King of *Cappadocia*, that hee ſhould deſcend with his forces, one way vpon *Osbech*, and he would aſſault him with his power on the other. But he could not ſo conueniently bring this to paſſe, becauſe the Emperour would not yeeld to *Baſſano*, in any vnreaſonable matter he demanded. Neuertheleſſe, when hee vnderſtoode what had happened to his Sonne (for whom his greefe was beyond all meaſure) hee graunted the King of *Cappadociaes* requeſt; ſoliciting him with all inſtancy, to be the more ſpeedy in aſſayling *Osbech*. It was not long, before hee heard of this coniuration made againſt him; and therefore hee ſpeedily muſtered vp all his forces, ere he would be encompaſſed by two ſuch potent kings, and marched on to meete the King of *Cappadocia*, leauing his Ladie and Wife (for her ſafety) at *Laiazzo*, in the cuſtodie of a true and loyall Seruant of his.

Within a ſhort while after, he drew neere the Campe belonging to the King of *Cappadocia*, where boldly he gaue him battell; chancing therein to be ſlaine, his Army broken and diſcomfited, by meanes whereof, the King of *Cappadocia* remaining Conquerour, marched on towardes *Laiazzo*, euery one yeelding him obeyſance all the way as he went. In the meane ſpace, the ſeruant to *Osbech*, who was named *Antiochus*, and with whom the faire Ladie was left in guard; although hee was aged, yet ſeeing ſhee was ſo extraordinarily beautifull, he fell in loue with her, forgetting the ſolemne vowes he had made to his maſter. One happineſſe he had in this caſe to helpe him, namely, that he vnderſtood and could ſpeake her Language: a matter of no meane comfort to her, who conſtrainedly had liued diuers yeeres together, in the ſtate of a deafe or dumbe Woman, becauſe euery where elſe they vnderſtoode her not, nor ſhee them, but by ſhewes and ſignes.

This benefite of familiar conference, beganne to embolden his hopes, eleuate his courage, and make him ſeeme more youthfull in his owne opinion, then any ability of body could ſpeake vnto him, or promiſe him in the poſſeſſion of her, who was ſo farre beyond him, and ſo vnequall to be enioyed by him; yet to aduance his hopes a great deale higher, Newes came, that *Osbech* was vanquiſhed and ſlaine, and that *Baſſano* made euery where hauocke of all: whereon they concluded together, not to tarrie there any longer, but ſtoring themſelues with the goods of *Osbech*, ſecretly they departed thence to *Rhodes*. Being ſeated there in ſome indifferent

abiding,

abiding, it came to paſſe, that *Antiochus* fell into a deadly ſickeneſſe, to whom came a *Cyprian* Merchant, one much eſteemed by him, as beeing an intimate friend and kinde acquaintance, and in whom hee repoſed no ſmall confidence. Feeling his ſickeneſſe to encreaſe more and more vpon him dayly, hee determined, not onely to leaue ſuch wealth as hee had to this Merchant, but the faire Lady likewiſe. And calling them both to his beds ſide, he ſpake in this manner.

Deere Loue, and my moſt worthily reſpected friend, I perceiue plainly and infallibly, that I am drawing neere vnto my end, which much diſcontenteth me; becauſe my hope was to haue liued longer in this world, for the enioying of your kinde and moſt eſteemed company. Yet one thing maketh my death very pleaſing and welcome to me; namely, that lying thus in my bed of lateſt comfort in this life, I ſhall expire and finiſh my courſe, in the armes of thoſe two perſons, whome I moſt affected in all this world, as you my euer-deereſt friend, and you faire Lady, whom (ſince the very firſt ſight of you) I loued and honoured in my ſoule. Irkeſome and verie greeuous it is to me, that (if I dye) I ſhall leaue you heere a ſtranger, without the counſaile and helpe of any bodie: and yet much more offenſiue would it become, if I had not ſuch a friend as you heere preſent, who (I am faithfully perſwaded) will haue the like care & reſpect of her (euen for my ſake) as of my ſelfe, if time had allotted my longer tarrying here. And therefore (worthy friend) moſt earneſtly I deſire you, that if I dye, all mine affaires and ſhe may remaine to your truſtie care, as being (by my ſelfe) abſolutely commended to your prouidence, and ſo to diſpoſe both of the one and other, as may beſt agree with the comfort of my ſoule. As for you (choice beauty) I humbly entreate, that after my death you would not forget me, to the end, I may make my vaunt in another world, that I was affected here by the faireſt Lady that euer Nature framed. If of theſe two things you will giue mee aſſurance, I ſhall depart from you with no meane comfort.

The friendly Merchant, and likewiſe the Ladie, hearing theſe words, wept both bitterly: and after hee had giuen ouer ſpeaking, kindely they comforted him, with promiſes and ſolemne Vowes, that if hee dyed, all ſhould be performed which hee had requeſted. Within a ſhort while after, he departed out of this life, and they gaue him verie honourable buriall, according to that Country cuſtome. Which being done, the Merchant diſpatching all his affaires at *Rhodes*, was deſirous to returne home to *Cyprus*, in a Carracke of the Catelans then there being: mouing the Ladie in the matter, to vnderſtand how ſhee ſtoode enclined, becauſe vrgent occaſions called him thence to *Cyprus*. The Lady made anſwere, that ſhee was willing to paſſe thither with him, hoping for the loue hee bare to deceaſed *Antiochus*, that hee would reſpect her as his Siſter. The Merchant was willing to giue her any contentment, but yet reſolued her, that vnder the title of being his Siſter, it would be no warrant of ſecuritie to them both. Wherefore, hee rather aduiſed her, to ſtile him as her huſband, and he would terme her his Wife, and ſo hee ſhould be ſure to de-

fend

ſend her from all iniuries whatſoeuer.

Being aboord the Carrack, they had a Cabine and ſmall bed conueniently allowed them, where they ſlept together, that they might the better be reputed as man and wife; for, to paſſe otherwiſe, would haue beene very dangerous to them both. And queſtionleſſe, their faithfull promiſe made at *Rhodes* to *Antiochus*, ſickeneſſe on the Sea, and mutuall reſpect they had of each others credit, was a conſtant reſtraint to all wanton deſires, and a motiue rather to incite Chaſtitie, then otherwiſe, and ſo (I hope) you are perſwaded of them. But howſoeuer, the windes blewe merrily, the Carracke ſayled luſtily, and (by this time) they are arriued at *Baffa*, where the *Cyprian* Merchant dwelt, and where ſhee continued a long while with him, no one knowing otherwiſe, but that ſhee was his wife indeede.

Now it fortuned, that there arriued alſo at the ſame *Baffa* (about ſome eſpeciall occaſions of his) a Gentleman whoſe name was *Antigonus*, well ſtept into yeeres, and better ſtored with wiſedome then wealth: becauſe by medling in many matters, while hee followed the ſeruice of the King of *Cyprus*, Fortune had beene very aduerſe to him. This ancient Gentleman, paſſing (on a day) by the houſe where the Lady lay, and the Merchant being gone about his buſineſſe into *Armenia*: hee chanced to ſee the Lady at a window of the houſe, and becauſe ſhee was very beautifull, he obſerued her the more aduiſedly, recollecting his ſences together, that (doubtleſſe) he had ſeene her before, but in what place hee could not remember. The Lady her ſelfe likewiſe, who had ſo long time beene Fortunes tennis ball, and the terme of her many miſeries drawing now neere an ending: began to conceiue (vpon the very firſt ſight of *Antigonus*) that ſhe had formerly ſeene him in *Alexandria*, ſeruing her Father in place of great degree. Hereupon, a ſodaine hope perſwaded her, that by the aduice and furtherance of this Gentleman, ſhee ſhould recouer her wonted Royall condition: and opportunity now aptly fitting her, by the abſence of her pretended Merchant-husband, ſhee ſent for him, requeſting to haue a few words with him.

When he was come into the houſe, ſhe baſhfully demanded of him, if he was not named *Antigonus* of *Famagoſta*, becauſe ſhe knew one like him ſo called? He anſwered that he was ſo named: ſaying moreouer, Madam me thinkes I ſhould know you, but I cannot remember where I haue ſeene you, wherefore I would entreat (if it might ſtand with your good liking) that my memory might be quickned with better knowledge of you. The Lady perceiuing him to be the man indeed, weeping inceſſantly, ſhe threw her armes about his necke, and ſoone after asked *Antigonus* (who ſtood as one confounded with meruaile) if he had neuer ſeene her in *Alexandria*? Vpon theſe words, *Antigonus* knew her immediatly to be *Alathiella*, daughter to the great Soldane, who was ſuppoſed (long ſince) to be drowned in the Sea: and offering to do her ſuch reuerence as became him, ſhe would not permit him, but deſired that he would bee aſſiſtant to her, and willed him alſo to ſit downe awhile by her.

A goodly

A goodly chaire being brought him, in very humble maner he demanded of her, what had become of her in ſo long a time, becauſe it was verily beleeued throughout all Egypt, that ſhe was drowned in the Sea. I would it had bin ſo, anſwered the Lady, rather then to leade ſuch a life as I haue done; and I thinke my Father himſelfe would wiſh it ſo, if euer he ſhould come to the knowledge thereof. With theſe words the teares rained downe her faire cheekes: wherefore *Antigonus* thus ſpake vnto hir. Madam, diſcomfort not your ſelfe before you haue occaſion; but (if you be ſo pleaſed) relate your paſſed accidents to me, and what the courſe of your life hath bene: perhaps I ſhall giue you ſuch friendly aduice as may ſtand you inſted, and no way be iniurious to you.

Fetching a ſighe, euen as if her heart would haue ſplit in ſunder, thus ſhe replyed. Ah *Antigonus*, me thinkes when I looke on thee, I ſeeme to behold my royall Father, and therefore mooued with the like religious zeale and charitable loue, as in duty I owe vnto him: I wil make known to thee, what I rather ought to conceale & hide from any perſon liuing. I know thee to be honourable, diſcreete, and truely wiſe, though I am a fraile, ſimple, and weake woman, therefore I dare diſcouer to hee, rather then any other that I know, by what ſtrange & vnexpected misfortunes I haue liued ſo long obſcurely in the world. And if in thy great and graue iudgement (after the hearing of my many miſeries) thou canſt any way reſtore me to my former eſtate, I pray thee do it: but if thou perceiue it impoſſible to be done, as earneſtly likewiſe I entreate thee, neuer to reueale to any liuing perſon, that either thou haſt ſeene mee, or heard any ſpeech of me. After theſe words, the teares ſtill ſtreaming from her faire eyes, ſhe recounted the whole paſſage of her rare mishappes, euen from her ſhipwracke in the ſea of *Maiorica*, vntill that very inſtant houre; ſpeaking them in ſuch harſh manner as they hapned, and not ſparing any iot of them.

Antigonus being mooued to much compaſſion, declared how hee pittied her by his teares; and hauing bene ſilent an indifferent while, as conſidering in this caſe what was beſt to be done, thus he began. Madam, ſeeing you haue paſt through ſuch a multitude of misfortunes, yet vndiſcouered, what and who you are: I will render you as blameleſſe to your Father, and eſtate you as fairely in his loue, as at the houre when you parted from him, and afterward make you wife to the King of *Colchos*. Shee demanding of him, by what meanes poſſibly this could be accompliſhed, breefely he made it knowne to her, how, and in what manner he would performe it.

To cut off further tedious circumſtances, forthwith he returned to *Famigoſta*, and going before the King of the country, thus he ſpake to him. Sir, you may (if ſo you will be pleaſed) in an inſtant, do me an exceeding honor, who haue bene impoueriſhed by your ſeruice, and alſo a deed of great renowne to your ſelfe, without any much matter of expence and coſt. The King demanding how? *Antigonus* thus anſwered. The faire daughter of the Soldane, ſo generally reported to be drowned, is arriued

at

at *Baffa*, and to preſerue her honor from blemiſhing, hath ſuffered many croſſes and calamities: being at this inſtant in very poore eſtate, yet deſirous to reviſite her father. If you pleaſe to ſend her home vnder my conduct, it will be great honour to you, and no meane benefite to me: which kindneſſe will for euer be thankfully remembred by the Soldan.

The King in royall magnificence, replied ſodainly, that he was highly pleaſed with theſe good tydings; and hauing ſent honorably for hir from *Baffa*, with great pompe ſhe was conducted to *Famagoſta*, and there moſt graciouſly welcommed both by the King and Queene, with ſolemne triumphes, bankets, and reuelling, performed in moſt Maieſticke manner. Being queſtioned by the King and Queene, concerning ſo large a time of ſtrange miſfortunes: according as *Antigonus* had formerly enſtructed her, ſo did ſhe ſhape the forme of her anſwers, and ſatisfied (with honor) all their demands. So, within few daies after, vpon her earneſt and inſtant requeſt, with an honourable traine of Lords and Ladies, ſhee was ſent thence, and conducted all the way by *Antigonus*, vntill ſhe came vnto the Soldans Court.

After ſome few dayes of her repoſing there, the Soldan was deſirous to vnderſtand, how ſhe could poſſibly liue ſo long in any Kingdome or Prouince whatſoeuer, and yet no knowledge to be taken of her? The Lady, who perfectly retained by heart, and had all her leſſons at her fingers ends, by the warie inſtruction which *Antigonus* had giuen her, anſwered her father in this manner. Sir, about the twentieth day after my departure from you, a very terrible and dreadfull tempeſt ouertooke vs, ſo that in dead time of the night, our ſhip being ſplit in ſunder vpon the ſands, neere to a place called *Varna*, what became of all the men that were aboord, I neither know, nor euer heard of. Onely I remember, then when death appeared, and I being recouered from death to life, certaine Pezants of the Countrey, comming to get what they could finde in the ſhip ſo wrackt, I was firſt (with two of my women) brought and ſet ſafely on the ſhore.

No ſooner were we there, but certaine rude ſhagge-haird villaines ſet vpon vs, carrying away from me both my women, then haling me along by the haire of my head: neither teares or interceſſions could draw any pitty from them. As thus they dragd me into a ſpacious Wood, foure horſemen on a ſodaine came riding by, who ſeeing how diſhonourably the villaines vſed me, reſcued me from them, and forced them to flight. But the foure horſemen, ſeeming (in my iudgement) to bee perſons of power and authority, letting them go, came to me; vrging ſundry queſtions to me, which neither I vnderſtood, or they mine anſweres. After many deliberations held among themſelues, ſetting me vpon one of their horſes, they brought me to a Monaſterie of religious women, according to the cuſtome of their Law: and there, whatſoeuer they did or ſayde, I know not, but I was moſt benignely welcommed thither, and honoured of them extraordinarily; where (with them in Deuotion) I dedicated my ſelfe to the Goddeſſe of chaſtity, who is highly reuerenced and regarded among

among the women of that Countrey, and to her religious ſeruice they are wholly addicted.

After I had continued ſome time among them, and learned a little of their language; they asked me, of whence, and what I was. Reaſon gaue me ſo much vnderſtanding, to be fearefull of telling them the trueth, for feare of expulſion from among them, as an enemy to their Law and Religion: wherefore I anſwered (according as neceſſitie vrged) that I was daughter to a Gentleman of *Cyprus*, who ſent me to bee married in *Candie*; but our fortunes (meaning ſuch as had the charge of me) fell out quite contrary to our expectation, by loſſes, ſhipwracke, and other miſchances; adding many matters more beſide, onely in regard of feare, and yeelding obediently to obſerue their cuſtomes.

At length, ſhe that was in cheefeſt preheminence among theſe Women (whom they termed by the name of their Ladie Abbeſſe) demaunded of mee, whether I was willing to abide in that condition of life, or to returne home againe into *Cyprus*. I anſwerd, that I deſired nothing more. But ſhee, being very carefull of mine honour, would neuer repoſe confidence in any that came for *Cyprus*, till two honeſt Gentlemen of France who hapned thither about two moneths ſince, accompanied with their wiues, one of them being a neere kinſwoman to the Lady Abbeſſe. And ſhe well knowing, that they trauelled in pilgrimage to *Ieruſalem*, to viſite the holy Sepulcher, where (as they beleeue) that he whom they held for their God was buried, after the Iewes had put him to death; recommended me to their louing truſt, with eſpeciall charge, for deliuering mee to my Father in *Cyprus*. What honourable loue and reſpect I found in the company of thoſe Gentlemen and their Wiues, during our voyage backe to *Cyprus*, the hiſtorie would be ouer-tedious in reporting, neither is it much materiall to our purpoſe, becauſe your demaund is to another end.

Sayling on proſperouſly in our Ship, it was not long before we arriued at *Baffa*, where being landed, and not knowing any perſon, neither what I ſhould ſay to the Gentlemen, who onely were carefull for deliuering me to my Father, according as they were charged by the reuerend Abbeſſe: it was the will of heauen doubtleſſe (in pitty and compaſſion of my paſſed diſaſters) that I was no ſooner come on ſhore at *Baffa*, but I ſhould there haply meet with *Antigonus*, whom I called vnto in our Country language becauſe I would not be vnderſtood by the Gentlemen nor their wiues, requeſting him to acknowledge me as his daughter. Quickly he apprehended mine intention, accompliſhing what I requeſted, and (according to his poore power) moſt bounteouſly feaſted the Gentlemen and their wiues, conducting me to the King of *Cyprus*, who receiued me royally, and ſent me home to you with ſo much honour, as I am no way able to relate. What elſe remaineth to be ſaid, *Antigonus* who hath oft heard the whole ſtory of my misfortunes, at better leyſure will report.

Antigonus then turning to the Soldan, ſaide: My Lord, as ſhee hath often told me, and by relation both of the Gentlemen and their wiues, ſhe hath

hath deliuered nothing but truth. Onely ſhee hath forgotten ſomewhat worth the ſpeaking, as thinking it not fit for her to vtter, becauſe indeed it is not ſo conuenient for her. Namely, how much the Gentlemen and their wiues (with whom ſhe came) commended the rare honeſty and integrity of life, as alſo the vnſpotted vertue wherein ſhee liued among thoſe chaſte religious women, as they conſtantly (both with teares and ſolemne proteſtations) auouched to me, when kindly they reſigned their charge to me. Of all which matters, and many more beſide, if I ſhould make diſcourſe to your Excellencie; this whole day, the night enſuing, & the next daies full extendure, are not ſufficient to acquaint you withall. Let it ſuffice then that I haue ſaid ſo much, as (both by the reports, and mine owne vnderſtanding) may giue you faithfull aſſurance, to make your Royall vaunt, of hauing the faireſt, moſt vertuous, and honeſt Lady to your daughter, of any King or Prince whatſoeuer.

The Soldane was ioyfull beyond all meaſure, welcomming both him and the reſt in moſt ſtately manner, oftentimes entreating the Gods very heartily, that he might liue to requite them with equall recompence, who had ſo graciouſly honored his daughter : but aboue all the reſt, the King of *Cyprus*, who ſent her home ſo Maieſtically. And hauing beſtowne great gifts of *Antigonus*, within a few dayes after, hee gaue him leaue to returne to *Cyprus* : with thankfull fauours to the King as well by Letters, as alſo by Ambaſſadours expreſſely ſent, both from himſelfe and his Daughter.

When as this buſineſſe was fully finiſhed, the Soldane, deſiring to accompliſh what formerly was intended and begun, namely, that ſhe might be wife to the King of *Colchos*; hee gaue him intelligence of all that had happened; writing moreouer to him, that (if he were ſo pleaſed) he wold yet ſend her in Royall manner to him. The King of *Colchos* was exceeding ioyfull of theſe glad tydings, and diſpatching a worthy traine to fetch her, ſhe was conueyed thither very pompouſly, and ſhe who had bene imbraced by ſo many, was receiued by him as an honeſt Virgin, liuing long time after with him in much ioy and felicity. And therefore it hath bene ſaide as a common Prouerbe: The mouth well kiſt comes not ſhort of good Fortune, but is ſtill renèwed like the Moone.

The Count D'Angiers *being falsly accused, was banished out of France, & left his two children in England in diuers places. Returning afterward (vnknowne) thorow Scotland, hee found them aduanced vnto great dignitie. Then, repayring in the habite of a Seruitour, into the King of France his Armie, and his innocencie made publiquely knowne, hee was reseated in his former honourable degree.*

The eight Nouell.

Whereby all men may plainely vnderstand, that loyalty faithfully kept to the Prince (what perils soeuer doe ensue) doth yet neuerthelesse renowne a man, and bring him to farre greater honour.



THe Ladies sighed verie often, hearing the variety of wofull miseries happening to *Alathiella:* but who knoweth, what occasion mooued them to those sighes? Perhappes there were some among them, who rather sighed they could not be so often maried as she was, rather then for any other compassion they had of her disasters. But leauing that to their owne construction, they smiled merrily at the last speeches of *Pamphilus*: and the Queene perceyuing the Nouell to be ended, shee fixed her eye vpon Madame *Eliza*, as signifying thereby, that she was next to succeed in order; which shee ioyfully embracing, spake as followeth. The field is very large and spacious, wherein all this day we haue walked, and there is not any one here so wearied with running the former races, but nimbly would aduenture on as many more, so copious are the alterations of Fortune, in sad repetition of her wonderfull changes: and among the infinity of her various courses, I must make addition of another, which I trust, will no way discontent you.

When the Romaine Empire was tranſlated from the French to the Germaines, mighty diſſentions grew betweene both the Nations, inſomuch, that it drew a diſmall and a lingering warre. In which reſpect, as well for the ſafety of his owne Kingdome, as to annoy and diſturbe his enemies; the King of France and one of his ſonnes, hauing congregated the forces of their owne Dominions, as alſo of their friends and confederates, they reſolued manfully to encounter their enemies. But before they would aduenture any raſh proceeding, they held it as the cheefeſt part of policy and royall prouidence, not to leaue the State without a Chiefe or Gouernour. And hauing had good experience of *Gualtier*, Count *D'Angiers*, to be a wiſe and worthy Lord, ſingularly expert in military diſcipline, and faithfull in all affaires of the Kingdome (yet fitter for eaſe and pleaſure, then laborious toyle and trauaile:) he was elected Lieutenant Gouernour in their ſted, ouer the whole kingdom of France, and then they went on in their enterprize.

Now began the Count to execute the office committed to his truſt, by orderly proceeding, and with great diſcretion, yet not entering into any buſineſſe, without conſent of the Queene and her faire daughter in Law: who although they were left vnder his care and cuſtodie, yet (notwithſtanding) he honoured them as his ſuperiours, and as the dignity of their quality required. Here you are to obſerue, concerning Count *Gualtier* himſelfe, that he was a moſt compleate perſon, aged litle aboue forty yeeres, as affable and ſingularly conditioned, as any Noble man poſſibly could be, nor did thoſe times affoord a Gentleman, that equalled him in all reſpects. It fortuned, that the King and his ſonne being buſy in the aforenamed war, the wife and Lady of Count *Gualtier* died in the mean while, leauing him onely a ſonne and a daughter very yong, and of tender yeeres, which made his owne home the leſſe welcom to him, hauing loſt his deere Loue, and ſecond ſelfe.

Heereupon, he reſorted to the Court of the ſaid Ladies the more frequently, often conferring with them, about the waighty affaires of the Kingdome: in which time of ſo ſerious interparlance, the Kings ſonnes wife, threw many affectionate regards vpon him, conueying ſuch conſpiring paſſions to her heart (in regard of his perſon and vertues) that her loue exceeded all capacity of gouernement. Her deſires out-ſtepping al compaſſe of modeſty, or the dignity of her Princely condition, throwes off all regard of ciuill and ſober thoughts, and guides her into a Labyrinth of wanton imaginations. For, ſhe regards not now the eminency of his high Authority, his grauity of yeares, and thoſe parts that are the true conducts to honour: but lookes vpon her owne looſe and laſciuious appetite, her young, gallant, and ouer-ready yeelding nature, comparing them with his want of a wife, and likely hope thereby of her ſooner preuailing; ſuppoſing, that nothing could be her hindrance, but onely baſhfull ſhamefaſtneſſe, which ſhe rather choſe vtterly to forſake and ſet aſide, then to faile of her hot enflamed affection, and therefore ſhe would needs be the diſcouerer of her owne diſgrace.

Vpon

Vpon a day, being alone by her ſelfe, and the time ſeeming ſuteable to her intention: ſhee ſent for the Count, vnder colour of ſome other important conference with him. The Count *D'Angiers*, whoſe thoughts were quite contrary to hers: immediately went to her, where they both ſitting downe together on a beds ſide in her Chamber, according as formerly ſhee had plotted her purpoſe; twice hee demaunded of her, vpon what occaſion ſhe had thus ſent for him. She ſitting a long while ſilent, as if ſhe had no anſwere to make him, preſſed by the violence of her amorous paſſions, a Vermillion tincture leaping vp into her face, yet ſhame enforcing teares from her eyes, with words broken and halfe confuſed, at laſt ſhe began to deliuer her minde in this manner.

Honourable Lord, and my deerely reſpected Friend, being ſo wiſe a man as you are, it is no difficult matter for you to know, what a frayle condition is impoſed both on men and women; yet (for diuers occaſions) much more vpon the one, then the other. Wherefore deſertfully, in the cenſure of a iuſt and vpright Iudge, a fault of diuers conditions (in reſpect of the perſon) ought not to bee cenſured with one and the ſame punniſhment. Beſide, who will not ſay, that a man or woman of poore and meane eſtate, hauing no other helpe for maintainance, but laborious trauaile of their bodies, ſhould worthily receiue more ſharpe reprehenſion, in yeelding to amorous deſires, or ſuch paſſions as are incited by loue; then a wealthy Lady whoſe liuing relieth not on her pains or cares, neither wanteth any thing that ſhe can wiſh to haue: I dare preſume, that you your ſelfe will allow this to be equall and iuſt. In which reſpect, I am of the minde, that the fore-named allegations, ought to ſerue as a ſufficient excuſe, yea, and to the aduantage of her who is ſo poſſeſſed, if the paſſions of loue ſhould ouer-reach her: alwayes prouided, that ſhee can pleade in her owne defence, the choice of a wiſe and vertuous friend, anſwerable to her owne condition and quality, and no way to be taxt with a ſeruile or vile election.

Theſe two ſpeciall obſeruations, allowable in my iudgement, and liuing now in mee, ſeizing on my youthfull blood and yeeres, haue found no mean inducement to loue, in regard of my husbands far diſtance from me, medling in the rude vnciuill actions of warre, when he ſhould rather be at home in more ſweet imployment. You ſee Sir, that theſe Oratours aduance themſelues here in your preſence, to acquaint you with the extremity of my ouer-commanding agony: and if the ſame power hath dominion in you, which your diſcretion (queſtionleſſe) cannot be voide of; then let me entreate ſuch aduice from you, as may rather helpe, then hinder my hopes. Beleeue it then for trueth Sir, that the long abſence of my husband from me, the ſolitary condition wherein I am left, il agreeing with the hot blood running in my veines, & the temper of my earneſt deſires: haue ſo preuailed againſt my ſtrongeſt reſiſtances, that not onely ſo weake a woman as I am, but any man of much more potent might, (liuing in eaſe and idleneſſe as I do) cannot withſtand ſuch continuall aſſaults, hauing no other helpe then fleſh and blood.

Nor am I ſo ignorant, but publike knowledge of ſuch an error in mee, would be reputed a ſhrewd taxation of honeſty: whereas (on the other ſide) ſecret carriage, and heedfull managing ſuch amorous affaires, may paſſe for currant without any reproach. And let me tel you, noble Count, that I repute loue highly fauourable to mee, by guiding my iudgement with ſuch moderation, to make election of a wife, worthy, and honorable friend, fit to enioy the grace of a farre greater Lady then I am, and the firſt letter of his name, is the Count *D'Angiers*. For if error haue not miſled mine eye, as in loue no Lady can be eaſily deceiued: for perſon, perfections, and all parts moſt to bee commended in a man, the vvhole Realme of France containeth not your equall. Obſerue beſide, how forward Fortune ſheweth her ſelfe to vs both in this caſe; you to bee deſtitute of a wife, as I am of an husband; for I account him as dead to me, when he denies me the duties belonging to a wife. Wherefore, in regard of the vnfained affection I beare you, and compaſſion which you ought to haue of a Royall Princeſſe, euen almoſt ſicke to death for your ſake, I earneſtly entreat you, not to deny mee your louing ſociety, but pittying my youth and fiery affections (neuer to be quenched but by your kindneſſe) I may enioy my hearts deſire.

As ſhee vttered theſe words, the teares ſtreamed aboundantly downe her faire cheekes, preuenting her of any further ſpeech: ſo that deiecting her head into her boſome, ouercome with the predominance of her paſſions, ſhe fell vpon the Counts knee, whereas elſe ſhee had falne vpon the ground. When he, like a loyall and moſt honourable man ſharpely reprehended her fond and idle loue: And when ſhee would haue embraced him about the necke to haue kiſſed him; he repulſed her roughly from him, proteſting vpon his honourable reputation, that rather then hee would ſo wrong his Lord and Maiſter, he would endure a thouſand deaths.

The Ladie ſeeing her deſire diſappointed, and her fond expectation vtterly fruſtrated: grew inſtantly forgetfull of her intemperate loue, and falling into extremity of rage, conuerted her former gentle and louing ſpeeches, into this harſh and ruder language. Villaine (quoth ſhe) ſhall the longing comforts of my life, be abridged by thy baſe and ſcornefull deniall? Shall my deſtruction be wrought by thy moſt curriſh vnkindeneſſe, and all my hoped ioyes be defeated in a moment? Know Slaue, that I did not ſo earneſtly deſire thy ſweete embracements before, but now as deadly I hate and deſpiſe them; which either thy death or baniſhment ſhall deerely pay for. No ſooner had ſhe thus ſpoken, but tearing her haire, and renting her garments in peeces, ſhe ranne about like a diſtracted Woman, crying out alowd; Helpe, helpe, the Count *D'Angiers* will forcibly diſhonour mee, the luſtfull Count will violate mine honour.

D'Angiers ſeeing this, and fearing more the malice of the ouer-credulous Court, then either his owne Conſcience, or any diſhonourable act by him committed, beleeuing likewiſe, that her ſlanderous accuſati-

on would be credited, aboue his true and ſpotleſſe innocency: cloſely he conueyed himſelfe out of the Court, making what haſt he could, home to his owne houſe, which being too weake for warranting his ſafety vpon ſuch purſuite as would be vſed againſt him, without any further aduice or counſell, he ſeated his two children on horſeback, himſelfe alſo being but meanly mounted, thus away thence he went to *Calice*.

Vpon the clamour and noiſe of the Lady, the Courtiers quickly flocked thither; and, as lies ſoone winne beleefe in haſty opinions, vpon any ſilly or ſhallow ſurmiſe: ſo did her accuſation paſſe for currant, and the Counts aduancement being enuied by many, made his honeſt carriage (in this caſe) the more ſuſpected. In haſt and madding fury, they ran to the Counts houſes, to arreſt his perſon, and carry him to priſon: but when they could not finde him, they raced his goodly buildings downe to the ground, and vſed all ſhamefull violence to them. Now, as ill newes ſildome wants a ſpeedy Meſſenger; ſo, in leſſe ſpace then you will imagine, the King and Dolphin heard thereof in the Campe, and were therewith ſo highly offended, that the Count had a ſodaine and ſeuere condemnation, all his progeny being ſentenced with perpetuall exile, and promiſes of great and bountifull rewards, to ſuch as could bring his body aliue or dead.

Thus the innocent Count, by his ouer-haſty and ſodaine flight, made himſelfe guilty of this foule imputation: and arriuing at *Callice* with his children, their poore and homely habites, hid them from being knowne, and thence they croſſed ouer into England, ſtaying no where vntill hee came to London. Before he would enter into the City, he gaue diuers good aduertiſements to his children, but eſpecially two precepts aboue all the reſt. Firſt, with patient ſoules to ſupport the poore condition, whereto Fortune (without any offence in him or them) had thus deiected them. Next, that they ſhould haue moſt heedfull care, at no time to diſcloſe from whence they came, or whoſe children they were, becauſe it extended to the perill of their liues. His Sonne, being named *Lewes*, and now about nine yeares old, his Daughter called *Violenta*, and aged ſeauen yeares, did both obſerue their fathers direction, as afterward it did ſufficiently appeare. And becauſe they might liue in the ſafer ſecuritie, hee thought it for the beſt to change their names, calling his Sonne *Perotto*, and his Daughter *Gianetta*, for thus they might beſt eſcape vnknowne.

Being entred into the City, and in the poore eſtate of beggars, they craued euery bodies mercy and almes. It came to paſſe, that ſtanding one morning at the Cathedrall Church doore, a great Lady of England being then wife to the Lord high Marſhal, comming forth of the Church, eſpied the Count and his children there begging. Of him ſhe demanded what Countrey-man he was? and whether thoſe children were his owne, or no? The Count replyed, that he was borne in *Piccardy*, and for an vnhappy fact committed by his eldeſt Sonne (a ſtripling of more hopefull expectation, then proued) hee was enforced, with thoſe his two other

children to forſake his country. The Lady being by nature very pittifull, looking aduiſedly on the young Girle beganne to grow in good liking of her; becauſe (indeede, ſhe was amiable, gentle, and beautifull, whereupon ſhee ſaide. Honeſt man, thy daughter hath a pleaſing countenance, and (perhaps) her inward diſpoſition may prooue anſwerable to her outward good parts: if therefore thou canſt bee content to leaue her with me, I willgiue her entertainment, and vpon her dutifull carriage and behauiour, if ſhe liue to ſuch yeares as may require it, I will haue her honeſtly beſtowne in marriage. This motion was very pleaſing to the Count, who readily declared his willing conſent thereto, and with the teares trickling downe his cheekes, in thankfull maner he deliuered his pretty daughter to the Lady.

She being thus happily beſtowne, he minded to tarry no longer in *London*; but, in his wonted begging manner, trauailing thorough the Country with his ſonne *Perotto*, at length he came into *Wales*: but not without much weary paine and trauell, being neuer vſed before, to iourney ſo far on foot. There dwelt another Lord, in office of Marſhalſhip to the King of *England*, whoſe power extended ouer thoſe parts: a man of very great authority, keeping a moſt noble and bountifull houſe, which they termed the *Preſident of Wales his Court*; whereto the Count and his Son oftentimes reſorted, as finding there good releeſe and comfort. On a day, one of the Preſidents ſons, accompanied with diuers other Gentlemens children, were performing certaine youthfull ſports, and paſtimes, as running, leaping, and ſuch like, wherein *Perotto* preſumed to make one among them, excelling all the reſt in ſuch commendable manner, as none of them came any thing nere him. Diuers times the Preſident had taken notice thereof, and was ſo well pleaſed with the Lads behauiour, that he enquired of whence he was? Anſwere was made, that he was a poore mans Son, that euery day came for an almes to his gate.

The Preſident being deſirous to make the boy his, the Count (whoſe dayly prayers were to the ſame purpoſe) frankly gaue his Son to the Nobleman: albeit naturall and fatherly affection, vrged ſome vnwillingneſſe to part ſo with him; yet neceſſity and diſcretion, found it beſt for the benefit of them both. Being thus eaſed of care for his Son and Daughter, and they (though in different places) yet vnder good and worthy gouernment; the Count would continue no longer in *England*: but, as beſt hee could procure the meanes, paſſed ouer into *Ireland*, and being arriued at a place called *Stanford*, became ſeruant to an Earle of that Country, a Gentleman profeſſing Armes, on whom he attended as a ſeruing man, and liued a long while in that eſtate very painfully.

His daughter *Violenta*, clouded vnder the borrowed name of *Gianetta*, dwelling with the Lady at *London*, grew ſo in yeares, beauty, comelineſſe of perſon, and was ſo gracefull in the fauour of her Lord and Lady, yea, of euery one in the houſe beſide, that it was wonderfull to behold. Such as but obſerued her vſuall carriage, and what modeſty ſhined clearely in her eyes, reputed her well worthy of honourable preferment; in regard,

the

the Lady that had receiued her of her Father, not knowing of whence, or what shee was; but as himselfe had made report, intended to match her in honourable marriage, according as her vertues worthily deserued. But God, the iust rewarder of all good endeauours, knowing her to be noble by birth, and (causeleſſe) to suffer for the sinnes of another; disposed otherwise of her: and that so worthy a Virgin might be no mate for a man of ill conditions, no doubt ordained what was to be done, according to his owne good pleasure.

The Noble Lady, with whom poore *Gianetta* dwelt, had but one onely Sonne by her Husband, and he most deerely affected of them both, as well in regard he was to be their heire, as also for his vertues and commendable qualities, wherein he excelled many young Gentlemen. Endued he was with heroycall valour, compleate in all perfections of person, and his minde euery way answerable to his outward behauiour, exceeding *Gianetta* about sixe yeeres in age. Hee perceiuing her to be a faire and comely Maiden, grew to affect her so entirely, that all things else he held contemptible, and nothing pleasing in his eye but shee. Now, in regard her parentage was reputed poore, he kept his loue concealed from his Parents, nor daring to desire her in marriage: for loath he was to loose their fauour, by discloſing the vehemency of his afflictions, which proued a greater torment to him, then if it had beene openly knowne.

It came to passe, that loue ouer-awed him in such sort, as he fell into a violent sickneſſe, and store of Physicions were sent for, to saue him from death, if possibly it might be. Their iudgements obseruing the course of his sickneſſe, yet not reaching to the cause of the disease, made a doubtfull question of his recouery; which was so displeasing to his parents, that their griefe and sorrow grew beyond measure. Many earneſt entreaties they moued to him, to know the occasion of his sickeneſſe, whereto he returned no other answere, but heart-breaking sighes, and inceſſant teares, which drew him more and more into weakeneſſe of body.

It chanced on a day, a Physicion was brought vnto him, being young in yeeres, but well experienced in his practise: and as hee made triall of his pulse, *Gianetta* (who by his Mothers command, attended on him very diligently (vpon some especiall occasion entred into the Chamber, which when the young Gentleman perceiued, and that shee neither spake word, nor so much as looked towards him, his heart grew great in amorous desire, and his pulse did beate beyond the compaſſe of ordinary custome; whereof the Physicion made good obseruation, to note how long that fit would continue. No sooner was *Gianetta* gone forth of the Chamber, but the pulse immediately gaue ouer beating, which perswaded the Physicion, that some part of the disease had now discouered it selfe apparantly.

Within a while after, pretending to haue some speech with *Gianetta*, and holding the Gentleman still by the arme, the Physicion caused her to be sent for; and immediately shee came. Vpon her very entrance into the Chamber, the pulse began to beate againe extreamely, and when shee departed,

parted, it presently ceased. Now was he thorowly perswaded, that he had found the true effect of his sickneſſe, when taking the Father and mother aside, thus he spake to them. If you be desirous of your Sons health, it consisteth not either in Physicion or physicke, but in the mercy of your faire Maide *Gianetta*; for manifest signes haue made it knowne to me, and he loueth the Damosell very dearely: yet (for ought I can perceiue, the Maide doth not know it:) now if you haue respect of his life, you know (in this case) what is to be done. The Nobleman and his Wife hearing this, became somewhat satisfied, because there remained a remedy to preserue his life: but yet it was no meane griefe to them, if it should so succeede, as they feared, namely, the marriage betweene this their Sonne and *Gianetta*.

The Physicion being gone, and they repairing to their sicke Sonne, the Mother began with him in this manner. Sonne, I was alwayes perswaded, that thou wouldest not conceale any secret from me, or the least part of thy desires; especially, when without enioying them, thou must remaine in the danger of death. Full well art thou assured, or in reason oughtest to be, that there is not any thing for thy contentment, be it of what quality soeuer, but it should haue beene prouided for thee, and in as ample manner as for mine owne selfe. But though thou hast wandred so farre from duty, and hazarded both thy life and ours, it commeth so to passe, that Heauen hath beene more mercifull to thee, then thou wouldest be to thy selfe, or vs. And to preuent thy dying of this disease, a dreame this night hath acquainted me with the principall occasion of thy sickenesse, to wit, extraordinary affection to a young Maiden, in some such place as thou hast seene her. I tell thee Sonne, it is a matter of no disgrace to loue, and why shouldst thou shame to manifest as much, it being so apt and conuenient for thy youth? For if I were perswaded, that thou couldst not loue, I should make the lesse esteeme of thee. Therefore deare Sonne, be not dismayed, but freely discouer thine affections. Expell those disastrous drouping thoughts, that haue indangered thy life by this long lingering sickneſſe. And let thy soule be faithfully assured, that thou canst not require any thing to be done, remaining within the compasse of my power, but I will performe it; for I loue thee as dearely as mine owne life. Set therefore aside this nice conceit of shame and feare, reuealing the truth boldly to me, if I may stead thee in thy loue; resoluing thy selfe vnfaignedly, that if my care stretch not to compasse thy content, account me for the most cruell Mother liuing, and vtterly vnworthy of such a Sonne.

The young Gentleman hauing heard these protestations made by his Mother, was not a little ashamed of his owne follie; but recollecting his better thoughts together, and knowing in his soule, that no one could better further his hopes, then shee; forgetting all his former feare, he returned her this answere; Madam, and my dearely affected Mother, nothing hath more occasioned my loues so strict concealement, but an especiall errour, which I finde by daily proofe in many, who being growne to yeeres of graue discretion, doe neuer remember,

that

that they themſelues haue bin yong. But becauſe herein I find you to be both diſcreet and wiſe, I will not onely affirme what you haue ſeen in me to be true, but alſo will confeſſe, to whom it is: vpon condition, that the effect of your promiſe may follow it, according to the power remaining in you, whereby you onely may ſecure my life.

His Mother, deſirous to bee reſolued, whether his confeſſion would agree with the Phyſitians words, or no, and reſeruing another intention to her ſelfe: bad him feare nothing, but freely diſcouer his whole deſire, and forthwith ſhe doubted not to effect it. Then Madame (quoth hee) the matchleſſe beauty, and commendable qualities of your Maid *Gianetta*, to whom (as yet) I haue made no motion, to commiſſerate this my languiſhing extremity, nor acquainted any liuing creature with my loue: the concealing of theſe afflictions to my ſelfe, hath brought mee to this deſperate condition: and if ſome meane bee not wrought, according to your conſtant promiſe, for the full enioying of my longing deſires, aſſure your ſelfe (moſt Noble Mother) that the date of my life is very ſhort.

The Lady well knowing, that the time now rather required kindeſt comfort, then any ſeuere or ſharpe reprehenſion, ſmiling on him, ſaid: Alas deere ſonne, waſt thou ſicke for this? Be of good cheare, and when thy ſtrength is better reſtored, then referre the matter to me. The young Gentleman, being put in good hope by his Mothers promiſe, began (in ſhort time) to ſhew apparant ſignes of well-forwarded amendment, to the Mothers great ioy and comfort, diſpoſing her ſelfe dayly to prooue, how in honor ſhe might keepe promiſe with her ſonne.

Within a ſhort while after, calling *Gianetta* priuately to her, in gentle manner, and by the way of pleaſant diſcourſe, ſhe demanded of hir, whither ſhe was prouided of a Louer, or no. *Gianetta*, being neuer acquainted with any ſuch queſtions, a ſcarlet Dye couering all her modeſt countenance, thus replyed. Madam, I haue no neede of any Louer, and very vnſeemely were it, for ſo poore a Damoſell as I am, to haue ſo much as a thought of Louers, being baniſhed from my friends and kinsfolke, and remaining in ſeruice as I do.

If you haue none (anſwered the Ladie) wee will beſtow one on you, which ſhall content your minde, and bring you to a more pleaſing kinde of life; becauſe it is farre vnfit, that ſo faire a Maid as you are, ſhould remaine deſtitute of a Louer. Madam, ſaid *Gianetta*, conſidering with my ſelfe, that ſince you receiued me of my poore Father, you haue vſed me rather like your daughter, then a ſeruant; it becommeth mee to doe as pleaſeth you. Notwithſtanding, I truſt (in the regard of mine owne good and honour) neuer to vſe any complaint in ſuch a caſe: but if you pleaſe to beſtow a husband on me, I purpoſe to loue and honor him onely, and not any other. For, of all the inheritance left me by my progenitors, nothing remaineth to me but honourable honeſty, and that ſhall be my Legacie ſo long as I liue.

Theſe wordes, were of a quite contrary complexion, to thoſe which the Lady expected from her, and for effecting the promiſe made vnto hir

Son:

Sonne: howbeit (like a wiſe and noble Ladie) much ſhe inwardly commended the maids anſwers, and ſaid vnto her. But tell me *Gianetta*, what if my Lord the King (who is a gallant youthfull Prince, and you ſo bright a beautie as you are) ſhould take pleaſure in your loue, would ye denie him? Sodainly the Maide returned this anſwer: Madame, the King perhaps might enforce me, but with my free conſent, hee ſhall neuer haue any thing of me that is not honeſt. Nor did the Lady diſlike her Maides courage and reſolution, but breaking off all her further conference, intended ſhortly to put her proiect in proofe, ſaying to her ſon, that when he was fully recouered, he ſhould haue priuate acceſſe to *Gianetta*, whom ſhee doubted not but would be tractable enough to him; for ſhe helde it no meane blemiſh to her honour, to mooue the Maide any more in the matter, but let him compaſſe it as he could.

Farre from the yong Gentlemans humour was this anſwer of his Mother, becauſe he aimed not at any diſhonourable end: true, faith full, and honeſt lone was the ſole ſcope of his intention, foule and loathſome luſt he vtterly defied; whereupon he fell into ſickeneſſe againe, rather more violently then before. Which the Lady perceiuing, reuealed her whole intent to *Gianetta*, and finding her conſtancie beyond common compariſon, acquainted her Lord with all ſhe had done, and both conſented (though much againſt their mindes) to let him enioy her in honourable marriage: accounting it better, for preſeruation of their onely ſons life, to match him farre inferiour to his degree, then by denying his deſire, to let him pine and dye for her loue.

After great conſultation with Kindred and Friends, the match was agreed vpon, to the no little ioy of *Gianetta*, who deuoutly returned infinite thankes to heauen, for ſo mercifully reſpecting her deiected poore eſtate, after the bitter paſſage of ſo many miſeries, and neuer tearming her ſelfe any otherwiſe, but the daughter of a poore Piccard. Soone was the yong Gentleman recouered and married, no man aliue ſo well contented as he, and ſetting downe an abſolute determination, to lead a louing life with his *Gianetta*.

Let vs now conuert our lookes to Wales, to *Perotto*; being lefte there with the other Lord Marſhall, who was the Preſident of that Countrey. On hee grew in yeeres, choiſely reſpected by his Lord, becauſe hee was moſt comely of perſon, and forward to all valiant attempts: ſo that in Tourneyes, Iouſtes, and other actions of Armes, his like was not to bee found in all the Iſland, being named onely *Perotto* the valiant Piccard, & ſo was he famed farre and neere. As God had not forgotten his Siſter, ſo in mercy he became as mindefull of him; for, a contagious mortalitie hapning in the Country, the greater part of the people periſhed thereby the reſt flying thence into other partes of the Land, whereby the whole Prouince became diſpeopled and deſolate.

In the time of this plague and dreadful viſitation, the Lord Preſident, his Lady, Sonnes, Daughters, Brothers, Nephewes, and Kindred dyed, none remaining aliue, but one onely Daughter marriageable, a few of the

the houſhold ſeruants, beſide *Perotto*, whom (after the ſickeneſſe was more mildly aſſwaged) with counſell and conſent of the Countrey people, the young Lady accepted to be her husband, becauſe hee was a man ſo worthy and valiant; and of all the inheritance left by her deceaſed Father, ſhe made him Lord, and ſole commander. Within no long while after, the King of England vnderſtanding that his Preſident of *Wales* was dead, and Fame liberally relating the vertues, valour, and good parts of *Perotto* the Piccard, hee created him Preſident thereof, and to ſupply the place of his deceaſed Lord. Theſe faire fortunes, within the compaſſe of ſo ſhort a time, fell to the two innocent children of the Count *D'Angiers* after they were left by him as loſt and forlorne.

Eighteene yeeres weee now fully ouer-paſt, ſince the Count *D'Angiers* fled from *Paris*, hauing ſuffered (in miſerable ſort) many hard and lamentable aduerſities; and ſeeing himſelfe now to be growne aged, hee was deſirous to leaue Ireland, and to know (if hee might) what was become of both his Children. Heereupon, perceiuing his wonted forme to be ſo altered, that ſuch as formerly had conuerſed moſt vvith him, could now not take any knowledge of him, and feeling his body (through long labour and exerciſe endured in ſeruice) more luſtie then in his idle youthfull yeeres, eſpecially when he left the Court of France, hee purpoſed to proceede in his determination. Being verie poore and ſimple in apparrel, he departed from the Iriſh Earle his Maſter, with whom he had continued long in ſeruice, to no aduantage or aduancement, and croſſing ouer into England, trauayled to the place in Wales, where he left *Perotto*, and where he found him to be Lord Marſhall and Preſident of the country, luſty and in good health, a man of goodly feature, and moſt honorably reſpected and reuerenced of the people.

Well may you imagine, that this was no ſmall comfort to the poore aged Countes heart, yet would he not make himſelfe knowne to him, or any other about him, but referred his ioy to a further enlarging and diminiſhing, by ſight of the other limbe of his life, his deerely affected daughter *Gianetta*, denying reſt to his bodie in any place, vntil ſuch time as he came to London. Making there ſecret enquiry concerning the Ladie with whom hee had left his daughter; hee vnderſtoode, that a young Gentlewoman, named *Gianetta*, was married to that Ladies onely Son, which made a ſecond addition of ioy to his ſoule, accounting all his paſſed aduerſities of no valew, both his children being liuing, and in ſo high honour.

Hauing found her dwelling, and (like a kinde Father) being earneſtly deſirous to ſee her; he dayly reſorted nere to the houſe, where Sir *Roger Mandeuile* (for ſo was *Gianettaes* husband named) chauncing to ſee him, being moued to compaſſion, becauſe he was both poore and aged: commaunded one of his men, to take him into the houſe, and to giue him ſome foode for Gods ſake, which (accordingly) the ſeruant performed. *Gianetta* had diuers children by her husband, the eldeſt being but eight yeeres of age, yet all of them ſo faire and comely as could be. As the

olde

old Count ſate eating his meate in the Hall, the children came all about him, embracing, hugging, and making much of him, euen as if Nature had truly inſtructed them, that this was their aged (though poor) Grandfather, and hee as louingly receiuing theſe kinde relations from them, wiſely and ſilently kept all to himſelfe, with ſighes, teares, and ioyes intermixed together. Inſomuch that the children would not part from him though their Tutor and Maſter called them often, which being tolde to their Mother, ſhee came foorth of the neere adioyning Parlour, and threatned to beate them, if they would not doe what their Maiſter commanded them.

Then the Children began to cry, ſaying; that they would tarrie ſtil by the good olde man, becauſe he loued them better then their Maſter did; whereat both the Lady and the Count began to ſmile. The Count, like a poore Begger, and not as Father to ſo great a Lady, aroſe, and did her humble reuerence, becauſe ſhe was now a Noble Woman, conceyuing wonderfull ioy in his ſoule, to ſee her ſo faire and goodly a creature: yet could ſhe take no knowledge of him, Age, want, and miſery had ſo mightily altered him; his head all white, his beard without any comly forme, his Garments ſo poore, and his face ſo wrinkled, leane and meager, that he ſeemed rather ſome Carter, then a Count. And *Gianetta* perceiuing that when her Children were fetcht away, they returned againe to the olde man, and would not leaue him, ſhe deſired their Maiſter to let them alone.

While thus the Children continued making much of the good olde man, Lord *Andrew Mandeuile*, Father to Sir *Roger*, came into the Hall, as being ſo willed to doe by the Childrens Schoolemaſter. He being a haſtie-minded man, and one that euer deſpiſed *Gianetta* before, but much more ſince her marriage to his ſonne, angerly ſaid; Let them alone with a miſcheefe, and ſo befall them, their beſt company ought to bee with beggers, for ſo they are bred and borne by the Mothers ſide: and therefore it is no meruaile, if like will to like, a beggers brats to keepe company with beggers. The Count hearing theſe contemptible wordes, was not a little greeued thereat; and although his courage was greater then his poore condition would permit him to expreſſe; yet, clouding all iniuries with noble patience, hanging downe his head, and ſhedding many a ſalt teare, endured this reproach, as hee had done many, both before and after.

But honourable Sir *Roger*, perceiuing what delight his Children tooke in the poore mans company; albeit he was offended at his Fathers harſh words, by holding his wife in ſuch baſe reſpect: yet fauoured the poore Count ſo much the more, and ſeeing him weepe, did greatly compaſſionate his caſe, ſaying to the poore man, that if he would accept of his ſeruice, he willingly would entertaine him. Whereto the Count replyed, that very gladly he would embrace his kinde offer: but he was capeable of no other ſeruice, ſaue onely to be an horſe-keeper, wherein he had imployed the moſt part of his time. Heereupon, more for pleaſure and

pittie,

pitty then any neceſſity of his ſeruice, he was appointed to the keeping of an Horſe, which was onely for his Daughters ſaddle, and daily after he had done his diligence about the Horſe, he did nothing elſe but play with the children. While Fortune pleaſed thus to dally with the poore Count *D'Angiers*, and his children, it came to paſſe, that the King of *France* (after diuers leagues of truces paſſed betweene him and the *Germaines*) died, and next after him, his Son the Dolphin was crowned King, and it was his wife that wrongfully cauſed the Counts baniſhment. After expiration of the laſt league with the *Germains*, the warres began to grow much more fierce and ſharpe, and the King of *England*, (vpon requeſt made to him by his new brother of *France*) ſent him very honourable ſupplies of his people, vnder the conduct of *Perotto*, his lately elected Preſident of *Wales*, and Sir *Roger Mandeuile*, Son to his other Lord high Marſhall; with whom alſo the poore Count went, and continued a long while in the Campe as a common Souldier, where yet like a valiant Gentleman (as indeed he was no leſſe) both in aduice and actions; he accompliſhed many more notable matters, then was expected to come from him.

It ſo fell out, that in the continuance of this warre, the Queene of *France* fell into a grieuous ſickneſſe, and perceiuing her ſelfe to be at the point of death, ſhee became very penitently ſorrowfull for all her ſinnes, earneſtly deſiring that ſhee might be confeſſed by the Archbiſhop of *Roane*, who was reputed to be an holy and vertuous man. In the repetition of her other offences; ſhe reuealed what great wrong ſhe had done to the Count *D'Angiers*, reſting not ſo ſatisfied, with diſcloſing the whole matter to him alone; but alſo confeſſed the ſame before many other worthy perſons, and of great honour, entreating them to worke ſo with the King, that (if the Count were yet liuing, or any of his Children) they might be reſtored to their former honour againe.

It was not long after, but the Queene left this life, and was moſt royally enterred, when her confeſſion being diſcloſed to the King, after much ſorrow for ſo iniuriouſly wronging a man of ſo great valour and honour: Proclamation was made throughout the Campe, and in many other parts of *France* beſide, that whoſoeuer could produce the Count *D'Angiers*, or any of his Children, ſhould richly be rewarded for each one of them; in regard he was innocent of the foule imputation, by the Queenes owne confeſſion, and for his wrongfull exile ſo long, he ſhould be exalted to his former honour with farre greater fauours, which the King franckely would beſtow vpon him. When the Count (who walked vp and downe in the habite of a common ſeruitor) heard this Proclamation, forth-with hee went to his Maſter Sir *Roger Mandeuile*, requeſting his ſpeedy repaire to Lord *Perotto*, that being both aſſembled together, he would acquaint them with a ſerious matter, concerning the late Proclamation publiſhed by the King. Being by themſelues alone in the Tent, the Count ſpake in this manner to *Perotto*. Sir, S. *Roger Mandeuile* here, your equall competitor in this military ſeruice, is the husband to your naturall ſiſter, hauing as yet neuer receiued any dowry with her, but her inherent vnblemiſhable vertue & honor. Now becauſe ſhe may not ſtil remain deſtitute of a competent

Dowry: I desire that Sir *Roger*, and none other, may enioy the royall reward promised by the King. You Lord *Perotto*, whose true name is *Lewes*, manifest your selfe to be nobly borne, and Sonne to the wrongfull banished Count *D'Angiers*: auouch moreouer, that *Violenta*, shadowed vnder the borrowed name of *Gianetta*, is your owne Sister; and deliuer me vp as your Father, the long exiled Count *D'Angiers*. *Perotto* hearing this, beheld him more aduisedly, and began to know him: then, the teares flowing abundantly from his eyes, he fell at his feete, and often embracing him, saide: My deere and noble Father! a thousand times more deerely welcome to your Sonne *Lewes*.

Sir *Roger Manàeuile*, hearing first what the Count had saide, and seeing what *Perotto* afterward performed; became surprized with such extraordinary ioy and admiration, that he knew not how to carry himselfe in this case. Neuertheless, giuing credite to his words, and being somewhat ashamed, that he had not vsed the Count in more respectiue manner, and remembring beside, the vnkinde language of his furious Father to him: he kneeled downe, humbly crauing pardon, both for his Fathers rudenes and his owne, which was courteously granted by the Count, embracing him louingly in his armes.

When they had a while discourst their seuerall fortunes, sometime in teares, and then againe in ioy; *Perotto* and Sir *Roger*, would haue the Count to be garmented in better manner, but in no wise he would suffer it; for it was his onely desire, that Sir *Roger* should bee assured of the promised reward, by presenting him in the Kings presence, and in the homely habit which he did weare, to touch him with the more sensible shame, for his rash beleefe, and iniurious proceeding. Then Sir *Roger Mandeuile*, guiding the Count by the hand, and *Perotto* following after, came before the King, offering to present the Count and his children, if the reward promised in the Proclamation might be performed. The King immediately commanded, that a reward of inestimable valew should be produced; desiring Sir *Roger* vpon the sight thereof, to make good his offer, for forthwith presenting the Count and his children. Which hee made no longer delay of, but turning himselfe about, deliuered the aged Count, by the title of his seruant, and presenting *Perotto* next, saide. Sir, heere I deliuer you the Father and his Son, his Daughter who is my wife, cannot so conueniently be here now, but shortly, by the permission of heauen, your Maiesty shall haue a sight of her.

When the King heard this, stedfastly he looked on the Count; and, notwithstanding his wonderfull alteration, both from his wonted feature and forme: yet, after he had very seriously viewed him, he knew him perfectly; and the teares trickling downe his cheekes, partly with remorsefull shame, and ioy also for his so happy recouery, he tooke vp the Count from kneeling, kissing, and embracing him very kindely, welcomming *Perotto* in the selfe same manner. Immediately also he gaue commaund, that the Count should be restored to his honors, apparell, seruants, horses, and furniture, answerable to his high estate and calling, which was as

spee-

ſpeedily performed. Moreouer, the King greatly honoured Sir *Roger Mandeuile*, deſiring to be made acquainted with all their paſſed fortunes.

When Sir *Roger* had receiued the royall reward, for thus ſurrending the Count and his Sonne, the Count calling him to him, ſaide. Take that Princely remuneration of my ſoueraigne Lord and King, and commending me to your vnkinde Father, tell him that your Children are no beggars brats, neither baſely borne by their Mothers ſide. Sir *Roger* returning home with his bountfull reward, ſoone after brought his Wife and Mother to *Paris*, and ſo did *Perotto* his Wife, where in great ioy and triumph, they continued a long while with the noble Count; who had all his goods and honours reſtored to him, in farre greater meaſure then euer they were before: his Sonnes in Law returning home with their Wiues into *England*, left the Count with the King at *Paris*, where he ſpent the reſt of his dayes in great honour and felicity.

Bernardo, *a Merchant of* Geneway, *being deceiued by another Merchant, named* Ambroginolo, *loſt a great part of his goods. And commanding his innocent Wife to be murthered, ſhe eſcaped, and (in the habite of a man) became ſeruant to the Soldane. The deceiuer being found at laſt, ſhee compaſſed ſuch meanes, that her Husband* Bernardo *came into* Alexandria, *and there, after due punniſhment inflicted on the falſe deceiuer, ſhe reſumed the garments againe of a woman, and returned home with her Husband to Geneway.*

The ninth Nouell.

Wherein is declared, that by ouer-liberall commending the chaſtity of Women, it falleth out (oftentimes) to be very dangerous, eſpecially by the meanes of treacherers who yet (in the ende) are iuſtly punniſhed for their treachery.

MAdam *Eliza* hauing ended her compaſſionate diſcourſe, which indeede had moued all the reſt to ſighing; the Queene, who was faire, comely of ſtature, and carrying a very maieſticall countenance, ſmiling more familiarly then the other, ſpake to them thus. It is very neceſſary, that the promiſe made to *Dioneus*, ſhould carefully be kept, and becauſe now there remaineth none, to report any more Nouels, but onely he and my ſelfe: I muſt firſt deliuer mine, and he (who takes it for an honour) to be the laſt in relating his owne, laſt let him be for his owne deliuerance. Then pauſing a little while, thus ſhe began againe. Many times among vulgar people, it hath paſſed as a common Prouerbe: That the deceiuer is often trampled on, by ſuch as he hath deceiued. And this cannot ſhew it ſelfe (by any reaſon) to be true, except ſuch accidents as awaite on treachery, doe really make a iuſt diſcouery thereof. And therefore according to the courſe of this day obſerued, I am the woman that muſt make good what I haue ſaide for the approbation of that Prouerbe: no way (I hope) diſtaſtfull to you in the hearing, but aduantageable to preſerue you from any ſuch beguiling.

There was a faire and goodly Inne in *Paris*, much frequented by many



great *Italian* Merchants, according to ſuch variety of occaſions and buſineſſe, as vrged their often reſorting thither. One night among many other, hauing had a merry Supper together, they began to diſcourſe on diuers matters, and falling from one relation to another; they communed in very friendly manner, concerning their wiues, lefte at home in their houſes. Quoth the firſt, I cannot well imagine what my wife is now doing, but I am able to ſay for my ſelfe, that if a pretty female ſhould fall into my company: I could eaſily forget my loue to my wife, and make vſe of ſuch an aduantage offered.

A ſecond replyed; And truſt me, I ſhould do no leſſe, becauſe I am perſwaded, that if my wife be willing to wander, the law is in her owne hand, and I am farre enough from home: dumbe walles blab no tales, and offences vnknowne are ſildome or neuer called in queſtion. A third man vnapt in cenſure, with his former fellowes of the Iury; and it plainely appeared, that all the reſt were of the ſame opinion, condemning their wiues ouer-raſhly, and alledging, that when husbands ſtrayed ſo far from home, their wiues had wit enough to make vſe of their time.

Onely one man among them all, named *Bernardo Lomellino*, and dwelling in *Geneway*, maintained the contrary; boldly auouching, that by the eſpeciall fauour of Fortune, he had a wife ſo perfectly compleate in all graces and vertues, as any Lady in the world poſſibly could be, and that *Italy* ſcarſely contained her equall. But, ſhe was goodly of perſon, and yet very young, quicke, quaint, milde, and courteous, and not any thing appertaining to the office of a wife, either for domeſticke affayres, or any other imployment whatſouer, but in woman-hoode ſhee went beyond all other. No Lord, Knight, Eſquire, or Gentleman, could bee better

ſerued

ſerued at his Table, then himſelfe dayly was, with more wiſedome, modeſty and diſcretion. After all this, hee praiſed her for riding, hawking, hunting, fiſhing, fowling, reading, writing, enditing, and moſt abſolute keeping his Bookes of accounts, that neither himſelfe, or any other Merchant could therein excell her. After infinite other commendations, he came to the former point of their argument, concerning the eaſie falling of women into wantonneſſe, maintaining (with a ſolemne oath) that no woman poſſibly could be more chaſte and honeſt then ſhe: in which reſpect, he was verily perſwaded, that if he ſtayed from her ten years ſpace yea (all his life time) out of his houſe; yet neuer would ſhee falſifie her faith to him, or be lewdly allured by any other man.

Amongſt theſe Merchants thus communing together, there vvas a young proper man, named *Ambroginolo* of *Placentia*, who began to laugh at the laſt prayſes which *Bernardo* had vſed of his Wife, and ſeeming to make a mockerie thereof, demaunded, if the Emperour had giuen him this priuiledge, aboue all other married men? *Bernardo* being ſomewhat offended, anſwered: No Emperour hath done it, but the eſpeciall bleſſing of heauen, exceeding all the Emperours on the earth in grace, and thereby haue receiued this fauour; whereto *Ambroginolo* preſently thus replyed. *Bernardo*, without all queſtion to the contrary, I beleeue that what thou haſt ſaid, is true; but (for ought I can perceiue) thou haſt ſlender iudgement in the Nature of things: becauſe, if thou diddſt obſerue them well, thou couldſt not be of ſo groſſe vnderſtanding. For, by comprehending matters in their true kinde and nature, thou wouldſt ſpeake of them more correctly then thou doeſt. And to the end, thou mayeſt not imagine, that we who haue ſpoken of our Wiues, doe thinke any otherwiſe of them, then as well and honeſtly as thou canſt of thine, nor that any thing elſe did vrge theſe ſpeeches of them, or falling into this kinde of diſcourſe, but onely by a naturall inſtinct and admonition, I wil proceede familiarly, a little further with thee, vppon the matter alreadie propounded.

I haue euermore vnderſtoode, that man was the moſt noble creature, formed by God to liue in this World, and woman in the next degree to him: but man, as generally is beleeued, and as is diſcerned by apparant effects, is the moſt perfect of both. Hauing then the moſt perfection in him, without all doubt, he muſt be ſo much the more firme and conſtant. So in like manner, it hath beene, and is vniuerſally graunted, that Women is more various and mutable, and the reaſon thereof may be approued by many naturall circumſtances, which were needleſſe now to make any mention of. If a man then be poſſeſſed of the greater ſtability, and yet cannot containe himſelfe from condiſcending, I ſay not to one that entreates him, but to deſire any other that may pleaſe him; and beſide, to couet the enioying of his owne pleaſing contentment (a thing not chancing to him once in a moneth, but infinite times in a dayes ſpace.) What can you then conceiue of a fraile Woman, ſubiect (by nature) to entreaties, flatteries, giftes, perſwaſions, and a thouſand other inticing

meanes, which a man (that is affected to her) can vſe? Doeſt thou thinke then that ſhe hath any power to containe? Aſſuredly, though thou ſhouldeſt reſt ſo reſolued, yet cannot I be of the ſame opinion. For I am ſure thou beleeueſt, and muſt needes confeſſe it, that thy wife is a Woman, made of fleſh and blood, as other women are: if it be ſo, ſhe cannot bee without the ſame deſires, and the weakneſſe or ſtrength as other women haue, to reſiſt naturall appetites as her owne are. In regard whereof, it is meerely impoſſible (although ſhe be moſt honeſt) but ſhe muſt needs doe that which other Women doe: for there is nothing elſe poſſible, either to be denied or affirmed to the contrary, as thou moſt vnaduiſedly haſt done.

Bernardo anſwered in this manner. I am a Merchant, and no Philoſopher, and like a Merchant I meane to anſwer thee. I am not to learne, that theſe accidents by thee related, may happen to fooles, who are voide of vnderſtanding or ſhame: but ſuch as are wiſe, and endued with vertue, haue alwayes ſuch a precious eſteeme of their honour, that they wil containe thoſe principles of conſtancie, which men are meerely careleſſe of, and I iuſtifie my wife to be one of them. Beleeue me *Bernardo*, replyed *Ambriginolo*, if ſo often as thy wiues minde is addicted to wanton folly, a badge of ſcorne ſhould ariſe on thy forehead, to render teſtimony of hir female frailty, I beleeue the number of them would be more, then willingly you would wiſh them to be. And among all married men in euery degree, the notes are ſo ſecret of their wiues imperfections, that the ſharpeſt ſight is not able to diſcerne them: and the wiſer ſort of men are willing not to know them; becauſe ſhame and loſſe of honour is neuer impoſed, but in caſes euident and apparant.

Perſwade thy ſelfe then *Bernardo*, that what women may accompliſh in ſecret, they will rarely faile to doe: or if they abſtaine, it is through feare and folly. Wherefore, hold it for a certaine rule, that that woman is onely chaſte, that neuer was ſolicited perſonally, or if ſhe endured any ſuch ſuite, either ſhee anſwered yea, or no. And albeit I know this to be true, by many infallible and naturall reaſons, yet could I not ſpeak ſo exactly as I doe, if I had not tried experimentally, the humours and affections of diuers Women. Yea, and let me tell thee more *Bernardo*, were I in priuate company with thy wife, howſoeuer thou preſumeſt to thinke her to be, I ſhould account it a matter of no impoſſibility, to finde in her the ſelfe-ſame frailty.

Bernardoes blood now began to boyle, and patience being a little put downe by choller, thus he replyed. A combat of words requires ouerlong continuance; for I maintaine the matter which thou denieſt, and all this ſorts to nothing in the end. But ſeeing thou preſumeſt, that all women are ſo apt and tractable, and thy ſelfe ſo confident of thine owne power: I willingly yeeld (for the better aſſurance of my wifes conſtant loyalty) to haue my head ſmitten off, if thou canſt winne her to any ſuch diſhoneſt act, by any meanes whatſoeuer thou canſt vſe vnto her; which if thou canſt not doe, thou ſhalt onely looſe a thouſand duckets of Gold.

Now

Now began *Ambroginolo* to be heated with theſe words, anſwering thus. *Bernardo*, if I had won the wager, I know not what I ſhould doe with thy head; but if thou be willing to ſtand vpon the proofe, pawne downe fiue thouſand Duckets of gold, (a matter of much leſſe value then thy head) againſt a thouſand Duckets of mine, granting me a lawfull limited time, which I require to be no more then the ſpace of three moneths, after the day of my departing hence. I will ſtand bound to goe for *Geneway*, and there winne ſuch kinde conſent of thy Wife, as ſhall be to mine owne conſent. In witneſſe whereof, I will bring backe with me ſuch priuate and eſpeciall tokens, as thou thy ſelfe ſhalt confeſſe that I haue not failed. Prouided, that thou doe firſt promiſe vpon thy faith, to abſent thy ſelfe thence during my limitted time, and be no hinderance to me by thy Letters, concerning the attempt by me vndertaken.

Bernardo ſaide, be it a bargaine, I am the man that will make good my fiue thouſand Duckets; and albeit the other Merchants then preſent, earneſtly laboured to breake the wager, knowing great harme muſt needs enſue thereon: yet both the parties were ſo hot and fiery, as all the other men ſpake to no effect, but writings was made, ſealed, and deliuered vnder either of their hands, *Bernardo* remaining at *Paris*, and *Ambroginolo* departing for *Geneway*. There he remained ſome few dayes, to learne the ſtreetes name where *Bernardo* dwelt, as alſo the conditions and qualities of his Wife, which ſcarcely pleaſed him when he heard them; becauſe they were farre beyond her Husbands relation, and ſhee reputed to be the onely wonder of women; whereby he plainely perceiued, that he had vndertaken a very idle enterpriſe, yet would he not giue it ouer ſo, but proceeded therein a little further.

He wrought ſuch meanes, that he came acquainted with a poore woman, who often frequented *Bernardoes* houſe, and was greatly in fauour with his wife; vpon whoſe pouerty he ſo preuailed, by earneſt perſwaſions, but much more by large gifts of money, that he won her to further him in this manner following. A faire and artificiall Cheſt he cauſed to be purpoſely made, wherein himſelfe might be aptly contained, and ſo conueyed into the Houſe of *Bernardoes* Wife, vnder colour of a formall excuſe; that the poore woman ſhould be abſent from the City two or three dayes, and ſhee muſt keepe it ſafe till ſhe returne. The Gentlewoman ſuſpecting no guile, but that the Cheſt was the receptacle of all the womans wealth; would truſt it in no other roome, then her owne Bedchamber, which was the place where *Ambroginolo* moſt deſired to bee.

Being thus conueyed into the Chamber, the night going on apace, and the Gentlewoman faſt aſleepe in her bed, a lighted Taper ſtood burning on the Table by her, as in her Husbands abſence ſhee euer vſed to haue: *Ambroginolo* ſoftly opened the Cheſt, according as cunningly hee had contriued it, and ſtepping forth in his ſockes made of cloath, obſerued the ſcituation of the Chamber, the paintings, pictures, and beautifull hangings, with all things elſe that were remarkable, which perfectly he commit-

committed to his memory. Going neere to the bed, he ſaw her lie there ſweetly ſleeping, and her young Daughter in like manner by her, ſhe ſeeming then as compleate and pleaſing a creature, as when ſhee was attired in her beſt brauery. No eſpeciall note or marke could hee deſcrie, whereof he might make credible report, but onely a ſmall wart vpon her left pappe, with ſome few haires growing thereon, appearing to be as yellow as gold.

Sufficient had he ſeene, and durſt preſume no further; but taking one of her Rings, which lay vpon the Table, a purſe of hers, hanging by on the wall, a light wearing Robe of ſilke, and her girdle, all which he put into the Cheſt; and being in himſelfe, cloſed it faſt as it was before, ſo continuing there in the Chamber two ſeuerall nights, the Gentlewoman neither miſtruſting or miſſing any thing. The third day being come, the poore woman, according as formerly was concluded, came to haue home her Cheſt againe, and brought it ſafely into her owne houſe; where *Ambroginolo* comming forth of it, ſatisfied the poore woman to her owne liking, returning (with all the forenamed things) ſo faſt as conueniently he could to *Paris*.

Being arriued there long before his limmitted time, he called the Merchants together, who were preſent at the paſſed words and wager; auouching before *Bernardo*, that he had won his fiue thouſand Duckets, and performed the taske he vndertooke. To make good his proteſtation, firſt he deſcribed the forme of the Chamber, the curious pictures hanging about it, in what manner the bed ſtood, and euery circumſtance elſe beſide. Next he ſhewed the ſeuerall things, which he brought away thence with him, affirming that he had receiued them of her ſelfe. *Bernardo* confeſſed, that his deſcription of the Chamber was true, and acknowledged moreouer, that theſe other things did belong to his Wife: But (quoth he) this may be gotten, by corrupting ſome ſeruant of mine, both for intelligence of the Chamber, as alſo of the Ring, Purſe, and what elſe is beſide; all which ſuffice not to win the wager, without ſome other more apparant and pregnant token. In troth, anſwered *Ambroginolo*, me thinkes theſe ſhould ſerue for ſufficient proofes; but ſeeing thou art ſo deſirous to know more: I plainely tell thee, that faire *Geneura* thy Wife, hath a ſmall round wart vpon her left pappe, and ſome few little golden haires growing thereon.

When *Bernardo* heard theſe words, they were as ſo many ſtabs to his heart, yea, beyond all compaſſe of patient ſufferance, and by the changing of his colour, it was noted manifeſtly, (being vnable to vtter one word) that *Ambroginolo* had ſpoken nothing but the truth. Within a while after, he ſaide; Gentlemen, that which *Ambroginolo* hath ſaide, is very true, wherefore let him come when he will, and he ſhall be paide; which accordingly he performed on the very next day, euen to the vtmoſt penny, departing then from *Paris* towards *Geneway*, with a moſt malitious intention to his Wife: Being come neere to the City, he would not enter it, but rode to a Country houſe of his, ſtanding about tenne miles diſtant thence,

thence. Being there arriued, he called a ſeruant, in whom hee repoſed eſpeciall truſt, ſending him to *Geneway* with two Horſes, writing to his Wife, that he was returned, and ſhee ſhould come thither to ſee him. But ſecretly he charged his ſeruant, that ſo ſoone as he had brought her to a conuenient place, he ſhould there kill her, without any pitty or compaſſion, and then returne to him againe.

When the ſeruant was come to *Geneway*, and had deliuered his Letter and meſſage, *Geneura* gaue him moſt ioyfull welcome, and on the morrow morning mounting on Horſe-backe with the ſeruant, rode merrily towards the Country houſe; diuers things ſhee diſcourſed on by the way, till they deſcended into a deepe ſolitary valey, very thickly beſet with high and huge ſpreading Trees, which the ſeruant ſuppoſed to be a meete place, for the execution of his Maſters command. Suddenly drawing forth his Sword, and holding *Geneura* faſt by the arme, he ſaide; Miſtreſſe, quickly commend your ſoule to God, for you muſt die, before you paſſe any further. *Geneura* ſeeing the naked Sword, and hearing the words ſo peremptorily deliuered, fearefully anſwered; Alas deare friend, mercy for Gods ſake; and before thou kill me, tell me wherein I haue offended thee, and why thou muſt kill me? Alas good Miſtreſſe replied the ſeruant, you haue not any way offended me, but in what occaſion you haue diſpleaſed your Husband, it is vtterly vnknowne to me: for he hath ſtrictly commanded me, without reſpect of pitty or compaſſion, to kill you by the way as I bring you, and if I doe it not, he hath ſworne to hang me by the necke. You know good Miſtreſſe, how much I ſtand obliged to him, and how impoſſible it is for me, to contradict any thing that he commandeth. God is my witneſſe, that I am truly compaſſionate of you, and yet (by no meanes) may I let you liue.

Cenеura kneeling before him weeping, wringing her hands, thus replyed. Wilt thou turne Monſter, and be a murtherer of her that neuer wronged thee, to pleaſe another man, and on a bare command? God, who truly knoweth all things, is my faithfull witneſſe, that I neuer committed any offence, whereby to deſerue the diſlike of my Husband, much leſſe ſo harſh a recompence as this is. But flying from mine owne iuſtification, and appealing to thy manly mercy, thou mayeſt (wert thou but ſo well pleaſed) in a moment ſatisfie both thy Maſter and me, in ſuch manner as I will make plaine and apparant to thee. Take thou my garments, ſpare me onely thy doublet, and ſuch a Bonnet as is fitting for a man, ſo returne with my habite to thy Maſter, aſſuring him, that the deede is done. And here I ſweare to thee, by that life which I enioy but by thy mercy, I will ſo ſtrangely diſguiſe my ſelfe, and wander ſo far off from theſe Countries, as neither he or thou, nor any perſon belonging to theſe parts, ſhall euer heare any tydings of me.

The ſeruant, who had no great good will to kill her, very eaſily grew pittifull, tooke off her vpper garments, and gaue her a poore ragged doublet, a ſillie Chapperone, and ſuch ſmall ſtore of money as he had, deſiring her to forſake that Country, and ſo left her to walke on foote out

of

of the valley. When he came to his Maiſter, and had deliuered him her garments, he aſſured him, that he had not onely accompliſhed his commaund, but alſo was moſt ſecure from any diſcouery: becauſe he had no ſooner done the deede, but foure or fiue very rauenous Woolues, came preſently running to the dead bodie, and gaue it buriall in their bellyes. *Bernardo* ſoone after returning to *Geneway*, was much blamed for ſuch vnkinde cruelty to his wife; but his conſtant auouching of her treaſon to him (according then to the Countries cuſtome) did cleare him from all purſuite of Law.

Poore *Geneura* was left thus alone and diſconſolate, and night ſtealing faſt vpon her, ſhee went to a ſilly village neere adioyning, where (by the meanes of a good olde woman) ſhe got ſuch prouiſion as the place afforded, making the doublet fit to her body, and conuerting her petticoate to a paire of breeches, according to the Mariners faſhion: then cutting her haire, and quaintly diſguiſed like vnto a Saylor, ſhe went to the Sea coaſt. By good fortune, ſhe met there with a Gentleman of *Cathalogna*, whoſe name was Signior *Enchararcho*, who came on land from his Ship, which lay hulling there about *Albagia*, to refreſh himſelfe at a pleaſant Spring. *Enchararcho* taking her to be a man, as ſhee appeared no otherwiſe by her habite; vpon ſome conference paſſing betweene them, ſhee was entertayned into his ſeruice, and being brought aboord the Ship, ſhe went vnder the name of *Sicurano da Finale*. There ſhee had better apparrell beſtowne on her by the Gentleman, and her ſeruice proued ſo pleaſing and acceptable to him, that hee liked her care and diligence beyond all compariſon.

It came to paſſe within a ſhort while after, that this Gentleman of *Cathalogna* ſayled (with ſome charge of his) into *Alexandria*, carrying thither certaine Faulcons, which he preſented to the Soldan, who oftentimes welcommed this Gentleman to his table, where he obſerued the behauiour of *Sicurano*, attending on his Maiſters Trencher, and therewith was ſo highly pleaſed; that hee requeſted to haue him from the Gentleman, who (for his more aduancement) willingly parted with his ſo lately entertained ſeruant. *Sicurano* was ſo ready and diſcreet in his daily ſeruices, that he grew in as great grace with the Soldan, as before hee had done with *Enchararcho*.

At a certaine ſeaſon in the yeare, as cuſtomary order (there obſerued) had formerly beene, in the City of *Acres* which was vnder the Soldanes ſubiection, there yeerely met a great aſſembly of Merchants, as Chriſtians, Moores, Iewes, Sarazens, and many other Nations beſides, as at a common Mart or Fayre. And to the end, that the Merchants (for the better ſale of their goods) might be there in the ſafer aſſurance, the Soldane vſed to ſend thither ſome of his ordinarie Officers, and a ſtrong guard of Souldiers beſide, to defend them from all iniuries and moleſtation, becauſe he reaped thereby no meane benefit. And who ſhould be now ſent about this buſineſſe, but his new elected fauourite *Sicurano*, becauſe ſhe was skilfull and perfect in the Languages.

Sicurano being come to *Acres*, as Lord and Captaine of the Guard for the Merchants, and for the safety of their Merchandizes, she discharged her office most commendably, walking with her traine thorough euery part of the Fayre, where she obserued a worthy company of Merchants, *Sicilians*, *Pisans*, *Genewayes*, *Venetians*, and other *Italians*, whom the more willingly she noted, in remembrance of her natiue Country. At one especiall time among other, chancing into a Shop or Booth belonging to the Venetians, she espied (hanging vp with other costly wares) a Purse and a Girdle, which sodainly she remembred to be sometime her owne; whereat she was not a little abashed in her minde. But without making any such outward shew, courteously she requested to know whose they were, and whether they should be sold, or no.

Ambroginolo of *Placentia*, was likewise come thither, and great store of Merchandizes hee had brought with him, in a Carracke appertaining to the Venetians, and hee hearing the Captaine of the Guard demaund whose they were, stepped foorth before him, and smiling, answered: That they were his, but not to be solde; yet if hee liked them, gladly he would bestow them on him. *Sicurano* seeing him smile, suspected least himselfe had (by some vnfitting behauiour) beene the occasion thereof: and therefore, with a more setled countenance, hee said: Perhaps thou smilest, because I that am a man, professing Armes, should question after such womanish toyes. *Ambriginolo* replyed, My Lord, pardon mee, I smile not at you, or at your demaund, but at the manner how I came by these things.

Sicurano, vpon this answere, was ten times more desirous then before, and saide: if Fortune fauoured thee in friendly maner, by the obtaining of these things: if it may be spoken, tell mee how thou hadst them. My Lord (answered *Ambroginolo*) these things (with many more besides) were giuen me by a Gentlewoman of *Geneway*, named Madam *Genecura*, the wife to one *Bernardo Lomellino*, in recompence of one nights lodging with her, and she desired me to keepe them for her sake. Now, the maine reason of my smiling, was the remembrance of her husbands folly, in waging fiue thousand Duckets of Gold, against one thousand of mine, thar I should not obtaine my will of his Wife; which I did, and thereby won the wager. But hee, who better deserued to bee punished for his folly, then shee, who was but sicke of all womens disease; returning from *Paris* to *Geneway*, caused her to be slaine, as afterward it was reported by himselfe.

When *Sicurano* heard this horrible lye, immediately shee conceiued, that this was the occasion of her husbands hatred to her, and all the hard haps which she had since suffered: whereupon, shee reputed it for more then a mortall sinne, if such a villaine should passe without due punishment. *Sicurano* seemed to like well this report, and grew into such familiarity with *Ambroginolo*, that (by her perswasions) when the Fayre was ended, she tooke him higher with her into *Alexandria*, and all his Wares along with him, furnishing him with a fit and conuenient shop, where he made

made great benefite of his Merchandizes, truſting all his monies in the Captaines cuſtody, becauſe it was the ſafeſt courſe for him, and ſo hee continued there with no meane contentment.

Much did ſhee pitty her Husbands perplexity, deuiſing by what good and warrantable meanes ſhe might make knowne her innocency to him; wherein her place and authority did greatly ſted her, and ſhe wrought with diuers gallant Merchants of *Geneway* that then remained in *Alexandria*, & by vertue of the Soldans friendly letters beſide, to bring him thither vpon an eſpeciall occaſion. Come he did, albeit in poore and meane order, which ſoone was better altered by her appointment, and he verie honourably (though in priuate) entertained by diuers of her woorthie friends, till time did fauour what ſhe further intended.

In the expectation of *Bernardoes* arriuall, ſhee had ſo preuayled with *Ambroginolo*, that the ſame tale which he formerly told to her, he deliuered againe in preſence of the Soldan, who ſeemed to be wel pleaſed with it. But after ſhee had once ſeene her Husband, ſhee thought vpon her more ſerious buſineſſe; prouiding her ſelfe of an apt opportunity, when ſhee entreated ſuch fauour of the Soldan, that both the men might bee brought before him; where if *Ambroginolo* would not confeſſe (without conſtraint) that which he had made his vaunt of concerning *Bernardoes* wife, he might be compelled thereto perforce.

Sicuranoes word was a Law with the Soldane, ſo that *Ambroginolo* and *Bernardo* being brought face to face, the Soldane with a ſterne and angry countenance, in the preſence of a moſt Princely Aſſembly, commanded *Ambroginolo* to declare the truth, vpon perill of his life, by what meanes he won the Wager of the fiue thouſand Golden Duckets he receiued of *Bernardo*. *Ambroginolo* ſeeing *Sicurano* there preſent, vpon whoſe fauour he wholly relyed, yet perceiuing her lookes likewiſe to be as dreadful as the Soldans, and hearing her threaten him with moſt greeuous torments except he reuealed the truth indeed; you may eaſily gueſſe in what condition he ſtood at that inſtant.

Frownes and fury he beheld on either ſide, and *Bernardo* ſtanding before him, with a world of famous witneſſes, to heare his lye confounded by his owne confeſſion, and his tongue to denie what it had before ſo conſtantly auouched. Yet dreaming on no other pain or penalty, but reſtoring backe the fiue thouſand Duckets of gold, and the other things by him purloyned, truly he reuealed the whole forme of his falſhood. Then *Sicurano* according as the Soldane had formerly commanded him, turning to *Bernardo*, ſaide. And thou, vpon the ſuggeſtion of this foule lye, what didſt thou to thy Wife? Being (quoth *Bernardo*) ouercome with rage, for the loſſe of my money, and the diſhonor I ſuppoſed to receiue by my Wife; I cauſed a ſeruant of mine to kill her, and as hee credibly auouched, her body was deuoured by rauenous Wolues in a moment after.

Theſe things being thus ſpoken and heard, in the preſence of the Soldan, and no reaſon (as yet) made knowne, why the caſe was ſo ſeriouſly vrged,

vrged, and to what end it would ſucceede: *Sicurano* ſpake in this manner to the Soldane. My gracious Lord, you may plainly perceiue, in what degree that poore Gentlewoman might make her vaunt, beeing ſo well prouided, both of a louing friend, and a husband. Such was the friends loue, that in an inſtant, and by a wicked lye, hee robbed her both of her renowne and honour, and bereft her alſo of her husband. And her huſband, rather crediting anothers falſhoode, then the inuincible trueth, whereof he had faithfull knowledge, by long and very honorable experience; cauſed her to be ſlaine, and made foode for deuouring Wolues. Beſide all this, ſuch was the good will and affection borne to that Woman both by friend and husband, that the longeſt continuer of them in her company, makes them alike in knowledge of her. But becauſe your great wiſedom knoweth perfectly what each of them haue worthily deſerued: if you pleaſe (in your euer-knowne gracious benignity) to permit the puniſhment of the deceiuer, and pardon the partie ſo deceyued; I will procure ſuch meanes, that ſhe ſhall appeare here in your preſence, and theirs.

The Soldane, being deſirous to giue *Sicurano* all manner of ſatisfaction, hauing followed the courſe ſo induſtriouſly. bad him to produce the Woman, and hee was well contented. Whereat *Bernardo* ſtoode much amazed, becauſe he verily beleeued that ſhe was dead. And *Ambroginolo* foreſeeing already a preparation for puniſhment, feared, that the repayment of the money would not now ſerue his turne: not knowing alſo, what he ſhould further hope or ſuſpect, if the woman her ſelfe did perſonally appeare, which hee imagined would be a miracle. *Sicurano* hauing thus obtained the Soldanes permiſſion, in teares, humbling her ſelfe at his feete, in a moment ſhe loſt her manly voyce and demeanour, as knowing that ſhe was now no longer to vſe them, but muſt truly witneſſe what ſhe was indeed, and therefore thus ſpake.

Great Soldane, I am the miſerable and vnfortunate *Geneura*, that for the ſpace of ſixe whole yeeres, haue wandered through the world, in the habite of a man, falſely and moſt maliciouſly ſlaundered, by this villainous Traytor *Ambroginolo*, and by this vnkinde cruell husband, betraied to his ſeruant to be ſlaine, and left to be deuoured by ſauage beaſts. Afterward, deſiring ſuch garments as better fitted for her, and ſhewing her breaſts, ſhe made it apparant before the Soldane and his aſſiſtants, that ſhee was the very ſame woman indeede. Then turning her ſelfe to *Ambroginolo*, with more then manly courage, ſhe demanded of him, when, and where it was, that he lay with her, as (villainouſly) he was not aſhamed to make his vaunt? But hee, hauing alreadie acknowledged the contrarie, being ſtricken dumbe with ſhamefull diſgrace, was not able to vtter one word.

The Soldane, who had alwayes reputed *Sicurano* to be a man, hauing heard and ſeene ſo admirable an accident; was ſo amazed in his minde, that many times he was very doubtfull, whether this was a dreame, or an abſolute relation of trueth. But, after hee had more ſeriouſly conſidered

thereon, and found it to be reall and infallible: with extraordinary gracious praiſes, he commended the life, conſtancy, condition and vertues of *Geneura*, whom (til that time) he had alwayes called *Sicurano*. So committing her to the company of honourable Ladies, to be changed from her manly habite; he pardoned *Bernardo* her husband (according to her requeſt formerly made) although hee had more iuſtly deſerued death: which likewiſe himſelfe confeſſed, and falling at the feet of *Geneura*, deſired her (in teares) to forgiue his raſh tranſgreſſion, which moſt louingly ſhe did, kiſſing and embracing him a thouſand times.

Then the Soldane ſtrictly commaunded, that on ſome high and eminent place of the Citie, *Ambroginolo* ſhould be bound and impaled on a ſtake, hauing his naked body nointed all ouer with hony, and neuer to bee taken off, vntill (of it ſelfe) it fell in peeces, which, according to the ſentence, was preſently performed. Next, he gaue expreſſe charge, that all his mony and goods ſhould be giuen to *Geneura*, which valued aboue ten thouſand double Duckets. Forthwith a ſolemne Feaſt was prepared, wherein much honor was done to *Bernardo*, being the husband of *Geneura*: and to her, as to a moſt worthy woman, and matchleſſe wife, he gaue in coſtly Iewels, as alſo veſſels of gold and ſiluer plate, ſo much as did amount to aboue ten thouſand double Duckets more.

When the feaſting was finiſhed, he cauſed a Ship to be furniſhed for them, graunting them licenſe to depart from *Geneway* when they pleaſed; whither they returned moſt richly and ioyfully, being welcomed home with great honour, eſpecially Madam *Geneura*, whom euery one ſuppoſed to be dead; and alwayes after, ſo long as ſhe liued, ſhee was moſt famous for her manifold vertues. But as for *Ambroginolo*, the verie ſame day that hee was impaled on the ſtake, annointed with honey, and fixed in the place appointed, to his no meane torment: he not onely died, but likewiſe was deuoured to the bare bones, by Flies, Waſpes, & Hornets, whereof the Countrey notoriouſly aboundeth. And his bones, in full forme and faſhion, remained ſtrangely blacke for a long time after, knit together by the ſinewes; as a witneſſe to many thouſands of people, which afterward beheld the Carkaſſe of his wickedneſſe againſt ſo good and vertuous a Woman, that had not ſo much as a thought of any euill towards him. And thus was the Prouerbe truly verified, that ſhame ſucceedeth after vgly ſinne, and the deceiuer is trampled and trod, by ſuch as himſelfe hath deceiued.

Pagamino da Monaco, *a rouing Pyrate on the Seas, carried away the fayre Wife of* Signior Ricciardo de Chinzica, *who vnderſtanding where ſhee was, went thither; and falling into friendſhip with* Pagamino, *demanded his Wife of him; whereto he yeelded, prouided, that ſhee would willingly goe away with him. She denied to part thence with her Husband, and* Signior Ricciardo *dying, ſhe became the wife of* Pagamino.

The tenth Nouell.

Wherein olde men are wittily reprehended, that will match themſelues vvith younger women then is fit for their yeeres, and inſufficient, neuer conſidering what afterward may happen to them.



EVery one in this honeſt and gracious aſſembly, moſt highly commended the Nouell re-counted by the Queene: but eſpecially *Dioneus*, who remained to finiſh that dayes pleaſure with his owne Diſcourſe, and after many praiſes of the former tale were paſt, thus he began. Faire Ladies, part of the Queenes Nouell hath made an alteration of my minde, from that which I intended to proceede next withall, and therfore I will report another. I cannot forget the vnmanly indiſcretion of *Bernardo*, but much more the baſe arrogance of *Ambroginolo*, how iuſtly deſerued ſhame fell vpon him, as well it may happen to all other, that are ſo vile in their owne opinions, as he apparantly approued himſelfe to be. For, as men wander abroad in the world, according to their occaſions in diuerſity of Countries and obſeruations of the peoples behauiour; ſo are their humours as variouſly tranſported. And if they finde women wantonly diſpoſed abroade, the like iudgement they giue of their Wiues at home; as if they had neuer knowne their birth and breeding, or made

proofe of their loyall carriage towards them. Wherefore, the Tale that I purpoſe to relate, will likewiſe condemne all the like kind of men, but more eſpecially ſuch as thinke themſelues endued with more ſtrength then Nature meant to beſtow on them, fooliſhly beleeuing, that they can couer their owne defects by fabulous demonſtrations, and thinking to faſhion other of their owne complexions, that are meerely ſtrangers to ſuch groſſe follies.

Know then, that there liued in *Piſa* (ſome hundred yeeres before *Tuſcany* and *Liguria* embraced the Chriſtian faith) a Iudge better ſtored with wiſedome and ingenuity, then corporall abilities of the body, named Signior *Ricciardo di Cinzica*. He being more then halfe perſwaded, that hee could content a woman with ſuch ſatisfaction as hee daily beſtowed on his ſtudies, being a widdower, and extraordinary wealthy, laboured with no meane paines, to enioy a faire and youthfull wife in marriage: both which qualities hee ſhould much rather haue auoyded, if he could haue miniſtred as good counſell to himſelfe, as he did to others, reſorting to him for aduice. Vpon this his amorous and diligent inquiſition, it came ſo to paſſe, that a worthy Gentlewoman, called *Bertolomea*, one of the faireſt and choiſeſt yong maids in *Piſa*, whoſe youth did hardly agree with his age; but muck was the motiue of this mariage, and no expectation of mutuall contentment. The Iudge being married, and the Bride brought ſolemnly home to his houſe, we need make no queſtion of braue cheare & banquetting, well furniſhed by their friends on either ſide: other matters were now hammering in the Iudges head, for though he could pleaſe all his Clients with counſel, yet now ſuch a ſuit was commenced againſt himſelfe, and in Beauties Court of continuall requeſts, that the Iudge failing in plea for his own defence, was often non-ſuited by lack of anſwer; yet he wanted not good wines, drugs, and all ſorts of reſtoratiues to comfort the heart, and encreaſe good blood: but all auailed not.

But well fare a good courage, where performance faileth, hee could liberally commend his paſſed iouiall daies, and make a promiſe of as faire felicities yet to come; becauſe his youth would renew it ſelfe like to the Eagle, and his vigour in as full force as before. But beſide all theſe ydle allegations, he would needs inſtruct his wife in an Almanacke or Kalender, which he had (formerly) bought at *Rauenna*, and wherein he plainely ſhewed her, that there was not one day in the yeere, but it was dedicated to ſome Saint or other. In reuerence of whom, and for their ſakes, he approued by diuers arguments and reaſons, that a man and his wife ought to abſtaine from bedding together. Adding withall, that thoſe Saints dayes had their Faſts and Feaſts, beſide the foure ſeaſons of the yeer, the vigils of the Apoſtles, and a thouſand other holy dayes, with Fridayes, Saterdayes, and Sundayes, in honor of our Lords reſt, & al the holy time of Lent; as alſo certain obſeruations of the Moone, and infinit other exceptions beſide; thinking perhaps, that it was as conuenient for men to refraine from their wiues conuerſation, as he did often time from ſitting in the Court. Theſe were his dayly documents to his young wife, where-

with

with(poore ſoule)ſhe became ſo tyred, as nothing could be more irkſom to her,and very careful he was,leſt any other ſhould teach her what belonged to working daies, becauſe he would haue her know none but holydaies. It came to paſſe,that the ſeaſon waxing extremely hot, Signior *Ricciardo* would go to recreate himſelfe at his houſe in the country,neere to the blacke Mountaine, where for his faire wiues more contentment, he continued diuers daies together. And for her further recreation, he gaue order to haue a day of fiſhing, he going aboord a ſmall Pinnace among the Fiſhers,and ſhe in another, conſorted with diuers other Gentlewomen,in whoſe company ſhe was very well pleaſed. Delight made them launch further into the Sea,then either the Iudge was willing they ſhould haue done,or agreed with their owne ſafety. For ſodainly a Galliot came vpon them, wherein was one *Pagamino* a famous Pyrate, who eſpying the two Pinnaces, made preſently to them, and ſeized on that wherein the women were. When he beheld there ſo faire a young Woman,he coueted after no other purchaſe; but mounting her into his Galliot,in the ſight of Signior *Ricciardo*,who by this time was fearefully landed,he carried her away with him. When Signior Iudge had ſeene this theft(he being ſo iealous of his wife, as ſcarſely he would let the ayre breathe on her)it were needleſſe to know whether he was offended, or no. He made complaint at *Piſa*,and in other places beſide, what iniurie he had ſuſtained by thoſe Pyrates,in carrying away his wife from him: but all in vaine,he neither(as yet) knew the man, nor what was become of him. *Pagamino* perceiuing what a beautifull woman ſhee was, made the more precious eſteeme of his purchaſe, and being himſelfe a Batchelor, intended to keepe her as his owne, comforting her with kinde and pleaſing ſpeeches,not vſing any ill demeanor to her, becauſe ſhe wept & lamented greeuouſly. But when night came, her husbands Kalender falling from her girdle,and all the faſts and feaſts quite out of her remembrance,ſhe receiued ſuch curteſies from *Pagamino*, that before they could arriue at *Monaco*,the Iudge and his Law caſes were almoſt out of memory; ſuch was his affable behauiour to her, and ſhe began to conuerſe with him in more friendly manner, and he entreated her as honourably,as if ſhe had bin his eſpouſed wife.

Within a ſhort while after, report had acquainted the Iudge, where and how his wife was kept from him; whereupon hee determined, not to ſend,but rather to go himſelfe in perſon, and to redeeme her from the Pyrate, with what ſummes of money he ſhould demand. By ſea he paſſed to *Monaco*, where he ſaw his wife, and ſhe him, as (ſoone after) ſhee made known to *Pagamino*. The next morning,Signior *Ricciardo* meeting with *Pagamino*,made meanes to be acquainted with him, and within leſſe then an houres ſpace,they grew into familiar conference; *Pagamino* yet pretending not to know him, but expected what iſſue this talke would ſort to.When time ſerued,the Iudge diſcourſed the occaſion of his comming thither,deſiring him to demand what ranſome he pleaſed,and that he might haue his wife home with him. Whereto *Pagamino* anſwered

My Lord Iudge, you are welcome hither, and to anſwer you breefely very true it is, that I haue a yong Gentlewoman in my houſe, whom I neither know to be your wife, or any other mans elſe whatſoeuer: for I am ignorant both of you and her, albeit ſhe hath remained a while here with me. If you be her husband, as you ſeeme to auouch, I will bring her to you, for you appeare to be a worthy Gentleman, and (queſtionleſſe) ſhe cannot chuſe but know you perfectly. If ſhe do confirme that which you haue ſaide, and be willing to depart hence with you: I ſhal reſt well ſatisfied, and will haue no other recompence for her ranſome (in regard of your graue & reuerend yeeres) but what your ſelfe ſhall pleaſe to giue me. But if it fall out other then you haue affirmed, you ſhal offer me great wrong, in ſeeking to get her from me; becauſe I am a young man, and can as well maintaine ſo faire a wife as you, or any man elſe that I know. Beleeue it certainly, replyed the Iudge, that ſhe is my wife, and if you pleaſe to bring me where ſhe is, you ſhall ſoone perceiue it: for ſhe will preſently caſt her armes about my necke, and I durſt aduenture the vtter loſſe of her, if ſhe deny to do it in your preſence. Come on then, ſaide *Pagamino*, and let vs delay the time no longer,

When they were entred into *Pagaminos* houſe, and ſat downe in the Hall, he cauſed her to be called, and ſhe (being readily prepared for the purpoſe, came forth of her Chamber before them both, where friendly they ſate conuerſing together; neuer vttering any word vnto Signieur *Ricciardo*, or knowing him from any other ſtranger, that *Pagamino* might bring in to the houſe with him. Which when my Lord the Iudge beheld, (who expected to finde a farre more gracious welcome) he ſtoode as a man amazed, ſaying to himſelfe. Perhaps the extraordinary greefe and melancholly ſuffered by me ſince the time of her loſſe, hath ſo altred my wonted complexion, that ſhee is not able to take knowledge of me. Wherefore, going neerer to her, he ſaide: Faire Loue, deerely haue I bought your going on fiſhing, becauſe neuer man felt the like afflictions as I haue done ſince the day when I loſt you: but by this your vnciuil ſilence, you ſeeme as if you did not know me. Why deereſt loue, ſeeſt thou not that I am thy husband *Ricciardo*, who am come to pay what ranſome this Gentleman ſhall demaund, euen in the houſe where now we are, ſo to conuey thee home againe, vpon his kind promiſe of thy deliuerance, after the payment of thy ranſome?

Beritolomea turning towards him, and ſeeming as if ſhee ſmiled to her ſelfe, thus anſwered. Sir, ſpeake you to me? Aduiſe your ſelfe well, leaſt you miſtake me for ſome other, for mine owne part, I neuer ſaw you till now. How now quoth *Ricciardo*? Conſider better what you ſay, looke more circumſpectly on me, and then you will remember, that I am your louing husband, and my name is *Ricciardo di Cinzica*. You muſt pardon me Sir, replyed *Bertolomea*, I know it not ſo fitting for a modeſt woman to ſtand gazing in the faces of men: and let me looke vppon yon neuer ſo often, certaine I am, that (till this inſtant) I haue not ſeene you. My Lord Iudge conceiued in his minde, that thus ſhe denied all knowledge

of

of him, as ſtanding in feare of *Pagamino*, and would not confeſſe him in his preſence. Wherefore hee entreated of *Pagamino*, to affoord him ſo much fauour, that he might ſpeake alone with her in her Chamber. *Pagamino* anſwered, that he was well contented therewith, prouided, that he ſhould not kiſſe her againſt her will. Then he requeſted *Bartolomea*, to goe with him alone into her Chamber, there to heare what he could ſay, and to anſwere him as ſhee found occaſion. When they were come into the Chamber, and none there preſent but he and ſhee, *Signior Ricciardo* began in this manner. Heart of my heart, life of my life, the ſweeteſt hope that I haue in this world; wilt thou not know thine owne *Ricciardo*, who loueth thee more then he doth himſelfe? Why art thou ſo ſtrange? Am I ſo disfigured, that thou knoweſt me not? Behold me with a more pleaſing eye, I pray thee.

Bartolomea ſmiled to her ſelfe, and without ſuffering him to proceed any further in ſpeech, returned him this anſwere. I would haue you to vnderſtand Sir, that my memory is not ſo obliuious, but I know you to be *Signior Ricciardo di Cinzica*, and my husband by name or title, but during the time that I was with you, it very ill appeared that you had any knowledge of me. For if you had bene ſo wiſe and conſiderate, as (in your own iudgement) the world reputed you to be, you could not be voide of ſo much apprehenſion, but did apparantly perceiue, that I was yong, freſh, and cheerefully diſpoſed; and ſo (by conſequent) meet to know matters requiſite for ſuch young women, beſide allowance of food and garments, though baſhfulneſſe and modeſty forbid to vtter it. But if ſtudying the Lawes were more welcome to you then a wife, you ought not to haue maried, and you looſe the worthy reputation of a Iudge, when you fall from that venerable profeſſion, and make your ſelfe a common proclaimer of feaſts and faſting dayes, lenten ſeaſons, vigils, and ſolemnities due to Saints, which prohibite the houſhold conuerſation of husbands and wiues.

Here am I now with a worthy Gentleman, that entertaineth me with very honourable reſpect, and here I liue in this Chamber, not ſo much as hearing of any feaſts or faſting dayes; for, neither Fridaies, Saturdaies, vigils of Saints, or any lingering Lent, enter at this doore: but heere is honeſt and ciuill conuerſation, better agreeing with a youthfull diſpoſition, then thoſe harſh documents wherewith you tutord me. Wherefore my purpoſe is to continue here with him, as being a place ſutable to my minde and youth, referring feaſts, vigils, and faſting daies, to a more mature and ſtayed time of age, when the body is better able to endure them, and the mind may be prepared for ſuch ghoſtly meditations: depart therefore at your owne pleaſure, and make much of your Calender, without enioying any company of mine, for you heare my reſolued determination.

The Iudge hearing theſe words, was ouercome with exceeding griefe, and when ſhe was ſilent, thus he began. Alas deare Loue, what an anſwere is this? Haſt thou no regard of thine owne honor, thy Parents, and friends? Canſt thou rather affect to abide here, for the pleaſures of this man, and ſo ſin capitolly, then to liue at *Piſa* in the ſtate of my wife? Conſider deare heart, when this man ſhall waxe weary of thee, to thy ſhame and his owne

diſgrace,

disgrace,he will reiect thee. I must and shall loue thee for euer, and when I dye, I leaue thee Lady and commandresse oft all that is mine. Can an inordinate appetite,cause thee to be careless of thine honour, and of him that loues thee as his owne life ? Alas, my faireſt hope, say no more so, but returne home with me,and now that I am acquainted with thy inclination; I will endeauour heereafter to giue thee better contentment. Wherefore (deare heart) doe not denie me,but change thy minde, and goe with me,for I neuer saw merry day since I lost thee.

Sir(quoth she) I desire no body to haue care of mine honour,beside my selfe,because it cannot be here abused. And as for my Parents, what respect had they of me, when they made me your wife ? If then they could be so careless of mee, what reason haue I to regard them now ? And whereas you taxe me, that I cannot liue here without capitall sin; farre is the thought thereof from me : for,here I am regarded as the wife of *Pagamino*,but at *Pisa*, you reputed me not worthy your society : because, by the point of the Moone,and the quadratures of Geometrie ; the Planets held coniunction betweene you and me, whereas here I am subiect to no such constellations. You say beside, that hereafter you will striue to giue me better contentment then you haue done; surely, in mine opinion it is no way possible, because our complexions are so farre different, as yce is from fire, or gold from drosse. As for your allegation, of this Gentlemans reiecting me, when his humour is satisfied ; should if it proue to be so (as it is the least part of my feare) what fortune soeuer shall betide me, neuer will I make any meanes to you, what miseries or misaduentures may happen to me ; but the world will affoord me one resting place or other, and more to my contentment,then if I were with you. Therefore I tell you once againe,to liue secured from all offence to holy Saints, and not to iniure their feasts,fasts,vigills, and other ceremonious seasons : here is my demourance, and from hence I purpose not to part.

Our Iudge was now in a wofull perplexity, and confessing his folly, in marying a wife so yong,and far vnfit for his age and abilitie: being halfe desperate,sad and displeased,he came forth of the Chamber, vsing diuers speeches to *Pagamino*,whereof he made little or no account at all : and in the end, without any other successe,left his wife there, and returned home to *Pisa*. There further afflictions fell vpon him, because the people began to scorne him,demanding dayly of him, what was become of his gallant young wife,making hornes,with ridiculous pointings at him: whereby his sences became distracted , so that he ran rauing about the streetes, and afterward died in very miserable manner. Which newes came no sooner to the eare of *Pagamino*,but, in the honourable affection hee bare to *Bertolomea*, he maried her, with great solemnity ; banishing all Fasts, Vigils, and Lents from his house, and liuing with her in much felicity. Wherfore (faire Ladies) I am of opinion, that *Bernardo* of *Geneway*,in his disputation with *Ambroginolo*;might haue shewne himselfe a great deale wiser, and sparing his rash proceeding with his wife.

This tale was so merrily entertained among the whole company, that each one smiling vpon another, with one consent commended *Dioneus*,

maintai-

maintaining that he ſpake nothing but the truth, and condemning *Bernardo* for his cruelty. Vpon a generall ſilence commanded, the Queen perceiuing that the time was now very farre ſpent, and euery one had deliuered their ſeuerall Nouels, which likewiſe gaue a period to her Royalty: ſhe gaue the Crowne to Madam *Neiphila*, pleaſantly ſpeaking to her in this order. Heereafter, the gouernment of theſe few people is committed to your truſt and care, for with the day concludeth my dominion. Madam *Neiphila*, bluſhing at the honor done vnto her, her cheekes appeared of a vermillion tincture, her eyes glittering with gracefull deſires, and ſparkeling like the morning Starre. And after the modeſt murmure of the Aſſiſtants was ceaſed, and her courage in chearfull manner ſetled, ſeating her ſelfe higher then ſhe did before, thus ſhe ſpake.

Seeing it is ſo, that you haue elected me your Queene, to varie ſomewhat from the courſe obſerued by them that went before me, whoſe gouernement you haue all ſo much commended: by approbation of your counſell, I am deſirous to ſpeake my mind, concerning what I wold haue to be next followed. It is not vnknowne to you all, that to morrow ſhal be Friday, and Saturday the next day following, which are daies ſomewhat moleſtuous to the moſt part of men, for preparation of their weekly food and ſuſtenance. Moreouer, Friday ought to be reuerendly reſpected, in remembrance of him, who died to giue vs life, and endured his bitter paſſion, as on that day; which makes me to hold it fit and expedient, that wee ſhould mind more weighty matters, and rather attend our prayers and deuotions, then the repetition of tales or Nouels. Now concerning Saturday, it hath bin a cuſtome obſerued among women, to bath & waſh themſelues from ſuch immundicities as the former weekes toile hath impoſed on them. Beſide, it is a day of faſting, in honour of the enſuing Sabbath, whereon no labor may be done, but the obſeruation of holy exerciſes.

By that which hath bin ſaide, you may eaſily conceiue, that the courſe which we haue hitherto continued, cannot bee proſecuted in one and the ſame manner: wherefore, I would aduiſe and do hold it an action wel performed by vs, to ceaſe for theſe few dayes, from recounting any other Nouels. And becauſe we haue remained here foure daies already, except we would allow the enlarging of our company, with ſome other friends that may reſort vnto vs: I thinke it neceſſary to remoue from hence, & take our pleaſure in another place, which is already by me determined. When we ſhalbe there aſſembled, and haue ſlept on the diſcourſes formerly deliuered, let our next argument be ſtill the mutabilities of Fortune, but eſpecially to concerne ſuch perſons, as by their wit and ingenuity, induſtrioufly haue attained to ſome matter earneſtly deſired, or elſe recouered againe, after the loſſe. Heereon let vs ſeuerally ſtudy and premeditate, that the hearers may receiue benefit thereby, with the comfortable maintenance of our harmleſſe recreations; the priuiledge of *Dioneus* alwayes reſerued to himſelfe.

Euery one commended the Queens deliberation, concluding that it ſhold be accordingly proſecuted: and thereupon, the maſter of the houſhold was called

called, to giue him order for that euenings Table ſeruice, and what elſe concerned the time of the Queenes Royalty, wherein he was ſufficiently inſtructed: which being done, the company aroſe, licenſing euery one to doe what they liſted. The Ladies and Gentlemen walked to the Garden, and hauing ſported themſelues there a while; when the houre of ſupper came, they ſate downe, and fared very daintily. Being riſen from the Table, according to the Queenes command, Madam *Æmilia* led the dance, and the ditty following, was ſung by Madam *Pampinea*, being anſwered by all the reſt, as a Chorus.

The Song.

And if not I, what Lady elſe can ſing,
Of thoſe delights, which kind contentment bring?
Come, come, ſweet Loue, the cauſe of my chiefe good,
Of all my hopes, the firme and full effect;
Sing wee together, but in no ſad mood,
Of ſighes or teares, which ioy doth counterchecke:
Stolne pleaſures are delightfull in the taſte,
But yet Loues fire is oftentimes too fierce;
Conſuming comfort with ore-ſpeedy haſte,
Which into gentle hearts too far doth pierce.
And if not I, &c.

The firſt day that I felt this fiery heate,
So ſweete a paſſion did poſſeſſe my ſoule,
That though I found the torment ſharpe, and great;
Yet ſtill me thought t'was but a ſweete controule.
Nor could I count it rude, or rigorous,
Taking my wound from ſuch a piercing eye:
As made the paine moſt pleaſing, gracious,
That I deſire in ſuch aſſaults to die.
And if not I, &c.

Grant then great God of Loue, that I may ſtill
Enioy the benefit of my deſire;
And honour her with all my deepeſt skill,
That firſt enflam'd my heart with holy fire.
To her my bondage is free liberty,
My ſickneſſe health, my tortures ſweet repoſe;
Say ſhee the word, in full felicity
All my extaeames ioyne in an happy cloſe.
Then if not I, what Loner elſe can ſing,
Of thoſe delights which kind contentment bring?

After this Song was ended, they ſung diuers other beſide, and hauing great variety of inſtruments, they played to them as many pleaſing dances,

ces. But the Queene considering that the meere houre for rest was come, with their lighted Torches before them, they all repaired to their Chambers; sparing the other dayes next succeeding, for those reasons by the Queene alledged, and spending the Sunday in solemne deuotion.

The Third Day.

Vpon which Day, all matters to be discourſed on, doe passe vnder the regiment of Madam Neiphila: *concerning such persons as (by their wit and industry) haue attained to their long wished desires, or recouered something, supposed to be lost.*

The Induction to the ensuing Discourses.

THE morning put on a vermillion countenance and made the Sunne to rise blushing red, when the Queene (and all the faire conipany) were come abroad forth of their Chambers; the Seneschall or great Master of the Houshold, hauing (long before) sent all things necessary to the place of their next intended meeting. And the people which prepared there euery needfull matter, suddainely when they saw the Queene was setting forward, charged all the rest of their followers, as if it had beene preparation for a Campe; to make hast away with the carriages, the rest of the Familie remaining behind, to attend vpon the Ladies and Gentlemen.



With a milde, maiesticke, and gentle pace, the Queene rode on, being followed by the other Ladies, and the three young Gentlemen, taking their way towards the West; conducted by the musicall notes of sweete singing Nightingales, and infinite other pretty Birds beside, riding in a tract not much frequented, but richly abounding with faire hearbes and flowres, which by reason of the Sunnes high mounting, began to open their bosome, and fill the fresh Ayre with their odoriferous perfumes. Before they had trauelled two small miles distance, all of them pleasantly

conuer-

conuerſing together; they arriued at another goodly Palace, which being ſomewhat mounted aboue the plaine, was ſeated on the ſide of a little riſing hill.

When they were entred thereinto, and had ſeene the great Hall, the Parlors, and beautifull Chambers, euery one ſo ſtupendiouly furniſhed, withall conuenient commodities to them belonging, and nothing wanting, that could be deſired; they highly commended it, reputing the Lord thereof for a moſt worthy man, that had adorned it in ſuch Princely manner. Afterward, being deſcended lower, and noting the moſt ſpacious and pleaſant Court, the Sellars ſtored with the choyſeſt Wines, and delicate Springs of waters euery where running, their prayſes then exceeded more and more. And being weary with beholding ſuch variety of pleaſures, they ſate downe in a faire Gallery, which tooke the view of the whole Court, it being round engirt with trees and flowres, whereof the ſeaſon then yeelded great plenty. And then came the diſcreete Maſter of the Houſhold, with diuers ſeruants attending on him, preſenting them with Comfits, and other Banquetting, as alſo very ſingular Wines, to ſerue in ſtead of a breakefaſt.

Hauing thus repoſed themſelues a while, a Garden gate was ſet open to them, coaſting on one ſide of the Pallace, and round encloſed with high mounted walles. Whereinto when they were entred, they found it to be a moſt beautifull Garden, ſtored with all varieties that poſſibly could be deuiſed; and therefore they obſerued it the more reſpectiuely. The walkes and allyes were long and ſpacious, yet directly ſtraite as an arrow, enuironed with ſpreading vines, whereon the grapes hung in copious cluſters; which being come to their full ripeneſſe, gaue ſo rare a ſmel throughout the Garden, with other ſweete ſauours intermixed among, that they ſuppoſed to feele the freſh ſpiceries of the Eaſt.

It would require large length of time, to deſcribe all the rarities of this place, deſeruing much more to be commended, then my beſt faculties will affoord me. In the middeſt of the Garden, was a ſquare plot, after the reſemblance of a Meadow, flouriſhing with high graſſe, hearbes, and plants, beſide a thouſand diuerſities of flowres, euen as if by the Art of painting they had beene there deputed. Round was it circled with very verdant Orenge and Cedar Trees, their branches plentiouſly ſtored with fruit both old and new, as alſo the flowres growing freſhly among them, yeelding not onely a rare aſpect to the eye, but alſo a delicate ſauour to the ſmell.

In the middeſt of this Meadow, ſtood a Fountaine of white Marble, whereon was engrauen moſt admirable workemanſhip, and within it (I know not whether it were by a naturall veine, or artificiall) flowing from a figure, ſtanding on a Collumne in the midſt of the Fountaine, ſuch aboundance of water, and ſo mounting vp towards the Skies, that it was a wonder to behold. For after the high aſcent, it fell downe againe into the wombe of the Fountaine, with ſuch a noyſe and pleaſing murmure, as the ſtreame that glideth from a mill. When the receptacle of the Fountaine did

did ouer-flow the bounds, it ſtreamed along the Meadow, by ſecret paſſages and chanels, very faire and artificially made, returning againe into euery part of the Meadow, by the like wayes of cunning conueighance, which allowed it full courſe into the Garden, running ſwiftly thence downe towards the plaine; but before it came thether, the very ſwift current of the ſtreame, did driue two goodly Milles, which brought in great benefit to the Lord of the ſoile.

The ſight of this Garden, the goodly grafts, plants, trees, hearbes, frutages, and flowres, the Springs, Fountaines, and pretty riuolets ſtreaming from it, ſo highly pleaſed the Ladies and Gentlemen, that among other infinite commendations, they ſpared not to ſay: if any Paradiſe remayned on the earth to be ſeene, it could not poſſibly be in any other place, but onely was contained within the compaſſe of this Garden. With no meane pleaſure and delight they walked round about it, making Chaplets of flowers, and other faire branches of the trees, continually hearing the Birds in melodious notes, ecchoing and warbling one to another, euen as if they enuied each others felicities.

But yet another beauty (which before had not preſented it ſelfe to them) on a ſodaine they perceyued, namely diuers pretty creatures in many parts of the Gardens. In one place Conies tripping about; in another place Hares; in a third part Goats browſing on the hearbes, and little yong Hindes feeding euery where: yet without ſtrife or warring together, but rather liuing in ſuch a Domeſticke and pleaſing kinde of company, euen as if they were appointed to enſtruct the moſt noble of all creatures, to imitate their ſociable conuerſation.

When their ſenſes had ſufficiently banquetted on thoſe ſeuerall beauties, the tables were ſodainly prepared about the Fountaine; where firſt they ſung ſix Canzonets; and hauing paced two or three dances, they ſate downe to dinner, according as the Queene ordained, being ſerued in very ſumptuous manner, with all kinde of coſtly and delicate viands, yet not any babling noiſe among them. The Tables being withdrawne, they played againe vpon their inſtruments, ſinging and dancing gracefully together: till, in regard of the extreame heate, the Queene commanded to giue ouer, and permitted ſuch as were ſo pleaſed, to take their eaſe and reſt. But ſome, as not ſatisfied with the places pleaſures, gaue themſelues to walking: others fell to reading the liues of the Romanes; ſome to the Cheſſe, and the reſt to other recreations.

But, after the dayes warmth was more mildely qualified, and euery one had made benefit of their beſt content: they went (by order ſent from the Queene) into the Meadow where the Fountaine ſtood, and being ſet about it, as they vſed to do in telling their Tales (the argument appointed by the Queene being propounded) the firſt that had the charge impoſed, was *Philoſtratus*, who began in this manner.

Maſſetto di Lamporechio, *by counterfetting himſelfe to be dumbe, became a Gardiner in a Monaſtery of Nunnes, where he had familiar conuerſation with them all.*

The Firſt Nouell.

Wherein is declared, that Virginity is very hardly to be kept in all places.



MOſt worthy Ladies, there wants no ſtore of men and women, thatare ſo ſimple, as to credit for a certainty, that ſo ſoon as a yong virgin hath the veile put on hir head, and the black Cowle giuen to couer her withall, ſhe is no longer a woman, nor more ſenſible of feminine affections, then as if in turning Nun, ſhee became conuerted to a ſtone. And if (perchance) they heard ſome matters, contrary to their former perſwaſion; then they grow ſo furiouſly offended, as if one had committed a moſt foule and enormous ſinne, directly againſt the courſe of Nature. And the torrent of this opinion hurries them on ſo violently, that they wil admit no leiſure to conſider, how (in ſuch a ſcope of liberty) they haue power to doe what they liſt, yea beyond all meanes of ſufficient ſatisfying, neuer remembring how potent the priuiledge of idlenes is, eſpecially when it is backt by ſolitude. In like manner, there are other people now, who verily beleeue, that the Spade and Pickaxe, groſſe feeding and labour, do quench al ſenſual and fleſhly concupiſcence, yea in ſuch as till & husband the ground, by making them dull, blockiſh, and (almoſt) meere ſenſleſſe of vnderſtanding. But I will approue (according as the Queene hath commanded me, and within the compaſſe of her direction) by a ſhort and pleaſant Tale; how greatly they are abuſed by errour, that build vpon ſo weake a foundation.

Not farre from *Alexandria*, there was a great and goodly Monaſterie, belonging to the Lord of thoſe parts, who is termed the Admirall. And therein, vnder the care and truſt of one woman, diuers virgins were kept as recluſes, or Nuns, vowed to chaſtity of life; out of whoſe number, the Soldan of Babylon (vnder whom they liued in ſubiection) at euery three yeers end, had vſually three of theſe virgins ſent him. At the time whereof I am now to ſpeake, there remained in the Monaſtery, no more but eight religious Siſters only, beſide the Lady Abbeſſe, and an honeſt poor man, who was a Gardiner, and kept the Garden in commendable order.

His

His wages being ſmall, and he not well contented therewith, would ſerue there no longer: but making his accounts euen, with the *Factotum* or Bayliffe belonging to the houſe, returned thence to the village of *Lamporechio*, being a natiue of the place. Among many other that gaue him welcom home, was a yong Hebrew pezant of the country, ſturdy, ſtrong and yet comely of perſon, being named *Maſſet*. But becauſe he was born not farre off from *Lamporechio*, and had there bin brought vp all his yonger dayes, his name of *Maſſet* (according to their vulgar ſpeech) was turned to *Maſſetto*, and therefore he was vſually called and knowne by the name of *Maſſetto* of *Lamporechio*.

Maſſetto, falling in talke with the honeſt poore man, whoſe name was *Lurco*, demanded of him what ſeruices hee had done in the Monaſterie, hauing continued there ſo long a time? Quoth *Lurco*, I laboured in the Garden, which is very faire and great; then I went to the Foreſt to fetch home wood, and cleft it for their Chamber fuell, drawing vp all theyr water beſide, with many other toilſome ſeruices elſe: but the allowance of my wages was ſo little, as it would not pay for the ſhoes I wore. And that which was worſt of all, they being all yong women, I thinke the diuel dwels among them, for a man cannot doe any thing to pleaſe them. When I haue bene buſie at my worke in the garden, one would come & ſay, Put this heere, put that there; and others would take the dibble out of my hand, telling me, that I did not performe any thing well, making me ſo weary of their continuall trifling, as I haue lefte all buſines, giuen ouer the Garden, and what for one molleſtation, as alſo many other; I intended to tarry no longer there, but came away, as thou ſeeſt. And yet the *Factotum* deſired me at my departing, that if I knew any one who would vndertake the aforeſaid labours, I ſhould ſend him thither, as (indeed) I promiſed to do: but let mee fall ſicke and dye, before I helpe to ſend them any.

When *Maſſetto* had heard the words of *Lurco*, hee was ſo deſirous to dwell among the Nunnes, that nothing elſe now hammered in his head: for he meant more ſubtilly then poore *Lurco* did, and made no doubt to pleaſe them ſufficiently. Then conſidering with himſelfe, how beſt he might bring his intent to effect; which appeared not eaſily to bee done. He could queſtion no further therein with *Lurco*, but onely demaunded other matter of him, ſaying: Introth thou didſt well *Lurco*, to come away from ſo tedious a dwelling, had he not need to be more then a man that is to liue with ſuch women? It were better for him to dwell among ſo many diuels, becauſe they vnderſtand not the tenth part that womens wily wits can diue into.

After their conference was ended, *Maſſetto* began to beate his braines how he might compaſſe to dwell among them, & knowing that he could wel enough performe all the labours whereof *Lurco* had made mention, he cared not for any loſſe he ſhould ſuſtaine thereby, but onely ſtood in doubt of his entertainment, becauſe he was too yong and ſprightly. Hauing pondered on many imaginations, he ſaid to himſelfe. The place is

farre enough diſtant hence, and none there can take knowledge of mee; if I haue wit ſufficient, cleanely to make them beleeue that I am dumbe, then (queſtionles) I ſhal be receiued. And reſoluing to proſecute this determination, he tooke a Spade on his ſhoulder, and without reuealing to any body whether hee went, in the diſguiſe of a poore labouring Countryman, he trauelled to the Monaſtery.

When he was there arriued, he found the great gate open, and entering in boldly, it was his good hap to eſpy the *Fac-totum* in the court, according as *Lurco* had giuen deſcription of him. Making ſignes before him, as if he were both dumbe and deafe; he manifeſted, that he craued an Almes for Gods ſake, making ſhewes beſide, that if need required, he could cleaue wood, or doe any reaſonable kinde of ſeruice. The *Factotum* gladly gaue him food, and afterward ſhewed him diuers knotty logs of wood, which the weake ſtrength of *Lurco* had left vnclouen; but this fellow being more actiue and luſty, quickly rent them all to pieces. Now it ſo fell out, that the *Fac-totum* muſt needs go to the Forreſt, and tooke *Maſſetto* along with him thither: where cauſing him to fell diuers Trees, by ſignes he bad him to lade the two Aſſes therewith, which commonly carried home all the wood, and ſo driue them to the Monaſterie before him, which *Maſſetto* knew well enough how to do, and performed it very effectually.

Many other ſeruile Offices were there to bee done, which cauſed the *Fac-totum* to make vſe of his paines diuers other dayes beſide; in which time, the Lady Abbeſſe chancing to ſee him, demanded of the *Fac-totum* what he was? Madam (quoth hee) a poore labouring man, who is both deafe and dumbe, hither he came to craue an almes the other day, the which in charity I could do no leſſe but giue him; for which, hee hath done many honeſt ſeruices about the houſe. It ſeemes beſide, that hee hath pretty skill in Gardening, ſo that if I can perſwade him to continue here, I make no queſtion of his able ſeruices: for the old ſilly man is gon, and we haue need of ſuch a ſtout fellow, to do the buſines belonging to the Monaſtery, and one fitter for the turne, comes ſildome hither. Moreouer, in regard of his double imperfections, the Siſters can ſuſtaine no impeachment by him. Whereto the Abbeſſe anſwered, ſaying; By the faith of my body, you ſpeake but the truth: vnderſtand then, if hee haue any knowledge in Gardening, and whether hee will dwell heere, or no: which compaſſe ſo kindly as you can. Let him haue a new paire of ſhoes, fill his belly daily full of meate, flatter, and make much of him, for wee ſhall finde him worke enough to do. All which, the *Fac-totum* promiſed to fulfill ſufficiently.

Maſſetto, who was not far off from them all this while, but ſeemed ſeriouſly buſied about ſweeping and making cleane the Court, heard all theſe ſpeeches; and being not a little ioyfull of them; ſaid to himſelfe. If once I come to worke in your Garden, let the proofe yeeld praiſe of my skill and knowledge. When the *Fac-totum* perceiued, that he knew perfectly how to vndergo his buſineſſe, and had queſtioned him by ſignes, con-

concerning his willingneſſe to ſerue there ſtill, and receiued the like anſwere alſo, of his dutifull readineſſe thereto; he gaue him order to worke in the Garden, becauſe the ſeaſon did now require it; and to leaue all other affayres for the Monaſtery, attending now onely the Gardens preparation.

As *Maſſetto* was thus about his Garden emploiment, the Nunnes began to reſort thither, and thinking the man to be dumbe and deafe indeede, were the more lauiſh of their language, mocking and flowting him very immodeſtly, as being perſwaded, that he heard them not. And the Lady Abbeſſe, thinking he might as well be an Eunuch, as depriued both of hearing and ſpeaking, ſtood the leſſe in feare of the Siſters walkes, but referred them to their owne care and prouidence. On a day, *Maſſetto* hauing laboured ſomewhat extraordinarily, lay downe to reſt himſelfe awhile vnder the trees, and two delicate yong Nunnes, walking there to take the aire, drew neere to the place where he diſſembled ſleeping; and both of them obſeruing his comelineſſe of perſon, began to pitty the pouerty of his condition; but much more the miſery of his great defectes. Then one of them, who had a little liuelier ſpirit then the other, thinking *Maſſetto* to be faſt aſleepe, began in this manner.

Siſter (quoth ſhe) if I were faithfully aſſured of thy ſecrecie, I would tell thee a thing which I haue often thought on, and it may (perhaps) redound to thy profit. Siſter, replyed the other Nun, ſpeake your minde boldly, and beleeue it (on my Maiden-head) that I will neuer reueale it to any creature liuing. Encouraged by this ſolemne anſwere, the firſt Nun thus proſecuted her former purpoſe, ſaying. I know not Siſter, whether it hath entred into thine vnderſtanding or no, how ſtrictly we are here kept and attended, neuer any man daring to aduenture among vs, except our good and honeſt *Fac-totum*, who is very aged; and this dumbe fellow, maimed, and made imperfect by nature, and therefore not worthy the title of a man. Ah Siſter, it hath oftentimes bin told me, by Gentlewomen comming hither to viſite vs, that all other ſweetes in the world, are mockeries, to the incomparable pleaſures of man and woman, of which we are barred by our vnkind parents, binding vs to perpetuall chaſtity, which they were neuer able to obſerue themſelues.

A Siſter of this houſe once told me, that before her turne came to be ſent to the Soldane, ſhe fell in frailty with a man that was both lame and blinde, and diſcouering the ſame to her Ghoſtly Father in confeſſion; he abſolued her of that ſinne; affirming, that ſhe had not tranſgreſſed with a man, becauſe he wanted his rationall and vnderſtanding parts. Behold Siſter, heere lyes a creature, almoſt formed in the ſelfe-ſame mold, dumbe and deafe, which are two the moſt rationall and vnderſtanding parts that do belong to any man, and therefore no Man, wanting them. If folly and frailty would be committed with him (as many times ſince hee came hither it hath run in my minde) hee is by Nature, ſworne to ſuch ſecrecie, that he cannot (if he would) bea blabbe thereof. Beſide, the Lawes and conſtitution of our Religion doth teach vs, that a ſinne ſo aſſuredly con-

cealed, is more then halfe absolued.

Aue Maria Sister (saide the other Nun) what kinde of words are these you vtter? Doe not you know, that we haue promised our virginity to God? Oh Sister (answered the other) how many things are promised to him euery day, and not one of a thousand kept or performed? If wee haue made him such a promise, and some of our weaker-witted sisters do performe it for vs, no doubt but he will accept it in part of payment. Yea but Sister, replied the second Nun againe, there is another danger lying in the way: If we proue to be with childe, how shall we doe then? Sister (quoth our couragious wench) thou art affraide of harme before it happen: if it come so to passe, let vs consider on it then: thou art but a Nouice in matters of such moment, we are prouided of a thousand meanes, whereby to preuent conception. Or, if they should faile, we are so surely fitted, that the world shall neuer know it. Let it suffice, our liues must not be by any so much as suspected, our Monastery questioned, or our Religion rashly scandalized. Thus shee schooled her younger Sister in wit, albeit as forward as shee in will, and longed as desirouslie, to know what kinde of creature man was.

After some other questions, how this intention of theirs might bee safely brought to full effect: the sprightly Nun that had wit at will, thus answered. You see Sister (quoth she) it is now the houre of midday, when all the rest of our sisterhood are quiet in their Chambers, because we are then allowed to sleep, for our earlier rising to morning Mattins. Here are none in the Garden now but our selues, and while I awake him, bee you the watch, and afterward follow mee in my fortune, for I will valiantly leade you the way. *Massetto* immitating a Dogges sleepe, heard all this conspiracie intended against him, and longed as earnestly till shee came to awake him. Which being done, he seeming very simple and fortish, and she chearing him with flattering behauiour: into the close Arbour they went, which the Sunnes bright eye could not pierce into, and there I leaue it to the Nunnes owne approbation, whether *Massetto* was a man rationall, or no. Ill deeds require longer time to contriue, then act; and both the Nuns hauing bene with *Massetto* at this new forme of confession, were enioyned (by him) such an easie and silent penance, as brought them the oftner to shrift, and made him to prooue a very perfect Confessour.

Desires obtayned, but not fully satisfied, doe commonly vrge more frequent accesse, then wisedome thinkes expedient, or can continue without discouery. Our two iouiall Nunnes, not a little proud of their priuate stolne pleasures, so long resorted to the close Arbour, till another Sister, who had often obserued their haunt thither, by meanes of a little hole in her Window; that shee began to suspect them with *Massetto*, and imparted the same to two other Sisters, all three concluding, to accuse them before the Lady Abbesse. But vpon a further conference had with the Offenders, they changed opinion, tooke the same oath as the forewomen had done; and because they would be free from any taxation at all:

all : they reuealed their aduentures to the other three ignorants, and ſo fell all eight into one formall confederacie, but by good and warie obſeruation, leaſt the Abbeſſe her ſelfe ſhould deſcry them; finding poore *Maſſetto* ſuch plenty of Garden-worke, as made him verie doubtfull in pleaſing them all.

It came to paſſe in the end, that the Lady Abbeſſe who all this while imagined no ſuch matter, walking all alone in the garden on a day, found *Maſſetto* ſleeping vnder an Almond tree, hauing then very litle buſineſſe to doe, becauſe he had wrought hard all the night before. She obſerued him to be an hanſome man, young, luſty, well-limbde and proportioned, hauing a merciſull commiſſeration of his dumbeneſſe and deafenes, being perſwaded alſo in like manner, that if hee were an Eunuch too, hee deſerued a thouſand times the more to be pitied. The ſeaſon was exceeding hot, and he lay downe ſo careleſly to ſleepe, that ſomthing was noted, wherein ſhee intended to be better reſolued, almoſt falling ſicke of the other Nunnes diſeaſe. Hauing awaked him, ſhe commanded him by ſignes that he ſhould follow her to her chamber, where he was kept cloſe ſo long, that the Nunnes grew offended, becauſe the Gardiner came not to his daily labour.

Well may you imagine that *Maſſetto* was no miſſe-proud man now, to be thus aduanced from the Garden to the Chamber, and by no worſe woman then the Lady Abbeſſe her ſelfe: what ſignes, ſhews, or what language he ſpeaks there, I am not able to expreſſe; onely it appeared, that his behauiour pleaſed her ſo well, as it procured his daily repairing thether; and acquainted her with ſuch familiar conuerſation, as ſhe would haue condemned in the Nunnes her daughters, but that they were wiſe enough to keepe it from her. Now began *Maſſetto* to conſider, that hee had vndertaken a taske belonging to great *Hercules*, in giuing content to ſo many, aud by continuing dumbe in this maner, it would redound to his no meane detriment. Whereupon, as he was one night ſitting by the Abbeſſe, the ſtring that retained his tongue from ſpeech, brake on a ſodaine, and thus he ſpake.

Madam, I haue often heard it ſaid, that one Cocke may doe ſeruice to ten ſeueral Hennes, but ten men can very hardly euen with all their beſt endeauour, giue full ſatisfaction euery way to one woman; and yet I am tied to content nine, which is farre beyond the compaſſe of my power to do. Already haue I performed ſo much Garden and Chamber-work, that I confeſſe my ſelfe ſtarke tired, and can trauaile no further, & therefore let me entreate you to lycenſe my departure hence, or finde ſome meanes for my better eaſe. The Abbeſſe hearing him ſpeake, who had ſo long bene there dumbe, being ſtricken into admiration, and accounting it almoſt a miracle, ſaid. How commeth this to paſſe? I verily beleeued thee to be dumbe. Madam (quoth *Maſſetto*) ſo I was indeed, but not by Nature; onely I had a long lingering ſicknes which bereft me of ſpeech, and which I haue not onely recouered againe this night, but ſhal euer remaine thankfull to you for it.

The

The Abbeſſe verily credited his anſwer, demanding what he meant in ſaying, that he did ſeruice to nine? Madam, quoth he, this were a dangerous queſtion, and not eaſily anſwered before all the eight Siſters. Vpon this reply, the Abbeſſe plainely perceiued, that not onely ſhe had fallen into folly, but all the Nunnes likewiſe cried guilty too: wherfore being a woman of ſound diſcretion, ſhe would not grant that *Maſſetto* ſhould depart, but to keepe him ſtill about the Nunnes buſineſſe, becauſe the Monaſtery ſhould not be ſcandalized by him. And the *Fac-totum* being dead a little before, his ſtrange recouery of ſpeech reuealed, and ſome things elſe more neerely concerning them: by generall conſent, & with the good liking of *Maſſetto*, he was created the *Fac-totum* of the Monaſterie.

All the neighboring people dwelling thereabout, who knew *Maſſetto* to be dumbe, by fetching home wood daily from the Foreſt, and diuers employments in other places, were made to beleeue, that by the Nunnes deuout prayers and diſcipline, as alſo the merite of the Saint, in whoſe honour the Monaſtery was built and erected, *Maſſetto* had his long reſtrained ſpeech reſtored, and was now become their ſole *Fac-totum*, hauing power now to employ others in drudgeries, and eaſe himſelfe of all ſuch labours. And albeit he made the Nunnes to be fruitfull, by encreaſing ſome ſtore of yonger ſiſters, yet all matters were ſo cloſe and cleanly carried, as it was neuer talkt of, till after the death of the Ladie Abbeſſe, when *Maſſetto* beganne to grow in good yeeres, and deſired to returne home to his natiue abiding, which (within a while after) was granted him.

Thus *Maſſetto* being rich and olde, returned home like a wealthy father, taking no care for the nurſing of his children, but bequeathed them to the place where they were bred and borne, hauing (by his wit and ingenious apprehenſion) made ſuch a benefit of his youthfull yeeres, that now he merrily tooke eaſe in his age.

A Querry of the Stable, belonging to Agilulffo, King of the Lombardes, found the meanes of acceſſe to the Queenes bed, without any knowledge or conſent in her. This being ſecretly diſcouered by the King, and the party known, he gaue him a marke, by ſhearing the haire of his head. Whereupon, he that was ſo ſhorne, ſheared likewiſe the heads of all his fellowes in the lodging, and ſo eſcaped the puniſhment intended towards him.

The Second Nouell.

wherein is ſignified, the prouidence of a wiſe man, when he ſhall haue reaſon to vſe reuenge. And the cunning meanes of another, when hee compaſſeth craft to defend himſelfe from perill.

WHen the Nouel of *Philoſtratus* was concluded, which made ſome of the Ladies bluſh, and the reſt to ſmile: it pleaſed the Queene, that Madam *Pampinea* ſhould follow next, to ſecond the other gone before; when ſhe, ſmiling on the whole aſſembly, began thus. There are

ſome

ſome men ſo ſhallow of capacity, that they will (neuertheleſſe) make ſhew of knowing and vnderſtanding ſuch things, as neither they are able to doe, nor appertaine to them: whereby they will ſometimes reprehend other new errours, and ſuch faults as they haue vnwillingly committed, thinking thereby to hide their owne ſhame, when they make it much more apparant and manifeſt. For proofe whereof, faire company, in a contrary kinde I will ſhew you the ſubtill cunning of one, who (perhaps) might bee reputed of leſſe reckning then *Maſſetto*; and yet he went beyond a King, that thought himſelfe to be a much wiſer man.



Agilulffo, King of *Lombardie*, according as his Predeceſſours had done before him, made the principall ſeate of his Kingdome, in the Citie of *Pauia*, hauing embraced in mariage, *Tendelinga*, the late left widdow of *Vetario*, who likewiſe had beene King of the *Lombards*; a moſt beautifull, wiſe and vertuous Lady, but made vnfortunate by a miſchance. The occurrences and eſtate of the whole Realme, being in an honourable, quiet and well ſetled condition, by the diſcreete care and prouidence of the King; a Querrie appertaining to the Queenes Stable of Horſe, being a man but of meane and low quality, though comely of perſon, and of equall ſtature to the King; became immeaſurably amorous of the Queene. And becauſe his baſe and ſeruile condition, had endued him with ſo much vnderſtanding, as to know infallibly, that his affection was mounted beyond the compaſſe of conueniencie: wiſely he concealed it to himſelfe, not acquainting any one therewith, or daring ſo much, as to diſcouer it either by lookes, or any other affectionate behauiour.

And although hee liued vtterly hopeleſſe, of euer attaining to his hearts deſires; yet notwithſtanding, hee proudly gloried, that his loue had ſoared ſo high a pitch, as to be enamoured of a Queene. And dayly, as the fury of his flame encreaſed; ſo his cariage was farre aboue his fellowes and companions, in the performing of all ſuch ſeuiceable duties, as any way he imagined might content the Queene. Whereon enſued, that whenſoeuer ſhee roade abroad to take the ayre, ſhee vſed oftner to mount on the Horſe, which this Querrie brought when ſhee made her choiſe, then any of the other that were led by his fellowes. And this did heeſteeme as no meane happineſſe to him, to order the ſtirrope for her mounting, and therefore gaue dayly his due attendance: ſo that, to touch

the

the Stirrop,but (much more) to put her foote into it, or touch any part of her garments,he thought it the onely heauen on earth.

But, as we ſee it oftentimes come to paſſe, that by how much the lower hope declineth, ſo much the higher loue aſcendeth; euen ſo fell it out with this poore Querry; for, moſt irkeſome was it to him, to endure the heauy waight of his continuall oppreſſions, not hauing any hope at all of the very leaſt mitigation. And being vtterly vnable to relinquiſh his loue diuers times he reſolued on ſome deſperate concluſion, which might yet giue the world an euident teſtimony, that he dyed for the loue he bare to the Queene. And vpon this determination, hee grounded the ſucceſſe of his future fortune, to dye in compaſſing ſome part of his deſire, without either ſpeaking to the Queene, or ſending any miſſiue of his loue; for to ſpeake or write, were meerely in vaine, and drew on a worſer conſequence then death,which he could beſtow on himſelfe more eaſily, and when he liſted.

No other courſe now beleagers his braines,but onely for ſecret acceſſe to the Queenes bed, and how he might get entrance into her Chamber, vnder colour of the King, who (as he knew very well) ſlept many nights together from the Queene. Wherefore, to ſee in what manner, and what the vſuall habit was of the King, when he came to keepe companie with his Queene: he hid himſelfe diuers nights in a Gallery, which was betweene both their lodging Chambers. At length,he ſaw the King come forth of his Chamber,himſelfe all alone, with a faire night-mantle wrapt about him, carrying a lighted Taper in the one hand, and a ſmall white Wand in the other,ſo went he on to the Queenes lodging; and knocking at the doore once or twice with the wand, and not vſing any word, the doore opened,the light was left without, and he entered the Chamber, where he ſtayed not long, before his returning backe againe, which likewiſe very diligently he obſerued.

So familiar was he in the Wardrobe, by often fetching and returning the King and Queenes furnitures; that the fellowes to the ſame Mantle which the King wore when he went to the Queene, very ſecretly he conueighed away thence with him, being prouided of a Light, and the very like Wand. Now beſtowes he coſtly bathings on his body, that the leaſt ſent of the Stable might not be felt about him; and finding a time ſutable to his deſire,when he knew the King to bee at reſt in his owne Lodging, and all elſe ſleeping in their bed; cloſely he ſteals into the Gallery, where alighting his Taper,with the Tinder purpoſely brought thither,the Mantle folded about him, and the Wand in his hand,valiantly he aduentures vpon his liues perill. Twice hee knockt ſoftly at the doore, which a wayting woman immediately opened, and receyuing the Light, went forth into the Gallery, while the ſuppoſed King, was conuerſing with the Queene.

Alas good Queene, heere is a ſinne committed, without any guiltie thought in thee, as (within a while after) it plainely appeared. For, the Querry hauing compaſſed what he moſt coueted, and fearing to forfeite his

his life by delay, when his amorous desire was indifferently satisfied: returned backe as he came, the sleepy waiting woman not so much as looking on him, but rather glad, that she might get her to rest againe. Scarcely was the Querrie stept into his bed, vnheard or discerned by any of his fellowes, diuers of them lodging both in that and the next Chamber: but it pleased the King to visite the Queene, according to his wonted manner, to the no little meruaile of the drowsie wayting woman, who was neuer twice troubled in a night before. The King being in bed, whereas alwayes till then, his resort to the Queene, was altogether in sadnesse and melancholly, both comming and departing without speaking one word: now his Maiestie was become more pleasantly disposing, whereat the Queene began not a little to meruaile. Now trust mee Sir, quoth shee this hath beene a long wished, and now most welcome alteration, vouch, safing twice in a night to visite me, and both within the compasse of onhoure; for it cannot be much more, since your being here, and now comeming againe.

The King hearing these words, sodainely presumed, that by some counterfeit person or other, the Queene had beene this night beguiled: wherefore (very aduisedly) hee considered, that in regard the party was vnknowne to her, and all the women about her; to make no outward appearance of knowing it, but rather concealed it to himselfe. Farre from the indiscretion of some haire-braind men, who presently would haue answered and sworne; I came not hither this night, till now. Whereupon many dangers might ensue, to the dishonour and preiudice of the Queene: beside, her error being discouered to her, might afterward be an occasion, to vrge a wandring in her appetite, and to couet after change againe. But by this silence, no shame redounded to him or her, whereas praying, must needs be the publisher of open infamie: yet was hee much vexed in his minde, which neither by lookes or words hee would discouer, but pleasantly said to the Queene, Why Madam, although I was once heere before to night, I hope you mislike not my second seeing you, nor if I should please to come againe. No truly Sir, quoth she, I onely desire you to haue care of your health. Well, said the King, I will follow your counsaile, and now returne to mine owne lodging againe, committing my Queene to her good rest.

His blood boyling with rage and distemper, by such a monstrous iniurie offered him; he wrapt his night-mantle about him, and leauing his Chamber, imagining, that whatsoeuer he was, needs he must be one of his owne house: he tooke a light in his hand, and conuayed it into a little Lanthorne, purposing to be resolued in his suspition. No guests or strangers were now in his Court, but onely such as belonged to his houshold, who lodged altogether about the Escurie and Stables, being there appointed to diuers beds. Now, this was his conceite, that whosoeuer had beene so lately familiar with the Queene, his heart and his pulse could (as yet) be hardly at rest, but rather would be troubled with apparant agitation, as discouering the guilt of so great an offender. Many Chambers had

had he paſſed thorow, where all were ſoundly ſleeping, and yet he felt both their breſts and pulſes.

At laſt he came to the lodging of the man indeede, that had ſo impudently vſurped his place, who could not as yet ſleepe, for ioy of his atchieued aduenture. When he eſpied the King come in, knowing well the occaſion of his ſearch, he began to waxe very doubtfull, ſo that his heart and pulſe beating extreamely, he felt a further addition of feare, as being confidently perſwaded, that there was now no other way but death, eſpecially if the King diſcouered his agony. And although many conſiderations were in his braine, yet becauſe he ſaw that the King was vnarmed, his beſt refuge was, to make ſhew of ſleepe, in expectation what the King intended to doe. Among them all he had ſought, yet could not find any likelihood, whereby to gather a grounded probability; vntill he came to this Querry, whoſe heart and pulſes laboured ſo ſtrongly, that he ſaid to himſelfe, yea mary, this is the man that did the deede.

Neuertheleſſe, purpoſing to make no apparance of his further intention, he did nothing elſe to him, but drawing forth a paire of ſheares, which purpoſely he brought thither with him, he clipped away a part of his lockes, which (in thoſe times) they vſed to weare very long, to the end that he might the better know him the next morning, and ſo returned backe to his lodging againe. The Querry, who partly ſaw, but felt what was done to him; perceiued plainely (being a ſubtill ingenious fellow) for what intent he was thus marked. Wherefore, without any longer dallying, vp he roſe, and taking a paire of ſheares, wherewith they vſed to trim their Horſes; ſoftly he went from bed to bed, where they all lay yet ſoundly ſleeping, and clipt away each mans locke from his right eare, in the ſelfe ſame manner as the King had done his, and being not perceiued by any one of them, quietly he laide him downe againe.

In the morning, when the King was riſen, he gaue command that before the Pallace gates were opened, all his whole Family ſhould come before him, as inſtantly his will was fulfilled. Standing all vncouered in his preſence, he began to conſider with himſelfe, which of them was the man that he had marked. And ſeeing the moſt part of them to haue their lockes cut, all after one and the ſelfe ſame manner; marualing greatly, he ſaide to himſelfe. The man whom I ſeeke for, though he be but of meane and baſe condition, yet it plainely appeareth, that he is of no deiect or common vnderſtanding. And ſeeing, that without further clamour and noyſe, he could not find out the party he looked for, he concluded, not to win eternall ſhame, by compaſſing a poore reuenge: but rather (by way of admonition (to let the offender know in a word, that he was both noted and obſerued. So turning to them all, he ſaide; He that hath done it, let him be ſilent, and doe ſo no more, and now depart about your buſineſſe.

Some other turbulent ſpirited man, no impriſonments, tortures, examinations, and interrogations, could haue ſerued his turne; by which courſe of proceeding, he makes the ſhame to be publikely knowne, which

reaſon

reaſon requireth to keepe concealed. But admit that condigne vengeance were taken, it diminiſheth not one tittle of the ſhame, neither qualifieth the peoples bad affections, who will laſh out as liberally in ſcandal, and vpon the very leaſt babling rumor. Such therfore as heard the Kings words, few though they were, yet truly wiſe; maruelled much at them, & by long examinations among themſelues, queſtioned, but came far ſhort of his meaning; the man onely excepted whom indeed they concerned, and by whom they were neuer diſcouered, ſo long as the King liued, neither did he dare at any time after, to hazard his life in the like action, vnder the frownes or fauour of Fortune.

Vnder colour of Confeſſion, and of a moſt pure conſcience, a faire yong Gentlewoman, being amourouſly affected to an honeſt man, induced a deuoute and ſolemne religious Friar, to aduiſe her in the meanes (without his ſuſpition or perceiuing) how to enioy the benefit of her friend, and bring her deſires to their full effect.

The Third Nouell.

Declaring, that the lewd qualities of ſome perſons, oftentimes miſguide good people, into great and greeuous errors.

WHen Madam *Pampinea* ſate ſilent, and the Querries boldneſſe equalled with his crafty cunning, and great wiſedom in the King had paſſed amongſt them with a generall applauſe; the Queene turning her ſelfe to Madam *Philomena*, appointed her to follow next in order as the reſt had done before her: whereupon *Philomena* began after this maner.



It is my purpoſe, to acquaint you with a notable mockerie, which was performed (not in ieſt, but earneſt) by a faire Gentlewoman, to a graue and deuoute Religious Friar, which will yeelde ſo much the more pleaſure and recreation, to euery ſecular vnderſtander, if but diligently he or ſhe doe obſerue, how commonly thoſe Religious perſons (at leaſt the moſt part of them) like notorious fooles, are the inuenters of new courſes and cuſtomes, as thinking themſelues more wiſe and skilful in all things then any other; yet proue to be of no worth or validity, addicting the verie beſt of all their deuices, to expreſſe their owne vileneſſe of mind, and fatten themſelues in their ſtyes like to pampered

pered Swine. And assure your selues worthy Ladies, that I doe not tell this tale onely to follow the order enioyned me; but also to informe you that such Saint-like holy Sirs, of whom we are too opinionate and credulous, may be, yea and are (diuers times) cunningly met withall, in theyr craftinesse, not onely by men, but likewise some of our owne sexe, as I shall make it apparant to you.

In our owne City (more full of craft and deceit, then loue or faithfull dealing) there liued not many yeeres since, a Gentlewoman of good spirit, highly minded, endued with beauty and all commendable qualities, as any other woman (by nature) could be. Her name, or any others, concerned in this Nouel, I meane not to make manifest, albeit I know them, because some are yet liuing, and thereby may be scandalized; and therefore it shall suffice to passe them ouer with a smile. This Gentlewoman, seeing her selfe to be descended of very great parentage, and (by chance) married to an Artezan, a Cloathyer or Draper, that liued by the making and selling of cloth. Shee could not (because he was a Tradesman) take downe the height of her minde; conceiuing, that no man of meane condition (how rich soeuer) was worthy to enioy a Gentlewoman in marriage. Obseruing moreouer, that with all his wealth and treasure, he vnderstood nothing better, then to open skeines of yarne, fill shuttles, lay webbes in his Loomes, or dispute with his Spinsters, about their businesse.

Being thus ouer-swayed with her proud opinion, she would no longer be embraced or regarded by him in any manner, sauing only because she could not refuse him, but would find some other for her better satisfaction, who might seeme more worthy of her respect, then the Draper her Husband did. Hereupon shee fell so deepe in loue with a verie honest man of our City also, and of indifferent yeeres, as what day shee saw him not, shee could take no rest the night ensuing. The man himselfe knew nothing hereof, and therefore was the more careless: and she being curious, nice, yet wisely considerate, durst not let him vnderstand it, neither by any womans close conueyed message, nor yet by Letters, as fearing the perils which happen in such cases. But her eye obseruing his dayly walkes and resorts, gaue her notice of his often conuersing with a religious Friar, who albeit he was a fat and corpulent man, yet notwithstanding, because he seemed to leade a sanctimonious life, and was reported to be a most honest man, she perswaded her selfe, that he might be the best meanes betweene her and her friend.

Hauing considered with her selfe, what course was best to be obserued in this case; vppon a day apt and conuenient, she went to the Conuent where he kept, and hauing caused him to be called, shee told him, that if his leysure so serued, very gladly would she be confessed, and onely had made her choice of him. The holy man seeing her to be a Gentlewoman (as indeed she was) willingly heard her; & when she had confessed what she could, she had yet another matter to acquaint him withall, and thereupon thus she began.

Holy

Holy Father,it is no more then conuenient that I ſhould haue recourſe to you,to be aſſiſted by your helpe and counſell,in a matter which I will impart vnto you. I know, that you are not ignorant of my parents and husband, of whom I am affected as deerely as his life, for proofe whereof,there is not any thing that I can deſire, but immediately I haue it of him,he being a moſt rich man,and may very ſufficiently affoord it.In regard where of, I loue him equally as my ſelfe, and (ſetting aſide my beſt endeuours for him) I muſt tell you one thing quite contrary to his liking and honour: no woman could more worthily deſerue death, then my ſelfe. Vnderſtand then (good Father) that there is a man, whoſe name I know not, but he ſeemeth to be honeſt,and of good worth; moreouer (if I am not deceiued) he reſorteth oftentimes to you, being faire and comely of perſon, going alwayes in blacke garments of good price and value. This man, imagining (perhaps) no ſuch minde in mee, as truely there is; hath often attempted mee, and neuer can I be at my doore, or window, but hee is alwayes preſent in my ſight, which is not a little diſpleaſing to me;he watcheth my walks,and much I meruaile,that he is not now heere.

Let me tell you holy Sir,that ſuch behauiours doe many times lay bad imputations vpon very honeſt women,yet without any offence in them. It hath often run in my mind,to let him haue knowledge thereof by my brethren: but afterward I conſidered, that men (many times) deliuer meſſages in ſuch ſort, as draw on very vngentle anſwers,whereon grow words,and words beget actions. In which regard, becauſe no harme or ſcandall ſhould enſue, I thought it beſt to be ſilent; determining, to acquaint you rather therewith, then to any other,as well becauſe you ſeem to be his friend,as alſo in regard of your office, which priuiledgeth you to correct ſuch abuſes,not onely in friends, but alſo in ſtrangers. Know other women there are, (more is the pitty) who perhaps are better diſpoſed to ſuch ſuites then I am,and can both like and allow of ſuch courting, otherwiſe then I can doe; as being willing to embrace ſuch offers, and (happily) loath to yeeld deniall. Wherefore,moſt humbly I entreate you good Father (euen for our bleſſed Ladies ſake)that you would giue him a friendly reprehenſion,and aduiſe him to vſe ſuch vnmanly meanes no more heereafter. With which words, ſhe hung downe her head in her boſome, cunningly diſſembling, as if ſhee wept, wiping her eyes with her Handkerchife,when not a teare fel from them,but indeed were dry enough.

The holy Religious man, ſo ſoone as he heard her deſcription of the man, preſently knew whom ſhee meant, and highly commending the Gentlewoman for her good and vertuous ſeeming diſpoſition, beleeued faithfully all that ſhee had ſaid: promiſing her, to order the matter ſo well and diſcreetly, as ſhee ſhould not any more bee offended. And knowing her to be a woman of great wealth (after all their vſuall manner, when they caſt forth their fiſhing nets for gaine:) liberally he commeuned Almes-deeds, and dayly workes of Charity, recounting to her

beſide his owne particular neceſſities. Then, giuing him two peeces of Gold, ſhe ſaid: I pray you (good Father) to be mindfull of me, and if he chance to make any deniall, tell him, that I ſpake it my ſelfe to you, and by the way of a ſad complaint her confeſſion being ended, and penance eaſie enough enioyned her, ſhe promiſed to make her parents bountifull Benefactors to the Conuent, and put more money into his hand, deſiring him in his Maſſes, to remember the ſoules of her deceaſed friends, and ſo returned home to her houſe.

Within a ſhort while after her departure, the Gentleman, of whome ſhe had made this counterfeit complaint, came thither, as was his vſuall manner, and hauing done his duty to the holy Father, they ſate downe together priuately, falling out of one diſcourſe into another. At the length, the Friar (in very louing and friendly ſort) mildly reproued him for ſuch amorous glaunces, and other purſuites, which (as he thought) he dayly vſed to the Gentlewoman, according to her owne ſpeeches. The Gentleman meruailed greatly therat, as one that had neuer ſeene her, and very ſildome paſſed by the way where ſhee dwelt, which made him the bolder in his anſweres; wherein the Confeſſour interrupting him, ſaide. Neuer make ſuch admiration at the matter, neyther waſte more words in deniall, becauſe they cannot ſerue thy turne; I tell thee plainely, I heard theſe words euen from her owne ſelfe, in a very ſorowfull and ſad complaint. And though (perhaps) heereafter, thou canſt very hardly refraine ſuch follies, yet let me tell thee ſo much of her (and vnder the ſeale of abſolute aſſurance) that ſhe is the onely woman of the world, who in my iudgement, doth abhorre all ſuch baſe behauiour. In regard therefore of thine owne honour, as alſo not to vex and preiudice ſo vertuous a Gentlewoman, I pray thee refraine ſuch idleneſſe henceforward, and ſuffer her to liue in peace.

The Gentleman being a little wiſer then his ghoſtly Father, perceiued immediately, the notable pollicy of the Woman. Whereupon, making ſomewhat baſhfull appearance of any error already committed, he ſaid; He would afterward be better aduiſed So departing from the Friar, hee went on directly, to paſſe by the houſe where the Gentlewoman dwelt, and ſhee ſtood alwayes ready on her watch, at a little Window, to obſerue when he would walke that way. And ſeeing him comming, ſhee ſhewed her ſelfe ſo ioyfull and gracious to him, as he eaſily vnderſtood, whereto the ſubſtance of the holy Fathers chiding tended. And from that time forward, he vſed dayly though in couert manner (to the no litle liking of the Gentlewoman and himſelfe) to make his paſſage thorough that ſtreet, vnder colour of ſome important occaſions there concerning him.

Soone after, it being plainely diſcerned on either ſide, that the one was as well contented with theſe walkes, as the other could be: ſhe deſired to enflame him a little further, by a more liberall illuſtration of her affection towards him, when time and place affoorded conuenient opportunity. To the holy Father againe ſhe went, (for ſhe had beene too

long

long from ſhrift) and kneeling downe at his feete, intended to begin her confeſſion in teares; which the Friar perceiuing, ſorrowfully demanded of her, what new accident had happened? Holy Father (quoth ſhee) no uouell accident, but only your wicked and vngracious friend, by whom (ſince I was heere with you, yea, no longer agoe then yeſterday) I haue beene ſo wronged, as I verily beleeue that he was borne to bee my mortall enemy, and to make me do ſomthing to my vtter diſgrace for euer; and whereby I ſhall not dare to be ſeene any more of you my deare Father. How is this? anſwered the Friar, hath he not refrained from afflicting you ſo abſiuely?

Pauſing a while, and breathing foorth many a diſſembled ſighe, thus ſhee replyed. No truely, holy Father, there is no likelyhood of his abſtaining, for ſince I made my complaint to you, he belike taking it in euil part, to bee contraried in his wanton humours, hath (meerely in deſpight) walked ſeauen times in a day by my doore, whereas formerly he neuer vſed it aboue once or twice. And well were it (good Father) if he could be contented with thoſe walkes, and gazing glances which hee dartes at me: but growne he is ſo bolde and ſhameleſſe, that euen yeſterday, (as I tolde you) hee ſent a woman to me, one of his Pandoraes as it appeared, and as if I had wanted either Purſes or Girdles, hee ſent me by her, a Purſe and a Girdle. Whereat I grew ſo greeuouſly offended, as had it not bene for my due reſpect and feare of God, and next the ſacred reuerence I beare to you my ghoſtly Father, doubtleſſe I had done ſome wicked deede. Neuertheleſſe, happily I withſtood it, and will neither ſay or do any thing in this caſe, till firſt I haue made it knowne to you.

Then I called to minde, that hauing redeliuered the Purſe and Girdle to his ſhee-Meſſenger, which brought them with lookes ſufficient to declare my diſcontentment: I called her backe againe, fearing leaſt ſhe would keep them to her ſelfe, and make him beleeue that I had receiued them (as I haue heard ſuch kinde of women vſe to do ſometimes) and in anger I ſnatcht them from her, and haue brought them you, to the end, that you may giue him them againe; and tell him, I haue no need of any ſuch things, thankes be to heauen and my husband, as no woman can be better ſtored then I am. Wherefore good Father, purpoſely am I now come to you, to let him know, that if he will not abſtaine from thus moleſting me, I will diſcloſe it to my Husband, Father, and Brethren, whatſoeuer befall. For I had rather he ſhould receiue the iniury, then I to be cauſeleſly blamed for him; wherein good Father tell me, if I dooe not well. With many counterfet ſobbes, ſighes, and teares theſe words were deliuered; and drawing foorth from vnder her gowne, a very faire and rich purſe, as alſo a Girdle of great worth, ſhe threw them into the Friars lappe.

He verily beleeuing all this falſe report, being troubled in his minde thereat beyond meaſure, tooke the Gentlewoman by the hand, ſaying: Daughter, if thou be offended at theſe impudent follies, aſſuredly I can-

not blame thee, nor will any wiſeman reprooue thee for it; and I commend thee for following my counſell. But let me alone for ſchooling of my Gentleman, ill hath he kept his promiſe made to me; wherefore, in regard of his former offence, as alſo this other ſo lately committed, I hope to ſet him in ſuch a heate, as ſhall make him leaue off from further iniurying thee. Suffer not thy ſelfe to be conquerd by choller, in diſcloſing this to thy kindred or husband, becauſe too much harme may enſue thereon. But feare not any wrong to thy ſelfe; for I am a true witneſſe of thine honeſty and vertue.

Now began ſhe to ſeeme better comforted, and forbearing to play on this ſtring any longer, as well knowing the couetouſnes of him and his equals, ſhe ſaid: Holy Father, ſome few nights paſt, me thought in my ſleepe, that diuers ſpirits of my kindred appeared to me in a viſion, who me thought were in very great pains, and deſired nothing els but Almes; eſpecially my Godmother, who ſeemed to be afflicted with ſuch extrem pouerty, that it was moſt pittifull to behold. And I am halfe perſwaded, that her torments are the greater, ſeeing me troubled with ſuch an enemy to goodneſſe. Wherefore (good Father) to deliuer her ſoule and the others out of thoſe fearfull flames, among your infinite other deuout prayers, I would haue you to ſay the forty Maſſes of S. *Gregory*, as a means for their happy deliuerance; and ſo ſhe put ten ducates into his hand. Which the holy man accepted thankfully, and with good words, as alſo many ſingular examples, confirmed her bountifull deuotion: and when he had giuen her his benediction, home ſhe departed.

After that the Gentlewoman was gone, hee ſent for his friend whom ſhe ſo much ſeemed to be troubled withall; and when he was come, hee beholding his Holy Father to looke diſcontentedly, thought, that now he ſhould heare ſome newes from his Miſtreſſe, and therefore expected what he would ſay. The Friar, falling into the courſe of his former reprehenſions, but yet in more rough and impatient manner, ſharpely checkt him for his immodeſt behauiour towards the Gentlewoman, in ſending her the Purſe and Girdle. The Gentleman, who as yet could not gueſſe whereto his ſpeeches tended; ſomewhat coldly and temperately, denied the ſending of ſuch tokens to her, to the end that he would not bee vtterly diſcredited with the good man, if ſo bee the Gentlewoman had ſhewne him any ſuch things. But then the Frier, waxing much more angry, ſternly ſaid. Bad man as thou art, how canſt thou deny a manifeſt truth? See ſir, theſe are none of your amorous tokens? No, I am ſure you doe not know them, nor euer ſaw them till now.

The Gentleman, ſeeming as if he were much aſhamed, ſaide. Truely Father I do know them, and confeſſe that I haue done ill, and very greatly offended: but now I will ſweare vnto you, ſeeing I vnderſtand how firmely ſhe is affected, that you ſhall neuer heare any more complaint of me. Such were his vowes and proteſtations, as in the end the ghoſtly Father gaue him both the Purſe and Girdle: then after he had preached, and ſeuerely coniured him, neuer more to vexe her with any gifts at all, and

be

he binding himſelfe thereto by a ſolemne promiſe, he gaue him licenſe to depart. Now grew the Gentleman very iocond, being ſo ſurely certifyed of his Miſtreſſes loue, and by tokens of ſuch worthy eſteeme; wherefore no ſooner was he gone from the Frier, but he went into ſuch a ſecret place, where he could let her behold at her Window, what precious tokens he had receiued from her, whereof ſhe was extraordinarily ioyfull, becauſe her deuices grew ſtill better and better; nothing now wanting, but her huſbands abſence, vpon ſome iourney from the City, for the full effecting of her deſire.

Within a few dayes after, ſuch an occaſion hapned, as her husband of neceſſity muſt iourney to *Geneway*; and no ſooner was he mounted on horſebacke, taking leaue of her and all his friends: but ſhe, being ſure he was gone, went in all haſt to her Ghoſtly Father; and, after a few faigned outward ſhewes, thus ſhe ſpake. I muſt now plainely tell you, holy Father, that I can no longer endure this wicked friend of yours; but becauſe I promiſed you the other day, that I would not do any thing, before I had your counſell therein, I am now come to tell you, the iuſt reaſon of my anger, and full purpoſe to auoid all further molleſtation.

Your friend I cannot terme him, but (queſtionleſſe) a very diuell of hell: this morning, before the breake of day, haning heard (but how, I know not) that my husband was ridden to *Geneway*: got ouer the wall into my Garden, and climbing vp a tree which ſtandeth cloſe before my Chamber window, when I was faſt aſleepe, opened the Caſement, and would haue entred in at the window. But, by great good fortune, I awaked, and made ſhew of an open out-cry: but that he entreated me, both for Gods ſake and yours, to pardon him this error, and neuer after he would preſume any more to offend me. When he ſaw, that (for your ſake) I was ſilent, he cloſed faſt the window againe, departed as he came, and ſince I neuer ſaw him, or heard any tidings of him. Now iugde you, holy Father, whether theſe be honeſt courſes, or no, and to be endured by any ciuill Gentlewoman; neither would I ſo patiently haue ſuffered this, but onely in my dutifull reuerence to you.

The Ghoſtly Father hearing this, became the ſorrowfulleſt man in the world, not knowing how to make her any anſwere, but only demanded of her diuers times, whether ſhe knew him ſo perfectly, that ſhe did not miſtake him for ſome other? Quoth ſhe, I would I did not know him from any other. Alas deere daughter (replied the Frier) what can more be ſayd in this caſe, but that it was ouer-much boldneſſe, and very ill done, and thou ſhewedſt thy ſelfe a worthy wiſe woman, in ſending him away ſo mercifully, as thou didſt. Once more I would entreat thee (deere and vertuous daughter) ſeeing grace hath hitherto kept thee from diſhonor, and twice already thou haſt credited my counſell, let me now aduiſe thee this laſt time. Spare ſpeech, or complaining to any other of thy friends, and leaue it to me, to try if I can ouercome this vnchained diuell, whom I tooke to be a much more holy man. If I can recall him from this ſenſuall appetite, I ſhall account my labour well employed; but if I cannot do it, hence-

forward

forward (with my bleſſed benediction) I giue thee leaue to do, euen what thy heart will beſt tutor thee to. You ſee Sir (ſaid ſhee) what manner of man he is, yet would I not haue you troubled or diſobeyed, only I deſire to liue without diſturbance, which worke (I beſeech you) as beſt you may: for I promiſe you, good Father, neuer to ſolicite you more vppon this occaſion: And ſo, in a pretended rage, ſhe returned backe from the ghoſtly Father.

Scarſely was ſhe gone forth of the Church, but in commeth the man that had (ſuppoſedly) ſo much tranſgreſſed; and the Fryer taking him aſide, gaue him the moſt iniurious words that could be vſed to a man, calling him diſloyall, periured, and a traitor. He who had formerly twice perceiued, how high the holy mans anger mounted, did nothing but expect what he would ſay; and, like a man extreamly perplexed, ſtroue how to get it from him, ſaying; Holy Father, how come you to be ſo heinouſly offended? What haue I done to incenſe you ſo ſtrangely? Heare me diſhoneſt wretch anſwered the Frier, liſten what I ſhall ſay vnto thee. Thou anſwereſt me, as if it were a yeare or two paſt, ſince ſo foule abuſes were by thee committed, and they almoſt quite out of thy remembrance. But tell me wicked man; where waſt thou this morning, before breake of the day? Whereſoeuer I was, replyed the Gentleman, mee thinkes the tidings come very quickly to you. It is true, ſaid the Frier, they are ſpeedily come to me indeed, and vpon vrgent neceſſity.

After a little curbing in of his wrath, ſomewhat in a milder ſtraine, thus he proceeded. Becauſe the Gentlewomans husband is iourneyed to *Geneway*, proues this a ladder to your hope, that to embrace her in your armes, you muſt climbe ouer the Garden wall, like a treacherous robber in the night ſeaſon, mount vp a tree before her Chamber window, open the Caſement, as hoping to compaſſe that by importunity, which her ſpotleſſe chaſtity will neuer permit. There is nothing in the world, that poſſibly ſhe can hate more then you, and yet you will loue her whether will or no. Many demonſtrations her ſelfe hath made to you, how retrograde you are to any good conceit of her, and my louing admoniſhments might haue had better ſucceſſe in you, then as yet they ſhew of outward apparance. But one thing I muſt tell you, her ſilent ſufferance of your iniuries all this while, hath not bin in any reſpect of you, but at my earneſt entreaties, and for my ſake. But now ſhe will be patient no longer, and I haue giuen her free licenſe, if euer hereafter you offer to attempt her any more, to make her complaint before her Brethren, which will redound to your no meane danger.

The Gentleman, hauing wiſely collected his Loue-leſſon out of the Holy Fathers angry words, pacified the good old man ſo well as he could with very ſolemne promiſes and proteſtations, that he ſhould heare (no more) any misbehauiour of his. And being gone from him, followed the inſtructions giuen in her complaint, by climbing ouer the Garden Wall, aſcending the Tree, and entering at the Caſement, ſtanding ready open to welcome him. Thus the Friers ſimplicity, wrought on by her

moſt

moſt ingenious ſubtiltie, made way to obtaine both their longing deſires.

A yong Scholler, named Felice, *enſtructed* Puccio di Rinieri, *how to become rich in a very ſhort time. While* Puccio *made experience of the inſtructions taught him*; Felice *obtained the fauour of his Daughter.*

The fourth Nouell.

Wherein is declared, what craft and ſubtilty ſome wily wits can deuiſe, to deceiue the ſimple, and compaſſe their owne deſires.



After that *Philomena* had finiſhed her Tale, ſhe ſate ſtill; and *Dioneus* with faire and pleaſing Language) commended the Gentlewomans quaint cunning, but ſmiling at the Confeſſors witleſſe ſimplicity. Then the Queene, turning with chearefull looks towards *Pamphilus*, commaunded him to continue on their delight; who gladly yeelded, and thus began. Madame, many men there are, who while they ſtriue to climbe from a good eſtate, to a ſeeming better; doe become in much worſe condition then they were before. As happened to a neighbour of ours, and no long time ſince, as the accident will better acquaint you withall.

According as I haue heard it reported, neere to Saint *Brancazio*, there dwelt an honeſt man, and ſome-what rich, who was called *Puccio di Rinieri*, and who addicted all his paines and endeauours to Alchimy: wherefore, he kept no other family, but onely a widdowed daughter, and a ſeruant; and becauſe he had no other Art or exerciſe, he vſed often to frequent the market place. And in regard he was but a weake witted man and a gourmand or groſſe feeder; his language was the more harſh and rude; like to our common Porters or ſottiſh men, and his carriage alſo abſurd, boore-like, and clowniſh. His daughter, being named *Monna Iſabetta*, aged not aboue eight and twenty, or thirty yeeres; was a freſh indifferent faire, plumpe, round woman, cherry cheekt, like a Queene-Apple; and, to pleaſe her Father, fed not ſo ſparingly, as otherwiſe ſhe would haue done, but when ſhe communed or ieſted with any body, ſhe would talke of nothing, but onely concerning the great vertue in Alchimy, extolling it aboue all other Arts.

Much about this ſeaſon of the yeare, there returned a young Scholler from

from *Paris*, named *Felice*, faire of complexion, comely of perſon, ingeniouſly witted, and skilfully learned, who (ſoone after) grew into familiarity, with *Puccio*: now becauſe he could reſolue him in many doubts, depending on his profeſſion of Alchimy, (himſelfe hauing onely practiſe, but no great learning) he vſed many queſtions to him, ſhewed him very eſpeciall matters of ſecrecy, entertaining him often to dinners and ſuppers, whenſoeuer he pleaſed to come and conuerſe with him; and his daughter likewiſe, perceiuing with what fauour her Father reſpected him, became the more familiar with him, allowing him good regard and reuerence.

The young man continuing his reſort to the Houſe of *Puccio*, and obſeruing the widdow to be faire, freſh, and prettily formall; he began to conſider with himſelfe, what thoſe things might be, wherein ſhe was moſt wanting; and (if he could) to ſaue anothers labour, ſupply them by his beſt endeauours. Thus not alwayes carrying his eyes before him, but vſing many backe and circumſpect regards, he proceeded ſo farre in his wylie apprehenſions, that (by a few ſparkes cloſe kept together) he kindled part of the ſame fire in her, which began to flame apparantly in him. And hee very wittily obſeruing the ſame, as occaſion firſt ſmiled on him, and allowed him fauourable opportunity, ſo did hee impart his intention to her.

Now albeit he found her plyant enough, to gaine phyſicke for her owne griefe, as ſoone as his; yet the meanes and manner were (as yet) quite out of all apprehenſion. For ſhee in no other part of the World, would truſt her ſelfe in the young mans company, but onely in her Fathers houſe; and that was a place out of all poſſibility, becauſe *Puccio* (by a long continued cuſtome) vſed to watch well-neere all the night, as commonly he did, each night after other, neuer ſtirring foorth of the roomes, which much abated the edge of the young mans appetite. After infinite intricate reuoluings, wheeling about his buſied braine, he thought it not altogether an *Herculian* taske, to enioy his happineſſe in the houſe, and without any ſuſpition, albeit *Puccio* kept ſtill within doores, and watched as hee was wont to doe.

Vpon a day as he ſate in familiar conference with *Puccio*, he began to ſpeake vnto him in this manner; I haue many times noted, kinde friend *Puccio*, that all thy deſire and endeauour is, by what meanes thou mayſt become very rich, wherein (me thinkes) thou takeſt too wide a courſe, when there is a much neerer and ſhorter way, which *Michell Scotus*, and other his aſſociates, very diligently obſerued and followed, yet were neuer willing to inſtruct other men therein; whereby the myſterie might bee drowned in obliuion, and proſecuted by none but onely great Lords, that are able to vndergoe it. But becauſe thou art mine eſpeciall friend, and I haue receiued from thee infinite kind fauours; whereas I neuer intended, that any man (by me) ſhould be acpuainted with ſo rare a ſecret; if thou wilt imitate the courſe as I ſhall ſhew thee, I purpoſe to teach it thee in full perfection. *Puccio* being very earneſtly deſirous to vnderſtand the

ſpeedi-

ſpeedieſt way to ſo ſingular a myſterie, firſt began to entreat him (with no meane inſtance) to acquaint him with the rules of ſo rich a Science; and afterward ſware vnto him, neuer to diſcloſe it to any perſon, except hee gaue his conſent thereto; affirming beſide, that it was a rarity, not eaſie to bee comprehended by very apprehenſiue iudgements. Well (quoth *Felice*) ſeeing thou haſt made me ſuch a ſound and ſolemne promiſe, I will make it knowne vnto thee.

Know then friend *Puccio*, the Philoſophers do hold, that ſuch as couet to become rich indeed, muſt vnderſtand how to make the Stone: as I will tell thee how, but marke the manner very heedfully. I do not ſay, that after the Stone is obtained, thou ſhalt bee euen as rich as now thou art; but thou ſhalt plainly perceiue, that the very groſeſt ſubſtances, which hitherto thou haſt ſeene, all of them ſhalbe made pure golde: and ſuch as afterward thou makeſt, ſhall be more certaine, then to go or come with *Aua fortis*, as now they do. Moſt expedient is it therefore, that when a man will go diligently about this buſineſſe, and purpoſeth to proſecute ſuch a ſingular labour, which will and muſt continue for the ſpace of 40. nights, he muſt giue very carefull attendance, wholly abſtaining from ſleepe, ſlumbering, or ſo much as nodding all that while.

Moreouer, in ſome apt and conuenient place of thy houſe, there muſt be a forge or furnace erected, framed in decent and formall faſhion, and neere it a large table placed, ordered in ſuch ſort, as ſtanding vpright on thy feete, and leaning the reines of thy backe againſt it; thou muſt ſtande ſtedfaſtly in that manner euery night, without the leaſt motion or ſtirring, vntill the breake of day appeareth, and thine eyes ſtill vppon the Furnace fixed, to keepe euer in memory, the true order which I haue preſcribed. So ſoone as the morning is ſeene, thou mayeſt (if thou wilt) walke, or reſt a little vpon thy bed, and afterward go about thy buſineſſe, if thou haue any. Then go to dinner, attending readily till the euenings approch, preparing ſuch things as I will readily ſet thee downe in writing, without which there is not any thing to bee done; and then returne to the ſame taske againe, not varying a iot from the courſe directed. Before the time be fully expired, thou ſhalt perceiue many apparant ſignes, that the ſtone is ſtill in abſolute forwardneſſe, but it will bee vtterly loſt if thou fayle in the leaſt of all the obſeruances. And when the experience hath crowned thy labour, thou art ſure to haue the Philoſophers ſtone, and thereby ſhalt be able to enrich all, and worke wonders beſide.

Puccio inſtantly replyed. Now truſt me Sir, there is no great difficultie in this labour, neither doth it require any extraordinary length of time: but it may very eaſily be followed and performed, and (by your friendly fauor, in helping to direct the Furnace and Table, according as you imagine moſt conuenient) on Sunday at night next, I will begin my taske. The Scholler being gone, he went to his daughter, and tolde her all the matter, and what he had determined to do: which ſhee immediately vnderſtood ſufficiently, and what would enſue on his nightly watching in that manner, returning him anſwer; that whatſoeuer he liked and allowed

ed of, it became not her way to mislike. Thus they continued in this kinde concordance, till Sunday night came. When *Puccio* was to begin his experience, and *Felice* to set forward vpon his aduenture. Concluded it was, that euery night the Scholler must come to Supper, partly to bee a witnesse of his constant performance, but more especially for his owne aduantage.

The place which *Puccio* had chosen, for his hopefull attaining to the Philosophers Stone, was close to the Chamber where his daughter lay hauing no other separation or diuision, but an old ruinous tottring wall. So that, when the Scholler was playing his prize, *Puccio* heard an vnwonted noise in the house, which he had neuer obserued before, neither knew the wall to haue any such motion: wherefore, not daring to stirre from his standing, least all should be marrd in the very beginning, he called to his daughter, demanding, what busie labour she was about? The widdow, being much addicted to frumping, according as questions were demanded of her, and (perhaps) forgetting who spake to her, pleasantly replied: Whoop Sir, where are we now? Are the Spirits of Alchimy walking in the house, that we cannot lye quietly in our beds?

Puccio meruailing at this answere, knowing she neuer gaue him the like before; demanded againe, what she did? The subtle wench, remembring that she had not answered as became her, said: Pardon mee Father, my wits were not mine owne, when you demanded such a sodaine question; and I haue heard you say an hundred times, that when folke go supperles to bed, either they walke in their sleepe, or being awake, talke very idely, as (no doubt) you haue discern'd by me. Nay daughter (quoth he) it may be, that I was in a waking dreame, and thought I heard the olde wall totter: but I see I was deceiued, for now it is quiet and still enough. Talke no more good Father, saide she, least you stirre from your place, and hinder your labour: take no care for mee, I am able enough to haue care of my selfe.

To preuent any more of these nightly disturbances, they went to lodge in another part of the house, where they continued out the time of *Puccioes* paines, with equall contentment to them both, which made her diuers times say to *Felice*: You teach my father the cheese grounds of Alchimy, while we helpe to waste away his treasure. Thus the Scholler being but poore, yet well forwarded in Learning, made vse of *Puccioes* folly, and found benefit thereby, to keepe him out of wants, which is the bane and ouerthrow of numberlesse good wits. And *Puccio* dying, before the date of his limited time, because he failed of the Philosophers Stone, *Isabetta* ioyned in marriage with *Felice*, to make him amends for instructing her father, by which meanes he came to be her husband.

Ricciardo *surnamed the Magnifico, gaue a Horſe to Signior* Franceſco Vergilliſi, *on condition that he might ſpeake to his wife in his preſence; which he did, and ſhe not returning him any anſwer, made anſwer to himſelfe on her behalfe, and according to his anſwer, ſo the effect followed.*

The Fifth Nouell.

Wherein is deſcribed the frailety of ſome Women, and folly of ſuch Husbands, as leaue them alone to their owne diſpoſition.



Amphilus hauing ended his nouell of *Puccio* the Alchimiſt, the Queene fixing her eye on Madam *Eliza*, gaue order, that ſhee ſhould ſucceed. She looking ſomewhat more auſterely then any of the reſt not in any ſpleen, but as it was her vſuall manner, thus began. The world containeth ſome particular people, who beleeue (becauſe they know ſomething) that others are ignorant in all things, who for the moſt part, while they intend to make a ſcorne of other men, vpon triall, finde themſelues to carry away the ſcorne. Therefore, I account it no meane folly in them, who (vpon no occaſion) wil tempt the power of another mans wit or experience. But becauſe all men and women are not of my opinion; I meane that you ſhall perceiue it more apparantly, by an accident happening to a Knight of *Piſtoia*, as you ſhall heare by me related.

In the Town of *Piſtoia*, bordering vpon *Florence*, there liuing not long ſince, a Knight named Signieur *Franceſco*, deſcended of the linage or family of the *Vergelliſi*, a man very rich, wiſe, and in many things prouident, but gripple, couetous, and too cloſe handed, without reſpect to his worth and reputation. He being called to the Office of *Podeſta* in the City of *Millaine*, furniſhed himſelfe with all things (in honourable manner) beſeeming ſuch a charge; onely, a comely horſe for his owne ſaddle) excepted, which he knew not by any meanes how to compaſſe, ſo loath hee was to lay out money, albeit his credit much depended thereon.

At the ſame time, there liued in *Piſtoya* likewiſe, a young man, named *Ricciardo*, deriued of meane birth, but very wealthy, quicke witted, and of commendable perſon, alwayes going ſo neate, fine, and formall in his apparrell, that he was generally tearmed the *Magnifico*, who had long time affected, yea, and cloſely courted, (though without any aduantage or ſucceſſe) the Lady and wife of Signior *Franceſco*, who was very beauti-

full, vertuous, and chaſte. It ſo chanced, that this *Magnifico* had the very choiſeſt and goodlieſt ambling Gelding in all Tuſcany, which hee loued dearely, for his faire forme, and other good parts. Vpon a flying rumor throughout *Piſtoria*, that he daily made loue to the foreſaid Ladie, ſome buſie-body put it into the head of Signior *Franceſco*, that if he pleaſed to requeſt the Gelding, the *Magnifico* would frankely giue it him, in regard of the loue he bare to his wife.

The baſe-minded Knight, coueting to haue the Horſe, and yet not to part with any money, ſent for the *Magnifico*, deſiring to buy his fayre Gelding of him, becauſe he hoped to haue him of free gift. The *Magnifico* hearing this requeſt, was very ioyfull, and thus anſwered; Sir, if you would giue me all the wealth which you poſſeſſe in this world, I wil not ſell you my horſe, rather I wil beſtow him on you as a Gentlemans gift: but yet vpon this condition, that before you haue him deliuered, I may with your licenſe, and in your preſence ſpeake a few words to your vertuous Ladie, and ſo farre off in diſtance from you, as I may not be heard by any, but onely her ſelfe. Signior *Franceſco*, wholly conducted by his baſe auaricious deſire, and meaning to make a ſcorne at the *Magnifico*, made anſwer, that he was well contented to let him ſpeak with her when he would; and leauing him in the great Hall of the houſe, went to his wiues Chamber, and told her how eaſily he might enioy the horſe, commanding her forthwith to come and heare what he could ſay to her, only ſhe ſhould abſtaine, and not returne him any anſwer. The Lady with a modeſt bluſh, much condemned this folly in him, that his couetouſnes ſhould ſerue as a cloake to couer any vnfitting ſpeeches which her chaſte eares could neuer endure to heare. Neuertheleſſe being to obey her huſbands will, ſhe promiſed to do it, and followed him down into the Hall, to heare what the *Magnifico* would ſay. Againe he there confirmed the bargaine made with her husband, and ſitting downe by her in a corner of the Hall, farre enough off from any ones hearing, taking her curteouſly by the hand, thus he ſpake.

Worthy Lady, it ſeemeth to me, that you are ſo truly wiſe, as no doubt you haue long ſince perceiued, what vnfeigned affection your beauty (far excelling) hath compelled me to beare you. Setting aſide thoſe commendable qualities and ſingular vertues glorioufly ſhining in you, and powerfull enough to make a conqueſt of the ſtouteſt courage. I held it vtterly needleſſe, to let you vnderſtand by words, how faithfull the loue is I bear you, were it not much more feruent and conſtant, then euer any other man can expreſſe to a woman. In which condition it ſhall ſtill continue, without the leaſt blemiſh or impayre, ſo long as I enioy life or motion; yea, and I dare aſſure you, that if in the future world, affection may containe the ſame powerfull dominion, as it doth in this; I am the man borne to loue you perpetually. Whereby you may reſt confidently perſwaded, that you enioy not any thing, how poore or precious ſoeuer it be, which you can ſo ſolemnely account to be your owne, and in the trueſt title of right, as you may my ſelfe, in all that I haue, or for ever ſhall be mine.

To

To confirme your opinion in this caſe by any argument of greater power, let me tell you, that I ſhould repute it as my faireſt and moſt gracious fortune, if you would command me ſome ſuch ſeruice, as conſiſteth in mine ability to performe, and in your courteous fauour to accept, yea, if it were to trauaile thorow the whole world, right willing am I, & obedient. In which regard faire Madam, if I be ſo much yours, as you heare I am, I may boldly aduenture (and not without good reaſon) to acquaint your chaſte eares with my earneſt deſires, for on you onely depends my happineſſe, life, and abſolute comfort, and as your moſt humble ſeruant, I beſeech you (my deereſt good, and ſole hope of my ſoule) that rigour may dwell no longer in your gentle breſt, but Lady-like pitty and compaſſion, whereby I ſhall ſay, that as your diuine beauty enflamed mine affections, euen ſo it extended ſuch a mereiful qualification, as exceeded all my hope, but not the halfe part of your pitty.

Admit (myracle of Ladies) that I ſhould die in this diſtreſſe: Alas, my death would be but your diſhonour; I cannot be termed mine owne murtherer, when the Dart came from your eye that did it, and muſt remaine a witnes of your rigor. You cannot then chuſe but call to minde, and ſay within your owne ſoule: Alas, what a ſinne haue I committed, in being ſo vnmercifull to my *Magnifico*. Repentance then ſerues to no purpoſe, but you muſt anſwer for ſuch vnkinde cruelty. Wherefore, to preuent ſo blacke a ſcandall to your bright beauty, beſide the ceaſeleſſe acclamations, which will dog your walkes in the day time, & breake your quiet ſleepes in the night ſeaſon, with fearefull ſights and gaſtly apparitions, houering and haunting about your bed; let all theſe mooue you to milde mercy, and ſpill not life, when you may ſaue it.

So the *Magnifico* ceaſing, with teares ſtreaming from his eyes, and ſighes breaking from his heart, hee ſate ſtill in expectation of the Ladies anſwere, who made neither long or ſhort of the matter, neither Tilts nor Tourneying, nor many loſt mornings and euenings, nor infinite other ſuch like Offices, which the *Magnifico* (for her ſake) from time to time had ſpent in vaine, without the leaſt ſhew of acceptation, or any hope at all to winne her loue: mooued now in this very houre, by theſe ſolemne proteſtations, or rather moſt preuailing aſſeuerations, ſhe began to finde that in her, which (before) ſhe neuer felt, namely Loue. And although (to keepe her promiſe made to her husband) ſhee ſpake not a word: yet her heart heauing, her ſoule throbbing, ſighes intermixing, and complexion altering, could not hide her intended anſwer to the *Magnifico*, if promiſe had beene no hinderance to her will. All this while the *Magnifico* ſate as mute as ſhe, and ſeeing ſhe would not giue him any anſwere at all, he could not chooſe but wonder thereat, yet at length perceiued, that it was thus cunningly contriued by her husband. Notwithſtanding, obſeruing well her countenance, that it was in a quite contrary temper, another kinde of fire ſparkling in her eye, other humours flowing, her pulſes ſtrongly beating, her ſtomacke riſing, and ſighes ſwelling, all theſe were arguments of a change, and motiues to aduance his hope. Taking

courage by this tickliſh perſwaſion, and inſtructing his mind with a new kinde of counſell; he would needes anſwer himſelfe on her behalfe, and as if ſhe had vttered the words, thus he ſpake.

Magnifico, and my friend, ſurely it is a long time ſince, when I firſt noted thine affection toward me to be very great and moſt perfect, but now I am much more certain thereof, by thine owne honeſt and gentle ſpeeches, which content me as they ought to do. Neuertheleſſe, if heretofore I haue ſeemed cruell and vnkinde to thee, I would not haue thee thinke, that my heart was any way guilty of my outward ſeuerity, but did euermore loue thee, and held thee deerer then any man liuing. But yet it became me to do ſo, as well in feare of others, as for the renowne of mine owne reputation. But now is the time at hand, to let thee knowe more clearly, whether I do affect thee or no: as a iuſt guerdon of thy conſtant loue which long thou haſt, and ſtill doeſt beare to me. Wherefore, comfort thy ſelfe, and dwell on this vndoubted hope, becauſe Signior *Franceſco* my husband, is to be abſent hence for many dayes, beeing choſen *Podeſta* at *Millaine*, as thou canſt not chooſe but heare, for it is common through the Country.

I know (for my ſake) thou haſt giuen him thy goodly ambling Gelding, and ſo ſoone as he is gone, I promiſe thee vpon my word, and by the faithfull loue I beare thee; that I will haue further conference vvith thee, and let thee vnderſtand ſomewhat more of my minde. And becauſe this is neither fitting time nor place, to diſcourſe on matters of ſuch ſerious moment: obſerue heereafter, as a ſignall, when thou ſeeſt my Crimſon Skarfe hanging in the window of my Chamber, which is vpon the Garden ſide, that euening (ſo ſoone as it is night) come to the Garden gate, with wary reſpect that no eye do diſcouer thee, and there thou ſhalt finde me walking, and ready to acquaint thee with other matters, according as I ſhall finde occaſion.

When the *Magnifico* in the perſon of the Lady, had ſpoken thus, then he returned her this anſwer. Moſt vertuous Lady, my ſpirits are ſo tranſported with extraordinary ioy, for this your gracious and welcome anſwer, that my ſences faile me, and all my faculties quite forſake me, that I cannot giue you ſuch thankes as I would. And if I could ſpeak equally to my deſire, yet the ſeaſon ſuites not therewith, neither were it conuenient that I ſhould be ſo troubleſome to you. Let me therfore humbly beſeech you, that the deſire I haue to accompliſh your will (which wordes auaile not to expreſſe) may remaine in your kinde conſideration. And as you haue commanded me, ſo will I not faile to performe it accordingly, and in more thankfull manner, then (as yet) I am able to let you know. Now there reſteth nothing elſe to do, but vnder the protection of your gracious pardon, I to giue ouer ſpeech, and you to attend your woorthy Husband.

Notwithſtanding all that hee had ſpoken, yet ſhee replyed not one word; wherefore the *Magnifico* aroſe, and returned to the Knight, who went to meete him, ſaying in a lowd laughter. How now man? Haue I

not

not kept my promiſe with thee? No Sir, anſwered the *Magnifico*, for you promiſed I ſhould ſpeake with your wife, and you haue made mee talke to a marble Statue. This anſwere, was greatly pleaſing to the Knight, who, although hee had an vndoubted opinion of his wife; yet this did much more ſtrengthen his beliefe, and hee ſaid. Now thou confeſſeſt thy Gelding to bee mine? I doe, replied the *Magnifico*, but if I had thought, that no better ſucceſſe would haue enſued on the bargaine; without your motion for the horſe, I would haue giuen him you: and I am ſorie that I did not, becauſe now you haue bought my horſe, and yet I haue not ſold him. The Knight laughed heartily at this anſwer, and boing thus prouided of ſo faire a beaſt, hee rode on his ioruney to *Millaine*, and there entred into his authority of *Podeſta*.

The Lady remained now in liberty at home, conſidering on the *Magnificoes* words, and likewiſe the Gelding, which (for her ſake) was giuen to her husband. Oftentimes ſhee ſaw him paſſe too and fro before her windowe, ſtill looking when the Flagge of defiance ſhould be hanged forth, that hee might fight valiantly vnder her Colours. The Story ſaith, that among many of her much better meditations, ſhee was heard to talke thus idely to her ſelfe. What doe I meane? Wherefore is my youth? The olde miſerable man is gone to *Millaine*, and God knoweth when hee comes backe againe, euer, or neuer. Is dignity preferred before wedlockes holy duty, and pleaſures abroade, more then comforts at home? Ill can age pay youths arrerages, when time is ſpent, and no hope ſparde. Actions omitted, are oftentimes repented, but done in due ſeaſon, they are ſildome ſorrowed for. Vpon theſe vn-Lady-like priuate conſultations, whether the window ſhewed the ſignall or no; it is no matter belonging to my charge: I ſay, husbands are vnwiſe, to graunt ſuch ill aduantages, and wiues much worſe, if they take hold of them, onely iudge you the beſt, and ſo the Tale is ended.

Ricciardo Minutolo *fell in loue with the wife of* Philippello Fighinolfi, *and knowing her to be very iealous of her Husband, gaue her to vnderſtand, that hee was greatly enamoured of his Wife, and had appointed to meete her priuately in a Bathing houſe, on the next day following: where ſhee hoping to take him tardie with his cloſe compacted Miſtreſſe, found her ſelfe to be deceiued by the ſaid* Ricciardo.

The ſixth Nouell.

Declaring, how much perſeuerance, and a couragious ſpirit is auailable in loue.

NO more remained to be ſpoken by Madame *Eliza*, but the cunning of the *Magnifico*, being much commended by all the company: the Queene commanded Madame *Fiammetta*, to ſucceede next in order with one of her Nouels, who (ſmiling) made anſwer that ſhee would, and began thus. Gracious Ladies, mee thinkes wee haue ſpoken enough already, concerning our owne Citie, which as it aboundeth copiouſly in all commodities, ſo is it an example alſo to euery conuenient purpoſe. And

as Madam *Eliza* hath done, by recounting occaſions happening in another World, ſo muſt we now leape a little further off, euen ſo far as Naples, to ſee how one of thoſe Saint-like Dames that nicely ſeemes to ſhun loues allurings, was guided by the good ſpirit to a friend of hers, and taſted of the fruite, before ſhe knew the flowers. A ſufficient warning for you to apprehend before hand what may follow after, and to let you ſee beſide, that when an error is committed, how to bee diſcreete in keeping it from publike knowledge.



In the Citie of Naples, it being of great antiquity, and (perhaps) as pleaſantly ſituated, as any other City in all Italy, there dwelt ſometime a yong Gentleman, of noble parentage, & well knowne to bee wealthy, named *Ricciardo Minutolo*, who (although hee had a Gentlewoman of excellent beauty, and worthy the verie kindeſt affecting to his wife; yet his gadding eye gazed elſewhere, and he became enamored of another, which (in generall opinion) ſurpaſſed all the Neapolitane Women elſe, in feature, fauour, and the choyſeſt perfections, ſhee being named Madam *Catulla* wife to as gallant a young Gentleman, called *Philippello Fighinolſi*, who moſt dearly he loued beyond all other, for her vertue and admired chaſtity.

Ricciardo louing this Madam *Catulla*, and vſing all ſuch means whereby the grace and liking of a Lady might be obtained; found it yet a matter beyond poſſibility, to compaſſe the height of his deſire: ſo that many deſperate and dangerous reſolutions beleagred his braine, ſeeming ſo intricate and vnlikely to affoord any hopefull yſſue, as hee wiſhed for nothing more then death. And death (as yet) being deafe to all his earneſt imprecations, delayed him on in lingering afflictions: and continuing ſtill in ſuch an extreame condition, he was aduiſed by ſome of his beſt friends, vtterly to abſtaine from this fond purſuit, becauſe his hopes were meerely in vaine, and Madam *Catulla* prized nothing more precious to her in the World, then vnſtayned loyaltie to her Husband; and yet ſhee lined in ſuch extreame iealouſie of him, as fearing leaſt ſome bird flying in the ayre ſhould ſnatch him from her.

Ricciardo not vnacquainted with this her iealous humour, as well by credible hearing thereof, as alſo by daily obſeruation, began to conſider with himſelfe, that it were beſt for him, to diſſemble amorous affection in ſome other place, and (henceforward) to ſet aſide all hope, of euer enioying

ioying the loue of Madam *Catulla*, becauſe he was now become the ſeruant to another Gentlewoman, pretending (in her honour) to performe many worthy actions of Armes, Iouſtes, Tournaments, and all ſuch like noble exerciſes, as he was wont to doe for Madam *Catulla*. So that moſt of the people of Naples, but eſpecially Madam *Catulla*, becam verily perſwaded, that his former fruitleſſe loue to her was quite changed, and the new elected Lady had all the glory of his beſt endeuours, perſeuering ſo long in this opinion, as now it paſſed abſolutely for currant. Thus ſeemed he now as meere a ſtranger to her, whoſe houſe before he familiarly frequented, yet as a neighbour gaue her the daies ſalutations, according as he chanced to ſee her, or meet her.

It came ſo to paſſe, that it being now the delightfull Summer ſeaſon, when all Gentlemen and Gentlewomen vſed to meete together (according to a cuſtome long obſerued in that Country) ſporting along on the Sea Coaſt, dining and ſupping there very often, *Ricciardo Minutolo* happened to heare, that Madam *Catulla* (with a company of her friends) intended alſo to be preſent there among them; at which time, conſorted with a ſeemely traine of his confederates, he reſorted thither, & was graciouſly welcommed by Madam *Catulla*, where he pretended no willing long time of tarrying, but that *Catulla* and the other Ladies were faine to entreate him, diſcourſing of his loue to his new elected Miſtreſſe: which *Minutolo* graced with ſo ſolemne a countenance, as it miniſtred much more matter of conference, all coueting to know what ſhe was.

So farre they walked, and held on this kinde of diſcourſing, as euery Lady and Gentlewoman, waxing weary of too long a continued argument, began to ſeparate her ſelfe with ſuch an aſſociate as ſhee beſt liked, and as in ſuch walking women are wont to doe; ſo that Madam *Catulla* hauing few females left with her, ſtayed behind with *Minutolo*, who ſodainly ſhot forth a word concerning her husband *Philipello*, and of his louing another woman beſide her ſelfe. She that was ouermuch iealous before, became ſo ſodainely ſet on fire to know what ſhee was of whom *Minutolo* ſpake, as ſhe ſat ſilent a long while, til being able to containe no longer, ſhee entreated *Ricciardo* euen for the Ladies ſake, whoſe loue he had ſo deuoutly embraced, to reſolue her certainly in this ſtrange alteration of her husband; whereunto thus he anſwered.

Madam, you haue ſo ſtraitly coniured me, by vrging the remembrance of her; for whoſe ſake I am not able to deny any thing you can demand, as I am readie therein to pleaſure you. But firſt you muſt promiſe me, that neither you, or any other perſon for you, ſhall at any time diſcloſe it to your Husband, vntill you haue ſeene by effect, that which I haue told you proueth to be true: & when you pleaſe, I wil inſtruct you how your ſelfe ſhall ſee it. The Ladie was not a little ioyfull to be thus ſatisfied in her Husbands folly, and conſtantly crediting his words to be true, ſhee ſware a ſolemne oath, that no one aliue ſhould euer know it. So ſtepping a little further aſide, becauſe no liſtening eare ſhould heare him, thus he beganne.

Lady,

Lady, if I did loue you now ſo effectually as heeretofore I haue done, I ſhould be very circumſpect, in vttering any thing which I immagined might diſtaſt you. I know not whether your husband *Philipello*, were at any time offended, becauſe I affected you, or beleeued that I receiued any kindnes from you : but whether it were ſo or no, I could neuer diſcerne it by any outward apparance. But now awaiting for the opportunity of time, which he conceiued ſhould affoord me the leaſt ſuſpition, he ſeekes to compaſſe that, which (I doubt) he feares I would haue done to him, in plaine termes Madam, to haue his pleaſure of my wife. And as by ſome carriages I haue obſerued, within few daies paſt he hath ſolicited & purſued his purpoſe very ſecretly, by many Ambaſſages, and meanes, as (indeed) I haue learned from her ſelfe, and alwaies ſhe hath returned in ſuch anſwers, as ſhe receyued by my direction.

And no longer ago Madam, then this very morning, before my comming hither, I found a woman-meſſenger in my houſe, in very cloſe conference with my Wife, when growing doubtfull of that which was true indeede, I called my Wife, enquiring, what the woman would haue with her; and ſhe told me, it was another purſuite of *Philipello Fighinolfi*, who (quoth ſhee) vpon ſuch anſwers as you haue cauſed me to ſend him from time to time, perhappes doth gather ſome hope of preuailing in the end, which maketh him ſtill to importune me as he doth. And now he aduentureth ſo farre, as to vnderſtand my finall intention, hauing thus ordered his complot, that when I pleaſe, I muſt meet him ſecretly in a houſe of this City, where he hath prepared a Bath ready for me, and hopeth to enioy the end of his deſire, as very earneſtly he hath ſolicited me thereto. But if you had not commanded me, to hold him in ſuſpenſe with ſo many friuolous anſwers, I would ere this, haue ſent him ſuch a meſſage, as ſhould haue bene little to his liking.

With patience Madam I endured all before, but now (me thinkes) he proceedeth too farre, which is not any way to be ſuffered; and therefore I intended to let you know it, that you may perceiue, how wel you are rewarded for the faithfull and loyall loue you beare him, and for which, I was euen at deaths dore. Now, becauſe you may be the ſurer of my ſpeeches, not to be any lyes or fables, & that you may (if you pleaſe) approue the truth by your owne experience, I cauſed my wife to ſend him word, that ſhe would meet him to morrow at the Bathing-houſe appointed, about the houre of noone-day, when people repoſe themſelues in regard of the heates violence; with which anſwer the woman returned very iocondly. Let me now tell you Lady, I hope you haue better opinion of my wit, then any meaning in me, to ſend my wife thither; I rather did it to this end, that hauing acquainted you with his treacherous intent, you ſhould ſupply my wiues place, by ſauing both his reputation and your owne, and fruſtrating his vnkind purpoſe to me. Moreouer, vpon the view of his owne deluſion, wrought by my wife in meere loue to you, he ſhall ſee his foule ſhame, and your moſt noble care, to keepe the rites of marriage betweene you ſtill vnſtained.

Madam

Madame *Catulla*, hauing heard this long and vnpleasing report, without any consideration, either what he was that tolde the tale, or what a treason he intended against her: immediately (as iealous persons vse to doe) she gaue faith to his forgerie, and began to discourse many things to him, which imagination had often misguided her in, against her honest minded husband, and enflamed with rage, suddenly replied; that shee would doe according as he had aduised her, as being a matter of no difficulty. But if he came, she would so shame and dishonour him, as no woman whatsoeuer should better schoole him. *Ricciardo* highly pleased herewith, & being derswaded, that his purpose would take the full effect: confirmed the Lady in her determination with many words more; yet putting her in memory, to keepe her faithfull promise made, without reuealing the matter to any liuing person, as shee had sworne vpon her faith.

On the morrow morning, *Ricciardo* went to an auncient woman of his acquaintance, who was the Mistresse of a Bathing-house, and there where he had appointed Madame *Catulla*, that the Bath should bee prepared for her, giuing her to vnderstand the whole businesse, and desiring her to be fauourable therein to him. The woman, who had beene much beholding to him in other matters, promised very willingly to fulfill his request, concluding with him, both what should be done and said. She had in her house a very darke Chamber, without any window to affoord it the least light, which Chamber she had made ready, according to *Ricciardoes* direction, with a rich Bed therein, so soft and delicate as possible could bee, wherein he entred so soone as he had dined, to attend the arriuall of Madame *Catulla*. On the same day, as she had heard the speeches of *Ricciardo*, and gaue more credit to them then became her; shee returned home to her house in wonderfull impatience. And *Philippello* her husband came home discontentedly too, whose head being busied about some worldly affaires, perhaps he looked not so pleasantly, neither vsed her so kindly, as he was wont to doe. Which *Catulla* perceiuing, shee was ten times more suspicious then before, saying to her selfe. Now apparent trueth doth disclose it selfe, my husbands head is troubled now with nothing else, but *Ricciardoes* wife, wih whom (to morrow) he purposeth his meeting; wherein he shall be disappointed, if I liue; taking no rest at all the whole night, for thinking how to handle her husband.

What shall I say more? On the morrow, at the houre of mid-day accompanied onely with her Chamber-mayde, and without any other alteration in opinion; shee went to the house where the Bath was promised, and meeting there with the olde woman, demaunded of her, if *Philippello* were come thither as yet or no? The woman, being well instructed by *Ricciardo*, answered: Are you shee that should meete him heere? Yes, replied *Catulla*. Goe in then to him (quoth the woman) for he is not farre off before you.

Madame *Catulla*, who went to seeke that which shee would not finde, being brought vailed into the darke Chamber where *Ricciardo* was, entred

tred into the Bath, hoping to finde none other there but her husband, and the cuſtome of the Country, neuer diſallowed ſuch meetings of men with their wiues, but held them to be good and commendable. In a counterfeit voyce he bad her welcome, and ſhe, not ſeeming to be any other then ſhee was indeed, entertained his imbracings in as louing manner; yet not daring to ſpeake, leaſt he ſhould know her, but ſuffered him to proceede in his owne errour.

Let paſſe the wanton follies paſſing betweene them, and come to Madame *Catulla*, who finding it a fit and conuenient time, to vent forth the tempeſt of her ſpleene, began in this manner. Alas! how mighty are the misfortunes of women, and how ill requited is all the loyall loue of many wiues to their husbands? I, a poore miſerable Lady, who, for the ſpace of eight yeeres now fully compleated, haue loued thee more dearely then mine owne life, finde now (to my hearts endleſſe griefe) how thou waſteſt and conſumeſt thy deſires, to delight them with a ſtrange woman, like a moſt vile and wicked man as thou art. With whom doeſt thou now imagine thy ſelfe to be? Thou art with her, whom thou haſt long time deluded by falſe blandiſhments, feigning to affect her, when thou doateſt in thy deſires elſe-where. I am thine owne *Catulla*, and not the wife of *Ricciardo*, trayterous and vnfaithfull man, as thou art. I am ſure thou knoweſt my voyce, and I thinke it a thouſand yeeres, vntill wee may ſee each other in the light, to doe thee ſuch diſhonour as thou iuſtly deſerueſt, dogged, diſdainfull, and villainous wretch. By conceiuing to haue another woman in thy wanton embraces, thou haſt declared more iouiall diſpoſition, and demonſtrations of farre greater kindneſſe, then domeſticke familiarity. At home thou lookeſt ſower, ſullen or ſurly, often froward, and ſeldome well pleaſed. But the beſt is, whereas thou intendeſt this husbandrie for another mans ground, thou haſt (againſt thy will) beſtowed it on thine owne, and the water hath runne a contrary courſe, quite from the current where thou meantſt it.

What anſwer canſt thou make, deuill, and no man? What, haue my words ſmitten thee dumbe? Thou mayeſt (with ſhame enough) hold thy peace, for with the face of a man, and loue of an husband to his wife, thou art not able to make any anſwere.

Ricciardo durſt not ſpeake one word, but ſtill expreſſed his affable behauiour towards her, beſtowing infinite embraces and kiſſes on her: which ſo much the more augmented her rage and anger, continuing on her chiding thus. If by theſe flatteries and idle follies, thou hopeſt to comfort or pacifie me, thou runneſt quite by as from thy reckoning; for I ſhall neuer imagine my ſelfe halfe ſatisfied, vntill in the preſence of my parents, friends, and neighbours, I haue reuealed thy baſe behauiour. Tell mee, treacherous man, am not I as faire, as the wife of *Ricciardo*? Am I not as good a Gentlewoman borne, as ſhee is? What canſt thou more reſpect in her, then is in mee? Villaine, monſter, why doeſt thou not anſwere mee? I will ſend to *Ricciardo*, who loueth mee beyond

beyond all other women in *Naples*, and yet could neuer vaunt, that I gaue him ſo much as a friendly looke: he ſhall know, what a diſhonour thou hadſt intended towards him; which both he and his friends will reuenge ſoundly vpon thee.

The exclamations of the Lady were ſo tedious and irkſome, that *Ricciardo* perceiuing, if ſhee continued longer in theſe complaints, worſe would enſue thereon, then could bee eaſily remedied: reſolued to make himſelfe knowne vnto her, to reclaime her out of this violent extaſie, and holding her ſomewhat ſtrictly, to preuent her eſcaping from him, he ſaid. Madam, afflict your ſelfe no further, for, what I could not obtaine by ſimply louing you, ſubtilty hath better taught me, and I am your *Ricciardo*: which ſhe hearing, and perfectly knowing him by his voyce; ſhee would haue leapt out of the Bath, but ſhee could not, and to auoyde her crying out, he layde his hand on her mouth, ſaying. Lady, what is done, cannot now be vndone, albeit you cried out all your life time. If you exclaime, or make this knowne openly by any meanes; two vnauoydable dangers muſt needes enſue thereon. The one (which you ought more carefully to reſpect) is the wounding of your good renowne and honour, becauſe, when you ſhall ſay, that by treacherie I drew you hither: I will boldly maintaine the contrary, auouching, that hauing corrupted you with gold, and not giuing you ſo much as couetouſly you deſired; you grew offended, and thereon made the out-cry, and you are not to learne, that the world is more eaſily induced to beleeue the worſt, then any goodneſſe, be it neuer ſo manifeſt. Next vnto this, mortall hatred muſt ariſe betweene your husband and mee, and (perhaps) I ſhall as ſoone kill him, as he me; whereby you can hardly liue in any true contentment after. Wherefore, ioy of my life, doe not in one moment, both ſhame your ſelfe, and cauſe ſuch perill betweene your husband and me: for you are not the firſt, neither can be the laſt, that ſhall be deceiued. I haue not beguiled you, to take any honour from you, but onely declared, the faithfull affection I beare you, and ſo ſhall doe for euer, as being your bounden and moſt obedient ſeruant; and as it is a long time agoe, ſince I dedicated my ſelfe and all mine to your ſeruice, ſo hence-forth muſt I remaine for euer. You are wiſe enough (I know) in all other things; then ſhew your ſelfe not to be ſilly or ſimple in this.

Ricciardo vttered theſe words, teares ſtreaming aboundantly downe his cheekes, and Madame *Catulla* (all the while) likewiſe ſhowred forth her ſorrowes equally to his, now, although ſhe was exceedingly troubled in mind, and ſaw what her owne iealous folly had now brought her to, a ſhame beyond all other whatſoeuer: in the middeſt of her tormenting paſſions, ſhee conſidered on the words of *Ricciardo*, found good reaſon in them, in regard of the vnauoydable euils, whereupon ſhee thus ſpake. *Ricciardo*, I know not how to beare the horrible iniurie, and notorious treaſon vſed by thee againſt me, grace and goodneſſe hauing ſo forſaken me, to let me fall in ſo foule a manner. Nor becommeth it me, to make any noyſe or out-cry heere, whereto ſimplicity, or rather deuilliſh iealouſie

louſie, did conduct me. But certaine I am of one thing, that I ſhall neuer ſee any one ioyfull day, till (by one meanes or other I bee reuenged on thee. Thou haſt glutted thy deſire with my diſgrace, let me therefore go from thee, neuer more to looke vpon my wronged husband, or let any honeſt woman euer ſee my face.

Ricciardo perceiuing the extremity of her perplexed minde, vſed all manly and milde perſwaſions, which poſſibly he could deuiſe to doe, to turne the torrent of this high tide, to a calmer courſe; as by outward ſhew ſhee made appearance of, vntill (in frightfull feares ſhunning euery one ſhee met withall, as arguments of her guiltineſſe) ſhee recouered her owne houſe, where remorſe ſo tortured her diſtreſſed ſoule, that ſhee fell into ſo fierce a melancholy, as neuer left her till ſhee died. Vpon the report whereof, *Ricciardo* becomming likewiſe a widdower, and grieuing extraordinarily for his haynous tranſgreſſion, penitently betooke himſelfe to liue in a wilderneſſe, where (not long after) he ended his dayes.

Theobaldo Eliſei, *hauing receiued an vnkinde repulſe by his beloued, departed from Florence, and returning thither (a long while after) in the habite of a Pilgrime; he ſpake with her, and made his wrongs knowne vnto her. He deliuered her Father from the danger of death, becauſe it was proued, that he had ſlaine* Theobaldo: *he made peace with his brethren, and in the end, wiſely enioyed his hearts deſire.*

The ſeauenth Nouell.

Wherein is ſignified the power of Loue, and the diuerſity of dangers, wherein-to men may dayly fall.



SO ceaſed *Fiammetta* her diſcourſe, being generally commended, when the Queene, to preuent the loſſe of time, commanded *Æmilia* to follow next, who thus began. It liketh me beſt (gracious Ladies) to returne home againe to our owne City, which it pleaſed the former two diſcourſers to part from: And there I will ſhew you, how a Citizen of ours, recouered the kindneſſe of his Loue, after hee had loſt it.

Sometime there dwelt in *Florence* a young Gentleman, named *Theobaldo Eliſei*, deſcended of a noble Houſe, who became earneſtly enamoured of a Widdow, called *Hermelina*, the daughter to *Aldobrandino Palermini*. well deſeruing, for his vertues and commendable quali-

qualities, to enioy of her whatsoeuer he could desire. Secretly they were espoused together, but Fortune, the enemy to Louers felicities, opposed her malice against them, in depriuing *Theobaldo* of those deere delights, which sometime he held in free possession, and making him as a stranger to her gracious fauours. Now grew shee contemptibly to despise him, not onely denying to heare any message sent from him, but scorning also to vouchsafe so much as a sight of him, causing in him extreme griefe and melancholy, yet cancealling all her vnkindnesse so wisely to himselfe, as no one could vnderstand the reason of his sadnesse.

After he had laboured by all hopefull courses, to obtaine that fauour of her, which he had formerly lost, without any offence in him, as his innocent soule truly witnessed with him, and saw that all his further endeauours were fruitlesse and in vaine; he concluded to retreate himselfe from the World, and not to be any longer irkesome in her eye, that was the onely occasion of his vnhappinesse. Hereupon, storing himselfe with such summes of money, as suddenly he could collect together, secretly he departed from *Florence*, without speaking any word to his friends or kindred; except one kinde companion of his, whom he acquainted with most of his secrets, and so trauelled to *Ancona*, where he termed himselfe by the name of *Sandoloscio*. Repairing to a wealthy Merchant there, he placed himselfe as his seruant, and went in a Ship of his with him to *Cyprus*; his actions and behauiour proued so pleasing to the Merchant, as not onely he allowed him very sufficient wages, but also grew into such association with him; as he gaue the most of his affaires into his hands, which he guided with such honest and discrecte care, that hee himselfe (in few yeeres compasse) proued to be a rich Merchant, and of famous report.

While matters went on in this successefull manner, although he could not chuse, but still he remembred his cruell Mistresse, and was very desperately transported for her loue, as coueting (aboue all things else) to see her once more; yet was he of such powerfull constancy, as 7. whole yeeres together, he vanquished all those fierce conflicts. But on a day it chanced he heard a song sung in *Cyprus*, which he himselfe had formerly made, in honour of the loue he bare to his Mistresse, and what delight he conceiued, by being dayly in her presence; whereby he gathered, that it was impossible for him to forget her, and proceeded on so desirously, as he could not liue, except he had a sight of her once more, and therefore determined on his returne to *Florence*. Hauing set all his affaires in due order, accompanied with a seruant of his onely, he passed to *Ancona*, where when he was arriued, he sent his Merchandises to *Florence*, in name of the Merchant of *Ancona*, who was his especiall friend and partner; trauayling himselfe alone with his seruant, in the habite of a Pilgrime, as if he had beene newly returned from *Ierusalem*.

Being come to *Florence*, he went to an Inne kept by two brethren, neere neighbours to the dwelling of his Mistresse, and the first thing he did, was passing by her doore, to get a sight of her if he were so happie. But he found the windowes, doores, and all parts of the house fast shut

vp, whereby he ſuſpected her to be dead, or elſe to be changed from her dwelling: wherefore (much perplexed in minde) he went on to the two brothers Inne, finding foure perſons ſtanding at the gate, attired in mourning, whereat he maruelled not a little; knowing himſelfe to be ſo transfigured, both in body and habite, farre from the manner of common vſe at his parting thence, as it was a difficult matter to know him. he ſtept boldly to a Shooe-makers ſhop neere adioyning, and demanded the reaſon of their wearing mourning. The Shooe-maker made anſwer thus; Sir, thoſe men are clad in mourning, becauſe a brother of theirs, being named *Theobaldo* (who hath beene abſent hence a long while) about ſome fifteene dayes ſince was ſlaine. And they hauing heard, by proofe made in the Court of Iuſtice, that one *Aldobrandino Palermini* (who is kept cloſe priſoner) was the murtherer of him, as he came in a diſguiſed habite to his daughter, of whom he was moſt affectionately enamoured; cannot chuſe, but let the World know by their outward habits, the inward affliction of their hearts, for a deede ſo diſhonourably committed.

Theobaldo wondered greatly hereat, imagining, that ſome man belike reſembling him in ſhape, might be ſlaine in this manner, and by *Aldobrandino*, for whoſe misfortune he grieued maruellouſly. As concerning his Miſtreſſe, he vnderſtood that ſhee was liuing, and in good health; and night drawing on apace, he went to his lodging, with infinite moleſtations in his minde, where after ſupper, he was lodged in a Corne-loft with his man. Now by reaſon of many diſturbing imaginations, which inceſſantly wheeled about his braine, his bed alſo being none of the beſt, and his ſupper (perhaps) ſomewhat of the courſeſt; a great part of the night was ſpent, yet could he not cloſe his eyes together. But lying ſtill broade awake, about the dead time of night, he heard the treading of diuers perſons ouer his head, who diſcended downe a paire of ſtayres by his Chamber, into the lower parts of the houſe, carrying a light with them, which he diſcerned by the chinkes and crannies in the wall. Stepping ſoftly out of his bed, to ſee what the meaning hereof might be, he eſpied a faire young woman, who carried a light in her hand, and three men in her company, deſcending downe the ſtayres together, one of them ſpeaking thus to the young woman. Now we may boldly warrant our ſattey, becauſe we haue heard it aſſuredly, that the death of *Theobaldo Eliſei*, hath beene ſufficiently approued by the Brethren, againſt *Aldobrandino Palermini*, and he hath confeſſed the fact; whereupon the ſentence it already ſet downe in writing. But yet it behooueth vs notwithſtanding, to conceale it very ſecretly, becauſe if euer hereafter it ſhould be knowne, that we are they who murthered him, we ſhall be in the ſame danger, as now *Aldobrandino* is.

When *Theobaldo* had heard theſe words, hee began to conſider with himſelfe, how many and great the dangers are, wherewith mens minds may dayly be moleſted. Firſt, he thought on his owne brethren in their ſorrow, and buried a ſtranger inſteed of him, accuſing afterward (by falſe opinion, and vpon the teſtimony of as falſe witneſſes) a man moſt innocent,

cent, making him ready for the ſtroke of death. Next, he made a ſtrict obſeruation in his ſoule, concerning the blinded ſeuerity of Law, and the Miniſters thereto belonging, who pretending a diligent and carefull inquiſition for truth, doe oftentimes (by their tortures and torments) heare lies auouched (onely for eaſe of paine) in the place of a true confeſſion, yet thinking themſelues (by doing ſo) to be the Miniſters of God and Iuſtice, whereas indeede they are the Diuels executioners of his wickednesſe. Laſtly, conuerting his thoughts to *Aldobrandino*, the imagined murtherer of a man yet liuing, infiinite cares beleagured his ſoule, in deuiſing what might beſt be done for his deliuerance.

So ſoone as he was riſen in the morning, leauing his ſeruant behinde him in his lodging, he went (when he thought it fit time) all alone toward the houſe of his Miſtreſſe, where finding by good fortune the gate open, he entred into a ſmall Parlour beneath, and where he ſaw his Miſtreſſe ſitting on the ground, wringing her hands, and wofully weeping, which (in meere compaſſion) moued him to weepe likewiſe; and going ſomewhat neere her, he ſaide. Madame, torment your ſelfe no more, for your peace is not farre off from you. The Gentlewoman hearing him ſay ſo, lifted vp her head, and in teares ſpake thus. Good man, thou ſeemeſt to me to be a Pilgrime ſtranger; what doeſt thou know, either concerning my peace, or mine affliction? Madame (replied the Pilgrime) I am of *Conſtantinople*, and (doubtleſſe) am conducted hither by the hand of Heauen, to conuert your teares into reioycing, and to deliuer your Father from death. How is this? anſwered ſhee: If thou be of *Conſtantinople*, and art but now arriued here; doeſt thou know who we are, either I, or my Father?

The Pilgrime diſcourſed to her, euen from the one end to the other, the hiſtory of her husbands ſad diſaſters, telling her, how many yeeres ſince ſhe was eſpouſed to him, and many other important matters which well ſhee knew, and was greatly amazed thereat, thinking him verily to be a Prophet, and kneeling at his feete, entreated him very earneſtly, that if he were come to deliuer her Father *Aldobrandino* from death, to doe it ſpeedily, becauſe the time was very ſhort. The Pilgrime appearing to be a man of great holineſſe, ſaide. Riſe vp Madame, refraine from weeping, and obſerue attentiuely what I ſhall ſay; yet with this caution, that you neuer reueale it to any perſon whatſoeuer. This tribulation whereinto you are falne, (as by reuelation I am faithfully informed) is for a grieuous ſinne by you heretofore committed, whereof diuine mercy is willing to purge you, and to make a perfect amends by a ſenſible feeling of this affliction; as ſeeking your ſound and abſolute recouery, leaſt you fall into farre greater danger then before. Good man (quoth ſhee) I am burthened with many ſinnes, and doe not know for which any amends ſhould be made by me; any one ſooner then other: wherefore if you haue intelligence thereof, for charities ſake tell it me, and I will doe ſo much as lieth in me, to make a full ſatisfaction for it. Madame, anſwered the Pilgrime; I know well enough what it is, and will demand it no more of you,

to winne any further knowledge thereof, then I haue already : but because in reuealing it your selfe, it may touch you with the more true compunction of soule ; let vs goe to the point indeede, and tell mee, doe you remember, that at any time you were married to an Husband, or no ?

At the hearing of these words, shee breathed foorth a very vehement sigh, and was stricken with admiration at this question, beleeuing that not any one had knowledge thereof. Howbeit, since the day of the supposed *Theobaldaes* buriall, such a rumour ran abroade, by meanes of some speeches, rashly dispersed by a friend of *Theobaldoes*, who (indeede) knew it ; whereupon shee returned him this answer. It appeareth to me (good man) that diuine ordinatiuation hath reuealed vnto you all the secrets of men ; and therefore I am determined, not to conceale any of mine from you. True it is, that in my younger yeeres, being left a widdow, I entirely affected an vnfortunate young Gentleman, who (in secret) was my Husband, and whose death is imposed on my Father. The death of him I haue the more bemoaned, because (in reason) it did neerely concerne me, by shewing my selfe so sauage and rigorous to him before his departure : neuertheless, let me assure you Sir, that neither his parting, long absence from me, or his vntimely death, neuer had the power to bereaue my heart of his remembrance.

Madame, saide the Pilgrime, the vnfortinate young Gentleman that is slaine, did neuer loue you ; but sure I am, that *Theobaldo Elisei* loued you deerely. But tell me, what was the occasion whereby you conceiued such hatred against him ? Did he at any time offend you ? No truly Sir, quoth shee ; but the reason of my anger towards him, was by the words and threatnings of a religious Father, to whom once I reuealed (vnder confession) how faithfully I affected him, and what priuate familiarity had passed betweene vs. When instantly he vsed such dreadfull threatnings to me, and which (euen yet) doe afflict my soule, that I did not abstaine, and vtterly refuse him, the Diuell would fetch me quicke to Hell, and cast me into the bottome of his quenchlesse and euerlasting fire.

These menaces were so preuailing with me, as I refused all further conuersation with *Theobaldo*, in which regard, I would receiue neither letters or messages from him. Howbeit, I am perswaded, that if he had continued here still, and not departed hence in such desperate manner as hee did, seeing him melt and consume dayly away, euen as Snow by power of the Sunne-beames : my austere deliberation had beene long agoe quite altered, because not at any time (since then) life hath allowed me one merry day, neither did I, or euer can loue any man like vnto him.

At these wordes the Pilgrime sighed, and then proceeded on againe thus. Surely Madame, this one onely sin, may iustly torment you, because I know for a certainty, that *Theobaldo* neuer offered you any iniury, since the day hee first became enamoured of you ; and what grace or fauour

you

you affoorded him, was your owne voluntary gift, and (as he tooke it) no more then in modeſty might well become you; for hee louing you firſt, you had beene moſt cruell and vnkinde, if you ſhould not haue requited him with the like affection. If then he continued ſo iuſt and loyall to you, as (of mine owne knowledge) I am able to ſay he did; what ſhould moue you to repulſe him ſo rudely? Such matters ought well to bee conſidered on before hand; for if you did imagine, that you ſhould repent it as an action ill done, yet you could not doe it, becauſe as hee became yours, ſo were you likewiſe onely his; and he being yours, you might diſpoſe of him at your pleaſure, as being truely obliged to none but you. How could you then with-draw your ſelfe from him, being onely his, and not commit moſt manifeſt theft, a farre vnfitting thing for you to doe, except you had gone with his conſent.

Now Madame, let me further giue you to vnderſtand, that I am a religious perſon, and a pilgrime, and therefore am well acquainted with all the courſes of their dealing; if therefore I ſpeake ſomewhat more amply of them, and for your good, it can not be ſo vnſeeming for mee to doe it, as it would appeare vgly in another. In which reſpect, I will ſpeake the more freely to you, to the ende, that you may take better knowledge of them, then (as it ſeemeth) hitherto you haue done. In former paſſed times ſuch as profeſſed Religion, were learned and moſt holy perſons; but our religious profeſſours now adayes, and ſuch as couet to bee ſo eſteemed; haue no matter at all of Religion in them, but onely the outward ſhew and habite. Which yet is no true badge of Religion neither, becauſe it was ordained by religious inſtitutions, that their garments ſhould bee made of narrow, plaine, and courſeſt ſpun cloth, to make a publike manifeſtation to the world, that (in meere deuotion, and religious diſpoſition) by wrapping their bodies in ſuch baſe clothing, they condemned and deſpiſed all temporall occaſions. But now adaies they make them large, deepe, gliſtering, and of the fineſt cloth or ſtuffes to bee gotten, reducing thoſe habites to ſo proude and pontificall a forme, that they walke Peacock-like, ruſtling, and ſtrouting with them in the Churches; yea, and in open publike places, as if they were ordinary ſecular perſons, to haue their pride more notoriouſly obſerued. And as the Angler beſtoweth his beſt cunning, with one line and baite to catch many fiſhes at one ſtrike; euen ſo do theſe counterfeited habit-mongers, by their diſſembling and crafty dealing, beguile many credulous widdowes: ſimple women, yea, and men of weake capacity, to credit whatſoeuer they doe or ſay, and herein they doe moſt of all excerciſe themſelues.

And to the end, that my ſpeeches may not ſauor of any vntruth againſt them; theſe men which I ſpeake of, haue not any habite at all of religious men, but onely the colour of their garments, and whereas they in times paſt, deſired nothing more then the ſaluation of mens ſoules; theſe freſher witted fellowes, couet after women & wealth, and employ all their paines by their whiſpering confeſſions, and figures of painted fearefull examples, to affright and terrifie vnſetled and weake conſciences, by horrible and

blaſphemous ſpeeches ; yet adding perſwaſion withall, that their ſinnes may be purged by Almes-deedes and Maſſes. To the end, that ſuch as credit them in theſe their dayly courſes, being guided more by apparance of deuotion, then any true compunction of heart, to eſcape ſeuere penances by them enioyned : may ſome of them bring bread, others wine, others coyne, all of them matter of commoditie and benefit, and ſimply ſay, theſe gifts are for the ſoules of their good friends deceaſed.

I make not any doubt, but almes-deedes and prayers, are very mighty; and preuailing meanes, to appeaſe heauens anger for ſome ſinnes committed ; but if ſuch as beſtow them, did either ſee or know, to whom they giue them : they would more warily keepe them, or elſe caſt them before Swine, in regard they are altogether ſo vnworthy of them. But come we now to the caſe of your ghoſtly father, crying out in your eare, that ſecret mariage was a moſt greeuous ſinne : Is not the breach thereof farre greater? Familiar conuerſation betweene man and woman, is a conceſſion meerely naturall : but to rob, kill, or baniſh any one, proceedeth from the mindes malignity. That thou did rob *Theobaldo*, your ſelfe hath already ſufficiently witneſſed, by taking that from him, which with free conſent in mariage you gaue him. Next I muſt ſay, that by all the power remaining in you, you kild him, becauſe you would not permit him to remaine with you, declaring your ſelfe in the very height of cruelty, that hee might deſtroy his life by his owne hands. In which caſe the Law requireth, that whoſoeuer is the occaſion of an ill act committed, hee or ſhe is as deepe in the fault, as the party that did it. Now concerning his baniſhment, and wandring ſeauen yeeres in exile thorow the world ; you cannot denie, but that you were the onely occaſion thereof. In all which three ſeuerall actions, farre more capitally haue you offended ; then by contracting of mariage in ſuch clandeſtine manner.

But let vs ſee, whether *Theobaldo* deſerued all theſe ſeuerall caſtigations, or not. In trueth he did not, your ſelfe haue confeſſed (beſide that which I know) that hee loued you more deerely then himſelfe, and nothing could be more honoured, magnified and exalted, then dayly you were by him, aboue all other women whatſoeuer. When hee came in any place, where honeſtly, and without ſuſpition hee might ſpeake to you : all his honour, and all his liberty, lay wholly committed into your power. Was hee not a noble young Gentleman? Was he (among all thoſe parts that moſt adorne a man, and appertaine to the very choyceſt reſpect) inferiour to any one of beſt merit in your Citie ? I know that you cannot make deniall to any of theſe demands. How could you then by the perſwaſion of a beaſt, a foole, a villaine, yea, a vagabond, enuying both his happineſſe and yours, enter into ſo cruell a minde againſt him? I know not what error miſguideth women, in ſcorning and deſpiſing their husbands : but if they entred into a better conſideration, vnderſtanding truely what they are, and what nobility of nature God hath endued man withall, farre aboue all other creatures ; it would bee their higheſt title of glory, when they are ſo preciouſly eſteemed of them,

ſo

ſo dearely affected by them, and ſo gladly embraced in all their beſt abilities.

This is ſo great a ſinne, as the diuine Iuſtice (which in an equall Ballance bringeth all operations to their full effect) did not purpoſe to leaue vnpuniſhed; but as you enforced againſt all reaſon, to take away *Theobaldo* from your ſelfe: euen ſo your father *Aldobrandino*, without any occaſion giuen by *Theobaldo*, is in perill of his life, and you a partaker of his tribulation. Out of which if you deſire to be deliuered, it is very conuenient that you promiſe one thing which I ſhall tell you, and may much better be by you performed. Namely, that if *Theobaldo* do returne from his long baniſhment, you ſhall reſtore him to your loue, grace, and good acceptation; accounting him in the ſelfe-ſame degree of fauour and priuate entertainment, as he was at the firſt, before your wicked ghoſtly father ſo helliſhly incenſed you againſt him.

When the Pilgrim had finiſhed his ſpeeches, the Gentlewoman who had liſtned to them very attentiuely (becauſe all the alledged reaſons appeared to be plainly true) became verily perſwaded, that all theſe afflictions had falne on her and her father, for the ingratefull offence by her committed, and therefore thus replied. Worthy man, and the friend to goodneſſe, I know vndoubtedly, that the words which you haue ſpoken are true, and alſo I vnderſtand by your demonſtration, what manner of people ſome of thoſe religious perſons are, whom heretofore I haue reputed to be Saints, but find them now to be far otherwiſe. And to ſpeake truly, I perceiue the fault to be great and greeuous, wherein I haue offended againſt *Theobaldo*, & would (if I could) willingly make amends, euen in ſuch manner as you haue aduiſed. But how is it poſſible to be done? *Theobaldo* being dead, can be more recalled to this life; and therefore, I know not what promiſe I ſhould make, in a matter which is not to bee performed. Whereto the Pilgrime without any longer pauſing, thus anſwered.

Madam, by ſuch reuelations as haue beene ſhewne to me, I know for a certainety, that *Theobaldo* is not dead, but liuing, in health, and in good eſtate; if he had the fruition of your grace and fauour. Take heede what you ſay Sir (quoth the Gentlewoman) for I ſaw him lye ſlain before my doore, his bodie hauing receiued many wounds, which I folded in mine armes, and waſhed his face with my briniſh teares; whereby (perhaps) the ſcandall aroſe, that flew abroad to my diſgrace. Beleeue me Madam, replyed the Pilgrim) ſay what you will, I dare aſſure you that *Theobaldo* is liuing, and if you dare make promiſe, concerning what hath bin formerly requeſted, and keepe it inuiolably, I make no doubt, but you your ſelfe ſhall ſhortly ſee him. I promiſe it (quoth ſhe) and binde my ſelfe thereto by a ſacred oath, to keepe it faithfully: for neuer could any thing happen to yeeld me the like contentment, as to ſee my Father free from danger, and *Theobaldo* liuing.

At this inſtant *Theobaldo* thought it to be a very apt & conuenient time to diſcloſe himſelfe, and to comfort the Lady, with an aſſured ſignall of

hope,

hope, for the deliuerance of her Father, wherefore he said: Ladie, to the end that I may comfort you infallibly in this dangerous perill of your fathers life, I am to make knowne an especiall secret to you, which you are to keepe carefully (as you tender your owne life) from euer being reuealed to the world. They were then in a place of sufficient priuacie, and by themselues, because she reposed great confidence in the Pilgrims sanctity of life, as thinking him none other then he seemed to be. *Theobaldo* tooke out of his Purse a Ring, which she gaue him the last night of their conuersing together, and he had kept with no meane care: and shewing it to her, said; Do you know this Ring Madam? So soone as she saw it, immediatly she knew it, and answered, Yes Sir, I know the Ring, and confesse that heretofore I gaue it to *Theobaldo*.

Heereupon the Pilgrime stood vp, and sodainly putting off his poore linnen Frock, and the Hood from his head, vsing his Florentine tongue, he said; Tell me Madam, do you not know me? When she had aduisedly beheld him, and knew him indeed to be *Theobaldo*, she was stricken into a wonderfull astonishment, being as fearfull of him, as she was of the dead obdy which she saw lying in the street. And I dare assure you, that she durst not go neere him, to respect him as *Theobaldo* lately come from *Cyprus*, but (in terror) fled away from him; as if *Theobaldo* had bin newly risen out of his graue, and came thither purposely to affright her; wherefore he said. Be not affraid Madam, I am your *Theobaldo*, in health, aliue, and neuer as yet died, neither haue I receiued any wounds to kill mee, as you and my brethren had formerly imagined.

Some better assurance getting possession of her, as knowing him perfectly by his voice, and looking more stedfastly on his face, which constantly auouched him to be *Theobaldo*; the teares trickling amaine downe her faire cheekes, thee ran to embrace him, casting her armes about his necke, and kissing him a thousand times, saying; *Theobaldo*, my faithfull husband, nothing in the world can be so welcom to me. *Theobaldo* hauing most kindly kissed and embraced her, said; Sweet wife, time wil not now allow vs those ceremonious courtesies, which (indeed) so long a separation do iustly challenge; for I must about a more weighty busines, to haue your Father safely deliuered, which I hope to do before to morow night when you shall heare tydings to your better contentment. And questionlesse, if I speed no worse then my good hope perswadeth me, I will see you againe to night, and acquaint you at better leysure, in such things as I cannot do now at this present.

So putting on his Pilgrimes habit againe, kissing her once more, and comforting her with future good successe, he departed from her, going to the prison where *Aldobrandino* lay, whom hee found more pensiue, as being in hourely expectation of death, then any hope he had to be freed from it. Being brought neerer to him by the prisoners fauour, as seeming to be a man come onely to comfort him: sitting downe by him, thus he began. *Aldobrandino*, I am a friend of thine, whom Heauen hath sent to doe thee good, in meere pittie and compassion of thine innocency. And

therefore

therefore, if thou wilt grant me one ſmall requeſt, which I am earneſtly to craue at thy hands, thou ſhalt heare (without any failing) before to morrow at night, the ſentence of thy free abſolution, whereas now thou expecteſt nothing but death; whereunto *Aldobrandino* thus anſwered. Friendly man, ſeeing thou art ſo carefull of my ſafety (although I know thee not, neither doe remember that ere I ſaw thee till now) thou muſt needs be ſome eſpeciall kinde friend of mine. And to tell thee the truth, I neuer committed the ſinful deed for which I am condemned to death. True it is, I haue other heinous and greeuous ſins, which (vndoubtedly) haue throwne this heauy iudgement on me, and therefore I am the more willing to vndergo it. Neuertheleſſe, let me thus farre aſſure thee, that I would gladly not onely promiſe ſomething which might be to the glory of God, if he were pleaſed in this caſe to haue mercy on me; but alſo would as willingly performe and accompliſh it. Wherefore, demaund whatſoeuer thou pleaſeſt, for vnfainedly (if I eſcape with life) I will truly keepe promiſe with thee.

Sir, replyed the Pilgrime, I deſire nor demand any thing of you, but that you would pardon the foure Brethren of *Theobaldo*, that brought you to this hard extremity, as thinking you to be guilty of their brothers death, and that you would alſo accept them as your brethren and friends vpon their crauing pardon for what they haue done. Sir, anſwered *Aldobrandino*, no man knoweth how ſweet reuenge is, nor with what heate it is to be deſired, but onely the man who hath bene wronged. Notwithſtanding, not to hinder any hope, which onely aymeth at Heauen, I freely forgiue them, and henceforth pardon them for euer, intending moreouer, that if mercy giue me life, and cleere me from this bloody imputation, to loue and reſpect them ſo long as I ſhall liue. This anſwere was moſt pleaſing to the Pilgrime, and without any further multiplication of ſpeeches, he entreated him to be of good comfort, for he feared not but before the time prefixed, he ſhould heare certaine tydings of his deliuerance.

At his departing from him, hee went directly to the *Signoria*, and preuailed ſo farre, that he ſpake priuately with a Knight, who was then one of the States chiefeſt Lords, to whom he ſaide. Sir, a man ought to beſtow his beſt paines and diligence, that the truth of things ſhould be apparantly knowne, eſpecially, ſuch men as hold the place & office as you doe: to the end, that thoſe perſons which haue committed no foule offence, ſhould not bee puniſhed, but onely the guilty and haynous tranſgreſſors. And becauſe it will be no meane honor to you, to lay the blame where it worthily deſerueth, I am come hither purpoſely, to informe you in a caſe of moſt weighty importance. It is not vnknowne to you, with what rigour the State hath proceeded againſt *Aldobrandino Palermini*, and you think verily he is the man that hath ſlaine *Theobaldo Eliſei*, whervpon your Law hath condemned him to die. I dare aſſure you Sir, that a very vniuſt courſe hath beene taken in this caſe, becauſe *Aldobrandino* is falſly accuſed, as you your ſelfe will confeſſe before midnight, when they

are

are deliuered into your power, that were the murderers of the man.

The honeſt Knight, who was very ſorrowfull for *Aldobrandino*, gladly gaue attention to the Pilgrime, and hauing conferred on many matters, appertaining to the fact committed: the two Brethren who were *Theobaldoes* Hoſtes, and their Chamber-maid, vpon good aduice giuen, were apprehended in their firſt ſleep, without any reſiſtance made in their defence. But when the tortures were ſent for, to vnderſtand truly how the caſe went, they would not endure any paine at all, but each aſide by himſelfe, and then altogether confeſſed openly, that they did the deede, yet not knowing him to be *Theobaldo Eliſei*. And when it was demanded of them, vpon what occaſion they did ſo foule an act, they anſwered, that they were ſo hatefull againſt the mans life, becauſe he would luxurioufſlie haue abuſed one of their wiues, when they both were abſent from their owne home.

When the Pilgrim had heard their voluntary confeſſion, he tooke his leaue of his Knight, returning ſecretly to the houſe of Madam *Hermelina*, and there (becauſe all her people were in their beds) ſhe carefully awaited his returne, to heare ſome glad tydings of her father, and to make a further reconciliation betweene her and *Theobaldo*, when ſitting downe by her, he ſaid: Deare Loue, be of good cheere, for (vpon my word) to morrow you ſhall haue your father home ſafe, well, and deliuered from all further danger: and to confirme her the more confidently in his words, he declared at large the whole carriage of the buſineſſe: *Hermelina* being wondrouſly ioyfull, for two ſuch ſodaine and ſucceſſefull accidents to inioy her husband aliue and in health, & alſo to haue her father freed from ſo great a danger; kiſſed and embraced him moſt affectionately, welcomming him louingly into her bed, whereto ſo long time hee had beene a ſtranger.

No ſooner did bright day appeare, but *Theobaldo* aroſe, hauing acquainted her with ſuch matters as were to be done, and once more earneſtly deſiring her, to conceale (as yet) theſe occurrences to her ſelfe. So in his Pilgrims habit, he departed from her houſe, to awaite conuenient opportunity, for attending on the buſineſſe belonging to *Aldobrandino*. At the vſuall houre appointed, the Lords were all ſet in the *Signioria*, & had receiued full information, concerning the offence imputed to *Aldobrandino*, ſeating him at liberty by publique conſent, and ſentencing the other malefactors with death, who (within a few dayes after) were beheaded in the place where the murther was committed. Thus *Aldobrandino* being releaſed, to his exceeding comfort, and no ſmall ioy of his daughters, kindred, and friends, all knowing perfectly, that this had happened by the Pilgrims meanes, they conducted him home to *Aldobrandinoes* houſe, where they deſired him to continue ſo long as himſelfe pleaſed, vſing him with moſt honourable and gracious reſpect, but eſpecially *Hermelina*, who knew (better then the reſt) on whom ſhe beſtowed her liberall fauours, yet concealing all cloſely to her ſelfe.

After two or three dayes were ouer-paſt, in theſe complementall enter-

tercourſings of kindneſſe, *Theobaldo* began to conſider, that it was high time for reconciliation, to be ſolemnely paſt betweene his brethren and *Aldobrandino*. For, they were not a little amazed at his ſtrange deliuerance, and went likewiſe continually armed, as ſtanding in feare of *Aldobrandino* and his friends; which made him the more earneſt, for accompliſhment of the promiſe formerly made vnto him. *Aldobrandino* louingly replied, that he was ready to make good his word. Whereupon, the Pilgrime prouided a goodly Banquet, whereat he purſued to haue preſent *Aldobrandino*, his Daughter, Kindred, and their wiues. But firſt, himſelfe went in perſon, to inuite them in peace to his banquet, vſing many pregnant and forcible reaſons to them, ſuch as are requiſite in the like diſcordant caſes. In the end, they were ſo wiſe and preuailing with them that they willingly condiſcended, and thought it no diſparagement vnto them, for the recouery of *Aldobrandines* kindneſſe againe, to craue pardon for their great errot committed.

On the morrow following, about dinner time, the foure brethren of *Theobaldo*, attired in their mourning garments, with their wiues & frends came firſt to the houſe of *Aldobrandino*, who purpoſely ſtayed for them; and hauing laid downe their weapons on the ground, in the preſence of all ſuch as *Aldobrandino* had inuited as his witneſſes, they offered themſelues to his mercy, and humbly required pardon of him, for the matter wherein they had offended him. *Aldobrandino* ſhedding teares, moſt louingly embraced them, and (to be briefe) pardoned whatſoeuer iniuries he had receiued. After this, the ſiſters and wiues, all clad in mourning, courteouſly ſubmitted themſelues, and were graciouſly welcommed by Madame *Hermelina*, as alſo diuers other Gentlewomen there preſent with her. Being all ſeated at the Tables, which were furniſhed with ſuch rarities as could be wiſhed for; al things elſe deſerued their due commendation, but onely ſad ſilence, occaſioned by the freſh remembrance of ſorow, appearing in the habites of *Theobaldoes* friends and kindred, which the Pilgrim himſelfe plainly perceiued, to be the onely diſgrace to him and his feaſt. Wherefore, as before he had reſolued, when time ſerued to purge away this melancholly, he aroſe from the Table, when ſome (as yet) had ſcarſe begun to eate, and thus ſpake.

Gracious company, there is no defect in this Banquet, or more debars it of the honour it might elſe haue, but onely the preſence of *Theobaldo*, who hauing bin continually in your company, it ſeemes you are not willing to take knowledge of him, and therefore I meane my ſelfe to ſhew him. So, vncaſing himſelfe out of his Pilgrimes clothes, and ſtanding in his Hoſe and Doublet, to their no little admiration, they all knew him, yet doubted whether it were he, or no. Which he perceiuing, he repeated his brethrens and abſent kindreds names, and what occurrences hapned betweene them from time to time, beſide the relation of his owne paſſed fortunes, inciting teares in the eyes of his brethren, and all elſe there preſent, euery one hugging and embracing him, yea, many beſide, who were no kin at all to him, *Hermelina* onely excepted: which when *Aldobrandino*

dino ſaw, he ſaid vnto her; How now *Hermelina?* Why doeſt thou not welcome home *Theobaldo*, ſo kindly as the reſt haue done?

She making a modeſt courteſie to her Father, and anſwering ſo loude as euery one might heare her, ſaid. There is not any in this aſſembly that more willingly would giue him all expreſſion of a ioyfull welcom home and thankefull gratitude for ſuch eſpeciall fauours receiued, then in my heart I could affoord to do, but onely in regard of thoſe infamous ſpeeches noyſed out againſt me, on the day when we wept for him, who was ſuppoſed to be *Theobaldo*, which ſlander was to my great diſcredit. Go on boldly, replied *Aldobrandino*, doeſt thou think that I regard any ſuch praters? In the procuring of my deliuerance, he hath approued them to be manifeſt lyars, albeit I my ſelfe did neuer credit them. Go then I command thee, and let me ſee thee both kiſſe and embrace him. She who deſired nothing more, ſhewed her ſelfe not ſlothfull in obeying her father to do but her duty to her husband. Wherefore being riſen, as all the reſt had done, but yet in farre more effectuall manner, ſhe declared her vnfained loue to *Theobaldo*. Theſe bountifull fauours of *Aldobrandino*, were ioyfully accepted by *Theobaldoes* brethren, as alſo to euery one there preſent; ſo that all former rancour and hatred which had cauſed heauie variances betweene them, was now conuerted to mutuall kindneſſe and ſolemne friendſhip on euery ſide.

When the feaſting dayes were finiſhed, the garments of ſad mourning were quite laid aſide, and thoſe (becomming ſo generall a ioy) put on, to make their hearts and habites ſuteable. Now, concerning the man ſlaine, and ſuppoſed to be *Theobaldo*, hee was one, that in all parts of body, and trueneſſe of complexion ſo neerely reſembled him, as *Theobaldoes* owne brethren could not diſtinguiſh the one from the other: but hee was of *Lunigiana*, named *Fatinolo*, and not *Theobaldo*, whom the two Brethren Inne-keepers maliced, about ſome idle ſuſpition conceiued, and hauing ſlaine him, layde his body at the doore of *Aldobrandino*, where by reaſon of *Theobaldoes* abſence, it was generally reputed to be hee, and *Aldobrandino* charged to doe the deede, by vehement perſwaſion of the brethren, knowing what loue had paſſed betweene him and his daughter *Hermelina*. But happy was the Pilgrims returne, firſt to heare thoſe words in the Inne, the meanes to bring the murther to light, and then the diſcreet carriage of the Pilgrime, vntill he plainly approued himſelfe, to bee truely *Theobaldo*.

Ferando,

Ferando, *by drinking a certaine kinde of powder, was buried for dead. And by the Abbot, who was enamored of his Wife, was taken out of his Graue, and put into a darke prison, where they made him beleeue, that hee was in Purgatorie. Afterward, when time came that hee should bee raised to life againe; he was made to keepe a childe which the Abbot had got by his Wife.*

The eight Nouell.

Wherein is displayed, the apparant folly of iealousie: And the subtility of some religious carnall minded men, to beguile silly and simple maried men.



WHen the long discourse of Madame *Æmilia* was ended, not displeasing to any, in regard of the length, but rather held too short, because no exceptions could bee taken against it, comparing the raritie of the accidents, and changes together: the Queene turned to Madame *Lauretto*, giuing her such a manifest signe, as she knew, that it was her turne to follow next, and therefore shee tooke occasion to begin thus. Faire Ladies, I intend to tell you a Tale of trueth, which (perhaps) in your opinions, will seeme to sound like a lye: and yet I heard by the very last relation, that a dead man was wept and mourned for, in sted of another being then aliue. In which respect, I am now to let you know, how a liuing man was buried for dead, and being raised againe, yet not as liuing, himselfe, and diuers more beside, did beleeue that he came forth of his graue, and adored him as a Saint, who was the occasion thereof, and who (as a bad man) deserued iustly to be condemned.

In *Tuscanie* there was sometime an Abbey, seated, as now we see commonly they are, in a place not much frequented with people, and thereof a Monke was Abbot, very holy and curious in all things else, saue onely a wanton appetite to women: which yet he kept so cleanly to himselfe, that though some did suspect it, yet it was knowne to very few. It came to passe, that a rich Country Franklin, named *Ferando*, dwelt as neere neighbour to the said Abby, he being a man materiall, of simple and grosse vnderstanding, yet he fell into great familiarity with the Abbot; who made vse of this friendly conuersation to no other end, but for diuers times of recreation; when he delighted to smile at his silly and sottish behauiour.

Vpon this his priuate frequentation with the Abbot, at laſt he obſerued, that *Ferando* had a very beautifull woman to his Wife, with whom he grew ſo deeply in loue, as he had no other meditations either by day or night, but how to become acceptable in her fauour. Neuerthelesſe, he concealed his amorous paſſions priuately to himſelfe, and could plainely perceiue, that although *Ferando* (in all t.ings elſe) was meerely a ſimple fellow, and more like an Idiot, then of any ſenſible apprehenſion: yet was he wiſe enough in louing his Wife, keeping her carfully out of all company, as one (indeede) very iealous, leaſt any ſhould kiſſe her, but onely himſelfe, which droue the Abbot into deſpaire, for euer attainining the iſſue of his d.ſire. Yet being ſubtill, crafty, and cautelous, he wrought ſo on the flexible nature of *Ferando*, that hee brought his wife with him diuers dayes to the Mon.ſterie; where they walked in the goodly Garden, diſcourſing on the beatitud.s of eternall life, as alſo the moſt holy deedes of men and women, long ſince departed out of this life, in meruailous ciuill and modeſt m.nner. Yet all theſe were but traines to a further intention, for the Abbot muſt needes be her ghoſtly Father, and ſhe come to be confeſſed by him; which the foole *Ferando* tooke as an eſpeciall fauour, and therefore he gaue his conſent the ſooner.

At the appointed time, when the woman came to confeſſion to the Abbot, and was on her knees before him, to his no ſmall contentment, before ſhe would ſay any thing elſe, thus ſhe began: Sacred Father, if God had not giuen me ſuch an husband as I haue, or elſe had b.ſtowed on me none at all; I might haue beene ſo happy, by the meanes of your holy doctrine, very eaſily to haue entred into the way, whereof you ſpake the other day, which leadeth to eternall life. But when I conſider with my ſelfe, what manner of man *Ferando* is, and thinke vpon his folly withall; I may well terme my ſelfe to be a widow, although I am a maried wife, becauſe while he liueth, I cannot haue any other husband. And yet (as ſottiſh as you ſee him) he is (without any occaſion giuen him) ſo extreamely iealous of me; as I am not able to liue with him, but only in continuall tribulation and hearts griefe. In which reſpect, before I enter into confeſſion, I moſt humbly beſeech you, that you would vouchſafe (in this diſtreſſe) to aſſiſt me with your fatherly aduiſe and counſell, becauſe, if thereby I cannot attaine to a more pleaſing kinde of happineſſe; neither confeſſion, or any thing elſe, is able to doe me any good at all.

Theſe words were not a little welcome to my Lord Abbot, becauſe (thereby) he halfe aſſured himſelfe, that Fortune had laid open the path to his hoped pleaſures. Whereupon he ſaid. Deare daughter, I make no queſtion to the contrary, but it muſt needes be an exceeding infelicity, to ſo faire and goodly a young woman as you are, to be plagued with ſo ſottiſh an husband, brainſick, and, and without the vſe of common vnderſtanding; but yet ſubiect to a more helliſh affliction then all theſe, namely iealouſie, and therefore you being in this wofull manner tormented, your tribulations are not only ſo much the more credited, but alſo as amply grieued for, and pitied. In which heauy and irkſome perturbations, I ſee not any

meanes

meanes of remedy, but onely one, being a kinde of phyſicke (beyond all other) to cure him of his fooliſh iealouſie; which medicine is very familiar to me, becauſe I know beſt how to compound it, alwayes prouided, that you can be of ſo ſtrong a capacity, as to be ſecret in what I ſhall ſay vnto you.

Good Father (anſwered the Woman) neuer make you any doubt thereof, for I would rather endure death it ſelfe, then diſcloſe any thing which you enioyne me to keepe ſecret: wherefore, I beſeech you Sir to tell me, how, and by what meanes it may be done. If (quoth the Abbot) you deſire to haue him perfectly cured, of a diſeaſe ſo dangerous and offenſiue, of neceſſity he muſt be ſent into Purgatory. How may that be done, ſaide the woman, he being aliue? He muſt needs die, anſwered the Abbot, for his more ſpeedy paſſage thither; and when he hath endured ſo much puniſhment, as may expiate the quality of his iealouſie, we haue certaine deuoute and zealous prayers, whereby to bring him backe againe to life, in as able manner as euer he was. Why then, replyed the woman, I muſt remaine in the ſtate of a Widdow? Very true, ſaide the Abbot, for a certaine time, in all which ſpace, you may not (by no meanes) marrie againe, becauſe the heauens will therewith be highly offended: but *Ferando* being returned to life againe, you muſt repoſſeſſe him as your Husband, but neuer to be iealous any more. Alas Sir (quoth the woman) ſo that he may be cured of his wicked iealouſie, and I no longer liue in ſuch an helliſh impriſonment, do as you pleaſe.

Now was the Abbot (well neere) on the higheſt ſtep of his hope, making her conſtant promiſe, to accompliſh it: But (quoth he) what ſhall be my recompence when I haue done it? Father, ſaide ſhe, whatſoeuer you pleaſe to aske, if it remaine within the compaſſe of my power: but you being ſuch a vertuous and ſanctified man, and I a woman of ſo meane worth or merit; what ſufficient recompence can I be able to make you? Whereunto the Abbot thus replyed. Faire woman, you are able to do as much for me, as I am for you, becauſe I doe diſpoſe my ſelfe, to performe a matter for your comfort and conſolation, euen ſo ought you to be as mindfull of me, in any action concerning my life and welfare. In any ſuch matter Sir (quoth ſhe) depending on your benefit ſo ſtrictly, you may ſafely preſume to command me. You muſt then (ſaide the Abbot) grant me your loue, and the kinde embracing of your perſon; becauſe ſo violent are mine affections, as I pine and conſume away daily, till I enioy the fruition of my deſires, and none can helpe me therein but you.

When the woman heard theſe words, as one confounded with much amazement, thus ſhee replied. Alas, holy Father! What a ſtrange motion haue you made to me? I beleeued very faithfully, that you were no leſſe then a Saint, and is it conuenient, that when ſilly women come to aske counſell of ſuch ſanctified men, they ſhould returne them ſuch vnfitting anſweres? Be not amazed good woman, ſaide the Abbot, at the motion which I haue made vnto you, becauſe holineſſe is not thereby impaired a iot in me; for it is the inhabitant of the ſoule, the other is an imperfection

attending on the body: but be it whatſoeuer, your beauty hath ſo powerfully preuailed on me, that entire loue hath compelld me to let you know it. And more may you boaſt of your beauty, then any that euer I beheld before, conſidering, it is ſo pleaſing to a ſanctified man, that it can draw him from diuine contemplations, to regard a matter of ſo humble an equalitie.

Let me tell you moreouer, woorthy Woman, that ſee me reuerenced here as Lord Abbot, yet am I but as other men are, and in regard I am neither aged, nor miſhapen, me thinkes the motion I haue made, ſhould be the leſſe offenſiue to you, and therefore the ſooner granted. For, all the while as *Ferando* remaineth in Purgatory, doe you but imagine him to be preſent with you, and your perſwaſion will the more abſolutely be confirmed. No man can, or ſhall be priuy to our cloſe meetings, for I carry the ſame holy opinion among all men, as you your ſelfe conceiued of me, and none dare be ſo ſaucie, as to call in queſtion whatſoeuer I doe or ſay, becauſe my words are Oracles, and mine actions more then halfe miracles; doe you not then refuſe ſo gracious an offer. Enow there are, who would gladly enioy that, which is francke and freely preſented to you, and which (if you be a wiſe Woman) is meerely impoſſible for you to refuſe. Richly am I poſſeſſed of Gold and Iewels, which ſhall be all yours, if you pleaſe in fauour to be mine, wherein I will not be gaine-ſaide, except your ſelfe do deny me.

The Woman hauing her eyes fixed on the ground, knew not well how ſhee ſhould denie him; and yet in plaine words, to ſay ſhee conſented, ſhee held it to be ouer-baſe and immodeſt, and ill agreeing with her former reputation: when the Abbot had well noted this attention in her, and how ſilent ſhee ſtood without returning any anſwere; he accounted the conqueſt to be more then halfe his owne: ſo that continuing on his formall perſwaſions, hee neuer ceaſed, but allured her ſtill to beleeue whatſoeuer he ſaide. And ſhee much aſhamed of his importunity, but more of her owne flexible yeelding weakneſſe, made anſwere, that ſhee would willingly accompliſh his requeſt; which yet ſhee did not abſolutely grant, vntill *Ferando* were firſt ſent into Purgatory. And till then (quoth the Abbot) I will not vrge any more, becauſe I purpoſe his ſpeedy ſending thither: but yet, ſo farre lend me your aſſiſtance, that either to mortow, or elſe the next day, he may come hither once more to conuerſe with me. So putting a faire gold Ring on her finger, they parting till the next meeting.

Not a little ioyfull was the Woman of ſo rich a gift, hoping to enioy a great many more of them, and returning home to her neighbours, acquainted them with wonderfull matters, all concerning the ſanctimonious life of the Abbot, a meere miracle of men, and worthy to be truley termed a Saint. Within two dayes after, *Ferando* went to the Abbye againe, and ſo ſoone as the Abbot eſpyed him, he preſently prepared for his ſending of him into Purgatorie. He neuer was

without

without a certaine kinde of drugge, which being beaten into powder, would worke ſo powerfully vpon the braine, and all the other vitall ſenſes, as to entrance them with a deadly ſleepe, and depriue them of all motion, either in the pulſes, or any other part elſe, euen as if the body were dead indeede; in which operation, it would ſo hold and continue, according to the quantity giuen and drunke, as it pleaſed the Abbot to order the matter. This powder or drugge, was ſent him by a great Prince of the Eaſt, and therewith he wrought wonders vpon his Nouices, ſending them into Purgatory when he pleaſed, and by ſuch puniſhments as he inflicted on them there, made them (like credulous aſſes) beleeue whatſoeuer himſelfe liſted.

So much of this powder had the Abbot prouided, as ſhould ſuffice for three dayes entrancing, and hauing compounded it with a very pleaſant Wine, calling *Ferando* into his Chamber, there gaue it him to drinke, and afterward walked with him about the Cloyſter, in very friendly conference together, the ſilly ſot neuer dreaming on the treachery intended againſt him. Many Monkes beſide were recreating themſelues in the Cloyſter, moſt of them delighting to behold the follies of *Ferando*, on whom the potion beganne ſo to worke, that he ſlept in walking, nodding and reeling as hee went, till at the laſt he fell downe, as if he had bene dead.

The Abbot pretending great admiration at this accident, called his Monkes about him, all labouring by rubbing his temples, throwing cold water and vinegar in his face, to reuiue him againe; alleaging that ſome fume or vapour in the ſtomacke, had thus ouer-awed his vnderſtanding faculties, and quite depriued him of life indeede. At length, when by taſting the pulſe, and all their beſt employed paines, they ſaw that their labour was ſpent in vaine; the Abbot vſed ſuch perſwaſions to the Monkes, that they all beleeued him to be dead: whereupon they ſent for his wife and friends, who crediting as much as the reſt did, were very ſad and ſorrowfull for him.

The Abbot (cloathed as he was) laide him in a hollow vault vnder a Tombe, ſuch as there are vſed inſtead of Graues; his Wife returning home againe to her Houſe, with a young Sonne which ſhee had by her Husband, proteſting to keepe ſtill within her Houſe, and neuer more to be ſeene in any company, but onely to attend her young Sonne, and be very carefull of ſuch wealth as her Husband had left vnto her.

From the City of *Bologna*; that very inſtant day, a well ſtaide and gouerned Monke there arriued, who was a neere kinſman to the Abbot, and one whom he might ſecurely truſt. In the dead time of the night, the Abbot and this Monke aroſe, and taking *Ferando* out of the vault, carried him into a darke dungeon or priſon, which he termed by the name of Purgatory, and where hee vſed to diſcipline his Monkes, when they had committed any notorious offence, deſeruing to be puniſhed in Purgatory. There they tooke off all his vſuall wearing

garments, and cloathed him in the habite of a Monke, euen as if he had beene one of the houſe; and laying him on a bundle of ſtraw, ſo left him vntill his ſenſes ſhould be reſtored againe. On the day following, late in the euening, the Abbot, accompanied with his truſty Monke, (by way of viſitation) went to ſee and comfort the ſuppoſed widow, finding her attired in blacke, very ſad and penſiue, which by his wonted perſwaſions, indifferently he appeaſed; challenging the benefit of her promiſe. Shee being thus alone, not hindered by her Husbands iealouſie, and eſpying another goodly gold Ring on his finger, how frailety and folly ouer-ruled her, I know not, ſhee was a weake woman, he a diueliſh deluding man; and the ſtrongeſt holdes by ouer long battery and beſieging, muſt needs yeeld at the laſt, as I feare ſhee did: for very often afterward, the Abbot vſed in this manner to viſit her, and the ſimple ignorant Country people, carrying no ſuch ill opinion of the holy Abbot, and hauing ſeene *Ferando* lying for dead in the vault, and alſo in the habite of a Monke; were verily perſwaded, that when they ſaw the Abbot paſſe by to and fro, but moſt commonly in the night ſeaſon, it was the ghoſt of *Ferando*, who walked in this manner after his death, as a iuſt pennance for his iealouſie.

When *Ferandoes* ſenſes were recouered againe, and he found himſelfe to be in ſuch a darkeſome place; not knowing where he was, he beganne to crie and make a noyſe. When preſently the Monke of *Bologna* (according as the Abbot had tutured him) ſtept into the dungeon, carrying a little waxe candle in the one hand, and a ſmarting whip in the other, going to *Ferando*, he ſtript off his cloathes, and began to laſh him very ſoundly. *Ferando* roaring and crying, could ſay nothing elſe, but where am I? The Monke (with a dreadfull voyce) replyed: Thou art in Purgatory. How? ſaide *Ferando*; what? Am I dead? Thou art dead (quoth the Monke) and began to laſh him luſtily againe. Poore *Ferando*, crying out for his Wife and little Sonne, demanded a number of idle queſtions, whereto the Monke ſtill fitted him with as fantaſticke anſwers. Within a while after, he ſet both foode and wine before him, which when *Ferando* ſaw, he ſaide; How is this? Doe dead men eate and drinke? Yes, replyed the Monke, and this foode which here thou ſeeſt, thy Wife brought hither to the Church this morning, to haue Maſſes deuoutly ſung for thy ſoule, and as to other, ſo muſt it be ſet before thee, for ſuch is the command of the Patrone of this place.

Ferando hauing lyen entranced three dayes and three nights, felt his ſtomacke well prepared to eate, and feeding very heartily, ſtill ſaide; O my good Wife, O my louing Wife, long mayeſt thou liue for this extraordinary kindneſſe. I promiſe thee (ſweete heart) while I was aliue, I cannot remember, that euer any foode and wine was halfe ſo pleaſing to me. O my deare Wife; O my hony Wife. Canſt thou (quoth the Monke) prayſe and commend her now, vſing her ſo villainouſly in thy life time? Then did he whip him more fiercely then before, when *Ferando* holding vp his hands, as crauing for mercy, demanded wherefore he was ſo ſeuerely

uerely punished? I am so commanded (quoth the Monke) by supreme power, and twice euery day must thou be thus disciplinde. Vpon what occasion? replyed *Ferando*. Because (quoth the Monke) thou wast most notoriously iealous of thy Wife, shee being the very kindest woman to thee, as all the Countrey containeth not her equall. It is too true, answered *Ferando*, I was ouer-much iealous of her indeede: but had I knowne, that iealousie was such a hatefull sinne against Heauen, I neuer would haue offended therein.

Now (quoth the Monke) thou canst confesse thine owne wilfull follie, but this should haue beene thought on before, and whilest thou wast liuing in the World. But if the Fates vouchsafe to fauour thee so much, as hereafter to send thee to the World once more; remember thy punishment here in Purgatory, and sinne no more in that foule sinne of iealousie. I pray you Sir tell me, replyed *Ferando*, after men are dead, and put into Purgatory, is there any hope of their euer visiting the World any more? Yes, saide the Monke, if the fury of the Fates be once appeased. O that I knew (quoth *Ferando*) by what meanes they would be appeased, and let me visite the World once againe: I would be the best Husband that euer liued, and neuer more be iealous, neuer wrong so good a Wife, nor euer vse one vnkind word against her. In the meane while, and till their anger may be qualified; when next my Wife doth send me food, I pray you worke so much, that some Candles may be sent me also, because I liue here in vncomfortable darkenesse; and what should I doe with food, if I haue no light. Shee sends Lights enow, answered the Monke, but they are burnt out on the Altar in Masse-time, and thou canst haue none other here, but such as I must bring my selfe; neither are they allowed, but onely for the time of thy feeding and correcting.

Ferando breathing foorth a vehement sigh, desired to know what he was, being thus appointed to punish him in Purgatory? I am (quoth the Monke) a dead man, as thou art, borne in *Sardignia*, where I serued a very iealous Master; and because I soothed him in his iealousie, I had this pennance imposed on me, to serue thee here in Purgatory with meate and drinke, and (twice euery day) to discipline thy body, vntill the Fates haue otherwise determined both for thee and me. Why? saide *Ferando*, are any other persons here, beside you and I? Many thousands, replyed the Monke, whom thou canst neither heare nor see, no more then they are able to doe the like by vs. But how farre, saide *Ferando*, is Purgatory distant from our natiue Countries? About some fifty thousand leagues, answered the Monke; but yet passable in a moment, whensoeuer the offended Fates are pleased: and many Masses are daily saide for thy soule, at the earnest entreaty of thy Wife, in hope of thy conuersion; and becomming a new man, hating to be iealous any more hereafter.

In these and such like speeches, as thus they beguiled the time, so did they obserue it for a dayly course, sometime discipling, other whiles eating and drinking, for the space of ten whole moneths together: in the which time, the Abbot sildome failed to visite *Ferandoes* wife, without the

the leaſt ſuſpition in any of the neighbours, by reaſon of their ſetled opinion, concerning the nightly walking of *Ferandoes* ghoſt. But, as all pleaſures cannot bee exempted from ſome following paine or other, ſo it came to paſſe, that *Ferandoes* wife proued to be conceiued with childe, and the time was drawing on for her deliuerance. Now began the Abbot to conſider, that *Ferandoes* folly was ſufficiently chaſtiſed, and he had beene long enough in Purgatory: wherefore, the better to countenance all paſſed inconueniences, it was now thought high time, that *Ferando* ſhould be ſent to the world againe, and ſet free from the paines of Purgatory, as hauing payed for his iealouſie dearely, to teach him better wiſedome hereafter.

Late in the dead time of the night, the Abbot himſelfe entred into the darke dungeon, and in an hollow counterfeited voyce, called to *Ferando*, ſaying. Comfort thy ſelfe *Ferando*, for the Fates are now pleaſed, that thou ſhalt bee releaſed out of Purgatory, and ſent to liue in the world againe. Thou didſt leaue thy Wife newly conceiued with childe, and this very morning ſhe is deliuered of a goodly Sonne, whom thou ſhalt cauſe to be named *Bennet*: becauſe, by the inceſſant prayers of the holy Abbot, thine owne louing Wife, and for ſweet Saint *Bennets* ſake, this grace and fauour is afforded thee. *Ferando* hearing this, was exceeding ioyfull, and returned this anſwere: For euer honored be the Fates, the holy Lord Abbot, bleſſed Saint *Bennet*, and my moſt dearely beloued Wife, whom I will faithfully loue for euer, and neuer more offend her by any iealouſie in me.

When the next foode was ſent to *Ferando*, ſo much of the powder was mingled with the wine, as would ſerue onely for foure houres entrauncing, in which time, they clothed him in his owne wearing apparell againe, the Abbot himſelfe in perſon, and his honeſt truſty Monke of *Bologna*, conueying and laying him in the ſame vault vnder the Tombe, where at the firſt they gaue him buriall. The next morning following, about the breake of day, *Ferando* recouered his ſenſes, and thorow diuers chinkes and crannies of the Tombe, deſcried day-light, which hee had not ſeene in tenne moneths ſpace before. Perceiuing then plainely, that he was aliue, he cryed out aloude, ſaying: Open, open, and let mee forth of Purgatory, for I haue beene heere long enough in conſcience. Thruſting vp his head againſt the couer of the Tombe, which was not of any great ſtrength, neither well cloſed together; hee put it quite off the Tombe, and ſo got forth vpon his feete: at which inſtant time, the Monks hauing ended their morning Mattins, and hearing the noyſe, ran in haſt thither, and knowing the voyce of *Ferando*, ſaw that he was come forth of the Monument.

Some of them were ancient Signiors of the houſe, and yet but meere Nouices (as all the reſt were) in theſe cunning and politique ſtratagems of the Lord Abbot, when hee intended to puniſh any one in Purgatory: and therefore, being affrighted, and amazed at this rare accident; they fledaway from him, running to the Abbot, who making a ſhew to them,

as

as if he were but new come forth of his Oratory, in a kinde of pacifying speeces, saide; Peace my deare Sonnes, bee not affraide, but fetch the Crosse and Holy-water hither; then follow me, and I will shew you, what miracle the Fates haue pleased to shew in our Conuent, therefore be silent, and make no more noise; all which was performed according to his command.

Ferando looking leane and pale (as one, that in so long time hadde not seene the light of heauen, and endured such strict discipline twice euery day: stood in a gastly amazement by the Tombes side, as not daring to aduenture any further, or knowing perfectly, whether he was (as yet) truly aliue, or no. But when he saw the Monkes and Abbot comming, with their lighted Torches, and singing in a solemne manner of Procession, he humbled himselfe at the Abbots feete, saying. Holy Father, by your zealous prayers (as hath bin miraculously reuealed to me) and the prayers of blessed S. *Bennet*; as also of my honest, deare, and louing Wife, I haue bin deliuered from the paines of Purgatory, and brought againe to liue in this world; for which vnspeakable grace and fauour, most humbly I thanke the well-pleased Fates, S. *Bennet*, your Father-hood, and my kinde Wife, and will remember all your loues to me for euer. Blessed be the Fates, answered the Abbot, for working so great a wonder heere in our Monastery. Go then my good Son, seeing the Fates haue bin so gracious to thee; Go (I say) home to thine owne house, and comfort thy kind wife, who euer since thy departure out of this life, hath liued in continuall mourning, loue, cherish, and make much of her, neuer afflicting her henceforth with causelesse iealousie. No I warrant you good Father, replyed *Ferando*; I haue bin well whipt in Purgatory for such folly, and therefore I might be called a starke foole, if I should that way offend any more, either my louing wife, or any other.

The Abbot causing *Miserere* to be deuoutly sung, sprinkling *Ferando* well with Holy-water, and placing a lighted Taper in his hand, sent him home so to his owne dwelling Village: where when the Neighbours beheld him, as people halfe frighted out of their wits, they fled away from him, so scared and terrified, as if they had seene some dreadfull sight, or gastly apparition; his wife being as fearfull of him, as any of the rest. He called to them kindly by their seuerall names, telling them, that he was newly risen out of his graue, and was a man as he had bin before. Then they began to touch and feele him, growing into more certaine assurance of him, perceiuing him to be a liuing man indeede: whereupon, they demanded many questions of him; and he, as if he were become farre wiser then before, told them tydings, from their long deceased Kindred and Friends, as if he had met with them all in Purgatory, reporting a thousand lyes and fables to them, which (neuertheless (they beleeued.

Then he told them what the miraculous voice had said vnto him, concerning the birth of another young Sonne, whom (according as he was commanded) he caused to be named *Bennet Ferando*. Thus his returne to life againe, and the daily wonders reported by him, caused no meane admi-

miration in the people, with much commendation of the Abbots holines, and *Ferandoes* happy curing his iealousie.

Iuliet of Narbona, *cured the King of France of a daungerous Fistula, in recompence whereof, she requested to enioy as her husband in marriage,* Bertrand *Count of* Rouſſilion. *Hee hauing married her against his will, as vtterly despising her, went to Florence, where hee made loue to a young Gentlewoman.* Iuliet, *by a queint and cunning policy, compassed the meanes (instead of his chosen new friend) to lye with her owne husband, by whom shee conceiued, and had two Sonnes; which being afterward made knowne vnto Count* Bertrand, *he accepted her into his fauour againe, and loued her as his loyall and honourable wife.*

The Ninth Nouell.

Commending the good iudgement and vnderstanding in Ladies or Gentlewomen, that are of a quicke and apprehensiue spirit.



NOw there remained no more (to preserue the priuiledge granted to *Dioneus* vninfringed) but the Queene onely, to declare her Nouell. Wherefore, when the discourse of Madam *Lauretta* was ended, without attending any motion to bee made for her next succeeding, with a gracious and pleasing disposition, thus she began to speake. Who shall tell any Tale hereafter, to carry any hope or expectation of a liking, hauing heard the rare and wittie discourse of Madame *Lauretta?* Beleeue me, it was very aduantageable to vs all, that she was not this dayes first beginner, because few or none would haue had any courage to follow after her; and therefore the rest yet remaining, are the more to be feared and suspected. Neuertheless, to auoid the breach of order, and to claime no priuiledge by my place, of not performing what I ought to do: proue as it may, a Tale you must haue, and thus I proceed.

There liued sometime in the kingdome of *France*, a Gentleman named *Isnarde*, being the Count of *Rousillion*: who because hee was continually weake, crazie, and sickly, kept a Physitian daily in his house, who was called Master *Gerard* of *Narbona*. Count *Isnarde* had one onely Sonne, very young in yeares, yet of towardly hope, faire, comely, and of pleasing person, named *Bertrand*; with whom, many other children of his age, had their education: and among them, a daughter of the fore-named Physi-

tion

tian, called *Iuliet*; who, euen in these tender yeares, fixed her affection vpon young *Bertrand*, with such an earnest and intimate resolution, as was most admirable in so yong a Maiden, and more then many times is noted in yeares of greater discretion. Old Count *Isnarde* dying, young *Bertrand* fell as a Ward to the King, and being sent to *Paris*, remained there vnder his royall custodie and protection, to the no little discomfort of young *Iuliet*, who became greeuously afflicted in minde, because she had lost the company of *Bertrand*.

Within some few yeares after, the Physitian her Father also dyed, and then her desires grew wholly addicted, to visite *Paris* her selfe in person, onely because she would see the young Count, awaiting but time and opportunitie, to fit her stolne iourney thither. But her kindred and friends, to whose care and trust she was committed, in regard of her rich dowrie, and being left as a fatherlesse Orphane: were so circumspect of her walks and daily behauiour, as she could not compasse any meanes of escaping. Her yeares made her now almost fit for marriage, which so much more encreased her loue to the Count, making refusall of many woorthy husbands, and laboured by the motions of her friends and kindred, yet all denyed, they not knowing any reason for her refusalles. By this time the Count was become a gallant goodly Gentleman, and able to make election of his wife, whereby her affections were the more violently enflamed, as fearing least some other should be preferred before her, and so her hopes be vtterly disappointed.

It was noysed abroad by common report, that the King of *France* was in a very dangerous condition, by reason of a strange swelling on his stomacke, which failing of apt and conuenient curing, became a Fistula, afflicting him daily with extraordinary paine and anguish, no Chirurgeon or Phyfitian being found, that could minister any hope of healing, but rather encreased the greefe, and droue it to more vehement extreamitie, compelling the King, as dispairing vtterly of all helpe, to giue ouer any further counsell or aduice. Heereof faire *Iuliet* was wondrously ioyfull, as hoping that this accident would proue the meanes, not onely of her iourney to *Paris*, but if the disease were no more then she imagined; she could easily cure it, and thereby compasse Count *Bertrand* to be her husband. Hereupon, quickning vp her wits, with remembrance of those rules of Art, which (by long practise and experience) she had learned of her skilfull Father, she compounded certaine hearbes together, such as she knew fitting for that kinde of infirmity, and hauing reduced her compound into powder, away she rode forthwith to *Paris*.

Being there arriued, all other serious matters set aside, first shee must needs haue a sight of Count *Bertrand*, as being the onely Saint that caused her pilgrimage. Next she made meanes for her accesse to the King, humbly entreating his Maiesty, to vouchsafe her the sight of his Fistula. When the King saw her, her modest lookes did plainely deliuer, that she was a faire, comely, and discreete young Gentlewoman, wherefore, he would no longer hide it, but layed it open to her view. When shee had

seene

ſeene and felt it, preſently ſhe put the King in comfort; affirming, that ſhe knew her ſelfe able to cure his Fiſtula, ſaying: Sir, if your Highneſſe will referre the matter to me, without any perill of life, or any the leaſt paine to your perſon, I hope (by the helpe of heauen) to make you whole and ſound within eight dayes ſpace. The King hearing her words, beganne merrily to ſmile at her, ſaying: How is it poſſible for thee, being a yong Maiden, to do that which the beſt Phyſitians in Europe, are not able to performe? I commend thy kindneſſe, and will not remaine vnthankefull for thy forward willingneſſe: but I am fully determined, to vſe no more counſell, or to make any further triall of Phyſicke or Chirurgery. Whereto faire *Iuliet* thus replyed: Great King, let not my skill and experience be deſpiſed, becauſe I am young, and a Maiden; for my profeſſion is not Phyſicke, neither do I vndertake the miniſtering thereof, as depending on mine owne knowledge; but by the gracious aſſiſtance of heauen, and ſome rules of skilfull obſeruation, which I learned of reuerend *Gerard* of *Narbona*, who was my worthy Father, and a Phyſitian of no meane fame, all the while he liued.

At the hearing of theſe words, the King began ſomewhat to admire at her gracious cariage, and ſaide within himſelfe. What know I, whether this Virgin is ſent to me by the direction of heauen, or no? Why ſhould I diſdaine to make proofe of her skill? Her promiſe is, to cure me in a ſmall times compaſſe, and without any paine or affliction to me: ſhe ſhall not come ſo farre, to returne againe with the loſſe of her labour, I am reſolued to try her cunning, and thereon ſaide. Faire Virgin, if you cauſe me to breake my ſetled determination, and faile of curing me, what can you expect to follow thereon? Whatſoeuer great King (quoth ſhe) ſhall pleaſe you. Let me be ſtrongly guarded, yet not hindered, when I am to proſecute the buſineſſe: and then if I do not perfectly heale you within eight daies, let a good a fire be made, and therein conſume my body vnto aſhes. But if I accompliſh the cure, and ſet your Highneſſe free from all further greeuance, what recompence then ſhall remaine to me?

Much did the King commend the confident perſwaſion which ſhe had of her owne power, and preſently replyed. Faire beauty (quoth he) in regard that thou art a Maide and vnmaried, if thou keepe promiſe, and I finde my ſelfe to be fully cured: I will match thee with ſome ſuch Gentleman in marriage, as ſhall be of honourable and worthy reputation, with a ſufficient dowry beſide. My gracious Soueraigne ſaide ſhe, willing am I, and moſt heartily thankfull withall, that your Highneſſe ſhall beſtow me in marriage: but I deſire then, to haue ſuch a husband, as I ſhall deſire or demand by your gracious fauour, without preſuming to craue any of your Sonnes, Kindred, or Alliance, or appertaining vnto your Royal blood. Whereto the King gladly granted. Young *Iuliet* began to miniſter her Phyſicke, and within fewer dayes then her limited time, the King was found and perfectly cured; which when he perceiued, he ſaide vnto her. Truſt me vertuous Mayde, moſt woorthily haſt thou wonne a Huſband, name him, and thou ſhalt haue him. Royall King (quoth ſhe) then

haue

haue I won the Count *Bertrand* of *Rousillion*, whom I haue most entirely loued from mine Infancy, and cannot (in my soule) affect any other. Very loath was the King to grant her the young Count, but in regard of his solmne passed promise, and his royal word engaged, which he would not by any meanes breake; he commanded, that the Count should be sent for, and spake thus to him.

Noble Count, it is not vnknowne to vs, that you are a Gentleman of great honour, and it is our Royall pleasure, to discharge your wardship, that you may repaire home to your owne House, there to settle your affaires in such order, as you may be the readier to enioy a Wife, which we intend to bestowe vpon you. The Count returned his Highnesse most humble thankes, desiring to know of whence, and what she was? It is this Gentlewoman, answered the King, who (by the helpe of Heauen) hath beene the meanes to saue my life. Well did the Count know her, as hauing very often before seene her; and although she was very faire and amiable, yet in regard of her meane birth, which he held as a disparagement to his Nobility in blood; he made a scorne of her, and spake thus to the King. Would your Highnesse giue me a Quacksaluer to my Wife, one that deales in drugges and Physicarie? I hope I am able to bestowe my selfe much better then so. Why? quoth the King, wouldst thou haue vs breake our faith; which for the recouery of our health, we haue giuen to this vertuous virgin, and she will haue no other reward, but onely Count *Bertrand* to be her husband? Sir, replied the Count, you may dispossesse me of all that is mine, because I am your Ward and Subiect, and any where else you may bestow me: but pardon me to tell you, that this marriage cannot be made with any liking or allowance of mine, neither will I euer giue consent thereto.

Sir, saide the King, it is our will that it shall be so, vertuous she is, faire and wise; she loueth thee most affectionately, and with her mayest thou lead a more Noble life, then with the greatest Lady in our Kingdome. Silent, and discontented stoode the Count, but the King commanded preparation for the marriage; and when the appointed time was come, the Count (albeit against his will) receiued his wife at the Kings hand; she louing him deerly as her owne life. When all was done, the Count requested of the King, that what else remained for further solemnization of the marriage, it might be performed in his owne Country, reseruing to himselfe what else he intended. Being mounted on horseback, and humbly taking their leaue of the King, the Count would not ride home to his owne dwelling, but into *Tuscany*, where he heard of a warre betweene the *Florentines* and the *Senesi*, purposing to take part with the *Florentines*, to whom he was willingly and honourably welcommed, being created Captaine of a worthy Company, and continuing there a long while in seruice.

The poore forsaken new married Counteſſe, could scarsely be pleased with such dishonourable vnkindnesse, yet gouerning her impatience with no meane discretion, and hoping by her vertuous carriage, to compasse

the meanes of his recall: home ſhe rode to *Rouſsillion*, where all the people receiued her very louingly. Now, by reaſon of the Counts ſo long abſence, all things were there farre out of order; mutinies, quarrels, and ciuill diſſentions, hauing procured many diſſolute irruptions, to the expence of much blood in many places. But ſhe, like a iolly ſtirring Lady, very wiſe and prouident in ſuch diſturbances, reduced all occaſions to ſuch ciuility againe, that the people admired her rare behauiour, and condemned the Count for his vnkindneſſe towards her.

After that the whole Country of *Rouſsillion* (by the policy and wiſedome of this worthy Lady was fully re-eſtabliſhed) in their ancient liberties; ſhe made choiſe of two diſcreet knights, whom ſhe ſent to the Count her husband, to let him vnderſtand, that if in diſpleaſure to her, hee was thus become a ſtranger to his owne Country: vpon the returne of his anſwer, to giue him contentment, ſhe would depart thence, and by no meanes diſturbe him. Roughly and churliſhly he replied; Let her do as ſhe liſt, for I haue no determination to dwell with her, or neere where ſhe is. Tell her from me, when ſhe ſhall haue this Ring, which you behold heere on my finger, and a Sonne in her armes begotten by me; then will I come liue with her, and be her loue. The Ring he made moſt precious and deere account of, and neuer tooke it off from his finger, in regard of an eſpeciall vertue and property, which he well knew to be remaining in it. And theſe two Knights, hearing the impoſſibility of theſe two ſtrict conditions, with no other fauour elſe to be deriued from him; ſorrowfully returned backe to their Lady, and acquainted her with this vnkinde anſwer, as alſo his vnalterable determination, which well you may conceiue, muſt needs be very vnwelcome to her.

After ſhe had an indifferent while conſidered with her ſelfe, her reſolution became ſo vndauntable; that ſhe would aduenture to practiſe ſuch meanes, whereby to compaſſe thoſe two apparant impoſſibilities, and ſo to enioy the loue of her husband. Hauing abſolutely concluded what was to be done, ſhe aſſembled all the cheefeſt men of the country, reuealing vnto them (in mournfull manner) what an attempt ſhe had made already, in hope of recouering her husbands fauour, and what a rude anſwer was thereon returned. In the end, ſhe told them, that it did not ſute with her vnworthineſſe, to make the Count liue as an exile from his owne inheritance, vpon no other inducement, but onely in regard of her: wherefore, ſhe had determined betweene heauen and her ſoule, to ſpend the remainder of her dayes in Pilgrimages and prayers, for preſeruation of the Counts ſoule and her owne; earneſtly deſiring them, to vndertake the charge and gouernment of the Country, and ſignifying vnto the Count, how ſhe had forſaken his houſe, and purpoſed to wander ſo farre thence, that neuer would ſhe viſit *Rouſsillion* any more. In the deliuerie of theſe words, the Lords and Gentlemen wept and ſighed extraordinarily, vſing many earneſt imprecations to alter this reſolue in her, but all was in vaine.

Hauing taken her ſad and ſorrowfull farewell of them all, accompani-

ed

ed onely with her Maide, and one of her Kinſmen, away ſhe went, attired in a Pilgrimes habit, yet well furniſhed with money and precious Iewels, to anoyde all wants which might befall her in trauaile; not acquainting any one whether ſhe went. In no place ſtayed ſhe, vntill ſhe was arriued at *Florence*, where happening into a poore Widdowes houſe, like a poore Pilgrime, ſhe ſeemed well contented therewith. And deſiring to heare ſome tydings of the Count, the next day ſhee ſaw him paſſe by the houſe on horſe-backe, with his company. Now, albeit ſhee knew him well enough, yet ſhee demanded of the good old Widdow, what Gentleman he was? She made anſwer, that he was a ſtranger there, yet a Nobleman, called Count *Bertrand* of *Rouſſillion*, a very courteous Knight, beloued and much reſpected in the City. Moreouer, that he was tarre in loue with a neighbour of hers, a young Gentlewoman, but very poore and meane in ſubſtance, yet of honeſt life, vertuous, and neuer taxed with any euill report: onely her pouerty was the maine imbarment of her marriage, dwelling in houſe with her mother, who was a wiſe, honeſt, and worthy Lady.

The Counteſſe hauing well obſerued her words, and conſidered thereon from point to point; debating ſoberly with her owne thoughts, in ſuch a doubtfull caſe what was beſt to be done. When ſhe had vnderſtood which was the houſe, the ancient Ladies name, and likewiſe her daughters, to whom her husband was now ſo affectionately deuoted; ſhe made choiſe of a fit and conuenient time, when (in her Pilgrimes habit) ſecretly ſhe went to the houſe. There ſhe found the mother and daughter in poore condition, and with as poore a family: whom after ſhe had ceremoniouſly ſaluted, ſhe told the old Lady, that ſhe requeſted but a little conference with her. The Lady aroſe, and giuing her kinde entertainement, they went together into a withdrawing Chamber, where being both ſet downe, the Counteſſe began in this manner.

Madame, in my poore opinion, you are not free from the frownes of Fortune, no more then I my ſelfe am: but if you were ſo well pleaſed, there is no one that can comfort both our calamities in ſuch manner, as you are able to do. And beleeue me anſwered the Lady, there is nothing in the world that can be ſo welcome to me, as honeſt comfort. The Counteſſe proceeding on in her former ſpeeches ſaid: I haue now need (good Madame) both of your truſt and fidelity, whereon if I ſhould rely, and you faile me, it will be your owne vndooing as well as mine. Speake then boldly, replied the old Lady, and remaine conſtantly aſſured, that you ſhall no way be deceiued by me. Hereupon, the Counteſſe declared the whole courſe of her loue, from the very originall to the inſtant, reuealing alſo what ſhe was, and the occaſion of her comming thither, relating euery thing ſo perfectly, that the Lady verily beleeued her, by ſome reports which ſhe had formerly heard, and which mooued her the more to compaſſion. Now, when all circumſtances were at full diſcouered, thus ſpake the Counteſſe.

Among my other miſeries and misfortunes, which hath halfe broken

my heart in the meere repetition, beſide the ſad and afflicting ſufferance; two things there are, which if I cannot compaſſe to haue, all hope is quite fruſtrate for euer, of gaining the grace of my Lord and Husband. Yet theſe two things may I obtaine by your helpe, if all be true which I haue heard, and you can therein beſt reſolue mee. Since my comming to this City, it hath credibly bene told me, that the Count my husband, is deeply in loue with your daughter. If the Count (quoth the Ladie) loue my daughter, and haue a wife of his owne, he muſt thinke, and ſo ſhall ſurely finde it, that his greatneſſe is no priuiledge for him, whereby to worke diſhonour vpon her pouerty. But indeede, ſome apparances there are, and ſuch a matter as you ſpeake of, may be ſo preſumed; yet ſo farre from a very thought of entertaining in her or me; as whatſoeuer I am able to doe, to yeeld you any comfort and content, you ſhall find me therein both willing and ready : for I prize my daughters ſpotleſſe pouerty at as high a rate, as he can doe the pride of his honour.

Madame, quoth the Counteſſe, moſt heartily I thanke you. But before I preſume any further on your kindneſſe, let me firſt tell you, what faithfully I intend to do for you, if I can bring my purpoſe to effect. I ſee that your daughter is beautifull, and of ſufficient yeeres for marriage; and is debarred thereof (as I haue heard) onely by lack of a competent dowry. Wherefore Madame, in recompence of the fauour I expect from you, I will enrich her with ſo much ready money as you ſhall thinke ſufficient to match her in the degree of honour. Pouerty made the poore Lady, very well to like of ſuch a bountifull offer, and hauing a noble heart ſhee ſaid : Great Counteſſe ſay, wherein am I able to do you any ſeruice, as can deſerue ſuch a gracious offer ? If the action be honeſt; without blame or ſcandall to my poore, yet vndetected reputation, gladly I will do it; and it being accompliſhed, let the requitall reſt in your owne noble nature.

Obſerue me then Madame, replied the Counteſſe. It is moſt conuenient for my purpoſe, that by ſome truſty and faithfull meſſenger, you ſhould aduertiſe the Count my husband, that your daughter is, and ſhall be at his command : but that ſhe may remaine abſolutely aſſured, that his loue is conſtant to her, and aboue all other : ſhee muſt entreat him, to ſend her (as a teſtimony thereof) the Ring which he weareth vpon his little finger, albeit ſhee hath heard, that he loueth it deerly. If he ſend the Ring, you ſhall giue it me, & afterward ſend him word, that your daughter is ready to accompliſh his pleaſure; but, for the more ſafety and ſecrecie, he muſt repaire hither to your houſe, where I being in bed inſteed of your daughter, faire Fortune may ſo fauour mee, that (vnknowne to him) I may conceiue with childe. Vpon which good ſucceſſe, when time ſhall ſerue, hauing the Ring on my finger, and a childe in my armes begotten by him, his loue and liking may be recouered, and (by your meanes) I continue with my Husband, as euery vertuous Wife ought to doe.

The good old Lady imagined, that this was a matter ſomewhat difficult,

cult, and might lay a blamefull imputation on her daughter; Neuertheleſſe, conſidering, what an honeſt office it was in her, to bee the meanes, whereby ſo worthy a Counteſſe ſhould recouer an vnkinde huſband, led altogether by luſt, and not a iot of cordiall loue; ſhe knew the intent to be honeſt, the Counteſſe vertuous, and her promiſe religious, and therefore vndertooke to effect it Within few dayes after, verie ingeniouſly, and according to the inſtructed order, the Ring was obtayned, albeit much againſt the Counts will; and the Counteſſe, in ſted of the Ladies vertuous daughter, was embraced by him in bed: the houre prouing ſo auſpicious, and *Iuno* being Lady of the aſcendent, conioyned with the witty *Mercury*, ſhee conceiued of two goodly Sonnes, and her deliuerance agreed correſpondently with the iuſt time,

Thus the old Lady, not at this time onely, but at many other meetings beſides; gaue the Counteſſe free poſſeſſion of her husbands pleaſures, yet alwayes in ſuch darke and concealed ſecrecie, as it was neuer ſuſpected, nor knowne by any but themſelues, the Count lying with his owne wife, and diſappointed of her whom he more deerely loued. Alwayes at his vpriſing in the mornings (which vſually was before the breake of day, for preuenting the leaſt ſcruple of ſuſpicion) many familiar conferences paſſed betweene them, with the gifts of diuers faire and coſtly Iewels; all which the Counteſſe carefully kept, and perceiuing aſſuredly, that ſhee was conceiued with childe, ſhee would no longer bee troubleſome to the good old Lady; but calling her aſide, ſpake thus to her. Madame, I muſt needes giue thankes to heauen and you, becauſe my deſires are amply accompliſhed, and both time and your deſerts doe iuſtly challenge, that I ſhould accordingly quite you before my departure. It remaineth now in your owne power, to make what demand you pleaſe of me, which yet I will not giue you by way of reward, becauſe that would ſeeme to bee baſe and mercenary: but onely whatſoeuer you ſhall receiue of me, is in honourable recompence of faire and vertuous deſeruings, ſuch as any honeſt and well-minded Lady in the like diſtreſſe, may with good credit allow, and yet no preiudice to her reputation.

Although pouerty might well haue tutored the Ladies tongue, to demand a liberall recompence for her paines; yet ſhee requeſted but an 100. pounds, as a friendly helpe towards her daughters marriage, and that with a baſhfull bluſhing was vttered too; yet the Counteſſe gaue her fiue hundred pounds, beſides ſo many rich and coſtly Iewels, as amounted to a farre greater ſumme. So ſhee returned to her wonted lodging, at the aged widdowes houſe, where firſt ſhee was entertained at her comming to *Florence*; and the good old Lady, to auoyde the Counts repairing to her houſe any more, departed thence ſodainly with her daughter, to diuers friends of hers that dwelt in the Country, whereat the Count was much diſcontented; albeit afterward, he did neuer heare any more tidings of hir or her daughter, who was worthily married, to her Mothers great comfort.

Not long after, Count *Bertrand* was re-called home by his people:

and he hauing heard of his wiues abſence, went to *Rouſsillian* ſo much the more willingly. And the Counteſſe knowing her husbands departure from *Florence*, as alſo his ſafe arriuall at his owne dwelling, remained ſtill in *Florence*, vntill the time of her deliuerance, which was of two goodly Sonnes, liuely reſembling the lookes of their Father, and all the perfect lineaments of his body. Perſwade your ſelues, ſhe was not a little carefull of their nurſing; and when ſhe ſaw the time anſwerable to her determination, ſhe tooke her iourney (vnknowne to any) and arriued with them at *Montpellier*, where ſhe reſted her ſelfe for diuers dayes, after ſo long and wearyſome a iourney.

Vpon the day of all Saints, the Count kept a ſolmne Feaſtiuall, for the aſſembly of his Lords, Knights, Ladies, and Gentlewomen: vpon which Iouiall day of generall reioycing, the Counteſſe attired in her wonted Pilgrimes weed, repaired thither, entring into the great Hall where the Tables were readily couered for dinner. Preaſſing through the throng of people, with her two children in her armes, ſhe preſumed vnto the place where the Count ſate, and falling on her knees before him, the teares trickling abundantly downe her cheekes, thus ſhe ſpake. Worthy Lord, I am thy poore, deſpiſed, and vnfortunate wife; who, that thou mightſt returne home, and not be an exile from thine owne abiding, haue thus long gone begging through the world. Yet now at length, I hope thou wilt be ſo honourably-minded, as to performe thine owne too ſtrict impoſed conditions, made to the two Knights which I ſent vnto thee, and which (by thy command) I was enioyned to do. Behold here in mine armes, not onely one Sonne by thee begotten, but two Twins, and thy Ring beſide. High time is it now, if men of honour reſpect their promiſes, and after ſo long and tedious trauell, I ſhould at laſt be welcommed as thy true wife.

The Count hearing this, ſtoode as confounded with admiration; for full well he knew the Ring: and both the children were ſo perfectly like him, as he was confirmed to be their Father by generall iudgement. Vpon his vrging by what poſſible meanes this could be brought to paſſe: the Counteſſe in preſence of the whole aſſembly, and vnto her eternall commendation, related the whole hiſtory, euen in ſuch manner as you haue formerly heard it. Moreouer, ſhe reported the priuate ſpeeches in bed, vttered betweene himſelfe and her, being witneſſed more apparantly, by the coſtly Iewels there openly ſhewne. All which infallible proofes, proclaiming his ſhame, and her moſt noble carriage to her husband; he confeſſed, that ſhe had told nothing but the truth in euery point which ſhe had reported.

Commending her admirable conſtancy, excellency of wit, and ſprightly courage, in making ſuch a bold aduenture; he kiſſed the two ſweete boyes, and to keepe his promiſe, whereto he was earneſtly importuned, by all his beſt eſteemed friends there preſent, eſpecially the honourable Ladies, who would haue no deniall, but by forgetting his former harſh and vnciuill carriage towards her, to accept her for euer as his lawfull

wife:

wife, folding her in his armes, and ſweetly kiſſing her diuers times together, he bad her welcome to him, as his vertuous, loyall, and moſt louing wife, and ſo (for euer after) he would acknowledge her. Well knew hee that ſhe had ſtore of better beſeeming garments in the houſe, and therefore requeſted the Ladies to walke with her to her Chamber, to vncaſe her of thoſe Pilgrimes weeds, and cloath her in her owne more ſumptuous garments, euen thoſe which ſhee wore on her wedding day, becauſe that was not the day of his contentment, but onely this; for now he confeſſed her to be his wife indeede, and now he would giue the king thanks for her, and now was Count *Bertrand* truly married to the faire *Iuliet* of *Narbona*.

The wonderfull and chaſte reſolued continency of faire Seriſtha, daughter to Siwalde King of Denmarke, who being ſought and ſued vnto by many worthy perſons that did affect her dearly, would not looke any man in the face, vntill ſuch time as ſhe was married.

The tenth Nouell.

A very worthy preſident for all yong Ladies and Gentlewomen, not raſhly to beſtowe themſelues in marriage, without the conſent of their Parents and Friends.



Dioneus hauing diligently liſtened to the Queenes ſingulare diſcourſe, ſo ſoone as ſhe had concluded, and none now remayned but himſelfe, to giue a full period vnto that dayes pleaſure, without longer trifling the time, or expecting any commaund from the Queene, thus he began. Gracious Ladies, I know that you now expect from mee, ſome ſuch queint tale as ſhalbe ſuteable to my merry diſpoſition, rather ſauouring of wantonneſſe, then any diſcreete & ſober wiſedome; and ſuch a purpoſe indeede I once had entertayned. But hauing well obſerued all your ſeuerall relations, grounded on graue and worthy examples, eſpecially the laſt, ſo notably deliuered by the Queene, I cannot but commend faire *Iuliet* of *Narbona*, in performing two ſuch ſtrange impoſſibilities, and conquering the kindneſſe of ſo cruell a Husband. If my Tale come ſhort of the precedent excellency, or giue not ſuch content, as you (perhaps) expect, accept my good will, and let mee ſtand engaged for a better hereafter.

The

The Annals of Denmarke do make mention, that the King of the ſaid country, who was firſt ſet downe as Prince, contrary to the ancient cuſtom and lawes obſerued among the Danes, namely *Hunguinus*; had a ſon called *Siwalde*, who ſucceeded him in the eſtates and kingdome, belonging to his famous predeceſſors. That Age, and the Court of that Royall Prince, was verie highly renowned, by the honour of faire *Seriſtha*, Daughter to the ſaide *Siwalde*; who beſide her generall repute, of being a myracle of Nature, in perfection of beautie, and moſt compleate in all that the heart of man could deſire to note, in a body full of grace, gentleneſſe, and whatſoeuer elſe, to attract the eyes of euerie one to beholde her: was alſo ſo chaſte, modeſt, and baſhfull, as it was meerely impoſſible to preuaile ſo farre with her, that any man ſhould come to ſpeake with her. For in thoſe dayes, marriages were purſued and ſought by valour, and by the onely opinion which ſtout Warriours conceiued of the vertuous qualities of a Lady. Notwithſtanding, neuer could any man make his vaunt, that ſhe had giuen him ſo much as a looke, or euer any attained to the fauour, to whiſper a word in her eare. Becauſe, both the cuſtome and will of Parents then (very reſpectiuely kept in thoſe Northerne parts of the world) of hearing ſuch ſpeake, as defired their daughters in marriage, grew from offering them ſome worthy ſeruices; and thereby compaſſed meanes to yeeld their contentation, by ſome gracious and kinde anſwers.

But ſhe, who was farre off from the deſire of any ſuch follies, referring her ſelfe wholly to the will and diſpoſition of the King her Lord and Father; was ſo contrary to giue any liuing man an anſwer, that her eye neuer looked on any one ſpeaking to her, appearing as ſparing in vouchſafing a glance, as her heart was free from a thought of affection. For ſhe had no other imagination, but that Maids both in their choice and will, ought to haue any other diſpoſition, but ſuch as ſhould bee pleaſing to their Parents, either to graunt, or deny; according as they were guided by their graue iudgement. In like manner, ſo well had ſhe brideled her ſenſuall appetites, with the curbe of Reaſon, Wiſedom, and Prouidence, ſetting ſuch an extraordinary ſeuere and conſtant reſtraint, on the twinkling or motions of her eyes, in abſolute obedience to her Father, as neuer was ſhe ſeene to turne her head aſide, to lend one looke on any man of her age.

A worthy ſight it was, to behold Knights errant, paſſing, repaſſing to Denmarke, and backe againe, labouring to conquer thoſe ſetled eyes, to win the leaſt ſigne of grace and fauor, from her whom they ſo dutiouſly purſued, to ſteale but a ſilly glimpſe or glance, and would haue thought it a kind of honorable theft. But this immouable rock of beauty, although ſhe knew the diſſignes of them which thus frequented the Court of the King her Father, and could not pretend ignorance of their endeauour, ayming onely at obtaining her in marriage: yet did not lend any looke of her eye, yeelding the leaſt ſignall of the hearts motion, in affecting any thing whatſoeuer, but what it pleaſed her Father ſhe ſhould do.

Seriſtha,

Serictha liuing in this ſtrange and vnvſuall manner, it mooued manie Princes and great Lords, to come and court her, contending both by ſignes and words, to change her from this ſeuere conſtancie, and make knowne (if poſſible it might be) whether a woman would or could be ſo reſolute, as to vſe no reſpect at all towards them, comming from ſo many ſtrange countries, to honor her in the Courts of the King her father. But in theſe dayes of ours, if ſuch a number of gallant ſpirits ſhould come, to aske but one looke of ſome of our beauties, I am halfe affraide, that they ſhould finde the eyes of many of our dainty Darlings, not ſo ſparing of their glances, as thoſe of *Serictha* were. Conſidering, that our Courtiers of theſe times, are this way emulous one of another, and Women are ſo forward in offering themſelues, that they performe the Office of ſuters, as fearing leaſt they ſhould not be ſolicited, yea, though it be in honeſt manner.

The King, who knew well enough, that a Daughter was a treaſure of ſome danger to keepe, and growing doubtfull withall leaſt (in the end) this ſo obſtinate ſeuerity would be ſhaken, if once it came to paſſe, that his daughter ſhould feele the piercing apprehenſions of loue, & whereof (as yet) ſhe neuer had any experience; he determined to vſe ſome remedy for this great concourſe of louers, and ſtrange kinde of carriage in the Princeſſe his daughter. For, hee apparantly perceiued, that ſuch excelling beauty as was in *Serictha*, with thoſe good and commendable cuſtomes, and other ornaments of his daughters mind, could neuer attayne to ſuch an height of perfection; but yet there would be found ſome men, ſo wittily accute and ingenious, as to conuert and humor a maid, according to their will, and make a mockery of them, who were (before) of moſt high eſteeme. Beſide, among ſo great a troope of Lords, as dayly made tender of their amorous ſeruice, ſome one or other would prooue ſo happy, as (at the laſt) ſhe ſhould be his Miſtreſſe. And therefore forbearing what otherwiſe hee had intended, as a finall concluſion of all ſuch follies: calling his daughter alone to himſelfe in his Chamber, and ſtanding cleere from all other attention, hee vſed to her this, or the like Language.

I know not faire daughter, what reaſon may moue you to ſhew your ſelfe ſo diſdainfull towards ſo many Noble and worthy men, as come to viſite you, and honour my Court with their preſence, offering me theyr loue and loyall ſeruice, vnder this onely pretence (as I perceiue) of obtaining you, and compaſſing the happineſſe (as it appeareth in plaine ſtrife among them) one day to winne the prize, you being the maine yſſue of all their hope. If it be baſhfull modeſty, which (indeede) ought to attend on all virgins of your yeares, and ſo veyles our eyes, as (with honour) you cannot looke on any thing, but what is your owne, or may not iuſtly vouchſafe to ſee: I commend your maidenly continency, which yet neuertheleſſe, I would not haue to bee ſo ſeuere, as (at length) your youth falling into miſlike thereof, it may bee the occaſion of ſome great misfortune, either to you, or mee, or elſe to vs both together: conſide-

ring

ring what rapes are ordinarily committed in those quarters, and the Ladies equall euery way to your selfe; which happening, would presently be the cause of my death.

If it be in regard of some vowe which you haue consecrated to virginity, and to some one of our Gods: I seeke not therein to *hinder* your disseignes, neither will bereaue the celestiall powers, of whatsoeuer appertaineth to them. Albeit I could wish, that it should be kept in a place more straited, and separate from the resort of men; to the end, that so bright a beauty as yours is, should cause no discords among amorous suters, neither my Court proue a Campe destinied vnto the conclusion of such quarrels, or you be the occasion of reuiuing so many, whose seruice would beseeme a much more needfull place, then to dye heere by fond and foolish opinion of enioying a vaine pleasure, yet remaining in the power of another body to grant. If therefore I shall perceiue, that these behauiours in you do proceede from pride, or contempt of them, who endeauour to do you both honour and seruice, and insted of granting them a gracious looke, in arrogancie you keepe it from them, making them enemies to your folly and my sufferance: I sweare to you by our greatest God, that I will take such due order, as shall make you feele the hand of an offended Father, and teach you (henceforth) to bee much more affable.

Wherefore deere daughter, you shall do me a singular pleasure, freely to acquaint me with your minde, and the reasons of your so stricte seuerity: promising you, vpon the word and faith of a King, nay more, of a louing and kinde Father, th t if I finde the cause to be iust and reasonable, I will desist so farre from hindering your intent, as you shall rather perceiue my fatherly furtherance, and rest truly resolued of my helpe and fauour. Wherefore faire daughter, neither blush or dismay, or feare to let me vnderstand your will; for euidently I see, that meere virgin shame hath made a rapture of your soule, being nothing else but those true splendors of vertue deriued from your Aunce stors, and shining in you most gloriously, gracing you with a much richer embellishing, then those beauties bestowed on you by Nature. Speake therefore boldly to your Father, because there is no law to prohibit your speech to him: for when he commandeth, he ought to be obeyed: promising vpon mine oath once againe, that if your reasons are such as they ought to be, I will not faile to accommodate your fancy.

The wise and vertuous Princesse, hearing the King to alledge such gracious reasons, and to lay so kinde a command on her; making him most lowe and humble reuerence, in signe of dutifull accepting such fauour, thus she answered. Royall Lord and Father, seeing that in your Princely Court, I haue gathered whatsoeuer may be termed vertuous in me, and you being the principall instructer of my life, from whom I haue learned those lessons, how maides (of my age) ought to gouerne and maintaine themselues: you shall apparantly perceiue, that neither gazing lookes, which I ought not to yeelde without your consent, nor pride or arro-

gancie,

gancie; neuer taught mee by you, or the Queene my moſt honourable Lady and Mother, are any occaſion of my cariage towards them, which come to make oſtentation of their folly in your Court, as if a meere look of *Seriſtha*, were ſufficient to yeeld aſſurance effectually of their deſires victory.

Nothing (my moſt Royall Lord and Father) induceth me to this kind of behauiour, but onely due reſpect of your honour and mine owne: and to the end it may not be thought that I belye my ſelfe, in not eying the affectionate offers of amorous purſuers, or haue any other priuate reſerued meaning, then what may beſt pleaſe King *Siualde* my Father, let it ſuffiſe Sir, that it remaineth in your power onely, to make an apt election and choice for mee: for I neither ought, nor will allowe the acceptance of any ſuiters kindneſſe, ſo much as by a looke (much leſſe then by words) vntill your Highneſſe ſhall nominate the man, to be a meet husband for *Seriſtha*. It is onely you then (my Lord) that beares the true life-blood of our Anceſtors. It is the vntainted life of the Queene my Mother, that ſets a chaſte and ſtrict reſtraint on mine eyes, from eſtranging my heart, to the idle amorous enticements of young giddy-headed Gentlemen, and haue ſealed vp my ſoule with an abſolute determination, rather to make choice of death, then any way to alter this my warrantable ſeuerity.

You being a wiſe King, and the worthy Father of *Seeiſtha*, it is in you to mediate, counſell, and effect, what beſt ſhall beſeeme the deſſeignes of your daughter, becauſe it is the vertue of Children, yea, and their eternall glory and renowne, to illuſtrate the liues and memories of their parents. It conſiſteth in you, either to graunt honeſt licenſe to ſuch Lords as deſire me, or to oppoſe them with ſuch diſcreete conditions, as both your ſelfe may ſit free from any further afflicting, and they reſt defeated of daungerous diſſentions, according as you foreſee what may enſue. Which yet (neuertheleſſe) I hold as a matter impoſſible, if their diſcord ſhould be grounded on the ſole apprehenſion of their ſoules: and the only preuention thereof, is, not to yeeld any ſigne, glance of the eye, or ſo much as a word more to one man then another: for ſuch is the ſetled diſpoſition of your daughters ſoule, and which ſhee humbly entreateth, may ſo ſtill be ſuffered.

Many meanes there are, whereby to winne the grace of the greateſt King, by employing their paines in worthy occaſions, anſwerable vnto their yeeres and vertue, if any ſuch ſparkes of honour doe ſhine in their ſoules; rather then by gaining heere any matter of ſo meane moment, by endeauouring to ſhake the ſimplicity of a baſhfull Maide: Let them cleare the Kings High-wayes of Theeues, who make the paſſages difficult; or let them expell Pyrates from off the Seas, which make our Daniſh coaſts euery way inacceſſible. Theſe are the Noble meanes to merite, as may throw deſerued recompence vpon them, and much more worthily, then making Idolles of Ladies lookes, or gazing for Babies in their wanton eyes. So may you beſtowe on them what is your owne,

gran-

granting *Seriſtha* to behold none, but him who you ſhall pleaſe to giue her: for otherwiſe, you know her abſolute reſolue, neuer to looke any liuing man in the face, but onely you my gracious Lord and Father.

The King hearing this wiſe and modeſt anſwer of his daughter, could not chooſe but commend her in his heart; and ſmiling at the counſell which ſhe gaue him, returned her this anſwer. Vnderſtand me well, faire daughter; neither am I minded to breake your determination wholly, nor yet to gouerne my ſelfe according to your fancy. I ſtand indifferently contented, that vntill I haue otherwiſe purpoſed, you ſhall continue the nature of your ancient cuſtome: yet conditionally, that when I command an alteration of your carriage, you faile not therein to declare your obedience. What elſe remaineth beſide, for ſo ſilly a thing as a Woman is, and for the priuate pleaſing of ſo many great Princes and Lords, I will not endanger any of their liues, becauſe their parents and friends (being ſenſible of ſuch loſſes) may ſeeke reuenge, perhaps to their owne ruine, and ſome following ſcourge to my indiſcretion. For I conſider (daughter) that I haue neighbours who ſcarſely loue me, and of whom (in time) I may right my ſelfe, hauing receiued by their meanes, great wrongs and iniuries. Alſo I make no doubt, but to manage your loue-ſute with diſcretion, and ſet ſuch a pleaſing proceeding betweene them, as neyther ſhall beget any hatred in them towards me, nor yet offend them in their affections purſuite, till fortune may ſmile ſo fauourably vppon ſome one man, to reach the height of both our wiſhed deſires.

Siwalde was thus determinately reſolued, to let his daughter liue at her owne diſcretion, without any alteration of her continued ſeueritie, perceiuing day by day, that many came ſtill to requeſt her in mariage, and he could not giue her to them all, nor make his choyſe of any one, leaſt all the reſt ſhould become his enemies, and fall in quarrell one with another. Onely this therefore was his ordination, that among ſuch a number of amorous ſuiters, he onely ſhould weare the Lawrell wreath of victory, who could obtaine ſuch fauour of *Seriſtha*, as but to looke him in the face. This condition ſeemed to bee of no meane difficulty, yea, and ſo impoſſible, that many gaue ouer their amorous enterprize: whereof *Seriſtha* was wondrouſly ioyfull, ſeeing her ſelfe eaſed of ſuch tedious importunitie, dulling her eares with their proffered ſeruices, and foppiſh allegations of fantaſticke ſeruitude: ſuch as idle headed Louers do vſe to proteſt before their Miſtreſſes, wherein they may beleeue them, if they liſt.

Among all them that were thus forward in their heate of affection, there was a young Daniſh Lord, named *Ocharus*, the ſonne of a Pyrate, called *Hebonius*, the ſame man, who hauing ſtolne the Siſter vnto King *Hunguinus*, and ſiſter to *Siwalde*, and affiancing himſelfe to her, was ſlaine by King *Haldane*, and by thus killing him, enioyed both the Lady, and the kingdome of the Gothes alſo, as her inheritance. This *Ocharus*, relying much on his comelineſſe of perſon, wealth, power, and valour, but (aboue all the reſt) on his excellent and eloquent ſpeaking, beſtowed his

beſt

beſt endeauours to obtaine. *Serictha*, notwithſtanding the contemptible carriage of the reſt towards him: whereupon preuailing for his acceſſe to the Princeſſe, and admitted to ſpeake, as all the other did, he reaſoned with her in this manner.

Whence may it proceede, Madam, that you being the faireſt and wiſeſt Princeſſe liuing at this day in all the Northerne parts, ſhould make ſo ſmal account of your ſelfe, as to denie that, which with honour you may yeeld to them, as ſeeke to doe you moſt humble ſeruice; and forgetting the rank you hold, doe refuſe to deigne them recompence in any manner whatſoeuer, ſeeking onely to enioy you in honourable marriage? Perhaps you are of opinion, that the Gods ſhould become ſlaues to your beauty, in which reſpect, men are vtterly vnworthy to craue any ſuch acquaintance of you. If it be ſo, I confeſſe my ſelfe conquered: But if the Gods ſeeke no ſuch aſſociation with women, and ſince they forſooke the World, they left this legacy to vs men; I thinke you couet after none, but ſuch as are extracted of their blood, or may make vaunt of their neere kindred and alliance to them. I know that many haue wiſhed, and do not deſire you: I know alſo, that as many haue requeſted you of the King your Father, but the choice remaineth in your power, and you being ordained the Iudge, to diſtinguiſh the merit of all your Sutors; me thinkes you do wrong to the office of a Iudge; in not regarding the parties which are in ſuite, to ſentence the deſert of the beſt and braueſt, and ſo to delay them with no more lingering.

I cannot thinke Madam, that you are ſo farre out of your ſelfe, and ſo chill cold in your affection, but deſire of occaſions, equall to your vertue and ſingular beauty, do ſometime touch you feelingly, and make you to wiſh for ſuch a man, anſwerable to the greatneſſe of your excellency. And if it ſhould be otherwiſe (as I imagine it to be impoſſible) yet you ought to breake ſuch an obſtinate deſigne, onely to ſatisfie the King your Father, who can deſire nothing more, then to haue a Sonne in Law, to reuenge him on the Tyrant of *Swetia*; who, as you well know, was ſometime the murtherer of your Grand-father *Hunguinus*, and alſo of his Father. If you pleaſe to vouchſafe me ſo much grace and fauour, as to make me the man, whom your heart hath choſen to be your Husband; I ſweare vnto you by the honour of a Souldier, that I will vndergoe ſuch ſeruice, as the King ſhall be reuenged, you royally ſatisfied, and my ſelfe aduanced to no meane happineſſe, by being the onely fortunate man of the World. Gentle Princeſſe, the moſt beautifull Daughter to a King, open that indurate heart, and ſo ſoftentit, that the ſweete impreſſions of loue may be engrauen therein; ſee there the ioyfull purſuite of your *Ocharus*, who, to ſaue his life, cannot ſo much as winne one looke from his diuine Miſtreſſe.

This niceneſſe is almoſt meerely barbarous, that I, wiſhing to aduenture my life prodigally in your ſeruice, you are ſo cruell, as not to deigne recompence to this duty of mine, with the leaſt ſigne of kindnes that can be imagined. Faire *Serictha*, if you deſire the death of your friendly ſer-

uant *Ocharus*, there are many other meanes whereby to performe it, without conſuming him in ſo ſmall a fire, and ſuffering him there to languiſh without any anſwer. If you will not looke vpon me; if my face be ſo vnworthy, that one beame of your bright Sunnes may not ſhine vpon it: If a word of your mouth be too precious for me; make a ſigne with your hand, either of my happineſſe or diſaſter. If your hand be enuious of mine eaſe, let one of your women be ſhe, to pronounce the ſentence of life or death; becauſe, if my life be hatefull to you, this hand of mine may ſatiſfie your will, and ſacrifice it to the rigour of your diſdaine. But if (as I am rather perſwaded) the ruine of your ſeruants, be againſt your more mercifull wiſhes; deale ſo that I may perceiue it, and expreſſe what compaſſion you haue of your *Ocharus*, who coueteth nothing more, then your daily hearts eaſe and contentment, with a priuiledge of honour aboue other Ladies. All this diſcourſe was heard by *Seriétha*, but ſo little was ſhe moued therewith, as ſhe was farre enough off from returning him any anſwer, neither did any of the Gentlewomen attending on her, euer heare her vſe the very leaſt word to any of her amorous ſollicitors, nor did ſhe know any one of them, but by ſpeech onely, which droue them all into an vtter deſpaire, perceiuing no poſſible meanes whereby to conquer her.

The Hiſtories of the Notherne Countries doe declare, that in thoſe times, the rapes of women were not much reſpected; and ſuch as purſued any Lady or Gentlewoman with loue, were verily perſwaded, that they neuer made ſufficient proofe of their amourous paſſions, if they vndertooke not all cunning ſtratagems, with aduenture of their liues to all perils whatſoeuer, for the rape or ſtealth of them, whom they purpoſed to enioy in marriage. As we read in the *Gothes* Hiſtory of *Gramo*, Sonne to the King of *Denmarke*, who being impatiently amorous of the daughter to the King of the *Gothes*, and winning the loue of the Lady; ſtole her away, before her Parents or friends had any notice thereof; by meanes of which rape, there followed a moſt bloody warre betweene the *Gothes* and the *Danes*. In recompence of which iniury, *Sibdagerus*, King of *Norway*, being choſen chiefe Commander of the *Swetians* & *Gothes*, entred powerfully into *Denmarke*, where firſt he violated the Siſter to King *Gramo*, and led away her Daughter, whom in the like manner he made his Spouſe, as the *Dane* had the Daughter of *Sigtruge*, Prince of the *Gothes*.

I induce theſe briefe narrations, onely to ſhew, that while *Ocharus* made honeſt and affable meanes, to win reſpect from *Seriétha*, and vſed all honourable ſeruices to her, as the Daughter of ſo great a Prince worthily deſerued: ſome there were, not halfe ſo conſcientious as he, eſpecially one of the amourous ſutors, who being weary of the ſtrange carriages of *Seriétha*, diſſembling to proſecute his purpoſe no further; preuailed ſo far, that he corrupted one of her Gouerneſſes, for ſecretly training her to ſuch a place, where the rauiſher ſhould lie in ambuſh to carry her away, ſo to enioy her by policy, ſeeing all other meanes failed for to compaſſe his deſire.

Behold,

Behold to what a kind of fooliſh rage, which giddy headed dullards do terme a naturall paſſion, they are led, who,being guided more by ſenſuality, then reaſon or diſcretion, follow the braine-ſicke motions of their raſh apprehenſions. He which purſueth,, and proteſteth to loue a Lady for her gentility and vertue ; knoweth not how to meaſure what loue is, neither ſeeth nor conceiueth,how farre the permiſſion of his owne endeauous extendeth. Moreouer, you may obſerue, that neuer any age was ſo groſſe,or men ſo ſimple,,but euen almoſt from the beginning,auarice did hood-winke the hearts of men, and that (with gold) the very ſtrongeſt Fortification in the World hath beene broken, yea, and the beſt bard gates laide open. *Serictha*, who ſhunned the ſight of all men, and neuer diſtruſted them which kept about her ; ſhe who neuer knew (except ſome naturall ſparke gaue light to her vnderſtanding) what belonged to the embracements of men, muſt now (without dreaming thereon) fall as foode to the inſatiable appetite of a wretch,who compaſſed this ſurpriſall of her,to glory in his owne lewdneſſe,aud make a mocke of the Princeſſes ſetled conſtancy.

She, good Lady, following the councell of her trayterous guide,went abroad on walking, but weakely accompanied, as one that admitted no men to attend her, which ſhe might haue repented very dearely,if Heauen had not ſuccoured her innocency, by the helpe of him,who wiſhed her as well as the rauiſher, though their deſires were quite contrary ; the one to enioy her by violence, but the other affected rather to die, then do the leaſt act which might diſpleaſe her. No ſooner was *Serictha* arriued at the deſtined place, where her falſe Gouerneſſe was to deliuer her ; but became a ſecond *Paris* came, and ſeized on her, hurrying her in haſt away,before any helpe could poſſibly reſcue her ; the place being farre off from any dwelling.

Now the rauiſher durſt not conuey her to his owne abiding, to enioy the benefit of his purchaſe; but haled her into a ſmall thicket of trees, where although ſhe knew the euident perill, whereinto her ſeuere continency had now throwne her : yet notwithſtanding, ſhe would not lift vp her eyes, to ſee what he was that had thus ſtolne her,ſo firmely ſhe dwelt vpon grounded deliberation, and ſuch was the vigor of her chaſt reſolue. And albeit ſhe knew a wickedneſſe (worſe then death)preparing for her, who had no other glory then in her vertue, and deſire to liue contentedly ; yet was ſhe no more aſtouned thereat, then if he had led her to the Palace of the King her Father : perſwading her ſelfe,that violence done to the body,is no preiudice to honor, when the mind is free and cleere from conſent.

As thus this robber of beauty was preparing to maſſacre the modeſty of the faire Princeſſe, ſhe reſiſted him with all her power,yea,and defended her ſelfe ſo worthily, that he could not get one looke of her eye, one kiſſe of her cheeke, nor any aduantage whatſoeuer,crying out ſhrilly, and ſtrugling againſt her ſtrongly : her outcryes were heard by one,who little imagined that ſhe was ſo neere,whom he loued more dearely then his

owne life, namely, *Ocharus*; who was walking accidentally alone in this wood, deuising by what meaues he might winne grace from his sterne Mistresse. No sooner tooke he knowledge of her, and saw her (in the armes of another) to be rauished; but he cryed out to the thiefe, saying, Hand off villaine, let not such a slaue as thou, prophane with an vnreuerend touch the sacred honour of so chaste a Princesse, who deserueth to be more royally respected, then thus rudely hurried: Hand off I say, or else I sweare by her diuine perfections, whom I esteeme aboue all creatures in this World, to make thee die more miserably, then euer any man as yet did.

Whosoeuer had seene a Lyon or an Ounce rouse himselfe, chasing when any one aduentureth to rob him of his prey; and these with fierce eyes, mounted creasts, writhed tayles, and sharpened pawes, make against him that durst so molleſt him. In the like manner did the rauisher shew himselfe, and one while snarling, another while bristling the darted disdainefull lookes at *Ocharus*, and spake to him in this manner. Vile and base Sea-theife, as thou art, welcome to thy deserued wages, and iust repayment for thy proud presuming. It glads my heart not a little, to meete thee here, where thou shalt soone perceiue what good will I beare thee, and whether thou be worthy or no to enioy the honour of this Lady, now in mine owne absolute possession. It will also encrease her more ample perswasion of my worth, and pleade my merit more effectually in her fauour; when she shall see what a powerfull arme I haue, to punish this proud insolence of a Pirate.

This harsh language was so distastfull to *Ocharus*, that like a Bull, made angry by the teeth of some Mastiue Dogge, or pricked by the point of a weapon, he ran vpon his enemy, and was so roughly welcommed by him, as it could not easily be iudged which of them had the better aduantage. But in the end Fortune fauoured most the honest man, and *Ocharus* hauing ouerthrowne the robber, he smote the head of him quite from his shoulders, which he presented to her, whom he had deliuered out of so great a perill, and thus he spake. You may now behold Madam, whether *Ocharus* be a true louer of *Serictheas* vertues, or no, and your knowledge fully resolued, at what end his affection aimeth; as also, how farre his honest desert extendeth, for you both to loue him, and to recompence the loyall respect he hath vsed towards you. Neuer looke on the villaines face, who stroue to shame the King your Fathers Court, by violation of theeuery, the chaſest Princesse on the Earth; but regard *Ocharus*, who is ready to sacrifice himselfe, if you take as much pleasure in his ruine, as (he thinketh) he hath giuen you contentment, by deliuering you from this Traytor.

Doth it not appeare vnto you Madam, that I haue as yet done enough, whereby to be thought a worthy Husband, for the royall Daughter of *Denmarke*? Haue I not satisfied the Kings owne Ordinance, by deliuering his Daughter, as already I haue done? Will *Serictha* be so constant in her cruelty, as not to turne her eye towards him, who exposed his life, to no

meanes

meane perill and danger, onely in the defence of her Chaſtity? Then I plainely perceiue, that the wages of my deuoire, is ranked amongeſt thoſe precedent ſeruices, which I haue performed for ſo hurtfull a beautie. Yet gentle Princeſſe, let me tell you, my carriage hath bin of more importance, then all the others can be, and my merit no way to be compared with theirs; at leaſt, if you pleaſed to make account of him, who in an vnfeigned louer of your modeſty, and deuoutly honoureth your vertuous behauiour. And yet Madame, ſhall I haue none other anſwere from you, but your perpetuall ſilence? Can you continue ſo obſtinate in your opinion, in making your ſelfe ſtill as ſtrange to your *Ocharus*, as to the reſt, who haue no other affection, but onely to the bare outſide of beauty? Why then, Royall Lady, ſeeing (at this inſtant time) all my labour is but loſt, and your heart ſeemeth much more hardned, in acknowledging any of my honeſt ſeruices: at leaſt yet let me be ſo happy, as to conduct you backe to the Palace, and reſtore you to that ſacred ſafetie, which will be my ſoules beſt comfort to behold.

No outward ſigne of kinde acceptation, did any way expreſſe it ſelfe in her, but rather as fearing, leſt the commodiouſneſſe of the place ſhould incite this yong Lord, to forget all honeſt reſpect, and imitate the other in like baſeneſſe. But he, who rather wiſhed a thouſand deaths, then any way to diſpleaſe his Miſtreſſe, as if he were halfe doubtfull of her ſuſpition, made offer of guiding her backe to the place, from whence ſhe had before bene ſtolne, where ſhe found her company ſtill ſtaying, as not daring to ſtirre thence, to let the King know his daughters ill fortune; but when they ſaw her returne, and in the company of ſo worthy a Knight, they grew reſolued, that no violence had bene done vnto her.

The Princeſſe ſharpely rebuked her women, for leauing her ſo baſely as they had done, gaue charge to one of them (becauſe ſhe would not ſeeme altogether negligent and diſcourteous) that ſhe being gone thence, ſhe ſhould not faile to thanke *Ocharus*, for the honeſt and faithfull ſeruice he had done vnto her, which ſhe would continually remember, and recompence as it lay in her power. Neuertheleſſe, ſhe aduiſed him withall, not to hope of any more aduantage thereby, then reaſon ſhould require. For, if it were the will of the Gods, that ſhe ſhould be his wife, neither ſhe or any other could let or hinder it: but if her deſtiny reſerued her for another, all his ſeruices would auaile to no purpoſe, but rather to make her the more rigorous towards him.

This gracious anſwer, thus giuen him by her Gentlewoman, although it gaue ſome ſmall contentment to the poore languiſhing louer, yet he ſaw no aſſured ſigne whereon to ſettle his reſolue, but his hopes vaniſhed away in ſmoake, as faſt as opinion bred them in his braine. And gladly he would haue giuen ouer all further amorous ſolicitings, but by ſome priuate perſwaſions of her meſſage ſent him, which in time might ſo aduance his ſeruices done for her ſake, as would deriue far greater fauours from her. Whereupon, he omitted no time or place, but as occaſion gaue him any gracious permiſſion, ſtill plied her memorie, with his man-

ly reſcuing her from the rauiſher, ſufficient to plead his merit to her Father, and that in (in equity) ſhe ought to be his wife, by right both of Honour and Armes; no man being able to deſerue her, as he had done.

So long he purſued her in this maner, that his ſpeeches ſerued hatefull to her, and deuiſing how to be free from his daily importunities, at length, in the habite of a poore Chamber-maide, ſhe ſecretly departed out of the Court, wandering into the ſolitary parts of the country; where ſhe entered into ſeruice, and had the charge of keeping Sheepe. It may ſeeme ſtrange, that a Kings onely daughter ſhould ſtray in ſuch ſort, and deſpiſing Courtly life, betake her ſelfe to paines and ſeruility: but ſuch was her reſolution, and women delighting altogether in extremes, ſpare no attempts to compaſſe their owne wils. All the Court was in an vproare for the Ladies loſſe, the Father in no meane affliction, the Louers well-neere beſide their wits, and euery one elſe moſt greeuouſly tormented, that a Lady of ſuch worth ſhould ſo ſodainly be gone, and all purſuit made after her, gaine no knowledge of her.

In this high tide of ſorrow and diſaſter, what ſhall we ſay of the gentle Lord *Ocharus*? What iudgement can ſound the depth of his wofull extreamity? Fearing leaſt ſome other theefe had now made a ſecond ſtealth of his diuine Goddeſſe; he muſt needs follow her againe, ſeeking quite throughout the world, neuer more returning backe to the Court, nor to the place of his owne abiding, vntill he heard tidings of his Miſtreſſe, or ended his dayes in the ſearch of her. No Village, Towne, Cottage, Caſtle, or any place elſe of note or name, did he leaue vnſought, but diligently he ſearched for *Seriſtha*; ſtriuing to get knowledge, vnder what habit ſhe liued thus concealed, but all his labour was to no effect: which made him leaue the places ſo much frequented, and viſite the ſolitary deſert ſhades, entering into all Caues and ruſticke habitations, whereon he could faſten his eye, to ſeeke for the loſt Treaſure of his ſoule.

On a day, as he wandred along in a ſpacious valley, ſeated betweene two pleaſant hilles, taking delight to heare the gentle murmure of the riuers, runninng by the ſides of two neighbouring rockes, planted with all kinde of trees, and very thickely ſpread with moſſe: he eſpied a flocke of Sheepe feeding on the graſſe, and not farre off from them ſate a Maide ſpinning on her Diſtaffe; who hauing got a ſight of him, preſently couered her face with a veile. Loue, who ſate as Sentinell both in the heart and eye of the gentle *Norwegian* Lord, as quickly diſcouered the ſubtilty of the faire Shepheardeſſe, enſtructing the ſoule of *Ocharus*, that thus ſhe hid her face, as coueting not to be knowne: whereupon he gathered, that doubtleſſe this was ſhee, for whom he hadde ſought with ſuch tedious trauaile, and therefore going directly vnto her, thus hee ſpake.

Gentle Princeſſe; wherefore do you thus hide your ſelfe from me? Why do you haunt theſe retreats and deſolate abodes, hauing power to commaund ouer infinite men, that cannot liue but by your preſence?

What

What hath moued you Madam, to flye from company, to dwell among desert Rockes, and serue as a slaue, to such as are no way worthy of your seruice? Why do you forsake a potent King, whose onely daughter and hope you are; leauing your countrey and royall traine of Ladies, and so farre abasing your selfe, to liue in the deiected state of a seruant, and to some rusticke clowne or peazant? What reason haue you, to despise so many worthy Lords, that dearely loue and honor you, but (aboue them all) your poore slaue *Ocharus*, who hath made no spare of his owne life for the safety of yours, and also for the defence of your honor? Royall maid, I am the same man that deliuered you from the villaine, who would haue violated your faire chastity; and since then, haue not spared any paine or trauell in your search: for whose losse, King *Siwalde* is in extreme anguish, the *Danes* in mourning habites, and *Ocharus* euen at the doore of death, being no way able to endure your absence.

Are you of the minde, worthy Madam, that I haue not hitherto deserued so much as one good looke or glance of your eye, in recompence of so many good and loyall seruices? If Alas! I am neither rauisher, nor demander of any vniust requests, or else inciuill in my motions: I may merit one regard of my Mistresse, I require onely so silly a fauour, that her eyes may pay me the wages for all which I haue hitherto done in her seruice. What would you do Madam, if I were an importunate solicitor, and requested farre greater matters of you, in iust recompence of my labours? I do not desire, that you should embrace me. I am not so bold, as to request a kisse of *Serictbaes*, more then immortall lips. Nor doe I couet, that she should any otherwise entreate me, then with such seuerity as beseemeth so great a Princesse. I aske no more, but onely to eleuate your chaste eyes, and grace me with one little looke, as being the man, who for his vertue and loyall affection, hath deserued more then that fauour, yea, a much greater and excellent recompence. Can you then be so cruell, as to denie me so small a thing, without regard of the maine debt, wherein you stand engaged to your *Ocharus*?

The Princesse perceiuing that it auailed nothing to conceale her selfe, being by him so apparantly discouered; began now to speake (which she had neuer done before, either to him, or any other of her amorous suters) answering him in this manner. Lord *Ocharus*, it might suffice you, that your importunity made me forsake my Fathers Court, and causeth me to liue in this abased condition, which I purpose to prosecute all my life time; or so long (at the least) as you, and such as you are, pursue me so fondly as you haue presumed to do. For I am resolued, neuer to fauour you any otherwise, then hitherto I haue done; desiring you therfore, that *Serictha* wanting an Interpreter to tell you her will, you would now receiue sooner her owne mouth, determining soone to dye, then alter a iot of her intended purpose.

Ocharus hearing this vnwelcome answere, was euen vpon the point to haue slaine himselfe: but yet, not to lose the name of a valiant man, or to be thought of an effeminate or cowardly spirite, that a Woman should

force him to an acte, so farre vnfitting for a man of his ranke; he tooke his leaue of her, solemnely promising, not to forget her further pursuite but at all times to obey her so long as he liued, although her commaund was very hard for him to endure. So hee departed thence, not vnto the Court, she being not there, that had the power to enioyne his presence: but home to his owne house, where he was no sooner arriued, but he began to waxe wearie of his former folly: accusing himselfe of great indiscretion, for spending so much time in vaine, and in her seruice, who vtterly despised him, and all his endeauours which he vndertooke. He began to accuse her of great ingratitude, laying ouer-much respect vppon her vertue, to haue no feeling at all of his loyall sufferings; but meerely made a mockery of his martyrdome. Heereupon, he concluded to giue ouer all further affection, to languish no longer for her sake, that hated him and all his actions.

While he continued in these melancholly passions, the Princesse, who all this while had persisted in such strict seuerity, as astonished the courages of her stoutest seruants; considering (more deliberately) on the sincere affection of *Ocharus*, and that vertue onely made him the friend to her modesty, and not wanton or lasciuious appetite; she felt a willing readinesse in her soule, to gratifie him in some worthy manner, and to recompence some part of his trauailes. Which to effect, she resolued to follow him (in some counterfeite habite) euen to the place of his owne abiding, to try, if easily he could take knowledge of her, whom so lately he saw in the garments of a Shepheardesse. Being thus minded, shee went to her Mistresse whom she serued, and who had likewise seene Lord *Ocharus* (of whom she had perfect knowledge) when he conferred with the Shepheardesse, and enquiring the cause, why he resorted in that manner to her; *Serictha* returned her this answer.

Mistresse, I make no doubt, but you will be somewhat amazed, and (perhaps) can hardly credit which you heare, that she who now serueth you in the poore degree of Shepheardesse, is the onely daughter to *Siwalae* King of the *Danes*: for whose loue, so many great Lords haue continually laboured; and that I onely attracted hither *Ocharus* the Noble Some of valiant *Hebonius*, to wander in these solitary deserts, to finde out her that fled from him, and holde him in as high disdaine, as I did all the rest of his fellow riuals. But if my words may not heerein sufficiently assure you, I would aduise you to send where *Ocharus* dwelleth, and there make further enquiry of him, to the end that you may not imagine me a lyar. If my speeches do otherwise preuaile with you, and you remaine assured, that I am she, whom your Noble neighbour so deerely affecteth, albeit I neuer made any account at all of him: then I do earnestly intreat you, so much to stand my friend, as to prouide some conuenient meanes for me, whereby I may passe vnknowne to the Castle of *Ocharus*, to reuenge my selfe on his ciuill honesty, and smile at him hereafter, if he proue not so cleerely sighted, as to know her being so neere him, whom he vaunteth to loue aboue all women else.

The good Country-woman hearing theſe words, and perceyuing that ſhe had the Princeſſe in her houſe, of whoſe ſpeeches ſhe made not any doubt, in regard of her ſtout countenance, grauity, and faire demeanor, began to relliſh ſomething in her minde, farre differing from matter of common vnderſtanding, and therefore roundly replyed in this kind of language.

Madam (for ſeruant I may no longer call you) I make no queſtion to the contrary, but that you are deriued of high birth; hauing obſerued your behauiour, and womanly carriage. And ſo much the more I remaine aſſured thereof, hauing ſeene ſuch great honor done vnto you, by the Noble Lord, and worthy Warriour *Ocharus*: wherefore, it lieth not in my power, to impeach your deſſeignes, much leſſe to talke of your longer ſeruice, becauſe you are the Princeſſe *Seriſtha*, whom I am to performe all humble dutie vnto, as being one of your meaneſt ſubiects. And although you were not ſhee, yet would I not preſume any way to offend you, in regard of the true and vertuous loue, which that good Knight *Ocharus* ſeemeth to beare you. If my company be needfull for you, I beſeech you to accept it: if not, take whatſoeuer is mine, which may any way ſted you; for, to make you paſſe vnknowne, I can and will prouide ſufficiently, euen to your owne contentment, and in ſuch ſtrange manner, as *Ocharus* (were he neuer ſo cleerely ſighted) ſhalbe deceiued, you being attired in thoſe faſhion garments, which here in theſe parts are vſually worne.

Seriſtha being wonderouſly ioyfull at her anſwere, ſuffred her to paint, or rather ſoile her faire face, with the iuce of diuers hearbes and rootes, and cloathed her in ſuch an habite as thoſe women vſe to weare that liue in the mountaines of *Norway*, vpon the ſea-coaſt fronting *Great-Britaine*. Being thus diſguiſed, confidently ſhe went, to beguile the eye of her deareſt friend, and ſo to returne backe againe from him, hauing affoorded him ſuch a ſecret fauour, in requitall of his honourable ſeruices; deliuering her out of ſo great a danger, and comming to viſite her in ſo ſolitarie a life. Nor would ſhe haue the womans company any further, then till ſhe came within the ſight of *Ocharus* his Caſtle; where when ſhee was arriued (he being then abſent) the mother vnto the Noble Gentleman, gaue her courteous welcome; and, notwithſtanding her groſſe and homely outward appearance, yet ſhe collected by her countenance, that there was a matter of much more worth in her, then to be a woman of baſe breeding.

When *Ocharus* was returned home, he receiued aduertiſement by his Mother, concerning the arriuall of this ſtranger, whereas ſodainely his ſoule halfe perſwaded him, of ſome kinde courteſie to proceede from his ſweet rebell, pretending now ſome feigned excuſe, in recompence of all his trauailes, and paſſed honeſt offices. Obſeruing all her actions and geſtures, her wonted rigour neuer bending one iot, or giue way to her eye to looke vpon any man; he grew the better aſſured, that ſhe was the daughter to King *Siwalde*. Yet feigning to take no knowledge thereof he bethought himſelfe of a quient policy, whereby to make triall, whether

ther ſecret kindneſſe had conducted this Lady thither, or no, to conclude his torments, and giue a finall end to his greeuous afflictions.

Vpon a watch-word giuen to his Mother, he pretended, and ſo cauſed it to be noiſed through the houſe, that he was to marry a very honorable Lady; which the conſtant and chaſte maide verily beleeued; and therefore gaue the more diligent attendance (as a new-come ſeruant) to ſee all things in due decency, as no one could expreſſe her ſelfe more ready, becauſe ſhe eſteemed him aboue all other men. Yet ſuch was the obſtinate opinion ſhe conceiued of her owne preciſeneſſe, as ſhe would rather ſuffer all the flames of loue, then expreſſe the leaſt ſhew of deſire to any man liuing. Neuertheleſſe, ſhe was inwardly offended, that any other ſhould haue the honour, to make her vaunt of enioying *Ocharus*; whom (indeede) ſhe coueted, and thought him only worthy in her heart, to be Son in law to the King of *Denmarke*.

Now, as the Mother was very ſeriouſly buſied in preparing the Caſtle, for receiuing the pretended Bride; ſhe employed her new Mayde (*Sericth*a I meane) as buſily as any of the reſt. In the meane while, *Ocharus* was laid vpon a bed, well noting all her carriage and behauiour, ſhe hauing a lighted Candle in her hand, without any Candleſticke to hold it in. As all the ſeruants (both men and maids) were running haſtily from place to place, to cary ſuch occaſions as they were commanded, the Candle was conſumed ſo neere to *Sericthaes* fingers, that it burned her hand. She, not to faile a iote in her height of mind, and to declare that her courage was inuincible; was ſo farre off from caſting away the ſmall ſnuffe which offended her, that ſhe rather graſpt it the more ſtrongly, euen to the enflaming of her owne fleſh, which gaue light to the reſt about their buſineſſe. A matter (almoſt) as meruellous, as the act of the noble *Romane*, who gaue his hand to be burned, in preſence of the *Tuſcane* King, that had beſiedged *Rome*. Thus this Lady would needs make it apparantly knowne, by this generous act of hers, that her heart could not be enflamed or conquered, by all the fires of concupiſcence, in ſuffering ſo ſtoutly and couragiouſly, the burning of this materiall fire.

Ocharus, who (as we haue already ſaide) obſerued euery thing that *Sericth*a did; perceiuing that ſhe ſpake not one word, albeit her hand burned in ſuch fierce maner, was much aſtoniſhed at her ſprightly mind. And as he was about to aduiſe her, to hurle away the fire ſo much offending her; Curioſitie (meerely naturall vnto Woman) made the Lady lift vppe her eyes, to ſee (by ſtealth) whether her friend had noted her inuincible conſtancy, or no. Heereby *Ocharus* won the honour of his long expected victory; and leaping from off the bed, hee ranne to embrace her, not with any ſuch feare as he had formerly v'ed, in not daring ſo much as to touch her: but boldly now claſping his armes about her, he ſaid. At this inſtant Madam, the King your Fathers decree is fully accompliſhed, for I am the firſt man that euer lookt you in the face, and you are onely mine, without making any longer reſiſtance. You are the Princely Lady and wife, by me ſo conſtantly loued and deſired, whom I

haue

haue followed with ſuch painefull trauels, expoſing my life to infinite perils in your ſeruice: you haue ſeene and lookt on him; who neuer craued any thing of you, but onely this fauour, whereof you cannot bereaue me againe, becauſe the Gods themſelues, at ſuch time as I leaſt expected it, haue beſtowne it on me, as my deſerued recompence, and worthy reward.

In the deliuery of theſe words, he kiſſed and embraced her a thouſand times, ſhe not vſing any great reſiſtance againſt him, but onely as ſomewhat offended with her ſelfe, either for being ſo raſh in looking on him, or elſe for delaying his due merit ſo long; or rather, becauſe with her good will ſhe had falne into the tranſgreſſion. She declared no violent or contending motion, as loath to continue ſo long in his armes; but rather euident ſignes of hearty contentment, yet in very baſhfull and modeſt manner, willing enough to accept his louing kindneſſe, yet not wandring from her wonted chaſte carriage. He being fauourably excuſed, for the outward expreſſion of his amorous behauiour to her, and certified withall, that ſince the time freeing her from the wretch, who ſought the violating of her chaſtity, ſhe had entirely reſpected him, (albeit, to ſhun ſuſpition of lightneſſe, and to win more aſſurance, of what ſhe credited ſufficiently already, ſhe continued her ſtiffe opinion againſt him) yet alwayes this reſolution wat ſet downe in her ſoule, neuer (with her will) to haue any other Husband but *Ocharus*, who (aboue all other) had beſt deſerued her, by his generoſity, vertue, manly courage, and valiancy; whereof he might the better aſſure himſelfe, becauſe (of her owne voluntary diſpoſition) ſhe followed to find him out, not for any other occaſion, but to reuenge her ſelfe (by this honeſt Office) for all that he had done or vndertaken, to winne the grace and loue of the King of *Denmarkes* Daughter, to whom he preſented ſuch dutifull ſeruice.

Ocharus, who would not looſe this happineſſe, to be made King of all the Northerne Ilands, with more then a thankfull heart, accepted all her gracious excuſes. And being deſirous to waſte no longer time in vaine, leſt Fortune ſhould raiſe ſome new ſtratagem againſt him, to diſpoſſeſſe him of ſo faire a felicity; left off his counterfet intended marriage, and effected this in good earneſt, and was wedded to his moſt eſteemed *Serictha*. Not long had theſe louers liued in the lawfull and ſacred rites of marriage, but King *Siwalde* was aduertiſed, that his Daughter had giuen her conſent to *Ocharus*, and receiued him as her noble Husband. The party was not a iot diſpleaſing to him, he thought him to be a worthy Son in Law, and the condition did ſufficiently excuſe the match; onely herein lay the errour and offence, that the marriage was ſollemnized without his knowledge aud conſent, he being not called thereto, or ſo much as acquainting him therewith, which made him condemne *Ocharus* of ouer-bold arrogancy, he being ſuch a great and powerfull King, to be ſo lightly reſpected by his Subiect, and eſpecially in the marriage of his Daughter.

But *Serictha*, who was now metamorphoſed from a maide to a wife, and

and had lyen a few nights by the ſide of a Souldiour, was become much more valiant and aduenturous then ſhe was before. She tooke the matter in hand, went to her Father, who welcommed her moſt louingly, and ſo pleaſing were her ſpeeches, carried with ſuch wit and womanly diſcretion, that nothing wanted to approue what ſhe had done. Matters which he had neuer knowne, or ſo much as heard of, were now openly reuealed, how *Ocharus* had deliuered her from the rauiſher, what worthy reſpect he then vſed towards her, and what honour he extended to her in the deſerts, where ſhe tended her flocke as a Shepheardeſſe, with many other honourable actions beſide: that the Kings anger became mildely qualified, and ſo farre he entered into affection, that he would not do any thing thence-forward, without the counſell and aduiſe of his Sonne in Law, whom ſo highly he eſteemed, and liked ſo reſpectiuely of him, and his race; that his Queene dying, he married with the Siſter to *Ocharus*, going hand in hand with the gentle and modeſt Princeſſe *Seriétha*.

This Nouell of *Dioneus*, was commended by all the company, and ſo much the rather, becauſe it was free from all folly and obſcœneſſe. And the Queene perceiuing, that as the Tale was ended, ſo her dignity muſt now be expired: ſhe tooke the Crowne of Laurell from off her head, and graciouſly placed it on the head of *Philoſtratus*, ſaying; The worthy Diſcourſe of *Dioneus*, being out of his wonted wanton element, cauſeth me (at the reſignation of mine Authority) to make choiſe of him as our next Commander, who is beſt able to order and enſtruct vs all; and ſo I yeeld both my place and honour to *Philoſtratus*, I hope with the good liking of all our aſſiſtants: as plainly appeareth by their inſtant carriage towards him, with all their heartieſt loue and ſufferages.

Whereupon *Philoſtratus*, beginning to conſider on the charge committed to his care, called the Maſter of the houſhold, to know in what eſtate all matters were, becauſe where any defect appeared, euery thing might be the ſooner remedied, for the better ſatisfaction of the compa. ny, during the time of his authority. Then returning backe to the aſſembly, thus he began. Louely Ladies, I would haue you to know, that ſince the time of ability in me, to diſtinguiſh betweene good and euill, I haue alwayes bene ſubiect (perhaps by the meanes of ſome beauty heere among vs) to the proud and imperious dominion of loue, with expreſſion of all duty, humility, and moſt intimate deſire to pleaſe: yet all hath prooued to no purpoſe, but ſtill I haue bin reiected for ſome other, whereby my condition hath falne from ill to worſe, and ſo ſtill it is likely, euen to the houre of my death. In which reſpect, it beſt pleaſeth me, that our conferences to morrow, ſhall extend to no other argument, but only ſuch caſes as are moſt conformable to my calamity, namely of ſuch, whoſe loue hath had vnhappy ending, becauſe I await no other iſſue of mine; nor willingly would I be called by any other name, but only, the miſerable and vnfortunate Louer.

Hauing thus ſpoken, he aroſe againe; granting leaue to the reſt, to recreate themſelues till ſupper time. The Garden was very faire and ſpacious,

ous, affoording large limits for their ſeuerall walkes; the Sun being already ſo low deſcended, that it could not be offenſiue to any one, the Connies, Kids, and young Hindes skipping euery where about them, to their no meane pleaſure and contentment, *Dioneus* and *Fiammetta*, ſate ſinging together, of *Meſsire Guiglielmo*, and the Lady of *Vertue*. *Philomena* and *Pamphilus* playing at the Cheſſe, all ſporting themſelues as beſt they pleaſed. But the houre of Supper being come, and the Tables couered about the faire fountaine, they ſate downe and ſupt in moſt louing manner. Then *Philoſtratus*, not to ſwerue from the courſe which had beene obſerued by the Queenes before him, ſo ſoone as the Tables were taken away, gaue commaund, that Madam *Lauretta* ſhonld beginne the dance, and likewiſe to ſing a Song. My gracious Lord (quoth ſhe) I can skill of no other Songs, but onely a peece of mine owne, which I haue already learned by heart, and may well beſeeme this aſſembly: if you pleaſe to allow of that, I am ready to performe it with all obedience. Lady, replyed the King, you your ſelfe being ſo faire and louely, ſo needs muſt be whatſoeuer commeth from you, therefore let vs heare ſuch as you haue. Madam *Lauretta*, giuing enſtruction to the Chorus prepared, and began in this manner.

The Song.

No ſoule ſo comfortleſſe,
Hath more cauſe to expreſſe,
Like woe and heanineſſe,
As I poore amorous Maide.

He that did forme the Heauens and euery Starre;
Made me as beſt him pleaſed,
Louely and gracious, no Element at iarre,
Or elſe in gentle breaſts to mooue ſterne warre,
But to haue ſtrifes appeaſed
where Beauties eye ſhould make the deepeſt ſcarre.
And yet when all things are conſeſt,
Neuer was any ſoule diſtreſt,
Like my poore amorous Maide.
No ſoule ſo comfortleſſe, &c.

There was a time, when once I was held deare,
Bleſt were thoſe happy dayes:
Numberleſſe Loue-ſuites whiſpred in mine eare,
All of faire hope, but none of deſperate feare;
And all ſung Beauties praiſe.
Why ſhould blacke cloudes obſcure ſo bright a cleare?
And why ſhould others ſwimme in ioy,
And no heart drowned in annoy,
Like mine poore amorous Maide?
No ſoule ſo comfortleſſe, &c.

Well

Well may I curſe that ſad and diſmall day,
When in vnkinde exchange;
Another Beauty did my hopes betray,
And ſtole my deareſt Loue from me away:
Which I thought very ſtrange,
Conſidering vowes were paſt, and what elſe may
Aſſure a loyall Maidens truſt.
Neuer was Louer ſo vniuſt,
Like mine poore amorous Maide.
No ſoule ſo comfortleſſe, &c.

Come then kinde Death, and finiſh all my woes,
Thy helpe is now the beſt.
Come louely Nymphes, lend hands mine eyes to cloſe,
And let him wander whereſoere he goes,
Vaunting of mine vnreſt;
Beguiling others by his treacherous ſhowes.
Graue on my Monument,
No true loue was worſe ſpent,
Then mine poore amorous Maide.
No ſoule ſo comfortleſſe, &c.

So did Madam *Lauretta* finiſh her Song, which being well obſerued of them all, was vnderſtood by ſome in diuers kinds: ſome alluding it one way, and others according to their owne apprehenſions, but all conſenting that both it was an excellent Ditty, well deuiſed, and moſt ſweetly ſung. Afterward, lighted Torches being brought, becauſe the Stars had already richly ſpangled all the heauens, and the fit houre of reſt approaching: the King commanded them all to their Chambers, where we meane to leaue them vntill the next morning.

The end of the Third Day.

The Fourth Day.

Wherein all the ſeuerall Diſcourſes, are vnder the Gouernment of Honourable Philoſtratus : *And concerning ſuch perſons, whoſe Loues haue had ſucceſſeleſſe ending.*

The Inducton vnto the enſuing Nouelles.

MOſt worthy Ladies, I haue alwayes heard, as well by the ſayings of the iudicious, as alſo by mine owne obſeruation and reading, that the impetuous and violent windes of enuy, do ſildome blow turbulently, but on the higheſt Towers and tops of the trees moſt eminently aduanced. Yet (in mine opinion) I haue found my ſelfe much deceiued; becauſe, by ſtriuing with my very vttermoſt endeauour, to ſhunne the outrage of thoſe implacable winds; I haue laboured to go, not onely by plaine and euen pathes but likewiſe through the deepeſt vallies. As very eaſily may be ſeene and obſerued in the reading of theſe few ſmall Nouels, which I haue written not only in our vulgar *Florentine* proſe, without any ambitious title: but alſo in a moſt humble ſtile, ſo low and gentle as poſſibly I could. And although I haue bene rudely ſhaken, yea, almoſt halfe vnrooted, by the extreame agitation of thoſe bluſtering winds, and torne in peeces by that baſe back-biter, Enuy: yet haue I not (for all that) diſcontinued, or broken any part of mine intended enterprize. Wherefore, I can ſufficiently witneſſe (by mine owne comprehenſion) the ſaying ſo much obſerued by the wiſe, to be moſt true: That nothing is without Enuy in this world, but miſery onely.

Among variety of opinions, faire Ladies; ſome, ſeeing theſe Nouelties, ſpared not to ſay; that I haue bene ouer-pleaſing to you, and wandered too farre from mine owne reſpect, imbaſing my credit and repute, by delighting my ſelfe too curiouſly, for the fitting of your humours, and haue extolled your worth too much, with addition of worſe ſpeeches, then I meane to vtter. Others, ſeeming to expreſſe more maturity of iudgment, haue likewiſe ſaid, That it was very vnſuteable for my yeares, to meddle with womens wanton pleaſures, or contend to delight you by the very leaſt of my labors. Many more, making ſhew of affecting my good fame and eſteeme, ſay; I had done much more wiſely, to haue kept me with the Muſes at *Parnaſſus*, then to confound my ſtudies with ſuch effeminate follies. Some other beſide, ſpeaking more deſpightfully then diſcreetly, ſaid; I had declared more humanity, in ſeeking meanes for mine owne maintenance, and wherewith to ſupport my continuall neceſſities, then

then to glut the world with gulleries, and feede my hopes with nothing but winde. And others, to calumniate my trauailes, would make you beleeue, that ſuch matters as I haue ſpoken of, are meerely diſguiſed by me, and figured in a quite contrary nature, quite from the courſe as they are related. Whereby you may perceiue (vertuous Ladies) how while I labour in your ſeruice, I am agitated and moleſted with theſe bluſterings, and bitten euen to the bare bones, by the ſharpe and venemous teeth of enuy; all which (as heauen beſt knoweth) I gladly endure, and with good courage.

Now, albeit it belongeth onely to you, to defend me in this deſperate extremity; yet, notwithſtanding all their vtmoſt malice, I will make no ſpare of my beſt abilities, and, without anſwering them any otherwiſe then is fitting, will quietly keepe their ſlanders from mine eares, with ſome ſleight reply, yet not deſeruing to be dreamt on. For I apparantly perceiue, that (hauing not already attained to the third part of my pains) they are growne to ſo great a number, and preſume very farre vppon my patience: they may encreaſe, except they be repulſed in the beginning, to ſuch an infinity before I can reach to the end, as with their very leaſt paines taking, they will ſinke me to the bottomleſſe depth, if your ſacred forces (which are great indeede) may not ſerue for me in their reſiſtance. But before I come to anſwer any one of them, I will relate a Tale in mine, owne fauour; yet not a whole Tale, becauſe it ſhall not appeare, that I purpoſe to mingle mine, among thoſe which are to proceed from a company ſo commendable. Onely I will report a parcell thereof, to the end, that what remaineth vntold, may ſufficiently expreſſe, it is not to be numbred among the reſt to come,

By way then of familiar diſcourſe, and ſpeaking to my malicious detractors, I ſay, that a long while ſince, there liued in our City, a Citizen who was named *Philippo Balduccio*, a man but of meane condition, yet very wealthy, well qualified, and expert in many things appertaining vnto his calling. He had a wife whom he loued moſt entirely, as ſhe did him, leading together a ſweet and peaceable life, ſtudying on nothing more, then how to pleaſe each other mutually. It came to paſſe, that as all fleſh muſt, the good woman left this wretched life for a better, leauing one onely Sonne to her husband, about the age of two yeares. The husband remained ſo diſconſolate for the loſſe of his kinde Wife, as no man poſſibly could be more ſorrowfull, becauſe he had loſt the onely iewell of his ioy. And being thus diuided from the company which he moſt eſteemed: he determined alſo to ſeparate himſelfe from the world, addicting all his endeauours to the ſeruice of God, and applying his yong Sonne likewiſe, to the ſame holy exerciſes. Hauing giuen away all his goods for Gods ſake, he departed to the Mountaine *Aſinaio*, where he made him a ſmall Cell, and liued there with his little Sonne, onely vpon charitable almes, in abſtinence and prayer, forbearing to ſpeake of any worldly occaſions, or letting the Lad ſee any vaine ſight: but conferred with him continually, on the glories of eternall life, of God, and his Saints, and teaching him nothing

thing elſe but deuout prayers,leading this kinde of life for many yeeres together, not permitting him euer to goe forth of his Cell, or ſhewing him any other but himſelfe.

The good old man vſed diuers times to goe to *Florence*,where hauing receiued(according to his opportunities) the almes of diuers well diſpoſed people,he returned backe againe to his hermitage. It fortuned, that the boy being now about eighteene yeeres olde, and his Father growne very aged; he demanded of him one day, whether he went? Wherein the old man truly reſolued him: whereupon, the youth thus ſpake vnto him. Father,you are now growne very aged,and hardly can endure ſuch painfull trauell: why do you not let me go to *Florence*, that by making me knowne to your well diſpoſed friends, ſuch as are deuoutly addicted both to God,and you; I, who am young, and better able to endure trauaile then you are, may go thither to ſupply our neceſſities,and you take your eaſe in the mean while? The aged man,perceiuing the great growth of his Sonne,and thinking him to be ſo well inſtructed in Gods ſeruice, as no worldly vanities could eaſily allure him from it;did not diſlike the Lads honeſt motion, but when he went next to *Florence*, tooke him thither along with him.

When he was there, and had ſeene the goodly Palaces, Houſes, and Churches, with all other ſights to be ſeene in ſo populous a City: he began greatly to wonder at them, as one that had neuer ſeene them before,at leaſt within the compaſſe of his remembrance; demanding many things of his Father, both what they were, and how they were named: wherein the old man ſtill reſolued him. The anſwers ſeemed to content him highly, and cauſed him to proceede on in further queſtions, according ſtill as they found freſh occaſions: till at the laſt, they met with a troope of very beautifull women, going on in ſeemely manner together,as returning backe from a Wedding. No ſooner did the youth behold them,but he demanded of his Father,what things they were;whereto the olde man replied thus. Sonne, caſt downe thy lookes vnto the ground, and do not ſeeme to ſee them at all, becauſe they are bad things to behold. Bad things Father?anſwered the Lad. How do you call them? The good olde man, not to quicken any concupiſciable appetite in the young boy,or any inclinable deſire to ought but goodneſſe; would not terme them by their proper name of Women, but told him that they were called young Gozlings.

Heere grew a matter of no meane meruaile, that he who had neuer ſeene any women before now; appeared not to reſpect the faire Churches, Palaces, goodly Horſes,Golde, Siluer,or any thing elſe which he had ſeene;but,as fixing his affection onely vpon this ſight, ſodainly ſaide to the old man. Good Father,do ſo much for me, as to let me haue one of theſe Gozlings. Alas Sonne (replied the Father) hold thy peace I pray thee,and do not deſire any ſuch naughty thing. Then by way of demand,he thus proceeded,ſaying. Father,are theſe naughty things made of themſelues? Yes Sonne, anſwered the old man. I know not Father

(quoth the Lad) what you meane by naughtineſſe, nor why theſe goodly things ſhould be ſo badly termed; but in my iudgement, I haue not ſeene any thing ſo faire and pleaſing in mine eye, as theſe are, who excell thoſe painted Angels, which here in the Churches you haue ſhewne me. And therefore Father, if euer you loue me, or haue any care of me, let me haue one of theſe Gozlings home to our Cell, where we can make meanes ſufficient for her feeding. I will not (ſaid the Father) be ſo much thine enemy, becauſe neither thou, or I, can rightly skill of their feeding. Perceiuing preſently, that Nature had farre greater power then his Sonnes capacity and vnderſtanding; which made him repent, for fondly bringing his Sonne to *Florence*.

Hauing gone ſo farre in this fragment of a Tale, I am content to pauſe heere, and will returne againe to them of whom I ſpake before; I meane my enuious deprauers: ſuch as haue ſaide (faire Ladies) that I am double blame-worthy, in ſeeking to pleaſe you, and that you are alſo ouer-pleaſing to me; which freely I confeſſe before all the world, that you are ſingularly pleaſing to me, and I haue ſtrouen how to pleaſe you effectually. I would demand of them (if they ſeeme ſo much a mazed heereat,) conſidering, I neuer knew what belonged to true loue kiſſes, amorous embraces, and their delectuable fruition, ſo often receiued from your graces; but onely that I haue yet ſeene, and do dayly behold, your commendable conditions, admired beauties, noble adornments by nature, and (aboue all the reſt) your womenly and honeſt conuerſation. If he that was nouriſhed, bred, and educated, on a ſaugae ſolitary Mountaine, within the confines of a poore ſmall Cell, hauing no other company then his Father: If ſuch a one, I ſay, vpon the very firſt ſight of your ſexe, could ſo conſtantly confeſſe, that women were onely worthy of affection, and the obiect which (aboue all things elſe) he moſt deſired; why ſhould theſe contumelious ſpirits ſo murmure againſt me, teare my credite with their teeth, and wound my reputation to the death, becauſe your vertues are pleaſing to me, and I endeauour likewiſe to pleaſe you with my vtmoſt paines? Neuer had the auſpicious heauens allowed me life, but onely to loue you; and from my very infancie, mine intentions haue alwayes bene that way bent: feeling what vertue flowed from your faire eyes, vnderſtanding the mellifluous accents of your ſpeech, whereto the enkindled flames of your ſighes gaue no meane grace. But remembring eſpecially, that nothing could ſo pleaſe an Hermite, as your diuine perfections, an vnnurtured Lad, without vnderſtanding, and little differing from a meere brutiſh beaſt: vndoubtedly, whoſoeuer loueth not women, and deſireth to be affected of them againe: may well be ranked among theſe women-haters, ſpeaking out of cankred ſpleene, and vtterly ignorant of the ſacred power (as alſo the vertue) of naturall affection, whereof they ſeeming ſo careleſſe, the like am I of their deprauing.

Concerning them that touch me with mineage; Doe not they know, that although Leeks haue white heads, yet the blades of them are alwaies greene? But referring them to their flouts and taunts, I anſwere, that I ſhall

neuer

n euer hold it any diſparagement to me, ſo long as my life endureth, to delight my ſelfe with thoſe exerciſes, which *Guido Caualconti*, and *Dante Alighieri*, already aged, as alſo *Meſſer Cino de Piſtoia*, older then either of them both, held it to be their chiefeſt honour. And were it not a wandering too farre from our preſent argument, I would alledge Hiſtories to approue my words, full of very ancient and famous men, who in the ripeſt maturity of all their time, were carefully ſtudious for the contenting of women, albeit theſe cock-braines neither know the way how to do it, nor are ſo wiſe as to leerne it.

Now, for my dwelling at *Parnaſſus* with the Muſes, I confeſſe their counſell to be very good: but we cannot alwayes continue with them, nor they with vs. And yet neuertheleſſe, when any man departeth from them, they delighting themſelues, to ſee ſuch things as may be thought like them, do not therein deſerue to be blamed. We finde it recorded, that the Muſes were women, and albeit women cannot equall the performance of the Muſes; yet in their very prime aſpect, they haue a liuely reſemblance with the Muſes: ſo that, if women were pleaſing for nothing elſe, yet they ought to be generall pleaſing in that reſpect. Beſide all this, women haue bin the occaſion of my compoſing a thouſand Verſes, whereas the Muſes neuer cauſed me to make ſo much as one. Verie true it is, that they gaue me good aſſiſtance, and taught me how I ſhould compoſe them, yea, and directed me in writing of theſe Nouels. And how baſely ſoeuer they iudge of my ſtudies, yet haue the Muſes neuer ſcorned to dwell with me, perhaps for the reſpectiue ſeruice, and honourable reſemblance of thoſe Ladies with themſelues, whoſe vertues I haue not ſpared to commend by them. Wherefore in the compoſing of theſe varieties, I haue not ſtrayed ſo farre from *Parnaſſus*, nor the Muſes; as in their ſilly coniectures they imagine.

But what ſhall I ſay to them, who take ſo great compaſſion on my pouertie, as they aduiſe me to get ſome thing, whereon to make my liuing? Aſſuredly, I know not what to ſay in this caſe, except by due conſideration made with my ſelfe, how they would anſwer me, if neceſſitie ſhould driue me to craue kindneſſe of them; queſtionleſſe, then would then ſay: Goe, ſeeke comfort among thy fables and follies. Yet I would haue them know, that poore Poets haue alwayes found more among their fables and fictions; then many rich men euer could do, by ranſacking all their bags of treaſure. Beſide, many other might be ſpoken of, who made their age and times to flouriſh, meerely by their inuentions and fables: whereas on the contrary, a great number of other buſier braines, ſeeking to gaine more then would ſerue them to liue on; haue vtterly runne vpon their owne ruine, and ouerthrowne themſelues for euer. What ſhould I ſay more? To ſuch men, as are either ſo ſuſpicious of their owne charity, or of my neceſſitie, whenſoeuer it ſhall happen: I can anſwer (I thanke my God for it) with the Apoſtle; I know how to abound, and how to abate, yea, how to endure both proſperity and want; and therefore, let no man be more carefull of me, then I am of my ſelfe.

For them that are ſo inquiſitiue into my diſcourſes, to haue a further conſtruction of them, then agrees with my meaning, or their owne good manners, taxing me with writing one thing, but intending another; I could wiſh, that their wiſedome would extend ſo farre, as but to compare them with their originals, to finde them a iot diſcordant from my writing; and then I would freely confeſſe, that they had ſome reaſon to reprehend me, and I ſhould endeuour to make them amends. But vntill they can touch me with any thing elſe, but words onely; I muſt let them wander in their owne giddy opinions, and follow the courſe proiected to my ſelfe, ſaying of them, as they do of me.

Thus holding them all ſufficiently anſwered for this time, I ſay (moſt worthy Ladies) that by heauens aſſiſtance and yours, whereunto I onely leane: I will proceede on, armed with patience; and turning my backe againſt theſe impetuous windes, let them breath till they burſt, becauſe I ſee nothing can happen to harme me, but onely the venting of their malice. For the roughеſt blaſts, do but raiſe the ſmalleſt duſt from off the ground, driuing it from one place to another; or, carrying it vp to the aire, many times it falleth downe againe on mens heads, yea, vpon the Crownes of Emperours and Kings, and ſometimes on the higheſt Palaces and tops of Towers; from whence, if it chance to deſcend againe by contrary blaſts, it can light no lower, then whence it came at the firſt. And therefore, if euer I ſtroue to pleaſe you with my vttermoſt abilities in any thing, ſurely I muſt now contend to expreſſe it more then euer. For, I know right well, that no man can ſay with reaſon, except ſome ſuch as my ſelfe, who loue and honour you, that we do any otherwiſe then as nature hath commanded vs; and to reſiſt her lawes, requires a greater and more powerfull ſtrength then ours: and the dontenders againſt her ſupreame priuiledges, haue either laboured meerely in vaine, or elſe incurred their owne bane. Which ſtrength, I freely confeſſe my ſelfe not to haue, neither couet to be poſſeſſed of it in this caſe: but if I had it, I would rather lend it to ſome other, then any way to vſe it on mine owne behalfe. Wherefore, I would aduiſe them that thus checke and controule me, to giue ouer, and be ſilent; and if their cold humors cannot learne to loue, let them liue ſtill in their froſtie complexion, delighting themſelues in their corrupted appetites: ſuffering me to enioy mine owne, for the little while I haue to liue; and this is all the kindneſſe I require of them.

But now it is time (bright beauties) to returne whence we parted, and to follow our former order begun, becauſe it may ſeeme we haue wandered too farre. By this time the Sun had chaſed the Starre-light from the heauens, and the ſhadie moiſture from the ground, when *Philoſtratus* the King being riſen, all the company aroſe likewiſe. When being come into the goodly Garden, they ſpent the time in varietie of ſports, dining where they had ſupt the night before. And after that the Sunne was at his higheſt, and they had refreſhed their ſpirits with a little ſlumbering, they ſate downe (according to cuſtome) about the faire Fountaine. And then the King commanded Madam *Fiammetta*, that ſhe ſhould giue beginning

to

to the dayes Nouels : when ſhe, without any longer delaying, began in this gracious manner.

Tancrede, *Prince of* Salerne, *cauſed the amorous friend of his daughter to bee ſlaine, and ſent her his heart in a cup of Gold : which afterwards ſhe ſteeped in an impoyſoned water, and then drinking it, ſo dyed.*

The firſt Nouell.

Wherein is declared the power of Loue, and their cruilty iuſtly reprehended, who imagine to make the vigour thereof ceaſe, by abuſing or killing one of the Louers.



OVR King (moſt Noble and vertuous Ladies) hath this day giuen vs a ſubiect, very rough and ſtearne to diſcourſe on, and ſo much the rather, if we conſider, that we are come hither to be merry & pleaſant, where ſad Tragicall reports are no way ſuteable, eſpecially, by reuiuing the teares of others, to bedew our owne cheekes withall. Nor can any ſuch argument be ſpoken of, without mouiug compaſſion both in the reporters, and hearers. But(perhaps) it was his Highneſſe pleaſure, to moderate the delights which we haue already had. Or whatſoeuer elſe hath prouoked him thereto, ſeeing it is not lawfull for me, to alter or contradict his appointment ; I will recount an accident very pittifull, or rather moſt vnfortinate, and well worthy to be graced with our teares.

Tancrede, Prince of *Salerne (*which City, before the Conſulles of *Rome* held dominion in that part of *Italy*, ſtoode free, and thence (perchance)

tooke the moderne title of a Principality) was a very humane Lord, and of ingenious nature; if, in his elder yeeres, he had not soiled his hands in the blood of Louers, especially one of them, being both neere and deere vnto him. So it fortuned, that during the whole life time of this Prince, he had but one onely daughter (albeit it had beene much better, if he had had none at all) whom he so choisely loued and esteemed, as neuer was any childe more deerely affected of a Father: and so farre extended his ouer-curious respect of her, as he would seldome admit her to be forth of his sight; neither would he suffer her to marry, although she had outstept (by diuers yeeres) the age meete for marriage. Neuertheless, at length, he matched her with the Sonne to the Duke of *Capua*, who liued no long while with her; but left her in a widdowed estate, and then she returned home to her father againe.

This Lady, had all the most absolute perfections, both of fauour and feature, as could be wished in any woman, young, queintly disposed, and of admirable vnderstanding, more (perhappes) then was requisite in so weake a body. Continuing thus in Court with the King her Father, who loued her beyond all his future hopes; like a Lady of great and glorious magnificence, she liued in all delights and pleasure. She well perceiuing, that her Father thus exceeding in his affection to her, had no minde at all of re-marrying her, and holding it most immodest in her, to solicite him with any such suite: concluded in her mindes priuate consultations, to make choise of some one especiall friend or fauourite (if Fortune would proue so furtherous to her) whom she might acquaint secretly, with her sober, honest, and familiar purposes. Her Fathers Court being much frequented, with plentifull accesse of braue Gentlemen, and others of inferiour quality, as commonly the Courts of Kings and Princes are, whose carriage and demeanor she very heedfully obserued. There was a young Gentleman among all the rest, a seruant to her Father, and named *Guiscardo*, a man not deriued from any great descent by blood, yet much more Noble by vertue and commandable behauiour, then appeared in any of the other, none pleased her opinion, like as he did; so that by often noting his parts and perfections, her affections being but a glowing sparke at the first, grew like a Bauin to take flame, yet kept so closely as possibly she could; as Ladies are warie enough in their loue.

The young Gentleman, though poore, being neither blocke nor dullard, perceiued what he made no outward shew of, and vnderstood himselfe so sufficiently, that holding it no meane happinesse to be affected by her, he thought it very base and cowardly in him, if he should not expresse the like to her againe. So louing mutually (yet secretly) in this maner, and she coueting nothing more, then to haue priuate conference with him, yet not daring to trust any one with so important a matter; at length she deuised a new cunning stratageme, to compasse her longing desire, and acquaint him with her priuate purpose, which proued to be in this manner. She wrote a Letter, concerning what was the next day to be done, for their secret meeting together; and conueying it within

the

the ioynt of an hollow Cane, in iesting manner threw it to *Guiscardo*, saying; Let your man make vse of this, insteed of a paire of bellowes, when he meaneth to make fire in your Chamber. *Guiscardo* taking vp the Cane, and considering with himselfe, that neither was it giuen, or the wordes thus spoken, but doubtlesse on some important occasion: went vnto his lodging with the Cane, where viewing it respectiuely, he found it to be cleft, and opening it with his knife, found there the written Letter enclosed.

After he had reade it, and well considered on the seruice therein concerned; he was the most ioyfull man of the world, and began to contriue his aptest meanes, for meeting with his gracious Mistresse, and according as she had giuen him direction. In a corner of the Kings Palace, it being seated on a rising hill, a caue had long beene made in the body of the same hill, which receiued no light into it, but by a small spiracle or vent-loope, made out ingeniously on the hils side. And because it had not beene a long time frequented, by the accesse of any body, that vent-light was ouer-growne with briars and bushes, which almost engirt it round about. No one could descend into this caue or vault, but only by a secret paire of staires, answering to a lower Chamber of the Palace, and very neere to the Princesse lodging, as being altogether at her command, by meanes of a strong barred and defensible doore, whereby to mount or descend at her pleasure. And both the caue it selfe, as also the degrees conducting downe into it, were now so quite worne out of memory (in regard it had not beene visited by any one in long time before) as no man remembred that there was any such thing.

But Loue, from whose bright discerning eies, nothing can be so closely concealed, but at the length it commeth to light, had made this amorous Lady mindefull thereof, and because she would not be discouered in her intention, many dayes together, her soule became perplexed; by what meanes that strong doore might best be opened, before she could compasse to performe it. But after that she had found out the way, and gone downe her selfe alone into the caue; obseruing the loope-light & had made it commodious for her purpose, she gaue knowledge thereof to *Guiscardo*, to haue him deuise an apt course for his descent, acquainting him truly with the height, and how farre it was distant from the ground within. After he had found the souspirall in the hils side, and giuen it a larger entrance for his safer passage; he prouided a Ladder of cords, with steppes sufficient for his descending and ascending, as also a wearing sute made of leather, to keepe his skinne vnscrached of the thornes, and to auoyde all suspition of his resorting thither. In this manner went he to the saide loope-hole the night following, and hauing fastened the one end of his corded ladder, to the strong stumpe of a tree being closely by it; by meanes of the saide ladder, he descended downe into the caue, and there attended the comming of his Lady.

She, on the morrow morning, pretending to her waiting woman, that she was scarsly well, and therefore would not be diseased the most part of

that

that day; commanded them to leaue her alone in her Chamber, and not to returne vntill ſhe called for them, locking the doore her ſelfe for better ſecurity. Then opened ſhe the doore of the caue, and going downe the ſtaires, found there her amorous friend *Guiſcardo*, whom ſhe ſaluting with a chaſte and modeſt kiſſe; cauſing him to aſcend vp the ſtayres with her into her Chamber. This long deſired, and now obtained meeting, cauſed the two deerely affected Louers, in kinde diſcourſe of amorous argument (without inciuill or rude demeanor) to ſpend there the moſt part of that day, to their hearts ioy and mutuall contentment. And hauing concluded on their often meeting there, in this cunning and concealed ſort; *Guiſcardo* went downe into the caue againe, the Princeſſe making the doore faſt after him, and then went forth among her Women. So in the night ſeaſon, *Guiſcardo* aſcended vp againe by his Ladder of cords, and couering the loope-hole with brambles and buſhes, returned (vnſeene of any) to his owne lodging: the caue being afterward guilty of their often meeting there in this manner.

But Fortune, who hath alwayes bin a fatall emeny to louers ſtolne felicities, became enuious of their thus ſecret meeting, and ouerthrew (in an inſtant) all their poore happineſſe, by an accident moſt ſpightfull and malicious. The King had vſed diuers dayes before, after dinner time, to reſort all alone to his daughter Chamber, there conuerſing with her in moſt louing manner. One vnhappy day amongſt the reſt, when the Princeſſe, being named *Ghiſmonda*, was ſporting in her priuate Garden among her Ladies, the King (at his wonted time) went to his daughters Chamber, being neither heard or ſeene by any. Nor would he haue his daughter called from her pleaſure, but finding the windowes faſt ſhut, and the Curtaines cloſe drawne about the bed; he ſate downe in a chaire behind it, and leaning his head vpon the bed, his body being couered with the curtaine, as if he hid himſelfe purpoſely; he muſed on ſo many matters, vntill at laſt he fell faſt aſleepe.

It hath bin obſerued as an ancient Adage, that when diſaſters are ordained to any one, commonly they proue to be ineuitable, as poore *Ghiſmonda* could witneſſe too well. For while the King thus ſlept, ſhe hauing (vnluckily) appointed another meeting with *Guiſcardo*, left hir Gentlewomen in the Garden, and ſtealing ſoftly into her Chamber, hauing made all faſt and ſure, for being deſcried by any perſon: opened the doore to *Guiſcardo*, who ſtood there ready on the ſtaire-head, awaiting his entrance; and they ſitting downe on the bed ſide (according as they were wont to do) began their vſuall kinde of conference againe, with ſighes and louing kiſſes mingled among them. It chanced that the King awaked, and both hearing aad ſeeing this familiarity of *Guiſcardo* with his Daughter, he became extreamly confounded with greefe thereat. Once he intended, to cry out for helpe, to haue them both there apprehended; but he helde it a part of greater wiſedome, to ſit ſilent ſtill, and (if he could) to keepe himſelfe ſo cloſely concealed: to the end, that he might the more ſecretly, and with farre leſſe diſgrace to himſelfe, performe what he had raſhly inten-

intended to do.

The poore diſcouered Louers, hauiug ended their amorous interparlance, without ſuſpition of the Kings being ſo neere in perſon, or any elſe, to betray their ouer-confident truſt; *Guiſcardo* deſcended againe into the Caue, and ſhe leauing the Chamber, returned to her women in the Garden; all which *Tancrede* too well odſerued, and in a rapture of fury, departed (vnſeene) into his owne lodging. The ſame night, about the houre of mens firſt ſleepe, and according as he had giuen order; *Guiſcardo* was apprehended, euen as he was comming forth of the loope-hole, & in his homely leather habite. Very cloſely was he brought before the King, whoſe heart was ſwolne ſo great with griefe, as hardly was he able to ſpeake. notwithſtanding, at the laſt he began thus. *Guiſcardo*, the loue and reſpect I haue vſed towards thee, hath not deſerued the ſhamefull wrong whidh thou haſt requited me withall, and as I haue ſeene with mine owne eyes this day. Whereto *Guiſcardo* could anſwer nothing elſe, but onely this: Alas my Lord! Loue is able to do much more, then either you, or I. Whereupon, *Tancrede* commanded, that he ſhould be ſecretly well guarded, in a neere adioyning Chamber, and on the next day, *Ghiſmonda* hauing (as yet) heard nothing hereof, the Kings braine being infinitely buſied and troubled, after dinner, and as he often had vſed to do: he went to his daughters Chamber, where calling for her, and ſhutting the doores cloſely to them, the teares trickling downe his aged white beard, thus he ſpake to her.

Ghiſmonda, I was once grounded in a ſetled perſwaſion, that I truely knew thy vertue, and honeſt integrity of life; and this beleefe could neuer haue beene altred in mee, by any ſiniſter reports whatſoeuer, had not mine eyes ſeene, and mine eares heard the contrary. Nor did I ſo much as conceiue a thought either of thine affection, or priuate conuerſing with any man, but onely he that was to be thy husband. But now, I my ſelfe being able to auouch thy folly, imagine what an heart-breake this will be to me, ſo long as life remaineth in this poore, weake, and aged body. Yet, if needes thou muſt haue yeelded to this wanton weakneſſe, I would thou hadſt made choiſe of a man, anſwerable to thy birth and Nobility: whereas on the contrary, among ſo many worthy ſpirits as reſort to my Court, thou likeſt beſt to conuerſe with that ſilly young man *Guiſcardo*, one of very meane and baſe deſcent, and by me (euen for Gods ſake) from his very youngeſt yeares, brought vp to this inſtant in my Court; wherein thou haſt giuen me much affliction of minde, and ſo ouerthrowne my ſenſes, as I cannot well imagine how I ſhould deale with thee. For him, whom I haue this night cauſed to be ſurprized, euen as he came forth of your cloſe contriued conueyance, and detaine as my priſoner, I haue reſolued how to proceed with him: but concerning thy ſelfe, mine oppreſſions are ſo many and violent, as I know not what to ſay of thee. One way, thou haſt meerly murthered the vnfeigned affection I bare thee, as neuer any father could expreſſe more to his childe: and then againe, thou haſt kindled a moſt iuſt indignation in me, by thine immo-

deſt

deſt and wilfull folly, and whereas Nature pleadeth pardon for the one, yet iuſtice ſtandeth vp againſt the other, and vrgeth cruell ſeuerity againſt thee: neuertheleſſe, before I will determine vpon any reſolution, I come purpoſely firſt to heare thee ſpeake, and what thou canſt ſay for thy ſelfe, in a bad caſe, ſo deſperate and dangerous.

Hauing thus ſpoken, he hung downe the head in his boſome, weeping as aboundantly, as if he had beene a childe ſeuerely diſciplinde. On the other ſide, *Ghiſmonda* hearing the ſpeeches of her Father, and perceiuing withall, that not onely her ſecret loue was diſcouered, but alſo *Guiſcardo* was in cloſe priſon, the matter which moſt of all did torment her; ſhe fell into a very ſtrange kinde of extaſie, ſcorning teares, and entreating tearmes, ſuch as feminine frailety are alwayes apteſt vnto: but rather, with height of courage, controuling feare or ſeruile baſeneſſe, and declaring inuincible fortitude in her very lookes, ſhe concluded with her ſelfe, rather then to vrge any humble perſwaſions, ſhe would lay her life downe at the ſtake. For plainely ſhe perceiued, that *Guiſcardo* already was a dead man in Law, and death was likewiſe as welcome to her, rather then the depriuation of her Loue; and therefore, not like a weeping woman, or as checkt by the offence committed, but careleſſe of any harme happening to her: ſtoutely and couragiouſly, not a teare appearing in her eye, or her ſoule any way to be perturbed, thus ſhe ſpake to her Father.

Tancrede, to denie what I haue done, or to entreate any fauour from you, is now no part of my diſpoſition: for as the one can little auaile me, ſo ſhall not the other any way aduantage me. Moreouer, I couet not that you ſhould extend any clemency or kindneſſe to me, but by my voluntary confeſſion of the truth; do intend (firſt of all) to defend mine honour, with reaſons ſound, good, and ſubſtantiall, and then vertuouſly purſue to full effect, the greatneſſe of my minde and conſtant reſolution. True it is, that I haue loued, and ſtill do, honourable *Guiſcardo*, purpoſing the like ſo long as I ſhall liue, which will be but a ſmall while: but if it be poſſible to continue the ſame affection after death, it is for euer vowed to him onely. Nor did mine owne womaniſh weakneſſe ſo much thereto induce me, as the matchleſſe vertues ſhining clearly in *Guiſcardo*, and the little reſpect you had of marrying me againe. Why royall Father, you cannot be ignorant, that you being compoſed of fleſh and blood, haue begotten a Daughter of the ſelfe ſame compoſition, and not made of ſtone or iron. Moreouer, you ought to remember (although now you are farre ſtept in yeeres) what the Lawes of youth are, and with what difficulty they are to be contradicted. Conſidering withall, that albeit (during the vigour of your beſt time) you euermore were exerciſed in Armes; yet you ſhould likewiſe vnderſtand, that negligence and idle delights, haue mighty power, not onely in young people, but alſo in them of greateſt yeares.

I being then made of fleſh and blood, and ſo deriued from your ſelfe; hauing had alſo ſo little benefit of life, that I am yet in the ſpring, and blooming time of my blood: by either of theſe reaſons, I muſt needs be ſubiect to naturall deſires, wherein ſuch knowledge as I haue once already had,

had, in the eſtate of my marriage, perhaps might moue a further intelligence of the like delights, according to the better ability of ſtrength, which exceeding all capacity of reſiſtance, induced a ſecond motiue to affection, anſwerable to my time and youthfull deſires, and ſo (like a yong woman) I became amorous againe; yet did I ſtriue, euen with all my vtmoſt might, and beſt vertuous faculties abiding in me, no way to diſgrace either you or my ſelfe, as (in equall cenſure) yet haue I not done. But Nature is aboue all humane power, and Loue commanded by Nature, hath preuailed for Loue, ioyning with Fortune: in meere pitty and commiſeration of my extreame wrong, I found them both moſt benigne and gracious, teaching mee a way ſecret enough, whereby I might reach the height of my deſires, howſoeuer you became inſtructed, or (perhaps) found it out by accident; ſo it was, and I deny it not.

Nor did I make election of *Guiſcardo* by chance, or raſhly, as many women doe, but by deliberate counſell in my ſoule, and moſt mature aduiſe; I choſe him aboue all other, and hauing his honeſt harmleſſe conuerſation, mutually we enioyed our hearts contentment. Now it appeareth, that I haue not offended but by loue; in imitation of vulgar opinion, rather then truth: you ſeeke to reproue me bitterly, alleaging no other maine argument for your anger, but onely my not chooſing a Gentleman, or one more worthy. Wherein it is moſt euident, that you do not ſo much checke my fault, as the ordination of Fortune; who many times aduanceth men of meaneſt eſteeme, and abaſeth them of greater merit. But leauing this diſcourſe, let vs looke into the originall of things, wherein we are firſt to obſerue, that from one maſſe or lumpe of fleſh, both we, and all other receiued our fleſh, and one Creator hath created all things; yea, all creatures, equally in their forces and faculties, and equall likewiſe in their vertue: which vertue was the firſt that made diſtinction of birth and equality, in regard, that ſuch as haue the moſt liberall portion thereof, and performed actions thereto anſwerable, were thereby tearmed noble, all the reſt remaining vnnoble: now although contrary vſe did afterward hide and conceale this Law, yet was it not therefore baniſhed from Nature or good manners. In which reſpect, whoſoeuer did execute all his actions by vertue, declared himſelfe openly to be noble; and he that tearmed him otherwiſe, it was an errour in the miſcaller, and not in the perſon ſo wrongfully called; as the very ſame priuiledge is yet in full force among vs at this day.

Caſt an heedfull eye then (good Father) vpon all your Gentlemen, and aduiſedly examine their vertues, conditions, and manner of behauiour. On the other ſide, obſerue thoſe parts remaining in *Guiſcardo*: and then if you will iudge truly, and without affection, you will confeſſe him to be moſt Noble, and that all your Gentlemen (in reſpect of him) are but baſe Groomes and villaines. His vertues and excelling perfections, I neuer credited from the report or iudgement of any perſon; but onely by your ſpeeches, and mine owne eyes as true witneſſes. Who did euer more commend *Guiſcardo*, extolling all thoſe ſingularities in him, moſt requiſite to be in an honeſt vertuous man; then you your ſelfe haue done? Nor

neede

neede you to be ſorry, or aſhamed or your good opinion concerning him : for if mine eyes haue not deceiued my iudgement, you neuer gaue him the leaſt part of praiſe, but I haue knowne much more in him, then euer your words were able to expreſſe : wherefore, if I haue beene any way deceiued, truly the deceit proceeded onely from you. How wil you then maintaine, that I haue throwne my liking on a man of baſe condition ? In troth (Sir) you cannot. Perhaps you will alledge, that he is but meane and poore ; I confeſſe it, and ſurely it is to your ſhame, that you haue not beſtowne place of more preferment, on a man ſo honeſt and well deſeruing, and hauing bene ſo long a time your ſeruant. Neuertheleſſe pouerty impayreth not any part of noble Nature, but wealth hurries it into horrible confuſions. Many Kings and great Princes haue heeretofore beene poore, when diuers of them that haue delued into the earth, and kept Flockes in the field, haue beene aduanced to riches, and exceeded the other in wealth.

Now, as concerning your laſt doubt, which moſt of all afflicteth you, namely, how you ſhall deale with me; boldly rid your braine of any ſuch diſturbance; for if you haue reſolued now in your extremity of yeres, to doe that which your younger dayes euermore deſpiſed, I meane, to become cruell ; vſe your vtmoſt cruelty againſt me : for I wil neuer intreat you to the contrary, becauſe I am the ſole occaſion of this offence, if it doe deſerue the name of an offence. And this I dare aſſure you, that if you deale not with me, as you haue done already, or intend to *Guiſcardo*, mine owne hands ſhall act as much : and therfore giue ouer your teares to women; and if you purpoſe to be cruel, let him and me in death drinke both of one cup, at leaſt if you imagine that we haue deſerued it.

The King knew well enough the high ſpirit of his Daughter, but yet (neuertheleſſe) he did not beleeue, that her words would proue actions, or ſhe do as ſhe ſaid. And therefore parting from her, and without intent of vſing any cruelty to her, concluded, by quenching the heat of another to coole the fiery rage of her diſtemper, commanding two of his followers (who had the cuſtody of *Guiſcardo*) that without any rumour or noiſe at all, they ſhould ſtrangle him the night enſuing, and taking the heart forth of his body, to bring it to him, which they performed according to their charge. On the next day, the King called for a goodly ſtanding cup of Gold, wherein he put the heart of *Guiſcardo*, ſending it by one of his moſt familiar ſeruants to his Daughter, with command alſo to vſe theſe words to her. Thy Father hath ſent thee this preſent, to comfort thee with that thing which moſt of all thou affecteſt, euen as thou haſt comforted him with that which he moſt hated.

Ghiſmonda, nothing altered from her cruell deliberation, after her Father was departed from her, cauſed certaine poiſonous roots and hearbes to be brought her, which ſhee (by diſtillation) made a water of, to drinke ſodainly, whenſoeuer any croſſe accident ſhould come from her Father ; whereupon, when the Meſſenger from her Father had deliuered her the preſent, and vttered the words as he was commaunded : ſhee tooke the

Cup,

Cup, and looking into it with a setled countenance, by sight of the heart, and effect of the message, she knew certainely, that was the heart of *Guiscardo*; then looking stearnely on the seruant, thus she spake vnto him. My honest friend, it is no more then right and iustice, that so worthy a heart as this is, should haue any worser graue then gold, wherein my Father hath dealt most wisely. So, lifting the heart vp to her mouth, and sweetly kissing it, she proceeded thus. In all things, euen till this instant, (being the vtmost period of my life) I haue euermore found my Fathers loue most effectuall to me; but now it appeareth farre greater, then as any time heretofore: and therefore from my mouth, thou must deliuer him the latest thankes that euer I shall giue him, for sending me such an honourable present.

These words being ended, holding the Cup fast in her hand, and looking seriously vpon the heart, she began againe in this manner. Thou sweete entertainer of all my dearest delights, accursed be his cruelty, that causeth me thus to see thee with my corporall eyes, it being sufficient enough for me, alwayes to behold thee with the sight of my soule. Thou hast runne thy race, and as Fortune ordained, so are thy dayes finished: for as all flesh hath an ending; so hast thou concluded, albeit too soone, and before thy due time. The trauailes and miseries of this World, haue now no more to meddle with thee, and thy very heauiest enemy, hath bestowed such a graue on thee, as thy greatnesse in vertue worthily deserueth; now nothing else is wanting, wherewith to beautifie thy Funerall, but only her sighes and teares, that was so deare vnto thee in thy life time. And because thou mightest the more freely enioy them, see how my merciless Father (on his owne meere motion) hath sent thee to me; and truly I will bestow them frankly on thee, though once I had resolued, to die with drie eyes, and not shedding one teare, dreadlesse of their vtmost malice towards me.

And when I haue giuen thee the due oblation of my teares, my soule, which sometime thou hast kept most carfully, shall come to make a sweet coniunction with thine: for in what company else can I trauaile more contentedly, and to those vnfrequented silent shades, but onely in thine? As yet I am sure it is present here, in this Cup sent me by my Father, as hauing a prouident respect to the place, for possession of our equall and mutuall pleasures; because thy soule affecting mine so truly, cannot walke alone, without his deare companion.

Hauing thus finished her complaint, euen as if her head had been conuerted into a well spring of water, so did teares abundantly flow from her faire eyes, kissing the heart of *Guiscardo* infinite times. All which while, her women standing by her, neither knew what heart it was, nor to what effect her speeches tended: but being moued to compassionate teares, they often demanded (albeit in vaine) the occasion of her sad complaining, comforting her to their vtmost power. When she was not able to weepe any longer, wiping her eyes, and lifting vp her head, without any signe of the least dismay, thus she spake to the heart. Deare heart, all

my duty is performed to thee, and nothing now remaineth vnaffected; but onely breathing my laſt, to let my ghoſt accompany thine.

Then calling for the glaſſe of water, which ſhe had readily prepared the day before, and powring it vpon the heart lying in the Cup, couragiouſly aduancing it to her mouth, ſhe dranke it vp euery drop; which being done, ſhe lay downe vpon her bed, holding her Louers heart faſt in her hand, and laying it ſo neere to her owne as ſhe could. Now although her women knew not what water it was, yet when they had ſeene her to quaffe it off in that manner, they ſent word to the King, who much ſuſpecting what had happened, went in all haſte to his Daughters Chamber, entring at the very inſtant, when ſhe was laide vpon her bed; beholding her in ſuch paſſionate pangs, with teares ſtreaming downe his reuerend beard, he vſed many kinde words to comfort her: when boldly thus ſhe ſpake vnto him. Father (quoth ſhe) well may you ſpare theſe teares, becauſe they are vnfitting for you, and not any way deſired by me; who but your ſelfe, hath ſeene any man to mourne for his owne wilfull offence. Neuertheleſſe, if but the leaſt iot of that loue do yet abide in you, whereof you haue made ſuch liberall profeſſion to me; let me obtaine this my very laſt requeſt, to wit, that ſeeing I might not priuately enioy the benefit of *Guiſcardoes* loue, and while he liued, let yet (in death) one publike graue containe both our bodies; that death may affoord vs, what you ſo cruelly in life denied vs.

Extremity of griefe and ſorrow, with-held his tongue from returning any anſwer, and ſhe perceiuing her end approaching, held the heart ſtill cloſed to her owne bare breſt, ſaying; Here Fortune, receiue two true hearts lateſt oblation; for, in this manner are we comming to thee. So cloſing her eyes, all ſenſe forſooke her, life leauing her body breathleſſe. Thus ended the hapleſſe loue of *Guiſcardo*, and *Ghiſmonda*, for whoſe ſad diſaſter, when the King had mourned ſufficiently, and repented fruitleſly; he cauſed both their bodies to be honourably embalmed, and buried in a moſt royall Monument; not without generall ſorrow of the ſubiects of *Salerne*.

Fryar Albert *made a young Venetian Gentlewoman beleeue, that God* Cupid *was falne in loue with her, and he reſorted oftentimes vnto her, in the diſguiſe of the ſame God. Afterward, being frighted by the Gentlewomans kindred and friends, he caſt himſelfe out of her Chamber window, and was bidden in a poore mans Houſe; on the day following, in the ſhape of a wilde or ſauage man, he was brought vpon the Rialto of Saint* Marke, *and being there publikely knowne by the Brethren of his Order, he was committed to Priſon.*

The ſecond Nouell.

Reprehending the lewd liues of diſſembling hypocrites; and checking the arrogant pride of vaine-headed women.

THE

THE Nouell recounted by Madam *Fiammetta*, caused teares many times in the eyes of all the company; but it being finished, the King shewing a stearne countenance, saide; I should haue much commended the kindnesse of fortune, if in the whole course of my life, I had tasted the least moity of that delight, which *Guiscardo* receiued by conuersing with faire *Ghismonda*. Nor needs any of you to wonder thereat, or how it can be otherwise, because houtely I feele a thousand dying torments, without enioying any hope of ease or pleasure: but referring my fortunes to their owne poore condition, it is my will, that Madam *Pampinea* proceed next in the argument of succesleleſſe loue, according as Madam *Fiammetta* hath already begun, to let fall more dew-drops on the fire of mine afflictions. Madam *Pampinea* perceiuing what a taske was imposed on her, knew well (by her owne disposition) the inclination of the company, whereof shee was more respectiue then of the Kings command: wherefore, chusing rather to recreate their spirits, then to satisfie the Kings melancholy humour; she determined to relate a Tale of mirthfull matter, and yet to keepe within compasse of the purposed Argument.



It hath bene continually vsed as a common Prouerbe, that a bad man taken and reputed to be honest and good, may commit many euils, yet neither credited, or suspected: which prouerbe giueth me very ample matter to speake of, and yet not varying from our intention, concerning the hypocrisie of some religious persons, who hauing their garments long and large, their faces made artificially pale, their language meeke and humble to get mens goods from them; yet sowre, harsh and stearne enough, in checking and controuling other mens errours, as also in vrging others to giue, and themselues to take, without any other hope or

meanes of ſaluation. Nor doe they endeauour like other men, to worke out their ſoules health with feare and trembling; but, euen as if they were ſole owners, Lords, and poſſeſſors of Paradice, will appoint to euery dying perſon, place (there) of greater or leſſer excellency, according as they thinke good, or as the legacies left by them are in quantity, whereby they not onely deceiue themſelues, but all ſuch as giue credit to their ſubtile perſwaſions. And were it lawfull for me, to make knowne no more then is meerely neceſſary; I could quickly diſcloſe to ſimple credulous people, what craft lieth concealed vnder their holy habites: and I would wiſh, that their lies and deluding ſhould ſpeed with them, as they did with a *Franciſcane* Friar, none of the younger Nouices, but one of them of greateſt reputation, and belonging to one of the beſt Monaſteries in *Venice*. Which I am the rather deſirous to report, to recreate your ſpirits, after your teares for the death of faire *Ghiſmonda*.

Sometime (Honourable Ladies) there liued in the City of *Imola*, a man of moſt lewd and wicked life; named, *Bertho de la meſſa*, whoſe ſhameleſſe deedes were ſo well knowne to all the Citizens, and won ſuch reſpect among them; as all his lies could not compaſſe any beleefe, no, not when he deliuered a matter of found truth. Wherefore, perceiuing that his lewdneſſe allowed him no longer dwelling there; like a deſperate aduenturer, he tranſported himſelfe thence to *Venice*, the receptacle of all foule ſinne and abhomination, intending there to exerciſe his wonted bad behauiour, and liue as wickedly as euer he had done before. It came to paſſe, that ſome remorſe of conſcience tooke hold of him, for the former paſſages of his diſſolute life, and he pretended to be ſurprized with very great deuotion, becomming much more Catholike then any other man, taking on him the profeſſion of a *Franciſcane Cordelier*, and calling himſelfe, Fryar *Albert* of *Imola*.

In this habite and outward appearance, hee ſeemed to leade an auſtere and ſanctimonious life, highly commending penance and abſtinence, neuer eating fleſh, or drinking wine, but when he was prouided of both in a cloſe corner. And before any perſon could take notice thereof, hee became (of a theeſe) Ruffian, forſwearer, and murtherer, as formerly he had beene a great Preacher; yet not abandoning the forenamed vices, when ſecretly he could put any of them in execution. Moreouer, being made Prieſt, when he was celebrating Maſſe at the Altar, if he ſaw himſelfe to be obſerued by any; he would moſt mournefully reade the paſſion of our Sauiour, as one whoſe teares coſt him little, whenſoeuer hee pleaſed to vſe them: ſo that, in a ſhort while, by his preaching and teares, he fed the humours of the *Venetians* ſo pleaſingly, that they made him executour (well-neere) of all their Teſtaments, yea, many choſe him as depoſitary or Guardion of their monies; becauſe he was both Confeſſour and Councellor, almoſt to all the men and women.

By this well ſeeming out-ſide of ſanctity, the Wolfe became a Shepheard, and his renowne for holineſſe was ſo famous in thoſe parts, as Saint *Frances* himſelfe had hardly any more. It fortuned, that a young Gentlewoman,

tlewoman, being ſomewhat fooliſh, wanton and proud minded, named Madam *Liſetta de Caquirino*, wife to a wealthy Merchant, who went with certaine Gallies into *Flanders*, and there ſay as Lieger long time: in company of other Gentlewomen, went to be confeſſed by this ghoſtly Father; kneeling at his feete, although her heart was high enough, like a proud minded woman, (for *Venetians* are preſumptuous, vaine-glorious, and witted much like to their skittiſh Gondoloes) ſhe made a very ſhort rehearſall of her ſinnes. At length Fryar *Albert* demanded of her, whether ſhee had any amorous friend or louer? Her patience being exceedingly prouoked, ſtearne anger appeared in her lookes, which cauſed her to returne him this anſwer. How now Sir *Domine*? what? haue you no eyes in your head? Can you not diſtinguiſh between mine, and theſe other common beauties? I could haue Louers enow, if I were ſo pleaſed; but thoſe perfections remaining in me, are not to be affected by this man, or that. How many beauties haue you beheld, any way anſwerable to mine, and are more fit for Gods, then mortals.

Many other idle ſpeeches ſhee vttered, in proud opinion of her beauty, whereby Friar *Albert* preſently perceiued, that this Gentlewoman had but a hollow braine, and was fit game for folly to flye at; which made him inſtantly enamoured of her, and that beyond all capacity of reſiſting, which yet he referred to a further, and more commodious time. Neuertheleſſe, to ſhew himſelfe an holy and religious man now, he began to reprehend her, and told her plainely, that ſhe was vain-glorious, and ouercome with infinite follies. Heereupon, ſhe called him a logger headed beaſt, and he knew not the difference betweene an ordinary complexion, and beauty of the higheſt merit. In which reſpect, Friar *Albert*, being loth to offend her any further; after confeſſion was fully ended, let her paſſe away among the other Gentlewomen, ſhe giuing him diuers diſdainfull lookes.

Within ſome few dayes after, taking one of his truſty brethren in his company, he went to the Houſe of Madam *Liſetta*, where requiring to haue ſome conference alone with her ſelfe; ſhee tooke him into a priuate Parlor, and being there, not to be ſeene by any body, he fell on his knees before her, ſpeaking in this manner. Madam, for charities ſake, and in regard of your owne moſt gracious nature, I beſeech you to pardon thoſe harſh ſpeeches, which I vſed to you the other day, when you were with me at confeſſion: becauſe, the very night enſuing thereon, I was chaſtiſed in ſuch ſuch cruell manner, as I was neuer able to ſtirre forth of my bed, vntill this very inſtant morning; whereto the weake-witted Gentlewoman thus replyed. And who I pray you (quoth ſhe) did chaſtiſe you ſo ſeuerely? I will tell you Madam, ſaid Friar *Albert*, but it is a matter of admirable ſecrecie.

Being alone by my ſelfe the ſame night in my Dorter, and in very ſerious deuotion, according to my vſuall manner: ſuddenly I ſaw a bright ſplendour about me, and I could no ſooner ariſe to diſcerne what it might be, and whence it came, but I eſpied a very goodly young Lad ſtanding

by me, holding a golden Bow in his hand, and a rich Quiuer of Arrowes hanging at his backe. Catching faſt hold on my Hood, againſt the ground he threw me rudely, trampling on me with his feete, and beating me with ſo many cruell blowes, that I thought my body to be broken in peeces. Then I deſired to know, why he was ſo rigorous to me in his correction? Becauſe (qnoth he) thou didſt ſo ſaucily preſume this day, to reproue the celeſtiall beauty of Madam *Liſetta*, who (next to my Mother *Venus*) I loue moſt dearely. Whereupon I perceiued, he was the great commanding God *Cupid*, and therefore I craued moſt humbly pardon of him. I will pardon thee (quoth he) but vpon this condition, that thou goe to her ſo ſoone as conueniently thou canſt, and (by lowly humility) preuaile to obtaine her free pardon: which if ſhe will not vouchſafe to grant thee, then ſhall I in ſtearne anger returne againe, and lay ſo many torturing afflictions on thee, that all thy whole life time ſhall be moſt hatefull to thee. And what the diſpleaſed God ſaide elſe beſide, I dare not diſcloſe, except you pleaſe firſt to pardon me.

Miſtreſſe-ſhallow braine, being ſwolne big with this wind, like an empty bladder; conceiued no ſmall pride in hearing theſe words, conſtantly crediting them to be true, and therefore thus anſwered. Did I not tel you Father *Albert*, that my beauty was celeſtiall? But I ſweare by my beauty, notwithſtanding your idle paſſed arrogancy, I am heartily ſorry for your ſo ſeuere correction; which that it may no more be inflicted on you, I do freely pardon you; yet with this *prouiſo*, that you tell me what the God elſe ſaide vnto you; whereto Fryar *Albert* thus replyed. Madam, ſeeing you haue ſo graciouſly vouchſafed to pardon me, I will thankfully tell you all: but you muſt be very carefull and reſpectiue, that whatſoeuer I ſhall reueale vnto you, muſt ſo cloſely be concealed, as no liuing creature in the World may know it; for you are the onely happy Lady now liuing, and that happineſſe relieth on your ſilence and ſecrecie: with ſolemne vowes and proteſtations ſhe ſealed vp her many promiſes, and then the Fryar thus proceeded.

Madam, the further charge impoſed on me by God *Cupid*, was to tell you, that himſelfe is ſo extremely enamored of your beauty, and you are become ſo gracious in his affection; as, many nights he hath come to ſee you in your Chamber, ſitting on your pillow, while you ſlept ſweetly, and deſiring very often to awake you, but onely fearing to affright you. Wherefore, now he ſends you word by me, that one night he intendeth to come viſite you, and to ſpend ſome time in conuerſing with you. But in regard he is a God, and meerely a ſpirit in forme, whereby neither you or any elſe haue capacity of beholding him, much leſſe to touch or feele him: he ſaith, that (for your ſake) he will come in the ſhape of a man, giuing me charge alſo to know of you, when you ſhall pleaſe to haue him come, and in whoſe ſimilitude you would haue him to come, whereof he will not faile; in which reſpect, you may iuſtly thinke your ſelfe to be the onely happy woman liuing, and farre beyond all other iu your good fortune.

Miſtreſſe

Miſtreſſe want-wit preſently anſwered, ſhee was well contented, that God *Cupid* ſhould loue her, and ſhe would returne the like loue againe to him; proteſting withall, that whereſoeuer ſhee ſhould ſee his maieſticall picture, ſhe would ſet a hallowed burning Taper before it. Moreouer, at all times he ſhould be moſt welcome to her, whenſoeuer hee would vouchſafe to viſite her; for, he ſhould alwayes finde her alone in her priuate Chamber: on this condition, that his olde Loue *Pſyches*, and all other beauties elſe whatſouer, muſt be ſet aſide, and none but her ſelfe onely to be his beſt Miſtreſſe, referring his perſonall forme of appearance, to what ſhape himſelfe beſt pleaſed to aſſume, ſo that it might not be frightfull, or offenſiue to her.

Madam (quoth Friar *Albert*) moſt wiſely haue you anſwered, and leaue the matter to me; for I will take order ſufficiently, and to your contentment. But you may do me a great grace, and without any preiudice to your ſelfe, in granting me one poore requeſt; namely, to vouchſafe the Gods appearance to you, in my bodily ſhape and perſon, and in the perfect forme of a man as now you behold me: ſo may you ſafely giue him entertainment, without any taxation of the world, or ill apprehenſion of the moſt curious inquiſition. Beſide, a greater happineſſe can neuer befall me: for, while he aſſumeth the ſoule out of my body, and walketh on the earth in my humane figure: I ſhall be wandering in the ioyes of Louers Paradiſe, feeling the fruition of their felicities; which are ſuch, as no mortality can be capeable of, no, not ſo much as in imagination.

The wiſe Gentlewoman replied, that ſhe was well contented, in regard of the ſeuere puniſhment inflicted on him by God *Cupid*, for the reproachfull ſpeeches he had giuen her; to allow him ſo poore a kinde of conſolation, as he had requeſted her to grant him. Whereuppon Friar *Albert* ſaide: Be ready then Madam to giue him welcome to morrow in the euening, at the entering into your houſe, for comming in an humane body, he cannot but enter at your doores: whereas, if (in powerfull manner) he made vſe of his wings, he then would flye in at your window, and then you could not be able to ſee him.

Vpon tihs concluſion, *Albert* departed, leauing *Liſetta* in no meane pride of imagination, that God *Cupid* ſhould be enamoured of her beauty; and therefore ſhe thought each houre a yeare, till ſhe might ſee him in the mortall ſhape of Friar *Albert*. And now was his braine wonderfully buſied, to viſite her in more then common or humane manner; and therfore he made him a ſute (cloſe to his body) of white Taffata, all poudred ouer with Starres, and ſpangles of Gold, a Bow and Quiuer of Arrowes, with wings alſo faſtened to his backe behinde him, and all cunningly couered with his Friars habit, which muſt be the ſole meanes of his ſafe paſſage.

Hauing obtained licence of his Superiour, and being accompanied with an holy Brother of the Conuent, yet ignorant of the buſineſſe by him intended; he went to the houſe of a friend of his, which was his vſuall receptacle, whenſoeuer he went about ſuch deeds of darknes. There did

did he put on his dissembled habit of God *Cupid*, with his winges, Bowe, and Quiuer, in formall fashion; and then clouded ouer with his Monkes Cowle) leaues his companion to awaite his returning backe, while he visited fooliſh *Liſetta*, according to her expectation, readily attending for the Gods arriuall.

Albert being come to the houſe, knocked at the doore, and the Maide admitting him entrance, according as her Miſtreſſe had appointed, ſhe conducted him to her Miſtreſſes Chamber, where laying aſide his Friars habite, and ſhe ſeeing him ſhine with ſuch glorious ſplendour, adding action alſo to his aſſumed diſſimulation, with maieſticke motion of his body, wings, and bow, as if he had bene God *Cupid* indeede, conuerted into a body much bigger of ſtature, then Painters commonly do deſcribe him, her wiſedome was ouercome with feare and admiration, that ſhe fell on her knees before him, expreſſing all humble reuerence vnto him. And he ſpreading his wings ouer her, as with wiers and ſtrings he had made them pliant; ſhewed how graciouſly he accepted her humiliation; folding her in his armes, and ſweetly kiſſing her many times together, with repetition of his entire loue and affection towards her. So delicately was he perfumed with odoriferous ſauours, and ſo compleate of perſon in his ſpangled garments, that ſhe could do nothing elſe, but wonder at his rare behauiour, reputing her felicity beyond all Womens in the world, and vtterly impoſſible to be equalled, ſuch was the pride of her preſuming. For he told her diuers tales and fables, of his awefull power among the other Gods, and ſtolne pleaſures of his vpon the earth; yet gracing her praiſes aboue all his other Loues, and vowes made now, to affect none but her onely, as his often viſitations ſhould more conſtantly aſſure her, that ſhe verily credited all his proteſtations, and thought his kiſſes and embraces, farre to exceed any mortall compariſon.

After they had ſpent ſo much time in amorous diſcourſing, as might beſt fit with this their firſt meeting, and ſtand cleare from ſuſpition on either ſide: our *Albert Cupid*, or *Cupid Albert*, which of them you beſt pleaſe to terme him, cloſing his ſpangled winges together againe behinde his backe, faſtening alſo on his Bow and Quiuer of Arrowes, ouer-clouds all with his religious Monkes Cowle, and then with a parting kiſſe or two, returned to the place where he had left his fellow and companion, perhaps imployed in as deuout an exerciſe, as he had bin in his abſence from him; whence both repayring home to the Monaſtery, all this nightes wandering was allowed as tollerable, by them who made no ſpare of doing the like.

On the morrow following, Madam *Liſetta* immediately after dinner, being attended by her Chamber-maid, went to ſee Friar *Albert*, finding him in his wonted forme and faſhion, and telling him what had hapned betweene her and God *Cupid*, with all the other lies and tales which hee had told her. Truly Madam (anſwered *Albert*) what your ſucceſſe with him hath beene, I am no way able to comprehend; but this I can aſſure you, that ſo ſoone as I had acquainted him with your anſwer, I felt a ſo-

daine

daine rapture made of my soule, and visibly (to my apprehension) saw it carried by Elues and Fairies, into the floury fields about *Elisium*, where Louers departed out of this life, walke among the beds of Lillies and Roses, such as are not in this world to be seene, neither to be imagined by any humane capacity. So super-abounding was the pleasure of this ioy and solace, that, how long I continued there, or by what meanes I was transported hither againe this morning, it is beyond all ability in mee to expresse, or how I assumed my body againe after that great God had made vse thereof to your seruice. Well Fryar *Albert* (quoth shee) you may see what an happinesse hath befalne you, by so grosse an opinion of my perfections, and what a felicity you enioy, and still are like to do, by my pardoning your error, and granting the God accesse to me in your shape: which as I enuy not, so I wish you hereafter to be wiser, in taking vpon you to iudge of beauty. Much other idle folly proceeded from her, which still he soothed to her contentment, and (as occasion serued) many meetings they had in the former manner.

It fortuned within few dayes after that Madam *Lisetta* being in company with one of her Gossips, and their conference (as commonly it falleth out to be) concerning other women of the City; their beauty, behauiour, amorous suters and seruants, and generall opinion conceiued of their worth and merit; wherein *Lisetta* was ouer-much conceyted of her selfe, not admitting any other to be her equall. Among other speeches, sauouring of an vnseasoned braine: Gossip (quoth she) if you knew what account is made of my beauty, and who holdes it in no meane estimation, you would then freely confesse, that I deserue to be preferred before any other. As women are ambitious in their owne opinions, so commonly are they couetous of one anothers secrets, especially in matter of emulation, whereupon the Gossip thus replyed. Beleeue me Madam, I make no doubt but your speeches may be true, in regard of your admired beauty, and many other perfections beside; yet let me tell you, priuiledges, how great and singular soeuer they be, without they are knowen to others, beside such as do particularly enioy them; they carry no more account, then things of ordinary estimation. Whereas on the contrary, when any Lady or Gentlewoman hath some eminent and peculiar fauour, which few or none other can reach vnto, and it is made famous by generall notion; then do all women else admire and honor her, as the glory of their kinde, and a miracle of Nature.

I perceiue Gossip said *Lisetta*, whereat you aime, and such is my loue to you, as you should not lose your longing in this case, were I but constantly secured of your secrecy, which as hitherto I haue bene no way able to taxe, so would I be loth now to be more suspitious of then needs. But yet this matter is of such maine moment, that if you will protest as you are truly vertuous, neuer to reueale it to any liuing body, I will disclose to you almost a miracle. The vertuous oath being past, with many other solemne protestations beside, *Lisetta* then proceeded in this maner.

I know Gossip, that it is a matter of common and ordinary custome, for

Ladies

Ladies and Gentlewomen to be graced with fauourites, men of fraile and mortall conditions, whose natures are as subiect to inconstancy, as their very best endeuours dedicated to folly, as I could name no mean number of our Ladies heere in *Venice*. But when Soueraigne deities shall feele the impression of our humane desires, and behold subiects of such preuailing efficacy, as to subdue their greatest power, yea, and make them enamored of mortall creatures: you may well imagine Gossip, such a beauty is superiour to any other. And such is the happy fortune of your friend *Lisetta*, of whose perfections, great *Cupid* the awefull commanding God of Loue himselfe, conceiued such an extraordinary liking: as he hath aban doned his seate of supreme Maiesty, and appeared to me in the shape of a mortall man, with liuely expression of his amourons passions, and what extremities of anguish he hath endured, onely for my loue. May this be possible? replyed the Gossip. Can the Gods be toucht with the apprehension of our fraile passions? Trueit is Gossip, answered *Lisetta*, and so certainly true, that his sacred kisses, sweete embraces, and most pleasing speeches with proffer of his continuall deuotion towards me, hath giuen me good cause to confirme what I say, and to thinke my felicity farre beyond all other womens, being honoured with his often nightly visitations.

The Gossip inwardly smiling at her idle speeches, which (neuertheles) she auouched with very vehement asseuerations: fell instantly sicke of womens naturall disease, thinking euery minute a tedious month, till she were in company with some other Gossips, to breake the obligation of her vertuous promise, and that others (as well as her selfe) might laugh at the folly of this shallow-witted woman. The next day following, it was her hap to be at a wedding, among a great number of other women, whom quickly she acquainted with this so strange a wonder; as they did the like to their husbands: and passing so from hand to hand, in lesse space then two dayes, all *Venice* was fully possessed with it.

Among the rest, the brethren to this foolish woman, heard this admirable newes concerning their Sister; and they discreetly concealing it to themselues, closely concluded to watch the walks of this pretended God: and if he soared not too lofty a flight, they would clip his wings, to come the better acquainted with him. It fortuned, that the Friar hearing his Cupidicall visitations ouer-publikely discouered, purposed to check and reproue *Lisetta* for her indiscretion. And being habited according to his former manner, his Friarly Cowle couering all his former brauery, he left his companion where he vsed to stay, and closely walked along vnto the house. No sooner was he entred, but the Brethren being ambushed neere to the doore, went in after him, and ascending the staires, by such time as he had vncased himselfe, and appeared like God *Cupid*, with his spangled wings displayed: they rushed into the Chamber, and he hauing no other refuge, opened a large Casement, standing directly ouer the great gulfe or Riuer, and presently leapt into the water; which being deepe, and he skilfull in swimming, he had no other harme by his fall, albeit the sodaine affright did much perplex him.

Reco-

Recouering the further side of the Riuer, he espied a light, and the doore of an house open, wherein dwelt a poore man, whom he earnestly intreated, to saue both his life and reputation, telling him many lies and tales by what meanes he was thus disguised, and throwne by night-walking Villaines into the water. The poore man, being moued to compassionate his distressed estate, laid him in his owne bed, ministring such other comforts to him, as the time and his pouerty did permit; and day drawing on, he went about his businesse, aduising him to take his rest, and it should not be long till he returned. So, locking the doore, and leauing the counterfet God in bed, away goes the poore man to his daily labor. The Brethren to *Lisetta*, perceiuing God *Cupid* to be fled and gone, and she in melancholly sadnesse sitting by them: they tooke vp the Reliques he had left behind him, I meane the Friars hood and Cowle, which shewing to their sister, and sharpely reprouing her vnwomanly behauiour: they left her in no meane discomfort, returning home to their owne houses, with their conquered spoile of the forlorne Friar.

During the times of these occurrences, broad day speeding on, and the poore man returning homeward by the *Rialto*, to visit his guest so left in bed: he beheld diuers cronds of people, and a generall rumor noysed among them, that God *Cupid* had bene that night with Madam *Lisetta*, where being ouer-closely pursued by her Brethren, for feare of being surprized, he leapt out of her window into the gulfe, and no one could tell what was become of him. Heereupon, the poore man began to imagine, that the guest entertained by him in the night time, must needs be the same supposed God *Cupid*, as by his wings and other embellishments appeared: wherefore being come home, and sitting downe on the beds side by him, after some few speeches passing betweene them, he knew him to be Friar *Albert*, who promised to giue him fifty ducates, if he would not betray him to *Lisettaes* Brethren.

Vpon the acceptation of this offer, the money being sent for, and paied downe; there wanted nothing now, but some apt and conuenient meanes, whereby *Albert* might safely be conueyed into the Monastery, which being wholly referred to the poore mans care and trust, thus he spake. Sir, I see no likely-hood of your cleare-escaping home, except in this manner as I aduise you. We obserue this day as a merry Festiuall, and it is lawfull for any one, to disguise a man in the skin of a Beare, or in the shape of a sauage man, or any other forme of better aduice. Which being so done, he is brought vpon S. *Markes* market place, where being hunted a while with dogs, vpon the huntings conclusion, the Feast is ended; and then each man leades his monster whether him pleaseth. If you can accept any of these shapes, before you be seene heere in my poore abiding, then can I safely (afterward) bring you where you would be. Otherwise, I see no possible meanes, how you may escape hence vnknown; for it is without all question to the contrary, that the Gentlewomans brethren, knowing your concealment in some one place or other, wil set such spies and watches for you throughout the City, as you must needs be taken by them.

Now,

Now, although it ſeemed a moſt ſeuere impoſition, for *Albert* to paſſe in any of theſe diſguiſes: yet his exceeding feare of *Liſettaes* brethren and friends, made him gladly yeelde, and to vndergo what ſhape the poore man pleaſed, which thus he ordered. Annointing his naked body with Hony, he then couered it ouer with downy ſmall Feathers, and faſtening a chaine about his necke, and a ſtrange vgly vizard on his face, he gaue him a great ſtaffe in the one hand, and two huge Maſtiue dogs chained together in the other, which he had borrowed in the Butchery. Afterward, he ſent a man to the *Realto*, who there proclaimed by the ſound of Trumpet: That all ſuch as deſired to ſee God *Cupid*, which the laſt nights had deſcended downe from the skies, and fell (by ill hap) into the *Venetian* gulfe, let them repaire to the publike Market place of S. *Marke*, and there he would appeare in his owne likeneſſe.

This being done, ſoone after he left his houſe, and leading him thus diſguiſed along by the chaine, he was followed by great crowds of people, euery one queſtioning of whence, and what he was. In which manner, he brought him, to the Market place, where an infinite number of people were gathered together, as well of the followers, as of them that before heard the proclamation. There he made choice of a pillar, which ſtood in a place ſomewhat highly exalted, whereto he chained his ſauage man, making ſhew, as if he meant to awaite there, till the hunting ſhould begin: in which time, the Flies, Waſpes, and Homets, did ſo terribly ſting his naked body, being annointed with Hony, that he endured therby vnſpeakable anguiſh. When the poore man ſaw, that there needed no more concourſe of people; pretending, as if he purpoſed to let looſe his Sauage man; he tooke the maske or vizard from *Alberts* face, and then he ſpake aloud in this manner.

Gentlemen and others, ſeeing the wilde Boare commeth not to our hunting, becauſe I imagine that he cannot eaſily be found: I meane (to the end you may not loſe your labour in comming hither) to ſhew you the great God of Loue called *Cupid*, who Poets feigned long ſince to be a little boy, but now growne to manly ſtature. You ſee in what maner he hath left his high dwelling, onely for the comfort of our *Venetian* beauties: but belike, the night-fogs ouer-flagging his wings, he fell into our gulfe, and comes now to preſent his ſeruice to you. No ſooner had he taken off his vizard, but euery one knew him to be Fryar *Albert*; and ſodainely aroſe ſuch ſhoutes and out-cries, with moſt bitter words breathed forth againſt him, hurling alſo ſtones, durt and filth in his face, that his beſt acquaintance then could take no knowledge of him, and not any one pittying his abuſing.

So long continued the offended people in their fury, that the newes therof was carried to the Conuent, and ſix of his Religious Brethren came, who caſting an habite about him, and releaſing him from his chaine, they led him to the Monaſtery, not without much molleſtation and trouble of the people; where impriſoning him in their houſe, ſeuerity of ſome inflicted puniſhment, or rather conceite for his open ſhame, ſhortned

his

his dayes,and ſo he dyed. Thus you ſee (fayre Ladies) when licentious life muſt be clouded with a cloake of ſanctitie, and euill actions daylie committed, yet eſcaping vncredited: there will come a time at length, for iuſt diſcouering of all, that the good may ſhine in their true luſter of glory,and the bad ſinke in their owne deſerued ſhame.

Three yong Gentlemen affecting three Siſters, fledde with them into Candie. *The eldeſt of them (through iealouſie) becommeth the death of her Louer: The ſecond, by conſenting to the Duke of* Candies *requeſt, is the meanes of ſauing her life. Afterward,her owne Friend killeth her, and thence flyeth away with the elder Siſter. The third couple, are charged with her death, and being committed priſoners, they confeſſe the fact; and fearing death, by corruption of money they preuaile with their Keepers, eſcaping from thence to Rhodes,where they dyed in great pouerty.*

The Third Nouell.

Heerein is declared, how dangerous the occaſion is, enſuing by anger and deſpight, in ſuch as entirely loue,eſpecially being iniuried & offended by them that they loue.



WHen the King perceyued that Madame *Pampinea* had ended her diſcourſe, he ſat ſadly a pretty while,without vttering one word, but afterward ſpake thus. Little goodneſſe appeared in the beginning of this Nouell,becauſe it miniſtred occaſion of mirth; yet the ending proued better, and I could wiſh, that worſe inflictions had falne on the venerious Friar. Then turning towards Madam *Lauretta*,he ſaid; Lady,do you tell vs a better tale,if poſſible it may be. She ſmiling,thus anſwered the King: Sir, you are ouer cruelly bent againſt poore Louers, in deſi-

firing, that their amourous proceſſions ſhould haue harſh and ſiniſter concludings. Neuertheleſſe, in obedience to your ſeuere command, among three perſons amourouſly perplexed, I will relate an vnhappy ending; whereas all may be ſaide to ſpeede as vnfortunately, being equally alike, in enioying the iſſue of their deſires, and thus I purpoſe to proceede.

Euery Vice (choice Ladies) as very well you know, redoundeth to the great diſgrace and preiudice of him, or her, by whom it is practiſed, and oftentimes to others. Now, among thoſe common hurtfull enemies, the ſinne or vice which moſt carrieth vs with full carrere, and draweth vs into vnauoydable dangers (in mine opinion) ſeemeth to be that of choller or anger, which is a ſodain and inconſiderate mouing, prouoked by ſome receiued iniury, which hauing excluded all reſpect of reaſon, and dimnd (with darke vapors) the bright diſcerning ſight of the vnderſtanding, enflameth the minde with moſt violent fury. And albeit this inconuenience hapneth moſt to men, and more to ſome few then others, yet notwithſtanding, it hath bene noted, that women haue felt the ſelfeſame infirmity, and in more extreme manner, becauſe it much ſooner is kindled in them, and burneth with the brighter flame, in regard they haue the leſſer conſideration, and therefore not to be wondred at. For if we wil aduiſedly obſerue, we ſhall plainely perceiue, that fire (euen of his owne nature) taketh hold on ſuch things as are light and tender, much ſooner then it can on hard and weighty ſubſtances; and ſome of vs women (let men take no offence at my words) are farre more ſoft and delicate then they be, and therefore more fraile. In which regard, ſeeing wee are naturally enclined hereto, and conſidering alſo, how much our affability & gentleneſſe do ſhew themſelues pleaſing and full of content to thoſe men with whom we are to liue; and likewiſe, how anger and fury are compacted of extraordinary perils: I purpoſe (becauſe we may be the more valiant in our courage, to outſtand the fierce aſſaults of wrath and rage) to ſhew you by mine enſuing Nouell, how the loues of three yong Gentlemen, and of as many Gentlewomen, came to fatall and fortunat ſucceſſe by the tempeſtuous anger of one among them, as I haue formerly related vnto you.

Marſeilles (as you are not now to learne) is in *Prouence*, ſeated on the Sea, and is alſo a very ancient and moſt Noble Citty, which hath bene (heeretofore) inhabited with farre richer and more wealthy Merchants, then at this inſtant time it is. Among whom, there was one named *Narnaldo Ciuida*, a man but of meane condition, yet cleare in faith and reputation, and in lands, goods, and ready monies, immeaſurably rich. Many children he had by his Wife, among whom were three Daughters, which exceeded his Sonnes in yeeres. Two of them being twinnes, and borne of one body, were counted to be fifteene yeeres old; the third was fourteene, and nothing hindered marriage in their Parents owne expectation, but the returne home of *Narnaldo*, who was then abroad in Spaine with his Merchandizes. The eldeſt of theſe Siſters was named *Ninetta*,

the

the ſecond *Magdalena*, and the third *Bertella*. A Gentleman (albeit but poore in fortunes) and called *Reſtagnone*, was ſo extraordinarily enamoured of *Ninetta*, as no man poſſibly could be more, and ſhe likewiſe as earneſt in affection towards him; yet both carrying their loues proceeding with ſuch ſecrecy, as long time they enioyed their hearts ſweet contentment, yet vndiſcouered.

It came to paſſe, that two other young Gallants, the one named *Folco*, and the other *Hugnetto*, (who had attained to incredible wealth, by the deceaſe of their Father) were alſo as far in loue, the one with *Magdalena*, and the other with *Bertella*. When *Reſtagnone* had intelligence thereof, by the meanes of his faire friend *Ninetta*, he purpoſed to releeue his pouerty, by friendly furthering both their loue, and his owne: and growing into familiarity with them, one while he would walke abroad with *Folco*, and then againe with *Hugnetto*, but oftner with them both together, to viſite their Miſtreſſes, and continue worthy friendſhip. On a day, when hee ſaw the time ſuteable to his intent, and that hee had inuited the two Gentlemen home vnto his Houſe, he fell into this like Conference with them.

Kinde Friends (quoth he) the honeſt familiarity which hath paſt betweene vs, may render you ſome certaine aſſurance, of the conſtant loue I beare to you both, being as willing to worke any meanes that may tend to your good, as I deſire to compaſſe mine owne. And becauſe the truth of mine affection cannot conceale it ſelfe to you, I meane to acquaint you with an intention, wherewith my braine hath a long while trauelled and now may ſoone be deliuered of, if it may paſſe with your liking and approbation. Let me then tell you, that except your ſpeeches ſauour of vntruth, and your actions carry a double vnderſtanding, in common behauiour both by night and day, you appeare to pine and conſume away, in the cordiall loue you beare to two of the Siſters, as I ſuffer the ſame afflictions for the third, with reciprocall requitall of their deereſt affection to vs. Now, to qualifie the heate of our tormenting flames, if you will condeſcend to ſuch a courſe as I ſhall aduiſe you; the remedy will yeild them equall eaſe to ours, and we may ſafely inioy the benefit of contentment. As wealth aboundeth with you both, ſo doth want moſt extremely tyrannize ouer me: but if one banke might be made of both your rich ſubſtances, I embraced therein as a third partaker, and ſome quarter of the world aſſigned out by vs, where to liue at hearts eaſe vpon your poſſeſſions, I durſt engage my credit, that all the ſiſters (not meanely ſtored with their Fathers treaſure) ſhall beare vs company to what place ſoeuer we pleaſe. There each man freely enioying his owne deereſt loue, may liue like three brethren, without any hinderance to our mutuall content: it remaineth now in you Gentlemen, to accept this comfortable offer, or to refuſe it.

The two Brothers, whoſe paſſions exceeded their beſt means for ſupport, perceiuing ſome hope how to enioy their loues; deſired no long time of deliberation, or greatly diſputed with their thoughts what was

beſt to be done: but readily replyed, that let happen any danger whatſoeuer, they would ioyne with him in this determination, and he ſhould partake with them in their wealthieſt fortunes. After *Reſtagnone* had heard their anſwer, within ſome few dayes following, he went to confer with *Ninetta*, which was no eaſie matter for him to compaſſe. Neuertheleſſe, opportunity proued ſo fauourable to him, that meeting with her at a priuate place appointed, he diſcourſed at large, what had paſſed betweene him and the other two young Gentlemen, maintaining the ſame vvith many good reaſons, to haue her like and allow of the enterprize. Which although (for a while) he could very hardly doe; yet, in regard ſhee had more deſire then power, without ſuſpition to be daily in his company, ſhe thus anſwered. My hearts choſen friend, I cannot any way miſlike your aduice, and will take ſuch order with my Siſters, that they ſhal agree to our reſolution. Let it therefore be your charge, that you and the reſt make euery thing ready, to depart from hence ſo ſoone, as with beſt conuenient meanes we may be enabled.

Reſtagnone being returned to *Folco* and *Hugnetto*, who thought euerie houre a yeare, to heare what would ſucceede vpon the promiſe paſt between them; he told them in plain termes, that their Ladies were as free in conſent as they, and nothing wanted now, but furniſhment for their ſodaine departing. Hauing concluded, that *Candye* ſhould bee their harbour for entertainment, they made ſale of ſome few inheritances which lay the readieſt for the purpoſe, as alſo the goods in their Houſes; and then, vnder colour of venting Merchandizes abroad, they bought a nimble Pinnace, fortified with good ſtrength and preparation, and wayted but for a conuenient winde. On the other ſide, *Ninetta* who was ſufficiently acquainted with the forwardneſſe of her Siſters deſires, and her owne, had ſo ſubſtantially preuailed with them, that a good Voyage now was the ſole expectation. Whereupon, the ſame night when they ſhould ſet away, they opened a ſtrong barred Cheſt of their Fathers, whence they tooke great ſtore of Gold and coſtly Iewels, wherewith eſcaping ſecretly out of the houſe; they came to the place where their Louers attended for them, and going all aboord the Pinnace, the windes were ſo furtherous to them, that without touching any where, the night following, they arriued at *Geneway*.

There being out of perill or purſuit, they all knit the knot of holy wedlocke, and then freely enioyed their long wiſhed deſires, from whence ſetting ſaile againe, and being well furniſhed with all things wanting; paſſing on from Port to Port, at the end of eight dayes, they landed in *Candie*, not meeting with any impeachment on the way. Determining there to ſpend their daies, firſt they prouided themſelues of goodly lands in the Countrey, and then of beautifull dwelling houſes in the City, with al due furniſhments belonging to them, and Families well beſeeming ſuch worthy Gentlemen, and all delights elſe for their daily recreations, inuiting their Neighbours, and they them againe in louing manner; ſo that no louers could wiſh to liue in more ample contentment.

Paſſing

Passing on their time in this height of felicity, and not crossed by any sinister accidents, it came to passe (as often wee may obserue in the like occasions, that although delights doe most especially please vs, yet they breede surfet, when they swell too ouer-great in abundance) that *Restagnone*, who most deerely affected his faire *Ninetta*, and had her now in his free possession, without any perill of loosing her: grew now also to bee weary of her, and consequently, to faile in those familiar performances, which formerly had passed betweene them. For, being one day inuited to a Banket, hee saw there a beautifull Gentle-woman of that Countrey, whose perfections pleasing him beyond all comparison: he laboured (by painfull pursuite) to win his purpose; and meeting with her in diuers priuate places, grew prodigall in his expences vpon her. This could not be so closely carried, but being seene and obserued by *Ninetta*, she became possessed with such extreame iealousie, that hee could not doe any thing whatsoeuer, but immediately he had knowledge of it: which fire, growing to a flame in her, her patience became extreamely prouoked, vrging rough and rude speeches from her to him, and daily tormenting him beyond power of sufferance.

As the enioying of any thing in too much plenty, makes it appeare irkesome and loathing to vs, and the deniall of our desires, do more and more whet on the appetite: euen so did the angry spleen of *Ninetta* proceede on in violence, against this new commenced loue of *Restagnone*. For, in succession of time, whether he enioyed the embracements of his new Mistresse, or no: yet *Ninetta* (by sinister reports, but much more through her owne iealous imaginations) held it for infallible, and to bee most certaine. Heereupon, she fell into an extreame melancholly, which melancholly begat implacable fury, and (consequently) such contemptible disdaine, as conuerted her formerly kindely loue to *Restagnone*, into most cruell and bloudie hatred; yea, and so strangely was reason or respect confounded in her, as no reuenge else but speedie death, might satisfie the wrongs shee imagined to receiue by *Restagnone* and his Minion.

Vpon enquiry, by what meanes shee might best compasse her bloody intention, she grew acquainted with a Grecian woman, and wonderfully expert in the compounding of poysons, whom shee so perswaded by gifts and bounteous promises, that at the length shee preuayled with her. A deadly water was distilled by her, which (without any other counsell to the contrary) on a day when *Restagnone* had his blood some-what ouer-heated, and little dreamed on any such Treason conspired against him by his Wife, shee caused him to drinke a great draught thereof, vnder pretence, that it was a most soueraigne and cordiall water; but such was the powerfull operation thereof, that the very next morning, *Restagnone* was found to bee dead in his bed. When his death was vnderstoode by *Folco*, *Hugnetto*, and their Wiues, and not knowing how hee came to bee thus empoysoned (because their Sister seemed to bemoane his sodaine death, with as apparant shewes of mourning, as they could

possibly expresse) they buried him very honourably, and so all suspition ceased.

But as Fortune is infinite in her fagaries, neuer acting disaster so closely, but as cunningly discouereth it againe: so it came to passe, that within a few dayes following, the Grecian Woman that had deliuered the poyson to *Ninetta*, for such another deede of damnation, was apprehended euen in the action. And being put vpon the tortures, among many other horrid villanies by her committed, she confessed the empoysoning of *Restagnone*, and euery particle thereto appertaining. Whereupon, the Duke of *Candie*, without any noyse or publication, setting a strong guard (in the night time) about the house of *Folco*, where *Ninetta* then was lodged; there sodainly they seized on her, & vpon examination, in maintenance of her desperate reuenge, voluntarily confessed the fact, and what else concerned the occasion of his death, by the wrongs which he had offered her.

Folco and *Hugnetto* vnderstanding secretly, both from the Duke, and other intimate friends, what was the reason of *Ninettaes* apprehension, which was not a little displeasing to them, labored by all their best paines and endeauour, to worke such meanes with the Duke, that her life might not perish by fire, although she had most iustly deserued it; but all theyr attempts proued to no effect, because the Duke had concluded to execute iustice.

Heere you are to obserue, that *Magdalena* (beeing a very beautifull Woman, yong, and in the choisest flower of her time:) had often before bene solicited by the Duke, to entertaine his loue and kindnesse: whereto by no meanes she would listen or giue consent. And being now most earnestly importuned by her for the safetie of her Sisters life, shee tooke hold on this her dayly suite to him, and in priuate told her, that if she was so desirous of *Ninettaes* life: it lay in her power to obtain it, by granting him the fruition of her loue. She apparantly perceiuing that *Ninetta* was not likely to liue, but by the prostitution of her chaste honour, which she preferred before the losse of her owne life, or her sisters, concluded, to let her dye, rather then run into any such disgrace. But hauing an excellent ingenious wit, quicke, and apprehensiue in perillous occasions, she intended now to make a triall of ouerreaching the lasciuious Duke in his wanton-purpose, and yet to be assured of her fisters life, without any blemish to her reputation.

Soliciting him still as shee was wont to doe, this promise passed from her to him, that when *Ninetta* was deliuered out of prison, and in safetie at home in her house: hee should resort thither in some queint disguise, and enioy his long expected desire; but vntill then she would not yeeld. So violent was the Duke in the prosecution of his purpose, that vnder colour of altering the manner of *Ninettaes* death, not suffering her to bee consumed by fire, but to be drowned, according to a custome obserued there long time, and at the importunity of her Sister *Magdalena*, in the still silence of the night, *Ninetta* was conueyed into a sacke, and sent in

that

that manner to the House of *Folco*, the Duke following soone after, to challenge her promise.

Magdalena, hauing acquainted her Husband with her vertuous intention, for preseruing her Sisters life, and disappointing the Duke in his wicked desire; was as contrary to her true meaning in this case, as *Ninetta* had formerly beene aduerse to *Restagnone*, onely being ouer-ruled likewise by iealousie, and perswaded in his rash opinion, that the Duke had already dishonoured *Magdalena*, otherwise, he would not haue deliuered *Ninetta* out of prison. Mad fury gaue further fire to this vnmanly perswasion, and nothing will now quench this violent flame, but the life of poore *Magdalena*, suddenly sacrificed in the rescue of her Sister, such a diuell is anger, when the vnderstandings bright eye is thereby abused. No credit might bee giuen to her womanly protestations, or any thing seeme to alter his bloody purpose; but, hauing slaine *Magdalena* with his Poniard, (notwithstanding her teares and humble entreaties) he ranne in hast to *Ninettaes* Chamber, she not dreaming on any such desperate accident, and to her he vsed these dissembling speeches.

Sister (quoth he) my wife hath aduised, that I should speedily conuey you hence, as fearing the renewing of the Dukes fury, and your falling againe into the hands of Iustice: I haue a Barke readily prepared for you, and your life being secured, it is all that she and I doe most desire. *Ninetta* being fearefull, and no way distrusting what he had saide; in thankfull allowance of her Sisters care, and curteous render of his so ready seruice; departed thence presently with him, not taking any farewell of her other Sister and her Husband. To the Sea-shore they came, very weakely prouided of monies to defray their charges, and getting aboard the Barke, directed their course themselues knew not whether.

The amorous Duke in his disguise, hauing long daunced attendance at *Folcoes* doore, and no admittance of his entrance; angerly returned backe to his Court, protesting seuere reuenge on *Magdalena*, if she gaue him not the better satisfaction, to cleare her from thus basely abusing him. On the morrow morning, when *Magdalena* was found murthered in her Chamber, and tidings thereof carried to the Duke; present search was made for the bloody offendor, but *Folco* being fled and gone with *Ninetta*; some there were, who bearing deadly hatred to *Hugnetto*, incensed the Duke against him and his wife, as supposing them to be guilty of *Magdalenaes* death. He being thereto very easily perswaded, in regard of his immoderate loue to the slaine Gentlewoman; went himselfe in person (attended on by his Guard) to *Hugnettoes* House, where both he and his wife were seized as prisoners.

These newes were very strange to them, and their imprisonment as vn welcome; and although they were truly inocent, either in knowledge of the horrid fact, or the departure of *Folco* with *Ninetta*: yet being vnable to endure the tortures extremity, they made themselues culpable by confession, and that they had a hand with *Folco* in the murder of *Magdalena*. Vpon this their forced confession, and sentence of death pronounced

ced on them by the Duke himſelfe ; before the day appointed for their publike execution, by great ſummes of money, which they had cloſely hid in their Houſe, to ſerue when any vrgent extremitie ſhould happen to them ; they corrupted their keepers, and before any intelligence could be had of their flight, they eſcaped by Sea to *Rhodes*, where they liued afterward in great diſtreſſe and miſery. The iuſt vengeance of Heauen followed after *Folco* and *Ninetta*, he for murthering his honeſt wife, and ſhe for poyſoning her offending Husband : for being beaten a long while on the Seas, by tempeſtuous ſtormes and weather, and not admitted landing in any Port or creeke ; they were driuen backe on the Coaſt of *Candie* againe, where being apprehended, and brought to the City before the Duke, they confeſſed their ſeuerall notorious offences, and ended their loathed liues in one fire together.

Thus the idle and looſe loue of *Reſtagnone*, with the franticke rage and iealouſie of *Ninetta* and *Folco*, ouerturned all their long continued happineſſe, and threw a diſaſtrous ending on them all.

Gerbino, contrary to the former plighted faith of his Grand-father, King Gulielmo, *fought with a Ship at Sea, belonging to the King of* Thunis, *to take away his Daughter, who was then in the ſame Ship. Shee deing ſlaine by them that had the poſſeſsion of her, he likewiſe ſlew them ; and afterward had his owne head ſmitten off.*

The fourth Nouell.

In commendation of Iuſtice betweene Princes ; and declaring withall, that neither feare, dangers, nor death it ſelfe, can any way daunt a true and loyall Louer.



MAdam *Lauretta* hauing concluded her Nouel, and the company complaining on Louers misfortunes, ſome blaming the angry and iea-

lous

lous fury of *Ninetta*, and euery one deliuering their seuerall opinions; the King, as awaking out of a passionate perplexity, exalted his lookes, giuing a signe to Madame *Elisa*, that shee should follow next in order, whereto she obeying, began in this manner. I haue heard (Gracious Ladies, quoth she) of many people, who are verily perswaded, that Loues arrowes, neuer wound any body, bnt onely by the eyes lookes and gazes, mocking and scorning such as maintaine that men may fall in loue by hearing onely. Wherein (beleeue me) they are greatly deceiued, as will appeare by a Nouell which I must now relate vnto you, and wherein you shall plainely perceiue, that not onely fame or report is as preuailing as sight; but also hath conducted diuers, to a wretched and miserable ending of their liues.

Gulielmo the second, King of *Sicilie*, according as the *Sicilian* Chronicles record, had two children, the one a sonne, named *Don Rogero*, and the other a daughter, called Madame *Constance*. The saide *Rogero* died before his Father, leauing a sonne behind him, named *Gerbino*, who, with much care and cost, was brought vp by his Grand-father, prouing to be a very goodly Prince, and wonderously esteemed for his great valour and humanity. His fame could not containe it selfe, within the bounds or limits of *Sicilie* onely, but being published very prodigally, in many parts of the world beside, flourished with no meane commendations throughout all *Barbarie*, which in those dayes was tributary to the King of *Sicilie*. Among other persons, deseruing most to be respected, the renowned vertues, and affability of this gallant Prince *Gerbino*, was vnderstood by the beautious Daughter to the King of *Tunis*, who by such as had seene her, was reputed to be one of the rarest creatures, the best conditioned, and of the truest noble spirit, that euer Nature framed in her very choicest pride of Art.

Of famous, vertuous, and worthy men, it was continually her cheefest delight to heare, and the admired actions of valiant *Gerbino*, reported to her by many singular discoursers: such as could best describe him, with language answerable to his due deseruings, won such honourable entertainment in her vnderstanding soule, that they were most affectionately pleasing to her, and in recapitulating (ouer and ouer againe) his manifold and heroycall perfections; meere speech made her extreamely amorous of him, nor willingly would she lend an eare to any other discourse, but that which tended to his honour and aduancement.

On the other side, the fame of her incomparable beauty, with addition of her other infinite singularities beside; as the World had giuen eare to innumberlesse places, so *Sicilie* came at length acquainted therewith, in such flowing manner, as was truly answerable to her merit. Nor seemed this as a bare babling rumour, in the Princely hearing of royall *Gerbino*; but was embraced with such a reall apprehension, and the entire probation of a true vnderstanding: that he was no lesse enflamed with noble affection towards her, then she expressed the like in vertuous opinion of him. Wherefore, awaiting such conuenient opportunity, when

he

he might entreat licenſe of his Grand-father, for his owne going to *Thunis*, vnder colour of ſome honourable occaſion, for the earneſt deſire he had to ſee her: he gaue charge to ſome of his eſpeciall friends (whoſe affaires required their preſence in thoſe parts) to let the Princeſſe vnderſtand, in ſuch ſecret manner as beſt they could deuiſe, what noble affection he bare vnto her, deuoting himſelfe onely to her ſeruice.

One of his choſen friends thus put in truſt, being a Ieweller, a man of ſingular diſcretion, and often reſorting to Ladies for ſight of his Iewels, winning like admittance to the Princeſſe: related at large vnto her, the honourable affection of *Gerbino*, with full tender of his perſon to her ſeruice, and that ſhe onely was to diſpoſe of him. Both the meſſage and the meſſenger, were moſt graciouſly welcome to her, and flaming in the ſelfeſame affection towards him: as a teſtimony thereof, one of the very choiſeſt Iewels which ſhe bought of him, ſhe ſent by him to the Prince *Gerbino*, it being receiued by him with ſuch ioy and contentment, as nothing in the world could be more pleaſing to him. So that afterward, by the truſty carriage of this Ieweller, many Letters and Loue-tokens paſſed betweene them, each being as highly pleaſed with this poore, yet happy kind of entercourſe, as if they had ſeene and conuerſed with one another.

Matters proceeding on in this manner, and continuing longer then their loue-ſicke paſſions eaſily could permit, yet neither being able to finde out any other meanes of helpe; it fortuned that the King of *Thunis* promiſed his daughter in marriage to the King of *Granada*, whereat ſhe grew exceedingly ſorrowfull, perceiuing, that not onely ſhe ſhould be ſent further off, by a large diſtance of way from her friend, but alſo be depriued vtterly, of all hope euer to enioy him. And if ſhe could haue deuiſed any meanes, either by ſecret flight from her Father, or any way elſe to further her intention, ſhe would haue aduentured it for the Princes ſake. *Gerbino* in like maner hearing of this purpoſed marriage, liued in a hell of torments, conſulting oftentimes with his ſoule, how he might be poſſeſſed of her by power, when ſhe ſhould be ſent by Sea to her husband, or priuate ſtealing her away from her Fathers Court before: with theſe and infinite other thoughts, was he inceſſantly afflicted, both day and night.

By ſome vnhappy accident or other, the King of *Thunis* heard of this their ſecret loue, as alſo of *Gerbinoes* purpoſed policy to ſurprize her, and how likely he was to effect it, in regard of his manly valour, and ſtore of ſtout friends to aſsiſt him. Hereupon, when the time was come, that he would conuey his daughter thence to her marriage, and fearing to be preuented by *Gerbino*: he ſent to the King of *Sicilie*, to let him vnderſtand his determination, crauing ſafe conduct from him, without impeachment of *Gerbino*, or any one elſe, vntill ſuch time as his intent was accompliſhed. King *Gulielmo* being aged, and neuer acquainted with the affectionate proceedings of *Gerbino*, nor any doubtfull reaſon to vrge this ſecurity from him, in a caſe conuenient to be granted: yeelded the ſooner thereto right willingly, and as a ſignall of his honourable meaning, he ſent him his royall Gloue, with a full confirmation for his ſafe conduct.

No ſooner were theſe Princely aſſurances receiued, but a goodly ſhip was prepared in the Port of *Carthagena*, well furniſhed with all thinges thereto belonging, for the ſending his daughter to the King of *Granada*, waiting for nothing elſe but beſt fauouring windes. The young Princeſſe, who vnderſtood and ſaw all this great preparation; ſecretly ſent a ſeruant of hers to *Palermo*, giuing him eſpeciall charge, on her behalfe, to ſalute the Prince *Gerbino*, and to tell him withall, that (within few dayes) ſhe muſt be tranſported to *Granada*. And now opportunity gaue faire and free meanes, to let the world know, whether he were a man of that magnanimous ſpirit, or no, as generall opinion had formerly conceiued of him, and whether he affected her ſo firmely, as by many cloſe meſſages he had aſſured her. He who had the charge of this embaſſie, effectually performed it, and then returned backe to *Thunis*.

The Prince *Gerbino*, hauing heard this meſſage from his diuine Miſtreſſe, and knowing alſo, that the King his Grand-father, had paſt his ſafe conduct to the King of *Thunis*, for peaceable paſſage through his Seas: was at his wits end, in this vrgent neceſſity, what might beſt bee done. Notwithſtanding, moued by the ſetled conſtancy of his plighted Loue, and the ſpeeches deliuered to him by the meſſenger from the Princeſſe: to ſhew himſelfe a man endued with courage, he departed thence vnto *Meſsina*, where he made ready two ſpeedy gallies, and fitting them with men of valiant diſpoſition, ſet away to *Sardignia*, as making full account, that the Ship which carried the Princeſſe, muſt come a long that Coaſt. Nor was his expectation therein deceiued: for, within few dayes after, the Ship (not ouer-ſwiftly winded) come ſailing neere to the place where they attended for her arriuall; whereof *Gerbino* had no ſooner gotten a ſight, but to animate the reſolutes which were in his company, thus he ſpake.

Gentlemen, if you be thoſe men of valour, as heretofore you haue bene reputed, I am perſwaded, that there are ſome among you, who either formerly haue, or now inſtantly do feele, the all-commanding power of Loue, without which (as I thinke) there is not any mortall man, that can haue any goodneſſe or vertue dwelling in him. Wherefore, if euer you haue bene amorouſly affected, or preſently haue any apprehenſion thereof, you ſhall the more eaſily iudge of what I now aime at. True it is, that I do loue, and loue hath guided me to be comforted, and manfully aſſiſted by you, becauſe in yonder Ship, which you ſee commeth on ſo gently vnder ſaile (euen as if ſhe offered her ſelfe to be our prize) not onely is the Iewell which I moſt eſteeme, but alſo mighty and vnualewable treaſure, to be wonne without any difficult labour, or hazard of a dangerous fight, you being men of ſuch vndauntable courage. In the honour of which victory, I couet not any part or parcell, but onely a Ladie, for whoſe ſake I haue vndertaken theſe Armes, and freely giue you all the reſt contained in the Ship. Let vs ſet on them, Gentlemen, and my deereſt friends; couragiouſly let vs aſſaile the ſhip, you ſee how the wind fauours vs, and (queſtionleſſe) in ſo good an action, Fortune will not faile vs.

Gerbino

Gerbino needed not to haue ſpoken ſo much, in perſwading them to ſeize ſo rich a booty; becauſe the men of *Meſsina* were naturally addicted to ſpoile and rapine: and before the Prince began his Oration, they had concluded to make the ſhip their purchaſe. Wherefore, giuing a lowde ſhout, according to their Country manner, and commanding their Trumpets to ſound chearfully, they rowed on a maine with their Oares, and (in meere deſpight) ſet vpon the ſhip. But before the Gallies could come neere her, they that had the charge and managing of her, perceyuing with what ſpeede they made towards them, and no likely meanes of eſcaping from them, reſoluedly they ſtood vpon their beſt defence, for now it was no time to be ſlothfull.

The Prince being come neere to the Ship, commanded that the Patrones ſhould come to him, except they would aduenture the fight. When the Sarazines were thereof aduertiſed, and vnderſtood alſo what he demanded, they returned anſwer: That their motion and proceeding in this manner, was both againſt Law and plighted faith, which was promiſed by the King of *Sicilie*, for their ſafe paſſage through the Sea, by no meanes to be molleſted or aſſailed. In teſtimony whereof, they ſhewed his Gloue, auouching moreouer, that neither by force (or otherwiſe) they would yeelde, or deliuer him any thing which they had aboorde their Ship.

Gerbino eſpying his gracious Miſtreſſe on the Ships decke, and ſhe appearing to be farre more beautifull then Fame had made relation of her: being much more enflamed now, then formerly he had bin, replyed thus when they ſhewed the Gloue. We haue (quoth he) no Faulcon here now, to be humbled at the ſight of your Gloue: and therefore, if you will not deliuer the Lady, prepare your ſelues for fight, for we muſt haue her whether you will or no. Hereupon, they began to let flie (on both ſides) their Darts and arrowes, with ſtones ſent in violent ſort from their ſlings, thus continuing the fight a long while, to very great harme on either ſide. At the length, *Gerbino* perceiuing, that ſmall benefit would redound to him, if he did not vndertake ſome other kinde of courſe: he tooke a ſmall Pinnace, which purpoſely he brought with him from *Sardignia*, and ſetting it on a flaming fire, conueyed it (by the Gallies help) cloſe to the ſhip. The Sarazines much amazed thereat, and euidently perceiuing, that either they muſt yeeld or dye; brought their Kings daughter to the prow of the ſhip, moſt grieuouſly weeping and wringing her hands. Then calling *Gerbino*, to let him behold their reſolution, there they ſlew hir before his face, and afterward, throwing her body into the Sea, ſaide: Take her, there we giue her to thee, according to our bounden duty, and as thy periury hath iuſtly deſerued.

This ſight was not a little greeuous to the Prince *Gerbino*, who madded now with this their monſtrous cruelty, and not caring what became of his owne life, hauing loſt her for whom he onely deſired to liue: nor dreading their Darts, Arrowes, ſlinged ſtones, or what violence els they could vſe againſt him; he leapt aboord their ſhip, in deſpight of all that

durſt

durſt reſiſt him, behauing himſelfe there like a hunger-ſtarued Lyon, when he enters among a heard of beaſts, tearing their carkaſſes in pieces both with his teeth and pawes. Such was the extreme fury of this poore Prince, not ſparing the life of any one, that durſt appeare in his preſence; ſo that what with the bloody ſlaughter, and violence of the fires encreaſing in the Ship; the Mariners got ſuch wealth as poſſibly they could ſaue, and ſuffering the Sea to ſwallow the reſt, *Gerbino* returned vnto his Gallies againe, nothing proud of this ſo ill-gotten victory.

Afterward, hauing recouered the Princeſſe dead body out of the Sea, and enbalmed it with ſighes and teares: he returned backe into *Sicilie*, where he cauſed it to be moſt honourably buried, in a little Iſland, named *Vſtica*, face to face confronting *Trapanum*. The King of *Thunis* hearing theſe diſaſtrous Newes, ſent his Ambaſſadors (habited in ſad mourning) to the aged King of *Sicilie*, complaining of his faith broken with him, and how the accident had falne out. Age being ſodainly incited to anger, and the King extreamly offended at this iniury, ſeeing no way whereby to deny him iuſtice, it being vrged ſo inſtantly by the Ambaſſadors: cauſed *Gerbino* to be apprehended, and he himſelfe (in regard that none of his Lords and Barons would therein aſſiſt him, but laboured to diuert him by their earneſt importunity) pronounced the ſentence of death on the Prince, and commanded to haue him beheaded in his preſence; affecting rather, to dye without an heire, then to be thought a King voyde of iuſtice. So theſe two vnfortunate Louers, neuer enioyed the very leaſt benefite of their long wiſhed deſires: ended both their liues in violent manner.

The three Brethren to Iſabella, *ſlew a Gentleman that ſecretly loued her. His ghoſt appeared to her in her ſleepe, and ſhewed her in what place they had buried his body. She (in ſilent manner) brought away his head, and putting it into a pot of earth, ſuch as Flowers, Baſile, or other ſweete hearbes are vſually ſet in; ſhe watered it (a long while) with her teares. Wherefore her Brethren hauing intelligence; ſoone after ſhe dyed, with meere conceite of ſorrow.*

The fift Nouell.

Wherein is plainly proued, that Loue cannot be rooted vppe, by any humane power or prouidence; eſpecially in ſuch a ſoule, where it hath bene really apprehended.

THE Nouell of Madame *Eliza* being finiſhed, and ſome-what commended by the King, in regard of the Tragicall concluſion; *Philomena* was enioyned to proceede next with her diſcourſe. She being ouercome with much compaſſion, for the hard Fortunes of Noble *Gerbino*, and his beautifull Princeſſe, after an extreame and vehement ſighe, thus ſhe ſpake. My Tale (worthy Ladies) extendeth not to perſons of ſo high birth or quality, as they were of whom Madame *Eliza* gaue you relation:

yet (peraduenture) it may proue to be no leſſe pittifull. And now I remember my ſelfe, *Meſsina* ſo lately ſpoken of, is the place where this accident alſo happened.



In *Meſsina* there dwelt three young men, Brethren, and Merchants by their common profeſſion, who becomming very rich by the death of their Father, liued in very good fame and repute. Their Father was of *San Gemignano*, and they had a Siſter named *Iſabella*, young, beautifull, and well conditioned; who vpon ſome occaſion, as yet remained vnmarried. A proper youth, being a Gentleman borne in *Piſa*, and named *Lorenzo*, as a truſty factor or ſeruant, had the managing of the brethrens buſineſſe and affaires. This *Lorenzo* being of comely perſonage, affable, and excellent in his behauiour, grew ſo gracious in the eyes of *Iſabella*, that ſhe affoorded him many very reſpectiue lookes, yea, kindneſſes of no common quality. Which *Lorenzo* taking notice of, and obſeruing by degrees from time to time, gaue ouer all other beauties in the City, which might allure any affection from him, and onely fixed his heart on her, ſo that their loue grew to a mutuall embracing, both equally reſpecting one another, and entertaining kindneſſes, as occaſion gaue leaue.

Long time continued this amorous league of loue, yet not ſo cunningly concealed, but at the length, the ſecret meeting of *Lorenzo* and *Iſabella*, to eaſe their poore ſoules of Loues oppreſſions, was diſcouered by the eldeſt of the Brethren, vnknowne to them who were thus betrayed. He being a man of great diſcretion, although this ſight was highly diſpleaſing to him: yet notwithſtanding, he kept it to himſelfe till the next morning, labouring his braine what might beſt be done in ſo vrgent a caſe. When day was come, he reſorted to his other Brethren, and told them what he had

had ſeene in the time paſt, betweene their ſiſter and *Lorenzo*.

Many deliberations paſſed on in this caſe; but after all, thus they concluded together, to let it proceede on with patient ſupportance, that no ſcandall might enſue to them, or their Siſter, no euill acte being (as yet) committed. And ſeeming, as if they knew not of their loue, had a wary eye ſtill vpon her ſecret walkes, awaiting for ſome conuenient time, when without their owne preiudice, or *Iſabellaes* knowledge, they might ſafely breake off this their ſtolne loue, which was altogether againſt their liking. So, ſhewing no worſe countenance to *Lorenzo*, then formerly they had done, but imploying and conuerſing with him in kinde manner; it fortuned, that riding (all three) to recreate themſelues out of the City, they tooke *Lorenzo* in their company, and when they were come to a ſolitarie place, ſuch as beſt ſuited with their vile purpoſe: they ran ſodainly vpon *Lorenzo*, ſlew him, and afterward enterred his body, where hardly it could be diſcouered by any one. Then they returned backe to *Meſsina*, and gaue it forth (as a credible report) that they had ſent him abroad about their affaires, as formerly they were wont to do: which euery one verily beleeued, becauſe they knew no reaſon why they ſhould conceite any otherwiſe.

Iſabella, liuing in expectation of his returne, and perceiuing his ſtay to her was ſo offenſiue long: made many demands to her Brethren, into what parts they had ſent him, that his tarrying was ſo quite from all wonted courſe. Such was her importunante ſpeeches to them, that they taking it very diſcontentedly, one of them returned her this frowning anſwer. What is your meaning Siſter, by ſo many queſtionings after *Lorenzo*? What vrgent affaires haue you with him, that makes you ſo impatient vpon his abſence? If hereafter you make any more demands for him, we ſhall ſhape you ſuch a reply, as will be but little to your liking. At theſe harſh words, *Iſabella* fell into abundance of teares, where-among ſhe mingled many ſighes and groanes, ſuch as were able to ouerthrow a farre ſtronger conſtitution: ſo that, being full of feare and diſmay, yet no way diſtruſting her brethrens cruell deede; ſhe durſt not queſtion any more after him.

In the ſilence of darke night, as ſhe lay afflicted in her bed, oftentimes would ſhe call for *Lorenzo*, entreating his ſpeedy returning to her: And then againe, as if he had bene preſent with her, ſhe checkt and reproued him for his ſo long abſence. One night amongſt the reſt, ſhe being growen almoſt hopeleſſe, of euer ſeeing him againe, hauing a long while wept and greeuouſly lamented; her ſenſes and faculties vtterly ſpent and tired, that ſhe could not vtter any more complaints, ſhe fell into a trance or ſleepe; and dreamed, that the ghoſt of *Lorenzo* appeared vnto her, in torne and vnbefitting garments, his lookes pale, meager, and ſtaring: and (as ſhe thought) thus ſpake to her. My deere loue *Iſabella*, thou doſt nothing but torment thy ſelfe, with calling on me, accuſing me for ouerlong tarrying from thee: I am come therefore to let thee know, that thou canſt not enioy my company any more, becauſe the very ſame day when laſt

thou ſaweſt me,thy brethren moſt bloodily murthered me. And acquainting her with the place where they had buried his mangled body : hee ſtrictly charged her,not to call him at any time afterward, and ſo vaniſhed away.

The young Damoſell awaking, and giuing ſome credite to her Viſion, ſighed and wept exceedingly ; and after ſhe was riſen in the morning, not daring to ſay any thing to her brethren, ſhe reſolutely determined, to go ſee the place formerly appointed her, onely to make triall, if that which ſhe ſeemed to ſee in her ſleepe,ſhould carry any likely-hood of truth. Hauing obtained fauour of her brethren, to ride a dayes iourney from the City, in company of her truſty Nurſe, who long time had attended on her in the houſe,and knew the ſecret paſſages of her loue : they rode directly to the deſigned place, which being couered with ſome ſtore of dried leaues, and more deeply ſunke then any other part of the ground thereabout,they digged not farre, but they found the body of murthered *Lorenzo*, as yet very little corrupted or impaired, and then perceiued the truth of her viſion.

Wiſedome and gouernment ſo much preuailed with her, as to inſtruct her ſoule,that her teares ſpent there,were meerley fruiteleſſe and in vaine, neither did the time require any long tarrying there. Gladly would ſhe haue carried the whole body with her, ſecretly to beſtow honourable enterment on it,but it exceeded the compaſſe of her ability. Wherefore,in regard ſhe could not haue all, yet ſhe would be poſſeſſed of a part,and hauing brought a keene razor with her, by helpe of the Nurſe, ſhe diuided the head from the body,and wrapped it vp in a Napkin, which the Nurſe conueyed into her lap,and then laide the body in the ground againe. Thus being vndiſcouered by any, they departed thence, and arriued at home in conuenient time, where being alone by themſelues in the Chamber : ſhe waſhed the head ouer and ouer with her teares,and beſtowed infinite kiſſes thereon.

Not long after, the Nurſe hauing brought her a large earthen pot, ſuch as we vſe to ſet Baſile, Marierom, Flowers, or other ſweet hearbes in, and ſhrouding the head in a ſilken Scarfe, put it into the pot, couering it with earth, and planting diuers rootes of excellent Baſile therein, which ſhe neuer watered, but either with her teares, Roſe water, or water diſtilled from the Flowers of Oranges. This pot ſhe vſed continually to ſitte by, either in her chamber, or any where elſe : for ſhe carried it alwaies with her, ſighing and breathing foorth ſad complaints thereto, euen as if they had beene vttered to her *Lorenzo*, and day by day this was her continuall exerciſe, to the no meane admiration of her bretheren, and many other friends that beheld her.

So long ſhe held on in this mourning manner, that, what by the continuall watering of the Baſile, and putrifaction of the head, ſo buried in the pot of earth; it grew very flouriſhing, and moſt odoriferous to ſuch as ſcented it, that as no other Baſile could poſſibly yeeld ſo ſweete a ſauour. The neighbours noting this behauiour in her, obſeruing the long continuance

nuance thereof, how much her bright beauty was defaced, and the eyes ſunke into her head by inceſſant weeping, made many kinde and friendly motions, to vnderſtand the reaſon of her ſo violent oppreſſions; but could not by any meanes preuaile with her, or win any diſcouery by her Nurſe, ſo faithfull was ſhe in ſecrecie to her. Her brethren alſo waxed wearie of this carriage in her; and hauing very often reproued her for it, without any other alteration in her: at length, they cloſely ſtole away the potte of Baſile from her, for which ſhe made infinite wofull lamentations, earneſtly entreating to haue it reſtored againe, auouching that ſhe could not liue without it.

Perceiuing that ſhe could not haue the pot againe, ſhe fell into an extreame ſickneſſe, occaſioned onely by her ceaſeleſſe weeping: and neuer vrged ſhe to haue any thing, but the reſtoring of her Baſile pot. Her brethren grew greatly amazed thereat, becauſe ſhe neuer called for ought elſe beſide; and thereupon were very deſirous to ranſacke the pot to the very bottome. Hauing emptied out all the earth, they found the Scarſe of ſilke, wherein the head of *Lorenzo* was wrapped; which was (as yet) not ſo much conſumed, but by the lockes of haire, they knew it to be *Lorenzoes* head, whereat they became confounded with amazement.

Fearing leaſt their offence might come to open publication, they buried it very ſecretly; and, before any could take notice thereof, they departed from *Meſſina*, and went to dwell in *Naples*, *Iſabella* crying and calling ſtill for her pot of Baſile, being vnable to giue ouer mourning, dyed within a few dayes after. Thus haue you heard the hard fate of poore *Lorenzo* and his *Iſabella*. Within no long while after, when this accident came to be publikely knowne, an excellent ditty was compoſed thereof beginning thus.

Cruell and vnkinde was the Chriſtian,
That robd me of my Baſiles bliſſe, &c.

A beautifull young Virgine, named Andreana, *became enamoured of a young Gentleman, called* Gabriello. *In conference together, ſhe declared a dreame of hers to him, and he another of his to her; whereupon* Gabriello *fell downe ſodainly dead in her armes. She, and her Chamber-maide were apprehended, by the Officers belonging to the Seigneury, as they were carrying* Gabriello, *to lay him before his owne doore. The Poteſtate offering violence to the Virgin, and ſhe reſiſting him vertuouſly: it came to the vnderſtanding of her Father, who approued the innocence of his daughter, and compaſſed her deliuerance. But ſhe afterward, being weary of all worldly felicities, entred into Religion, and became a Nun.*

The ſixth Nouell.

Deſcribing the admirable accidents of Fortune; and the mighty preuailing power of Loue.

THE Nouell which Madam *Philomena* had ſo graciouſly related, was highly pleaſing vnto the other Ladies; becauſe they had oftentimes

heard the Song, without knowing who made it, or vpon what occasion it was composed. But when the King saw that the Tale was ended : he commanded *Pamphilus*, that he should follow in his due course : whereupon he spake thus.



The dreame already recounted in the last Nouell, doth minister matter to me, to make report of another Tale, wherein mention is made of two seuerall dreames ; which diuined as well what was to ensue, as the other did what had hapned before. And no sooner were they finished in the relation, by both the parties which had formerly dreampt them, but the effects of both as soddainly followed.

Worthy Ladies, I am sure it is not vnknowne to you, that it is, and hath bene a generall passion, to all men and women liuing, to see diuers and sundry things while they are sleeping. And although (to the sleeper) they seeme most certaine, so that when he awaketh, he iudgeth the trueth of some, the likelyhood of others, and some beyond all possibility of truth : yet notwithstanding, many dreames haue bene obserued to happen ; and very strangely haue come to passe. And this hath bene a grounded reason for some men, to giue as great credit to such things as they see sleeping, as they do to others vsually waking. So that, according vnto their dreames, and as they make construction of them, that are sadly distasted, or merrily pleased, euen as (by them) they either feare or hope. On the contrary, there are some, who will not credit any dreame whatsoeuer, vntill they be falne into the very same danger which formerly they saw, and most euidently in their sleepe.

I meane not to commend either the one or other, because they do not alwayes fall out to be true ; neither are they at all times lyars. Now, that they

they proue not all to be true, we can best testifie to our selues. And that they are not alwayes lyars, hath already sufficiently bene manifested, by the Discourse of Madame *Philomena*, and as you shall perceiue by mine owne, which next commeth in order to salute you. Wherefore, I am of this opinion, that in matters of good life, and performing honest actions; no dreame is to be feared presaging the contrary, neither are good works any way to be hindred by them. Likewise, in matters of bad and wicked quality, although our dreames may appeare fauourable to vs, and our visions flatter vs with prosperous successe: yet let vs giue no credence vnto the best, nor addict our minds to them of contrary Nature. And now we will proceed to our Nouell.

In the Citie of *Brescia*, there liued somtime a Gentleman, named *Messer Negro da Ponte Carro*, who (among many other children) had a daughter called *Andreana*, yong, and beautifull, but as yet vnmarried. It fortuned, that thee fell in loue with a Neighbour, named *Gabriello*; a comely young Gentleman, of affable complexion, and graciously conditioned. Which loue was (with like kindenesse) welcommed and entertained by him; and by the furtherance of her Chamber-maide, it was so cunningly carried, that in the Garden belonging to *Andreanaes* Father, she had many meetings with her *Gabriello*. And solemne vowes being mutually passed betweene them, that nothing but death could alter their affection: by such ceremonious words as are vsed in marriage, they maried themselues secretly together, and continued their stolne chaste pleasures with equall contentment to them both.

It came to passe, that *Andreana* sleeping in her bed, dreamed, that shee met with *Gabriello* in the Garden, where they both embracing louingly together, she seemed to see a thing blacke and terrible, which sodainely issued forth of his body, but the shape therof she could not comprehend. It rudely seized vpon *Gabriello*, & in despight of her vtmost strength, with incredible force) snatched him out of her armes, and sinking with him into the earth, they neuer after did see one another. Whereupon, ouercome with extremity of greefe and sorrow, presently she awaked, being then not a little ioyfull, that she found no such maater as she feared, yet continued very doubtfull of her dreame. In regard whereof, *Gabriello* being desirous to visite her the night following: she laboured very diligently to hinder his comming to her; yet knowing his loyall affection toward her, and fearing least he should grow suspitious of some other matter, she welcommed him into the Garden, where gathering both white and Damaske Roses (according to the nature of the season) at length, they sate downe by a very goodly Fountaine, which stoode in the middest of the Garden.

After some small familiar Discourse passing betweene them, *Gabriello* demanded of her, vpon what occasion shee denyed his comming thither the night before, and by such a sodaine vnexpected admonition? *Andreana* told him, that it was in regard of a horrid Dreame, wherewith her soule was perplexed the precedent night, and doubt what might ensue thereon.

thereon. *Gabriello* hearing this, began to ſmile, affirming to her, that it was an eſpecial note of folly, to giue any credit to idle dreames: becauſe (oftentimes) they are cauſed by exceſſe of feeding, and continually are obſerued to be meere lyes. For (quoth he) if I had any ſuperſtitious beleefe of Dreames, I ſhould not then haue come hither now: yet not ſo much as being diſmayed by your dreame, but for another of mine owne, which I am the more willing to acquaint you withall.

Me thought, I was in a goodly delightfull Forreſt, in the Noble exercife of ſportfull hunting, and became there poſſeſſed of a young Hinde, the verie louelieſt and moſt pleaſing beaſt that was euer ſeene. It ſeemed to be as white as ſnow, and grew (in a ſhort while) ſo familiar with me, that by no meanes it would forſake mee. I could not but accept this rare kindnes in the beaſt, and fearing leaſt I ſhould looſe it, I put a collar of Gold about the necke thereof, and faſtned it into a chaine of Gold alſo, which then I held ſtrongly in my hand. The Hind afterward couched downe by me, laying his head mildely in my lap; and on the ſodaine, a black Grey-hound bitch came ruſhing on vs (but whence, or how, I could not imagine) ſeeming halfe hunger-ſtarued, and very vgly to looke vpon. At me ſhe made her full carreere, without any power in me of reſiſtance, and putting her mouth into the left ſide of my boſom, griped it ſo mainly with her teeth, that (me thought) I felt my heart quite bitten through, and ſhe tugged on ſtill, to take it wholly away from me; by which imagined paine and anguiſh I felt, inſtantly I awaked. Laying then my hand vpon my ſide, to know whether any ſuch harme had befalne me, or no, & finding none, I ſmiled at mine owne folly, in making ſuch a friuolous and idle ſearch. What can be ſaid then in theſe or the like caſes? Diuers times I haue had as ill ſeeming dreames, yea, and much more to be feared, yet neuer any thing hurtfull to me, followed thereon; and therefore I haue alwayes made the leſſe account of them.

The young Maiden, who was ſtill diſmayed by her owne Dreame, became much more afflicted in her minde, when ſhee had heard this other reported by *Gabriello*: but yet to giue him no occaſion of diſtaſt, ſhe bare it out in the beſt manner ſhe could deuiſe to doe. And albeit they ſpent the time in much pleaſing diſcourſe, maintained with infinite ſweete kiſſes on either ſide: yet was ſhe ſtill ſuſpitious, but knew not whereof; fixing her eyes oftentimes vpon his face, and throwing ſtrange lookes to all parts of the Garden, to catch hold on any ſuch blacke vgly ſight, whereof he had formerly made deſcription to her. As thus ſhe continued in theſe afflicting feares, it fortuned, that *Gabriello* ſodainly breathing forth a very vehement ſighe, and throwing his armes faſt about her, ſaid: O helpe me deare Loue, or elſe I dye; and, in ſpeaking the words, fell downe vpon the ground. Which the yong Damoſel perceiuing, and drawing him into her lappe, weeping ſaide: Alas ſweete Friend, What paine doeſt thou feele?

Gabriello anſwered not one word, but being in an exceeding ſweate, without any ability of drawing breath, very ſoon after gaue vp the ghoſt.

How

How greeuous this ſtrange accident was to poore *Andreana*, who loued him as deerely as her owne life: you that haue felt loues tormenting affli-ctions, can more eaſily conceiue, then I relate. Wringing her hands, and weeping inceſſantly, calling him, rubbing his temples, and vſing all like-ly meanes to reduce life: ſhe found all her labour to be ſpent in vaine, be-cauſe he was ſtarke dead indeed, & euery part of his body as cold as ice: whereupon, ſhe was in ſuch wo:full extremity, that ſhe knew not what to do, or ſay. All about the Garden ſhe went weeping, in infinite feares and diſtraction in ſoule, calling for her Chamber maid, the only ſecret friend to their ſtolne meetings, and told her the occaſion of this ſodaine ſorrow. After they had ſighed and mourned awhile, ouer the dead body of *Ga-briello*, *Andreana* in this manner ſpake to her maide.

Seeing Fortune hath thus bereft me of my Loue, mine owne life muſt needs be hatefull to me: but before I offer any violence to my ſelfe, let vs deuiſe ſome conuenient meanes, as may both preſerue mine honour from any touch or ſcandall, and conceale the ſecret loue paſſing betweene vs: but yet in ſuch honeſt ſort, that this body (whole bleſſed ſoule hath too ſoone forſaken it) may be honourably enterred. Whereto her Mayde thus anſwered: Miſtreſſe, neuer talke of doing any violence to your ſelfe, becauſe by ſuch a blacke and diſmall deed, as you haue loſt his kind com-pany here in this life, ſo ſhall you neuer more ſee him in the other world: for immediately you ſinke downe to hell, which foule place cannot be a receptacle for his faire ſoule, that was endued with ſo many ſingular ver-tues. Wherefore, I hold it farre better for you, to comfort your ſelfe by all good meanes, and with the power of feruent praier, to fight againſt all deſperate intruding paſſions, as a truly vertuous minde ought to doe. Now, as concerning his enterrement, the meanes is readily prepared for you here in this Garden, where neuer he hath bene ſeene by any, or his reſorting hither knowne, but onely to our ſelues. If you will not conſent to haue it ſo, let you and I conuey his body hence, and leaue it in ſuch an ap: place, where it may be found to morrow morning: and being then carried to his owne houſe, his friends and kindred will giue it honeſt buriall.

Andreana, although her ſoule was extraordinarily ſorrowfull, and teares flowed abundantly from her eyes; yet ſhe liſtned attentiuely to hir maids counſell; allowing her firſt aduice againſt deſperation, to be truly good; but to the reſt thus ſhe replyed: God forbid (quoth ſhe) that I ſhould ſuf-fer ſo deere a louing friend, as he hath alwayes ſhewed himſelfe to me; nay, which is much more, my husband; by ſacred and ſolemne vowes paſ-ſed betweene vs, to be put into the ground baſely, and like a dog, or elſe to be left in the open ſtreet. He hath had the ſacrifice of my virgin teares, and if I can preuaile, he ſhall haue ſome of his kindreds, as I haue inſtant-ly deuiſed, what (in this hard caſe) is beſt to be done. Forthwith ſhe ſent the maid to her Chamber, for diuers elles of white Damaske lying in her Cheſt, which when ſhe had brought, they ſpread it abroad on the graſſe, euen in the manner of a winding ſheete, and therein wrapped the body

of

of *Gabriello*, with a faire wrought pillow lying vnder his head, hauing firſt (with their teares) cloſed his mouth and eyes, and placed a Chaplet of Flowers on his head, couering the whole ſhrowd ouer in the ſame manner; which being done, thus ſhe ſpake to her Maid.

The doore of his owne houſe is not farre hence, and thither (betweene vs two) he may be eaſily caried, euen in this maner as we haue adorned him; where leauing him in his owne Porch, we may returne back before it be day: and although it will be a ſad ſight to his friends, yet becauſe he dyed in mine armes, and we being ſo well diſcharged of the body, it will be a little comfort to me. When ſhe had ended theſe words, which were not vttered without infinite teares, the maid entreated her to make haſt, becauſe the night ſwiftly paſſed on. At laſt, ſhe remembred the Ring on her finger, wherewith *Gabriello* had ſolemnly eſpouſed her, and opening the ſhroud againe, ſhe put it on his finger, ſaying; My deere and louing husband, if thy ſoule can ſee my teares, or any vnderſtanding do remaine in thy body, being thus vntimely taken from me: receiue the lateſt guift thou gaueſt me, as a pledge of our ſolemne and ſpotleſſe marriage. So, making vp the ſhroud againe as it ſhould be, and conueighing it cloſely out of the Garden, they went on along with it, towardes his dwelling houſe.

As thus they paſſed along, it fortuned, that they were met and taken by the Guard or Watch belonging to the Poteſtate, who had bin ſo late abroad, about very earneſt and important buſineſſe. *Andreana*, deſiring more the dead mans company, then theirs whom ſhe had thus met withall, boldly ſpake thus to them. I know who and what you are, and can tell my ſelfe, that to offer flight will nothing auaile me: wherfore, I am ready to go along with you before the Seigneury, & there will tell the truth concerning this accident. But let not any man among you, be ſo bold as to lay hand on me, or to touch me, becauſe I yeeld ſo obediently to you; neyther to take any thing from this body, except hee intend that I ſhall accuſe him. In which reſpect, not any one daring to diſpleaſe her, ſhee went with the dead bodie to the Seigneurie, there to anſwere all Obiections.

When notice heereof was giuen to the Poteſtate, he aroſe; and ſhee being brought foorth into the Hall before him, he queſtioned with her, how and by what meanes this accident happened. Beſide, he ſent for diuers Phyſitians, to be informed by them, whether the Gentleman were poyſoned, or otherwiſe murthered? All of them affirmed the contrarie, auouching rather, that ſome Impoſtumation had engendered neere his heart, which ſodainly breaking, occaſioned his as ſodaine death. The Poteſtate hearing this, and perceiuing that *Andreana* was little or nothing at all faulty in the matter, her beauty and good carriage, kindled a villanous and luſtful deſire in him towards her, prouoking him to the immodeſt motion, that vpon granting his requeſt, he would releaſe her. But when he ſaw, that all his perſwaſions were to no purpoſe, hee ſought to compaſſe his will by violence; which like a vertuous and valiant *Virago*,

ſhee worthily withſtood, defending her honour Nobly, and reproouing him with many iniurious ſpeeches, ſuch as a luſtfull Letcher iuſtlie deſerued.

On the morrow morning, theſe newes being brought to her Father, *Meſſer Negro da Ponte Cararo*, greeuing thereat exceedingly, and accompanied with many of his friends, he went to the Pallace. Being there arriued, and informed of the matter by the Poteſtate: he demaunded (in teares) of his daughter, how, and by what meanes ſhee was brought thither? The Poteſtate would needs accuſe her firſt, of outrage and wrong offered to him by her, rather then to tarry her accuſing of him; yet, commending the yong Mayden, and her conſtancie, proceeded to ſay, that onely to proue her, he had made ſuch a motion to her; but finding her ſo firme, his liking was now ſo addicted to her, that if her Father were ſo pleaſed to forget the remembrance of her former ſecret husband, he willingly would accept her in marriage.

While thus they continued talking, *Andreana* comming before her Father, the teares trickling mainly downe her cheekes, and falling at his feete, ſhe began in this manner. Deare Father, I ſhall not neede to make an Hiſtoricall relation, either of my youthfull boldneſſe or misfortunes, becauſe you haue both ſeene and knowne them: rather moſt humbly, I craue your pardon, for another errour by mee committed, in that, both without your leaue and liking, I accepted the man as my troth-plighted husband, whom (aboue all other in the world) I moſt intirely affected. If my offence heerein doe challenge the forfeite of my life, then (good Father) I free you from any ſuch pardon; becauſe my onely deſire is to dye your daughter, and in your gracious fauour: with which words, in ſigne of her humility, ſhe kiſſed his feete. *Meſſer Negro da Ponte*, being a man well in yeeres, and of a gentle nature, obſeruing what his daughter ſaide, could not refraine from teares, and in his weeping, louingly tooke her from the ground, ſpeaking thus to her.

Daughter, I could haue wiſht, that thou hadſt taken ſuch an Husband, as (in my iudgement) had bene beſt fitting for thee: yet if thou madeſt election of one anſwerable to thine owne good liking, I haue no iuſt reaſon to be offended therewith. My greateſt cauſe of complaint is, thy too ſeuere concealing it from me, and the ſmall truſt thou didſt repoſe in me, becauſe thou haſt loſt him before I knew him. Neuertheleſſe, ſeeing theſe occaſions are thus come to paſſe, and accidents already ended, cannot poſſibly be re-called, it is my will, that as I would gladly haue contented thee, by making him my Son in Law if he had liued, ſo I will expreſſe the like loue to him now he is dead. And ſo turning himſelfe to his kindred and friends, louingly requeſted of them, that they would grace *Gabriello* with moſt honourable obſequies.

By this time, the kindred and friends to the dead man (vppon noiſe of his death bruited abroad) were likewiſe come to the Pallace, yea, moſt of the men and women dwelling in the Cittie, the bodie of *Gabriello* being laide in the midſt of the Court, vpon the white Damaske ſhrowd giuen

by

by *Andreana*, with infinite Roſes and other ſweet Flowers lying theron: and ſuch was the peoples loue to him, that neuer was any mans death, more to be bemoaned and lamented. Being deliuered out of the Court, it was carried to buriall, not like a Burgeſſe or ordinary Citizen, but with ſuch pompe as beſeemed a Lord Baron, and on the ſhoulders of very noble Gentlemen, with great honor and reuerence.

Within ſome few dayes after, the Poteſtate purſuing his former motion of mariage, and the father mooving it to his daughter, ſhe would not by any meanes liſten thereto. And he being deſirous to giue her contentment, deliuered her and her Chamber-maid into a Religious Abbey, very famous for deuotion and ſanctity, where afterwards they ended their liues.

Faire Simonida *affecting* Paſquino, *and walking with him in a pleaſant garden, it fortuned, that* Paſquino *rubbed his teeth with a leafe of Sage, and immediately fell downe dead.* Simonida *being brought before the bench of Iuſtice, and charged with the death of* Paſquino, *ſhe rubbed her teeth likewiſe with one of the leaues of the ſame Sage, as declaring what ſhee ſaw him do, and thereon ſhe dyed alſo in the ſame manner.*

The Seuenth Nouell.

Whereby is giuen to vnderſtand, that loue and death do vſe their power equally alike, as well vpon poore and meane perſons, as on them that are rich and Noble.



PAmphilus hauing ended his Tale, the King declaring an outward ſhew of compaſſion, in regard of *Andreanaes* diſaſtrous Fortune; fixed his eye on Madam *Emilia*, and gaue her ſuch an apparant ſigne, as expreſſed his

his pleasure, for her next succeeding in discourse; which being sufficient for her vnderstanding, thus she began. Faire assembly, the Nouell so lately deliuered by *Pamphilus*, maketh me willing to report another to you, varying from it, in any kinde of resemblance; onely this excepted: that as *Andreana* lost her louer in a Garden, euen so did she of whom I am now to speake. And being brought before the seate of Iustice, according as *Andreana* was, freed her selfe from the power of the Law; yet neither by force, or her owne vertue, but by her sodaine and inopinate death. And although the nature of Loue is such (according as we haue oftentimes heeretofore maintained) to make his abiding in the houses of the Noblest persons; yet men and women of poore and farre inferiour quality, do not alwayes sit out of his reach, though enclosed in their meanest Cottages; declaring himselfe sometime as a powerfull commaunder in those humble places, as he doth in the richest and most imperious Palaces. As will plainly appeare vnto you, either in all, or a great part of of my Nouell, whereto our Citie pleadeth some title; though, by the diuersity of our discourses, talking of so many seuerall accidents; we haue wandred into many other parts of the world, to make all answerable to our owne liking.

It is not any long time since, when there liued in our City of *Florence*, a young and beautifull Damosell, yet according to the nature of her condition; because she was the Daughter of a poore Father, and called by the name of *Simonida*. Now, albeit she was not supplied by any better means, then to maintaine her selfe by her owne painfull trauell, and earne her bread before she could eate it, by carding and spinning to such as employed her; yet was she not so base or deiected a spirit, but had both courage and sufficient vertue, to vnderstand the secret soliciting of loue, and to distinguish the parts of well deseruing, both by priuate behauiour and outward ceremony. As naturall instinct was her first tutor thereto, so wanted she not a second maine and vrging motion, a chip hewed out of the like Timber, one no better in birth then her selfe, a proper young springall, named *Pasquino*, whose generous behauiour, and gracefull actions (in bringing her dayly wooll to spin, by reason his Master was a Clothier) preuailed vpon her liking and affection.

Nor was he negligent in the obseruation of her amorous regards, but the Tinder tooke, and his soule flamed with the selfe same fire; making him as desirous of her louing acceptance, as possibly she could be of his: so that the commanding power of loue, could not easily be distinguished in which of them it had the greater predominance. For euery day as he brought her fresh supply of woolles, and found her seriously busied at her wheele: her soule would vent forth many deepe sighes, and those sighes fetch floods of teares from her eyes, thorough the singular good opinion she had conceyued of him, and earnest desire to enioy him. *Pasquino* on the other side, as leysure gaue him leaue for the least conuersing with her: his disease was euery way answerable to hers, for teares stood in his eyes, sighes flew abroad, to ease the poore hearts afflicting oppressions, which

though he was vnable to conceale; yet would he seeme to clowd them cleanly, by entreating her that his Masters worke might be neatly performed, and with such speed as time would permit her, intermixing infinite praises of her artificiall spinning; and affirming withall, that the Quilles of Yearne receiued from her, were the choisest beauty of the whole peece; so that when other worke-women played, *Simonida* was sure to want no employment.

Hereupon, the one soliciting, and the other taking delight in being solicited; it came to passe, that often accesse bred the bolder courage, and ouer-much bashfulnesse became abandoned, yet no immodesty passing betweene them: but affection grew the better setled in them both, by interchangeable vowes of constant perseuerance, so that death onely, but no disaster else had power to diuide them. Their mutuall delight continuing on in this manner, with more forcible encreasing of their Loues equall flame: it fortuned, that *Pasquino* sitting by *Simonida*, told her of a goodly Garden, whereto he was desirous to bring her, to the end, that they might the more safely conuerse together, without the suspition of enuious eyes. *Simonida* gaue answer of her well-liking the motion, and acquainting her Father therewith, he gaue her leaue, on the Sunday following after dinner, to go fetch the pardon of S. *Gallo*, and afterwards to visit the Garden.

A modest yong maiden named *Lagina*, following the same profession, and being an intimate familiar friend, *Simonida* tooke along in her company, and came to the Garden appointed by *Pasquino*; where she found him readily expecting her comming, and another friend also with him, called *Puccino* (albeit more vsually tearmed *Strambo*) a secret well-willer to *Lagina*, whose loue became the more furthered by this friendly meeting. Each Louer delighting in his hearts chosen Mistresse, caused them to walke alone by themselues, as the spaciousnesse of the Garden gaue them ample liberty: *Puccino* with his *Lagina* in one part, and *Pasquino* with his *Simonida* in another. The walke which they had made choise of, was by a long and goodly bed of Sage, turning and returning by the same bed as their conference ministred occasion, and as they pleased to recreate themselues, affecting rather to continue still there, then in any part of the Garden.

One while they would sit downe by the Sage bed, and afterward rise to walke againe, as ease and wearinesse seemed to inuite them. At length, *Pasquino* chanced to crop a leafe of the Sage, wherewith he both rubbed his teeth and gummes, and champing it betweene them also, saying; that there was no better thing in the world to cleanse the teeth withall, after feeding. Not long had he thus champed the Sage in his teeth, returning to his former kinde of discoursing, but his countenance began to change very pale, his sight failed, and speech forsooke him; so that (in briefe) he fell downe dead. Which when *Simonida* beheld, wringing her hands, she cryed out for helpe to *Strambo* and *Lagina*, who immediately came running to her. They findign *Pasquino* not onely to be dead, but his body swolne,

swolne, and strangely ouer-spred with foule bl ck spots, both on his face, hands, and all parts else beside: *Strambo* cried out, saying; Ah wicked maide, what hast thou poisoned him?

These words and their shrill out-cries also were heard by Neighbours dwelling neere to the Garden, who comming in sodainly vppon them, and seeing *Pasquino* lying dead, and hugely swoln, *Strambo* likewise complaining, and accusing *Simonida* to haue poysoned him; she making no answer, but standing in a gastly amazement, all her senses meerely confounded, at such a strange and vncouth accident, in loosing him whom she so dearely loued: knew not how to excuse her selfe, and therefore euery one verily beleeued, that *Strambo* had not vniustly accused her. Poore wofull maide, thus was she instantly apprehended, and drowned in her teares, they led her along to the Potestates Palace, where her accusation was iustified by *Strambo*, *Lagina*, and two men more; the one named *Atticciato*, and the other *Malageuole*, fellowes and companions with *Pasquino*, who came into the Garden also vpon the out-cry.

The Iudge, without any delay at all, gaue eare to the busines, and examined the cale very strictly: but could by no meanes comprehend, that any malice should appeare in her towards him, nor that she was guiltie of the mans death. Wherefore, in the presence of *Simonida*, he desired to see the dead body, and the place where he fell downe dead, because there he intended to haue her relate, how she saw the accident to happen, that her owne speeches might the sooner condemne her, whereas the case yet remained doubtfull, and farre beyond his comprehension. So, without any further publication, and to auoid the following of the turbulent multitude, they departed from the bench of Iustice, and came to the place, where *Pasquinoes* body lay swolne like a Tunne. Demanding there questions, concerning his behauiour, when they walked there in conference together, and, not a little admiring the manner of his death, while he stood aduisedly considering thereon.

She going to the bed of Sage, reporting the whole precedent history, euen from the originall to the ending: the better to make the case vnderstood, without the least colour of ill carriage towardes *Pasquino*; according as she had seene him do, euen so did she plucke another leafe of the Sage, rubbing her teeth therewith, and champing it as he formerly did. *Strambo*, and the other intimate friends of *Pasquino*, hauing noted in what manner she vsed the Sage, and this appearing as her vtmost refuge, either to acquit or condemne her: in presence of the Iudge they smiled the reat, mocking and deriding whatsoeuer she saide, or did, and desiring (the more earnestly) the sentence of death against her, that her body might be consumed with fire, as a iust punishment for her abhominable transgression.

Poore *Simonida*, sighing and sorrowing for her deere loues losse, and (perhappes) not meanly terrified, with the strict infliction of torment so seuerely vrged and followed by *Strambo* and the rest standing dumb still, without answering so much as one word; by tasting of the same Sage,

fell downe dead by the bed, euen by the like accident *Paſquino* formerly did, to the admirable aſtoniſhment of all there perſent.

Oh poore infortunate Louers, whoſe Starres were ſo inauſpicious to you, as to finiſh both your mortall liues, and feruent loue, in leſſe limitation then a dayes ſpace. How to cenſure of your deaths, and happines to enſue thereon, by an accident ſo ſtrange and inciuitable: it is not within the compaſſe of my power, but to hope the beſt, and ſo I leaue you. But yet concerning *Simonida* her ſelfe, in the common opinion of vs that remaine liuing: her true vertue and innocency (though Fortune was otherwiſe moſt cruell to her) would not ſuffer her to ſinke vnder the teſtimony of *Strambo*, *Lagina*, *Atticciato*, and *Malageuole*, being but carders of wool, or perhaps of meaner condition; a happier courſe was ordained for her, to paſſe clearely from their infamous imputation, and follow her *Paſquino*, in the very ſame manner of death, and with ſuch a ſpeedy expedition.

The Iudge ſtanding amazed, and all there preſent in his company, were ſilent for a long while together: but, vppon better re-collection of his ſpirits, thus he ſpake. This inconuenience which thus hath hapned, and confounded our ſenſes with no common admiration; in mine opinion concerneth the bed of Sage, auouching it either to be venomous, or dangerouſly infected, which (neuertheleſſe) is ſeldom found in Sage. But to the end, that it may not be offenſiue to any more hereafter, I will haue it wholly digd vp by the rootes, and then to be burnt in the open Market place.

Hereupon, the Gardiner was preſently ſent for, and before the Iudge would depart thence, he ſaw the bed of Sage digged vp by the roots, and found the true occaſion, whereby theſe two poore Louers loſt their liues. For, iuſt in the middeſt of the bed, and at the maine roote, which directed all the Sage in growth; lay an huge mighty Toad, euen weltring (as it were) in a hole full of poyſon; by meanes whereof, in coniecture of the Iudge, and all the reſt, the whole bed of Sage became envenomed, occaſioning euery leafe thereof to be deadly in taſte. None being ſo hardy, as to approach neere the Toade, they made a pile of wood directly ouer it, and ſetting it on a flaming fire, threw all the Sage thereinto, and ſo they were conſumed together. So ended all further ſuite in Law, concerning the deaths of *Paſquino* and *Simonida*: whoſe bodies being carried to the Church of Saint *Paul*, by their ſad and ſorrowfull accuſers, *Strambo*, *Lagina*, *Atticciato* and *Malageuole*, were buried together in one goodly Monument, for a future memory of their hard Fortune.

Ieronimo *affecting a yong Maiden, named* Siluestra, *was constrainee (by the earneſt importunity of his Mother) to take a iourney to* Paris. *At his return home from thence againe, he found his loue* Siluestra *married. By ſecret meanes, he got entrance into her houſe, and dyed vpon the bed lying by her. Afterward, his body being carried to Church, to receiue buriall, ſhe likewiſe died there inſtantly vpon his coarſe.*

The eight Nouells.

Wherein is againe declared, the greai indiſcretion and folly of them, that think to conſtraine loue, according to their will, after it is conſtantly ſetled before: With other inſtructions, concerning the vnſpeakeable pow er of Loue.



MAdam *Æmilia* had no ſooner concluded her Nouell, but Madam *Neiphila* (by the Kings command) began to ſpeake in this manner. It ſeemeth to me (Gracious Ladies) that there are ſome ſuch people to be found, who imagine themſelues to know more, then all other elſe in the world beſide, and yet indeede do know nothing at all: preſuming (thorough this arrogant opinion of theirs) to imploy and oppoſe their ſenſeleſſe vnderſtanding, againſt infallible grounded reaſon; yea, and to attempt courſes, not only contrary to the counſell and iudgement of men, but alſo to croſſe the nature of diuine ordination. Out of which ſaucy and ambitious preſumption, many mighty harmes haue already had beginning, and more are like to enſue vppon ſuch boldneſſe, becauſe it is the ground of all euils.

Now, in regard that among all other naturall things, no one is leſſe ſubiect to take counſell, or can be wrought to contrariety, their Loue,

whoſe nature is ſuch, as rather to run vpon his owne raſh conſumption, then to be ruled by admonitions of the very wiſeſt: my memory hath inſpired it ſelfe, with matter incident to this purpoſe, effectually to approue, what I haue already ſaid. For I am now to ſpeake of a woman who would appeare to haue more wit, then either ſhe had indeed, or appertained to her by any title. The matter alſo, wherein ſhe would needs ſhew her ſtudious iudgement and capacity, was of much more conſequence then ſhe could deſerue to meddle withall. Yet ſuch was the iſſue of her fond preſuming; that (in one inſtant) ſhe expelled both loue, and the ſoule of her owne ſonne out of his body, where (doubtleſſe) it was planted by diuine fauour and appointment.

In our owne City (according to true and ancient teſtimony) there dwelt ſometime a very worthy and wealthy Merchant, named *Leonardo Sighiero*, who by his wife had one onely Sonne, called *Ieronimo*; and within a ſhort while after his birth, *Leonardo* being very ſicke, and hauing ſetled all his affaires in good order; departed our of this wretched life to a better. The Tutors and Gouernours of the Childe, thought it fitteſt to let him liue with his Mother, where he had his whole education, though ſchooled among many other worthy neighbours children, according as in moſt Cities they vſe to do. Yong *Ieronimo* growing on in yeares, and frequenting dayly the company of his Schoole-fellowes and others: he would often ſport (as the reſt did) with the neighbors children, and much pretty paſtime they found together.

In the harmleſſe recreations of youth, grauer iudgements haue often obſerued, that ſome eſpeciall matter receiued then ſuch originall, as greater effect hath followed thereon. And many times, parents and kindred heue bene the occaſion (although perhaps beyond their expectation) of very ſtrange and extraordinary accidents, by names of familiarity paſſing betweene Boyes and Girles, as King and Queene, ſweet heart, and ſweet heart, friend and friend, husband and wife, and diuers other ſuch like kind tearmes, prooving afterwards to be true indeed. It fell out ſo with our yong *Ierrnimo*; for, among a number of pretty Damoſels, daughters to men of eſpeciall reſpect, and others of farre inferiour quality: a Taylors daughter, excelling the reſt in fauour and feature (albeit her Father was but poore) *Ieronimo* moſt delighted to ſport withall; and no other titles paſſed betweene them, euen in the hearing of their parents and friends, but wife and husband: ſuch was the beginning of their yong affection, preſaging (no doubt) effectually to follow.

Nor grew this familiarity (as yet) any way diſtaſted, till by their daily conuerſing together, and enterchange of infinite pretty ſpeeches, *Ieronimo* felt a ſtrange alteration in his ſoule, with ſuch enforcing and powerfull afflictions; as he was neuer well but in her company, nor ſhe enioyed any reſt if *Ieronimo* were abſent. At the length, this being noted by his Mother, ſhe began to rebuke him, yea, many times gaue him both threatnings and blowes, which prouing to no purpoſe, not hindering his acceſſe to her; ſhe complained to his Tutors, and like one that in regard

of

of her riches, thought to plant an Orange vpon a blacke thorne, ſpake as followeth.

This Sonne of mine *Ieronimo*, being as yet but foureteene years of age, is ſo deeply enamoured of a yong Girle, named *Silueſtra*, daughter vnto a poore Tailor, our neere dwelling neighbour: that if we do not ſend him out of her company, one day (perhaps) he may make her his wife, and yet without any knowledge of ours, which queſtionleſſe would be my death. Otherwiſe, he may pine and conſume himſelfe away, if he ſee vs procure her marriage to ſome other. Wherefore, hold it good, that to auoid ſo great an inconuenience, we ſhould ſend *Ieronimo* ſome far diſtance hence, to remaine where ſome of our Factors are employed: becauſe, when he ſhall be out of her ſight, and their often meetings vtterly diſappointed; his affection to her will the ſooner ceaſe, by fruſtrating his hope for euer enioying her, and ſo we ſhall haue the better meanes, to match him with one of greater quality. The Tutors did like well of her aduice, not doubting but it would take anſwerable effect: and therefore, calling *Ieronimo* into a priuate Parlor, one of them began in this manner.

Ieronimo, you are now growne to an indifferent ſtature, and (almoſt) able to take gouernment of your ſelfe. It cannot then ſeeme any way inconuenient, to acquaint you with your deceaſed Fathers affaires, and by what good courſes he came to ſuch wealth. You are his onely ſonne and heire, to whom he hath bequeathed his rich poſſeſſions (your Mothers moity euermore remembred) and trauaile would now ſeeme fitting for you, as well to gaine experience in Trafficke and Merchandize, as alſo to let you ſee the worlds occurrences. Your Mother therefore (and we haue thought it expedient) that you ſhould iourney from hence to *Paris*, there to continue for ſome ſuch fitting time, as may grant you full and free opportunity, to ſurney what ſtocke of wealth is there employed for you, and to make you vnderſtand, how your Factors are furtherous to your affaires. Beſide, this is the way to make you a man of more ſolid apprehenſion, and perfect inſtruction in ciuill courſes of life; rather then by continuing here to ſee none but Lords, Barons, and Gentlemen, whereof we haue too great a number. When you are ſufficiently qualified there, and haue learned what belongeth to a worthy Marchant, ſuch as was *Leonardo Sighiero* your famous Father; you may returne home againe at your owne pleaſure.

The youth gaue them attentiue hearing, and (in few words) returned them anſwer: That he would not giue way to any ſuch trauaile, becauſe he knew how to diſpoſe of himſelfe in *Florence*, as well as in any other place he ſhould be ſent too. Which when his Tutors heard, they reproued him with many ſeuere ſpeeches: and ſeeing they could win no other anſwer from him, they made returne thereof to his Mother. She ſtorming extreamly thereat, yet not ſo much for denying the iourney to *Paris*, as in regard of his violent affection to the Maide; gaue him very bitter and harſh language. All which auailing nothing, ſhe began to ſpeake in a more milde and gentle ſtraine, entreating him with flattering and affable

table words, to be gouerned in this caſe by his Tutors good aduiſe. And ſo farre (in the end) ſhe preuailed with him, that he yeelded to liue at *Paris* for the ſpace of a yeare, but further time he would not grant, and ſo all was ended.

Ieronimo being gone to remaine at *Paris*, his loue daily increaſing more and more, by reaſon of his abſence from *Silueſtra*, vnder faire and friendly promiſes, of this moneth, and the next moneth, ſending for him home; there they detained him two whole yeares together. Whereuppon, his loue was growne to ſuch an extremity, that he neither would, or could abide any longer there, but home he rerurned, before he was expected. His loue *Silueſtra*, by the cunning compacting of his Mother and Tutors, he found married to a Tent-makers Sonne; whereat he vexed and greeued beyond all meaſure. Neuertheleſſe, ſeeing the caſe was now no way to be holpen; he ſtroue to beare it with ſo much patience, as ſo great a wrong, and his hearts tormenting greefe, and would giue leaue to doe.

Hauing found ont the place where ſhe dwelt, he began (as it is the cuſtome of yong Louers) to vſe diuers daily walkes by her doore: as thinking in his minde, that her remembrance of him was conſtantly continued, as his was moſt intirely fixed on her. But the caſe was very ſtrangely altred, becauſe ſhe was now growne no more mindfull of him, then if ſhe had neuer ſeene him before. Or if ſhe did any way remember him, it appeared to be ſo little, that manifeſt ſignes declared the contrary. Which *Ieronimo* very quickely perceiued, albeit not without many melancholly perturbations. Notwithſtanding, he laboured by all poſſible meanes, to recouer her former kindneſſe againe: but finding all his paines friuolouſly employed; he reſolued to dye, and yet to compaſſe ſome ſpeech with her before.

By meanes of a neere dwelling neighbour (that was his very deare and intimate friend) he came acquainted with euery part of the houſe, and preuailed ſo far, that one euening, when ſhe and her husband ſupt at a neighbours houſe; he compaſſed acceſſe into the ſame bed chamber, where *Silueſtra* vſed moſt to lodge. Finding the Curtaines ready drawne, he hid himſelfe behinde them on the further ſide of the bed, and ſo tarried there vntill *Silueſtra* and her husband were returned home, and laide downe in bed to take their reſt. The husbands ſences were ſoone ouercome with ſleepe, by reaſon of his painefull toyling all the day, and bodies that are exerciſed with much labour, are the more deſirous to haue eaſe. She ſtaying vp laſt, to put out the light, and hearing her husband ſleepe ſo ſoundly, that his ſnoring gaue good euidence thereof: layed her ſelfe downe the more reſpectiuely, as being very loath any way to diſeaſe him, but ſweetly to let him enioy his reſt.

Silueſtra lay on the ſame ſide of the bed, where *Ieronimo* had hid himſelfe behinde the Curtaines; who ſtepping ſoftly to her in the darke, and laying his hand gently on her breſt, ſaide: Deare Loue, forbeare a little while to ſleepe, for heere is thy loyall friend *Ieronimo*. The yong woman

ſtar-

starting with amazement, would haue cried out, but that he entreated her to the contrary; protesting, that he came for no ill intent to her, but onely to take his lateſt leaue of her. Alas *Ieronimo* (quoth ſhe) thoſe idle dayes are paſt andgone, when it was no way vnſeemly for our youth, to entertaine equality of thoſe deſires, which then well agreed with our young blood. Since when, you haue liued in forraine Countries, which appeared to me to alter your former diſpoſition: for, in the ſpace of two whole yeares, either you grew forgetfull of me (as change of ayre, may change affection) or (at the beſt) made ſuch account of me, as I neuer heard the leaſt ſalutation from you. Now you know me to be a married wife, in regard whereof, my thoughts haue embraced that chaſte and honourable reſolution, not to minde any man but my husband; and therefore, as you are come hither without my loue or licenſe, ſo in like manner I do deſire you to be gone. Let this priuiledge of my Husbandes ſound ſleeping, be no colour to your longer continuing here, or encourage you to finde any further fauour at mine hand: for if mine husband ſhould awake, beſide the danger that thereon may follow to you, I cannot but looſe the ſweet happineſſe of peacefull life, which hitherto we haue both mutually embraced.

The yong man, hearing theſe wordes, and remembring what louing kindneſſe he had formerly found, what ſecret loue Letters he had ſent from *Paris*, with other priuate intelligences and tokens, which neuer came to her receite and knowledge, ſo cunningly his Mother and Tutors had carried the matter: immediately felt his heart-ſtrings to breake; and lying downe vpon the beds ſide by her, vttered theſe his very laſt words. *Siluestra* farewell, thou haſt kilde the kindeſt heart that euer loued a woman: and ſpeaking no more, gaue vp the ghoſt. She hearing theſe words deliuered with an entire ſighe, and deepe-fetcht groane, did not imagine the ſtrange conſequence following thereon; yet was mooued to much compaſſion, in regard of her former affection to him. Silent ſhe lay an indifferent while, as being vnable to returne him any anſwer, and looking when he would be gone, according as before ſhe had earneſtly entreated him. But when ſhe perceyued him to lye ſo ſtill, as neither word or motion came from him, ſhe ſaide: Kinde *Ieronimo*, why doeſt thou not depart and get thee gone? So putting forth her hand, it hapned to light vpon his face, which ſhe felt to be as cold as yce: whereat maruailing not a little, as alſo at his continued ſilence, ſhe iogged him, and felt his hands in like manner, which were ſtiffely extended forth, and all his body cold; as not hauing any life remaining in him, which greatly amazing her, and confounding her with ſorrow beyond all meaſure, ſhe was in ſuch perplexity, that ſhe could not deuiſe what to do or ſay.

In the end, ſhe reſolued to try how her husband would take it, that ſo ſtrange an accident ſhould thus happen in his houſe, and putting the caſe as if it did not concerne them, but any other of the neighbours; awaking him firſt, demaunded of him what was beſt to be done, if a man ſhould ſteale into a neighbours houſe, vnknowne to him, or any of his family; and

in

in his bed chamber to be found dead. He presently replyed (as not thinking the case concerned himselfe) that, the onely helpe in such an vnexpected extremity, was to take the dead body, and conuey it to his owne house, if he had any; whereby no scandall or reproach would follow to them, in whose house he had so vnfortunately dyed. Hereupon she immediately arose, and lighting a candle, shewed him the dead body of *Ieronimo*, with protestation of euery particular, both of her innocency, either of knowledge of his comming thither, or any other blame that could concerne her. Which he both constantly knowing and beleeuing, made no more ceremony, but putting on his Garments, tooke the dead body vpon his shoulders, and carried it to the Mothers doore, where he left it, and afterward returned to his owne house againe.

When day light was come, and the dead body found lying in the Porch, it moued very much greefe and amazement, considering, he had bin seene the day before, in perfect health to outward appearance. Nor neede we to vrge any question of his Mothers sorrow vpon this strange accident, who, causing his body to be carefully searched, without any blow, bruise, wound, or hurt vppon it, the Physitians could not giue any other opinion, but that some inward conceyte of greefe had caused his death, as it did indeed, and no way otherwise. To the cheefe Church was the dead body carried, to be generally seene of all the people, his Mother and Friends weeping heauily by it, as many more did the like beside, because he was beloued of euery one. In which time of vniuersall mourning, the honest man (in whose house he dyed) spake thus to his wife: disguise thy selfe in some decent manner, and go to the Church, where (as I heare) they haue laide the body of *Ieronimo*. Crowde in amongest the Women, as I will do the like amongst the men, to heare what opinion passeth of his death, and whether we shall be scandalized thereby, or no.

Silueſtra, who was now become full of pitty too late, quickely condiscended, as desiring to see him dead, whom sometime she dearly affected in life. And being come to the Church, it is a matter to be admired, if aduisedly we consider on the powerfull working of loue; for the heart of this woman, which the prosperous fortune of *Ieronimo* could not pierce, now in his wofull death did split in sunder; and the ancient sparks of loue so long concealed in the embers, brake foorth into a furious flame; and being violently surprized with extraordinary compassion, no sooner did she come neere to the dead body, where many stood weeping round about it; but strangely shrieking out aloud, she fell downe vpon it: and euen as extreamity of greefe finished his life, so did it hers in the same manner. For she moued neither hand nor foot, because her vitall powers had quite forsaken her. The women labouring to comfort her by all best meanes they could deuise; did not take any knowledge of her, by reason of her disguised garments: but finding her dead indeed, and knowing her also to be *Silueſtra*, being ouercome with vnspeakable compassion, and danted with no meane admiration, they stood strangely gazing each vpon other.

Wonder-

Wonderfull crowds of people were then in the Church; and this accident being now noyſed among the men, at length it came to her Huſbands vnderſtanding, whoſe greefe was ſo great, as it exceeded all capacity of expreſſion. Afterward he declared what had hapned in his houſe the precedent night, according as his wife had truly related to him, with all the ſpeeches, which paſſed between *Silueſtra* and *Ieronimo*; by which diſcourſe, they generally conceiued, the certaine occaſion of both their ſodaine deaths, which moued them to great compaſſion. Then taking the yong womans body, and ordering it as a coarſe ought to be: they layed it on the ſame Biere by the yong man, and when they had ſufficiently ſorrowed for their diſaſtrous fortune, they gaue them honourable buriall both in one graue. So, this poore couple, whom loue (in life) could not ioyne together, death did vnite in an inſeparable coniunction.

Meſſer Guiglielmo *of* Roſſiglione *hauing ſlaine Meſſer* Guiglielmo Guardaſtagno, *whom hee imagined to loue his wife, gaue her his heart to eate. Which ſhe knowing afterward, threw her ſelfe out of an high window to the ground; and being dead, was then buried with her friend.*

The Ninth Nouell.

Whereby appeareth, what ill ſucceſſe attendeth on them, that loue contrary to reaſon: in offering iniurie both to friendſhip and marriage together.



WHen the Nouell of Madam *Neiphila* was ended, which occaſioned much compaſſion in the whole aſſembly; the King who wold not infringe the priuiledge granted to *Dioneus*, no more remaining to ſpeake but they two, began thus. I call to minde (gentle Ladies) a Nouell, which (ſeeing we are ſo farre entred into the lamentable accidents of ſuc-

ſucceſſeleſſe loue, will vrge you vnto as much commiſſeration, as that ſo lately reported to you. And ſo much the rather, becauſe the perſon of whom we are to ſpeake, were of reſpectiue quality; which approueth the accident to be more cruell, then thoſe whereof we haue formerly diſcourſed.

According as the people of *Prouence* do report, there dwelt ſometime in that iuriſdiction, two noble Knights, each well poſſeſſed of Caſtles and followers; the one being named *Meſſer Guiglielmo de Rouſsiglione*, and the other *Meſſer Guiglielmo Guardaſtagno*. Now, in regard that they were both valiant Gentlemen, and ſingularly expert in actions of Armes; they loued together the more mutually, and held it as a kinde of cuſtome to be ſeene in all Tiltes and Tournaments, or any other exerciſes of Armes, going commonly alike in their wearing garments. And although their Caſtles ſtood about fiue miles diſtant each from other, yet were they dayly conuerſant together, as very louing and intimate friends. The one of them, I meane *Meſſer Guiglielmo de Roſsilione*, had to wife a very gallant beautifull Lady, of whom *Meſſer Guardaſtagno* (forgetting the lawes of reſpect and loyall friendſhip) became ouer-fondly enamoured, expreſſing the ſame by ſuch outward meanes, that the Lady her ſelfe tooke knowledge thereof, and not with any diſlike, as it ſeemed, but rather louingly entertained; yet ſhe grew not ſo forgetfull of her honour and eſtimation, as the other did of faith to his friend,

With ſuch indiſcretion was this idle loue carried, that whether it ſorted to effect, or no, I know not: but the husband perceiued ſome ſuch maner of behauiour, as he could not eaſily digeſt, nor thought it fitting to endure. Whereuppon, the league of friendly amity ſo long continued, began to faile in very ſtrange faſhion, and became conuerted into deadly hatred: which yet he very cunningly concealed, bearing an outward ſhew of conſtant friendſhip ſtill, but (in his heart) he had vowed the death of *Guardaſtagno*. Nothing wanted, but by what meanes it might beſt be effected, which fell out to be in this manner. A publicke Iouſt or Tourney, was proclaimed by ſound of Trumpet throughout all France, wherewith immediately, *Meſſer Guiglielmo Roſsiglione* acquainted *Meſſer Guardaſtagno*, entreating him that they might further conferre theron together, and for that purpoſe to come and viſit him, if he intended to haue any hand in the buſineſſe. *Guardaſtagno* being exceeding glad of this accident, which gaue him liberty to ſee his Miſtreſſe, ſent anſwer backe by the meſſenger, that on the morrow at night, he would come and ſup with *Roſsiglione*; who vpon this reply, proiected to himſelfe in what maner to kill him.

On the morrow, after dinner, arming himſelfe, and two more of his ſeruants with him, ſuch as he had ſolemnly ſworne to ſecrecy, he mounted on horſebacke, and rode on about a mile from his owne Caſtle, where he lay cloſely ambuſhed in a Wood, through which *Guardaſtagno* muſt needs paſſe. After he had ſtayed there ſome two houres ſpace and more, he eſpyed him come riding with two of his attendants, all of them being vnar-

vnarmed, as no way diſtruſting any ſuch intended treaſon. So ſoone as he was come to the place, where he had reſolued to do the deed; hee ruſhed forth of the ambuſh, and hauing a ſharpe Lance readily charged in his reſt, ran mainly at him, ſaying: Falſe villaine, thou art dead. *Gaurdaſtagno*, hauing nothing wherewith to defend himſelfe, nor his ſeruants able to giue him any ſuccour; being pierced quite through the body with the Lance, downe he fell dead to the ground, and his men (fearing the like misfortune to befall them) gallopped mainely backe againe to their Lords Caſtle, not knowing them who had thus murthered their Maſter, by reaſon of their armed diſguiſes, which in thoſe martiall times were vſually worne.

Meſſer Guiglielmo Roſsiglione, alighting from his horſe, and hauing a keene knife ready drawne in his hand; opened therewith the breſt of dead *Guardaſtagno*, and taking foorth his heart with his owne hands, wrapped it in the Bandelote belonging to his Lance, commanding one of his men to the charge thereof, and neuer to diſcloſe the deed. So, mounting on horſe-backe againe, and darke night drawing on apace, he returned home to his Caſtle. The Lady, who had heard before of *Guardaſtagnoes* intent, to ſuppe there that night, and (perhaps) being earneſtly deſirous to ſee him; maruailing at his ſo long tarrying, ſaide to her husband: Beleeue me Sir (quoth ſhe) me thinkes it is ſomewhat ſtrange, that *Meſſer Guiglielmo Guardaſtagno* delayes his comming ſo long, he neuer vſed to do ſo till now. I receiued tidings from him wife (ſaide he) that he cannot be here till to morrow. Whereat the Lady appearing to be diſpleaſed, concealed it to her ſelfe, and vſed no more words.

Roſsiglione leauing his Lady, went into the Kitchin, where calling for the Cooke, he deliuered him the heart, ſaying: Take this heart of a wilde Boare, which it was my good happe to kill this day, and dreſſe it in the daintieſt manner thou canſt deuiſe to do; which being ſo done, when I am ſet at the Table, ſend it to me in a ſiluer diſh, with ſauce beſeeming ſo dainty a morſell. The Cooke tooke the heart, beleeuing it to be no otherwiſe, then as his Lord had ſaide: and vſing his vtmoſt skill in dreſſing it, did diuide it into artificiall ſmall ſlices, and made it moſt pleaſing to be taſted. When ſupper time was come, *Roſsiglione* ſate downe at the table with his Lady: but he had little or no appetite at all to eate, the wicked deed which he had done ſo perplexed his ſoule, and made him to ſit very ſtrangely muſing. At length, the Cooke brought in the dainty diſh, which he himſelfe ſetting before his wife, began to finde fault with his owne lacke of ſtomacke, yet prouoked her with many faire ſpeeches, to taſt the Cooks cunning in ſo rare a diſh.

The Lady hauing a good appetite indeede, when ſhe had firſt taſted it, fed afterward ſo heartily thereon, that ſhe left very little, or none at all remaining. When he perceiued that all was eaten, he ſaid vnto her: Tell me Madame, how you do like this delicate kinde of meate? In good faith Sir (quoth ſhe) in all my life I was neuer better pleaſed. Now truſt mee Madame, anſwered the Knight, I do verily beleeue you, nor do I greatly

wonder thereat, if you like that dead, which you loued so dearly being aliue. When she heard these words, a long while she sate silent, but afterward saide. I pray you tell me Sir; what meate was this which you haue made me to eate? Muse no longer (saide he) for therein I will quickly resolue thee. Thou hast eaten the heart of *Messer Guiglielmo Guardastagno*, whose loue was so deare and precious to thee, thou false, perfidious, and disloyall Lady: I pluckt it out of his vile body with mine owne hands, and made my Cooke to dresse it for thy diet.

Poore Lady, how strangely was her soule afflicted, hearing these harsh and vnpleasing speeches? Teares flowed aboundantly from her faire eies, and like tempestuous windes embowelled in the earth, so did vehement sighes breake mainly from her heart, and after a tedious time of silence, she spake in this manner. My Lord and husband, you haue done a most disloyall and damnable deede, misguided by your owne wicked iealous opinion, and not by any iust cause giuen you, to murther so worthy and Noble a Gentleman. I protest vnto you vpon my soule, which I wish to be confounded in eternall perdition, if euer I were vnchaste to your bed, or allowed him any other fauour, but what might well become so honourable a friend. And seeing my body hath bene made the receptacle for so precious a kinde of foode, as the heart of so valiant and courteous a Knight, such as was the Noble *Guardastagno*; neuer shall any other foode hereafter, haue entertainment there, or my selfe liue the Wife to so bloody a Husband.

So starting vp from the Table, and stepping vnto a great gazing Window, the Casement whereof standing wide open behinde her: violently she leaped out thereat, which beeing an huge heigth in distance from the ground, the fall did not onely kill her, but also shiuered her body into many peeces. Which *Rossiglione* perceiuing, hee stoode like a body without a soule, confounded with the killing of so deare a friend, losse of a chaste and honourable wife, and all through his owne ouer-credulous conceit.

Vpon further conference with his priuate thoughts, and remorsefull acknowledgement of his heinous offence, which repentance (too late) gaue him eyes now to see, though rashnesse before would not permit him to consider; these two extreamities inlarged his dulled vnderstanding. First, he grew fearfull of the friends and followers to murthered *Guardastagno*, as also the whole Country of *Prouence*, in regard of the peoples generall loue vnto him; which being two maine and important motiues, both to the detestation of so horrid an act, and immediate seuere reuenge to succeede thereon: he made such prouision as best he could, and as so sodaine a warning would giue leaue, he fled away secretly in the night season.

These vnpleasing newes were soone spread abroad the next morning, not only of the vnfortunate accidents, but also of *Rossiglions* flight; in regard whereof, the dead bodyes being found, and brought together, as well by the people belonging to *Guardastagno*, as them that attended

on

on the Lady : they were layed in the Chappell of *Rossigliones* Castle; where, after so much lamentation for so great a misfortune to befall them, they were honourably enterred in one faire Tombe, with excellent Verses engrauen thereon, expressing both their noble degree, and by what vnhappy meanes, they chanced to haue buriall there.

A Physitians wife laide a Louer of her Maides (supposing him to be dead) in a Chest, by reason that he had drunke Water, which vsually was giuen to procure a sleepy entrancing. Two Lombard vsurers, stealing the Chest, in hope of a rich booty, carryed it into their owne house, where afterward the man awaking, was apprehended for a Theefe. The Chamber-maide to the Physitians wife, going before the bench of Iustice, accuseth her selfe for putting the imagined dead body into the Chest, by which meanes he escapeth hanging. And the theeues which stole away the Chest, were condemned to pay a great summe of money.

The tenth Nouell.

Wherein is declared, that sometime by aduenturous accident, rather then any reasonable comprehension, a man may escape out of manifold perilles, but especially in occurrences of Loue.



AFTER that the King had concluded his Nouell, there remained none now but *Dioneus* to tell the last : which himselfe confessing, and the King commaunding him to proceede, hee beganne in this manner. So many miseries of vnfortunate Loue, as all of you haue already related, hath not onely swolne your eyes with weeping, but

alſo made ſicke our hearts with ſighing : yea (Gracious Ladies) I my ſelfe finde my ſpirits not meanly afflicted thereby. Wherefore the whole day hath bene very irkeſome to me, and I am not a little glad, that it is ſo neere ending. Now, for the better ſhutting it vp altogether, I would be very loath to make an addition, of any more ſuch ſad and mournfull matter, good for nothing but onely to feede melancholly humor, and from which (I hope) my faire Starres will defend me. Tragicall diſcourſe, thou art no fit companion for me, I will therefore report a Nouell which may miniſter a more iouiall kinde of argument, vnto whoſe Tales that muſt be told to morrow, and with the expiration of our preſent Kings reigne, to rid vs of all heart-greeuing hereafter.

Know then (moſt gracious aſſembly) that it is not many yeeres ſince, when there liued in *Salerne*, a very famous Phyſitian, named Signieur *Mazzeo della Montagna*, who being already well entred into yeeres, would (neuertheleſſe) marrie with a beautifull young Mayden of the City, beſtowing rich garments, gaudie attyres, Ringes, and Iewelles on her, ſuch as few Women elſe could any way equall, becauſe hee loued her moſt deerely. Yet being an aged man, and neuer remembring, how vaine and idle a thing it is, for age to make ſuch an vnfitting Election, iniurious to both ; and therefore endangering that domeſticke agreement, which ought to be the ſole and maine comfort of Marriage : it maketh me therefore to miſdoubt, that as in our former Tale of Signiour *Ricciardo de Cinzica*, ſome dayes of the Calender did here ſeeme as diſtaſtefull, as thoſe that occaſioned the other Womans diſcontentment. In ſuch vnequall choyſes, Parents commonly are more blameworthy, then any imputation, to bee layde on the young Women, who gladdely would enioy ſuch as in heart they haue elected : but that their Parents, looking through the glaſſe of greedie lucre, doe ouerthrow both their owne hopes, and the faire fortunes of their children together.

Yet to ſpeake vprightly of this young married Wife, ſhe declared her ſelfe to be of a wiſe and chearfull ſpirit, not diſcoraged with her vnequalitie of marriage : but bearing all with a contented browe, for feare of vrging the very leaſt miſlike in her Husband. And he, on the other ſide, when occaſions did not call him to viſite his Patients, or to be preſent at the Colledge among his fellow-Doctours, would alwayes bee chearing and comforting his Wife, as one that could hardly affoord to be out of her company. There is one eſpeciall fatall misfortune, which commonly awaiteth on olde mens marriages ; when freezing December will match with flouriſhing May, & greene deſires appeare in age, beyond all poſſibility of performance. Nor are there wanting good ſtore of wanton Gallants, who hating to ſee Beauty in this manner betrayed, and to the embraces of a loathed bed, will make their folly ſeene in publike appearance, and by their daily proffers of amorous ſeruices (ſeeming compaſſionate of the womans diſaſter) are vſually the cauſe of icalous ſuſpitions, and very heinous houſhold diſcontentments.

Among

Among diuers other, that faine would be nibling at this bayte of beautie, there was one, named *Ruggiero de Ieroly*, of honourable parentage, but yet of ſuch a beboſhed and diſordered life, as neither Kindred or Friends, were willing to take any knowledge of him, but vtterly gaue him ouer to his diſſolute courſes: ſo that, throughout all *Salerne*, his conditions cauſed his generall contempt, and he accounted no better but euen as a theeuing and lewde company. The Doctours Wife, had a Chamber-maide attending on her; who, notwithſtanding all the vgly deformities in *Ruggiero*, regarding more his perſon then his imperfections (becauſe he was a compleate and well-featured youth) beſtowed her affection moſt entirely on him, and oftentimes did ſupplie his wants, with her owne beſt meanes.

Ruggiero hauing this benefite of the Maides kinde loue to him, made it an hopefull mounting Ladder, whereby to deriue ſome good liking from the Miſtreſſe, preſuming rather on his outward comely parts, then any other honeſt qualitie that might commend him. The Miſtreſſe knowing what choiſe her Maide had made, and vnable by any perſwaſions to remooue her, tooke knowledge of *Ruggieroes* priuate reſorting to her houſe, and in meere loue to her Maide (who had very many eſpeciall deſeruings in her) oftentimes ſhe would (in kinde manner) rebuke him, and aduiſe him to a more ſettled courſe of life; which counſell, that it might take the better effect; ſhe graced with liberall gifts: one while with Golde, others with Siluer, and often with garments, for his comelier acceſſe thither: which bounty, he (like a lewde miſtaker) interpreted as aſſurances of her affection to him, and that he was more gracefull in her eye, then any man elſe could be.

In the continuance of theſe proceedings, it came to paſſe, that Maſter Doctor *Mazzeo* (being not onely a moſt expert Phyſitian, but likewiſe as skilfull in Chirurgerie beſide) had a Patient in cure, who by great misfortune, had one of his legges broken all in pieces; which ſome weaker iudgement hauing formerly dealt withall, the bones and ſinewes were become ſo fowly putrified, as he tolde the parties friends, that the legge muſt be quite cut off, or elſe the Patient muſt needes dye: yet he intended ſo to order the matter, that the perill ſhould proceede no further, to preiudice any other part of the body. The caſe beeing thus reſolued on with the Pacient and his Friends, the day and time was appointed when the deede ſhould be done: and the Doctor conceiuing, that except the Patient were ſleepily entranced, he could not by any meanes endure the paine, but muſt needes hinder what he meant to do: by diſtillation he made ſuch an artificiall Water, as (after the Patient hath receiued it) it will procure a kinde of a dead ſleepe, and endure ſo long a ſpace, as neceſſity requireth the vſe there of, in full performance of the worke.

After he had made this ſleepy water, he put it into a glaſſe, wherewith it was filled (almoſt) vp to the brimme; and till the time came when he ſhould vſe it, hee ſet it in his owne Chamber-Window, neuer ac-

quainting any one, to what purpoſe he had prouided the water, nor what was his reaſon of ſetting it there; when it drew towards the euening, and he was returned home from his pacients, a Meſſenger brought him Letters from *Malfy*, concerning a great conflict happening there betweene two Noble Families, wherein diuers were very dangerouſly wounded on either ſide, & without his ſpeedy repairing thither, it would proue to the loſſe of many liues. Hereupon, the cure of the mans leg muſt needs be prolonged, vntill he was returned backe againe, in regard that many of the wounded perſons were his worthy friends, and liberall bounty was there to be expected, which made him preſently go aboord a ſmall Barke, and forthwith ſet away towards *Malfy*.

This abſence of Maſter Doctor *Mazzeo*, gaue opportunity to aduenturous *Ruggiero*, to viſite his houſe (he being gone) in hope to get more Crownes, and curtiſie from the Miſtreſſe, vnder formall colour of courting the Maide. And being cloſely admitted into the houſe, when diuers Neighbours were in conference with her Miſtreſſe, and held her with much pleaſing diſcourſe, as required longer time then was expected: the Maide, had no other roome to conceale *Ruggiero* in, but onely the bed Chamber of her Maſter, where ſhe lockt him in; becauſe none of the houſhold people ſhould deſcry him, and ſtayed attending on her Miſtris, till all the Gueſts tooke their leaue, and were gone. *Ruggiero* thus remayning alone in the Chamber, for the ſpace of three long houres and more, was viſited neither by Maide nor Miſtris, but awaited when he ſhould be ſet at liberty.

Now, whether feeding on ſalt meates before his coming thither, or cuſtomary vſe of drinking, which maketh men vnable any long while to abſtaine as being neuer ſatisfied with exceſſe; which of theſe two extreames they were, I know not: but drinke needs he muſt. And, hauing no other meanes for quenching his thirſt, eſpied the glaſſe of water ſtanding in the Window, and thinking it to be ſome ſoueraigne kinde of water, reſerued by the Doctor for his owne drinking, to make him luſty in his old yeeres, he tooke the glaſſe; and finding the water pleaſing to his pallate, dranke it off euery drop; then ſitting downe on a Coffer by the beds ſide, ſoone after he fell into a ſound ſleepe, according to the powerfull working of the water.

No ſooner were all the Neighbours gone, and the Maide at liberty from her Miſtreſſe, but vnlocking the doore, into the Chamber ſhe went; and finding *Ruggiero* ſitting faſt aſleepe, ſhe began to hunch and punche him, entreating him (ſoftly) to awake: but all was to no purpoſe, for he neither moued, or anſwered one word; whereat her patience being ſomewhat prouoked, ſhe punched him more rudely, and angerly ſaide: Awake for ſhame thou drowſie dullard, and if thou be ſo deſirous of ſleeping, get thee home to thine owne lodging, becauſe thou art not allowed to ſleepe here. *Ruggiero* being thus rudely punched, fell from off the Coffer flat on the ground, appearing no other in all reſpects, then as if he were a dead body. Whereat the Maide being fearfully amazed, plucking him

by

by the noſe and young beard,and what elſe ſhe could deuiſe to do,yet all her labour proouing ſtill in vaine: ſhe was almoſt beſide her wits,ſtamping and rauing all about the roome, as if ſenſe and reaſon had forſaken her; ſo violent was her extreame diſtraction.

Vpon the hearing of this noiſe, her Miſtris came ſodainely into the Chamber,where being affrighted at ſo ſtrange an accident, and ſuſpecting that *Ruggiero* was dead indeed: ſhe pinched him ſtrongly,and burnt his finger with a candle,yet all was as fruiteleſſe as before. Then ſitting downe,ſhe began to conſider aduiſedly with her ſelfe,how much her honour and reputation would be endangered hereby, both with her Huſband, and in vulgar opinion when this ſhould come to publike notice. For(quoth ſhe to her Maide) it is not thy fond loue to this vnruly fellow that can ſway the cenſure of the monſter multitude, in beleeuing his acceſſe hither onely to thee: but my good name, and honeſt repute, as yet vntoucht with the very leaſt taxation, will be rackt on the tenter of infamous iudgement, and (though neuer ſo cleare) branded with generall condemnation. It is wiſedome therefore, that we ſhould make no noiſe but(in ſilence)conſider with our ſelues, how to cleare the houſe of this dead body, by ſome ſuch helpfull and witty deuice, as when it ſhall be found in the morning,his being here may paſſe without ſuſpition,and the worlds raſh opinion no way touch vs.

Weeping and lamenting is now laid aſide, and all hope in them of his liues reſtoring: onely to rid his body out of the houſe,that now requires their care and cunning: whereupon the Maide thus began. Miſtreſſe (quoth ſhe) this euening,although it was very late, at our next Neighbours doore(who you know is a Ioyner by his trade) I ſaw a great Cheſt ſtand; and,as it ſeemeth, for a publike ſale, becauſe two or three nights together, it hath not bene thence remoued: and if the owner haue not lockt it, all inuention elſe cannot furniſh vs with the like helpe. For therein will we lay his body,whereon I will beſtow two or thee wounds with my Knife, and leauing him ſo, our houſe can be no more ſuſpected concerning his being here, then any other in the ſtreete beſide; nay rather farre leſſe,in regard of your husbands credite and authority. Moreouer, hereof I am certaine,that he being of ſuch bad and diſordered qualities: it will the more likely be imagined,that he was ſlaine by ſome of his own looſe companions,being with them about ſome pilfering buſines,and afterward hid his body in the cheſt,it ſtanding ſo fitly for the purpoſe,and darke night alſo fauouring the deed.

The Maids counſell paſt vnder the ſeale of allowance,only her Miſtris thought it not conuenient, that (hauing affected him ſo deerely) ſhe ſhould mangle his body with any wounds;but rather to let it be gathered by more likely-hood,that villaines had ſtrangled him,and then conueyed his body into the Cheſt. Away ſhe ſends the Maide, to ſee whether the Cheſt ſtood there ſtill, or no;as indeede it did,and vnlockt,whereof they were not a little ioyfull. By the helpe of her Miſtreſſe, the Maide tooke *Ruggiero* vpon her ſhoulders,and bringing him to the doore, with dilli-

gent

dilligent reſpect that no one could diſcouer them; in the Cheſt they laide him, and ſo there left him, cloſing downe the lidde according as they found it.

In the ſame ſtreete, and not farre from the Ioyner, dwelt two yong men who were *Lombards*, liuing vpon the intereſt of their moneyes, coueting to get much, and to ſpend little. They hauing obſerued where the Cheſt ſtood, and wanting a neceſſary mooueable to houſhold, yet loath to lay out money for buying it: complotted together this very night, to ſteale it thence, and carry it home to their houſe, as accordingly they did; finding it ſomewhat heauy, and therefore imagining, that matter of woorth was contained therein. In the Chamber where their wiues lay, they left it; and ſo without any further ſearch till the next morning, they laid them downe to reſt likewiſe.

Ruggiero, who had now ſlept a long while, the drinke being digeſted, and the vertue thereof fully conſummated; began to awake before day. And although his naturall ſleepe was broken, and his ſenſes had recouered their former power, yet notwithſtanding, there remained ſuch an aſtoniſhment in his braine, as not onely did afflict him all the day following, but alſo diuers dayes and nights afterward. Hauing his eyes wide open, & yet not diſcerning any thing, he ſtretched forth his armes euery where about him, and finding himſelfe to be encloſed in the Cheſt, he grew more broad awake, and ſaid to himſelfe. What is this? Where am? Do I wake or ſleepe? Full well I remember, that not long ſince I was in my ſweet-hearts Chamber, and now (me thinkes) I am mewed vp in a Cheſt. What ſhould I thinke hereof? Is Maſter Doctor returned home, or hath ſome other inconuenience happned, whereby finding me a ſleepe, ſhe was enforced to hide me thus? Surely it is ſo, and otherwiſe it cannot be: wherefore, it is beſt for me to lye ſtill, and liſten when I can heare any talking in the Chamber.

Continuing thus a longer while then otherwiſe he would haue done, becauſe his lying in the bare Cheſt was ſomewhat vneaſie and painfull to him; turning diuers times on the one ſide, and then as often againe on the other, coueting ſtill for eaſe, yet could not finde any: at length, he thruſt his backe ſo ſtrongly againſt the Cheſts ſide, that (it ſtanding on an vn-euen ground) it began to totter, and after fell downe. In which fall, it made ſo loud a noiſe, as the women (lying in the beds ſtanding by) awaked, and were ſo ouercome with feare, that they had not the power to ſpeake one word. *Ruggiero* alſo being affrighted with the Cheſts fall, and perceiuing how by that meanes it was become open; he thought it better, leaſt ſome other ſiniſter fortune ſhould befall him, to be at open liberty, then incloſed vp ſo ſtrictly. And becauſe he knew not where he was, as alſo hoping to meete with his Miſtreſſe; he went all about groping in the darke, to finde either ſome ſtaires or doore, whereby to get forth.

When the Women (being then awake) heard his trampling, as alſo his iuſtling againſt the doores and windowes; they demaunded, Who was there? *Ruggiero*, not knowing their voyces, made them no

anſwer,

anſwer; wherefore they called to their husbands, who lay very ſoundly ſleeping by them, by reaſon of their ſo late walking abroad, and therefore heard not this noiſe in the houſe. This made the Women much more timorous, and therefore riſing out of their beddes, they opened the Caſement towards the ſtreete, crying out aloude, Theeues, Theeues. The neighbours aroſe vpon this outcry, running vp and downe from place to place, ſome engirting the houſe, and others entering into it: by means of which troubleſome noiſe, the two Lombards awaked, and ſeizing there vpon poore *Ruggiero*, (who was well-neere affrighted out of his wittes, at ſo ſtrange an accident, and his owne ignorance, how he happened thither, and how to eſcape from them) he ſtood gazing on them without any anſwer.

By this time, the Sergeants and other Officers of the City, ordinarily attending on the Magiſtrate, being raiſed by the tumult of this vproare, were come into the houſe, and had poore *Ruggiero* committed vnto their charge: who bringing him before the Gouernor, was forthwith called in queſtion, and known to be of a moſt wicked life, a ſhame to all his friends and kindred. He could ſay little for himſelfe, neuer denying his taking in the houſe, and therefore deſiring to finiſh all his fortunes together, deſperately confeſſed, that he came with a fellonious intent to rob them, and the Gouernor gaue him ſentence to be hanged.

Soone were the newes ſpread throughout *Salerne*; that *Ruggiero* was apprehended, about robbing the houſe of the two vſuring Lombardes: which when Miſtreſſe Doctor and her Chamber-maide heard, they were confounded with moſt ſtrange admiration, and ſcarſely credited what they themſelues had done the night before, but rather imagined all matters paſt, to be no more then meerely a dreame, concerning *Ruggieroes* dying in the houſe, and their putting him into the Cheſt, ſo that by no likely or poſſible meanes, he could be the man in this perillous extreamitie.

In a ſhort while after, Maſter Doctor *Mazzeo* was returned from *Malfy*, to proceede in his cure of the poore mans legge; and calling for his glaſſe of Water, which he left ſtanding in his owne Chamber window, it was found quite empty, and not a drop in it: whereat he raged ſo extreamly, as neuer had the like impatience bene noted in him, His wife, and her Maide, who had another kinde of buſineſſe in their braine, about a dead man ſo ſtrangely come to life againe, knew not well what to ſay; but at the laſt, his Wife thus replyed ſomewhat angerly. Sir (quoth ſhe) what a coyle is here about a paltry glaſſe of Water, which perhaps hath bene ſpilt, yet neyther of vs faulty therein? Is there no more ſuch water to be had in the world? Alas deere Wife (ſaide he) you might repute it to be a common kinde of Water, but indeed it was not ſo; for I did purpoſely compound it, onely to procure a dead-ſeeming ſleepe: And ſo related the whole matter at large, of the Pacients legge, and his Waters loſſe.

When ſhe had heard theſe words of her husband, preſently ſhe conceiued

ceiued, that the water was drunke off by *Ruggiero*, which had ſo ſleepily entranced his ſences, as they verily thought him to be dead, wherefore ſhe ſaide. Beleeue me Sir, you neuer acquainted vs with any ſuch matter, which would haue procured more carefull reſpect of of it: but ſeeing it is gone, your skill extendeth to make more, for now there is no other remedy. While thus Maſter Doctor and his Wife were conferring together, the Maide went ſpeedily into the City, to vnderſtand truly, whither the condemned man was *Ruggiero*, and what would now become of him. Being returned home againe, and alone with her Miſtreſſe in the Chamber, thus ſhe ſpake. Now truſt me Miſtreſſe, not one in the City ſpeaketh well of *Ruggiero*, who is the man condemned to dye; and, for ought I can perceiue, he hath neither Kinſman nor Friend that will doe any thing for him; but he is left with the Prouoſt, and muſt be executed to morrow morning. Moreouer Miſtreſſe, by ſuch inſtructions as I haue receiued, I can well-neere informe you, by what meanes he came to the two *Lombards* houſe, if all be true that I haue heard.

You know the Ioyner before whoſe doore the Cheſt ſtoode, wherein we did put *Ruggiero*; there is now a contention betweene him and another man, to whom (it ſeemeth) the Cheſt doth belong; in regard whereof, they are ready to quarrell extreamly each with other. For the one owing the Cheſt, and truſting the Ioyner to ſell it for him, would haue him to pay him for the Cheſt. The Ioyner denieth any ſale thereof, auouching, that the laſt night it was ſtolne from his doore. Which the other man contrarying, maintaineth that he ſolde the Cheſt to the two *Lombard* vſurers, as himſelfe is able to affirme, becauſe he found it in the houſe, when he (being preſent at the apprehenſion of *Ruggiero*) ſawe it there in the ſame houſe. Hereupon, the Ioyner gaue him the lye, becauſe he neuer ſold it to any man; but if it were there, they had robd him of it, as he would make it manifeſt to their faces. Then falling into clamerous ſpeeches they went together to the *Lombardes* houſe, euen as I returned home. Wherefore Miſtreſſe, as you may eaſily perceiue, *Ruggiero* was (queſtionleſſe) carried thither in the Cheſt, and ſo there found; but how he reuiued againe, I cannot comprehend.

The Miſtreſſe vnderſtanding now apparantly, the full effect of the whole buſineſſe, and in what manner it had bene carried, reuealed to the Maide her husbands ſpeeches, concerning the glaſſe of ſleepie Water, which was the onely engine of all this trouble, clearly acquitting *Ruggiero* of the robbery, howſoeuer (in deſparate fury, and to make an end of a life ſo contemptible) he had wrongfully accuſed himſelfe. And notwithſtanding this his hard fortune, which hath made him much more infamous then before, in all the diſſolute behauiour of his life: yet it could not quaile her affection towards him; but being loath he ſhould dye for ſome other mans offence, and hoping his future reformation; ſhe fell on her knees before her Miſtreſſe, and (drowned in her teares) moſt earneſtly entreated her, to aduiſe her with ſome ſuch happy courſe, as might be the ſafety of poore *Ruggieros* life. Miſtreſſe Doctor, affecting her Maide dearly,

dearely, any plainely perceiuing, that no disastrous fortune whatsoeuer, could alter her loue to condemned *Ruggiero*; hoping the best hereafter, as the Maide her selfe did, and willing to saue life rather then suffer it to be lost without iust cause, she directed her in such discreet manner, as you will better conceiue by the successe.

According as she was instructed by her Mistresse, she fell at the feete of Master Doctor, desiring him to pardon a great error, whereby she had ouer-much offended him. As how? said Master Doctor. In this manner (quoth the Maide) and thus proceeded. You are not ignorant Sir, what a lewde liuer *Ruggiero de Ieroly* is, and notwithstanding all his imperfections, how deerely I loue him, as he protesteth the like to me, and thus hath our loue continued a yeere, and more. You being gone to *Malfy*, and your absence granting me apt opportunity, for conference with so kinde a friend; I made the bolder, and gaue him entrance into your house, yea euen into mine owne Chamber, yet free from any abuse, neither did he (bad though he be) offer any. Thirsty he was before his comming thither, either by salt meat, or distempered diet, and I being vnable to fetch him wine or water, by reason my Mistresse sat in the Hall, seriously talking with her Sisters; remembred, that I saw a violl of Water standing in your Chamber Window, which he drinking quite off, I set it empty in the place againe. I haue heard your discontentment for the said Water, and confesse my fault to you therein: but who liueth so iustly, without offending at one time or other? And I am heartily sory for my transgression; yet not so much for the water, as the hard fortune that hath followed thereon; because thereby *Ruggiero* is in danger to lose his life, and all my hopes are vtterly lost. Let me entreat you therefore (gentle Master) first to pardon me, and then to grant me permission, to succour my poore condemned friend, by all the best meanes I can deuise.

When the Doctor had heard all her discourse, angry though he were, yet thus he answered with a smile. Much better had it bin, if thy follies punishment had falne on thy selfe, that it might haue paide thee with deserued repentance, vpon thy Mistresses finding thee sleeping. But go and get his deliuerance if thou canst, with this caution, that if euer hereafter he be seene in my house, the perill thereof shall light on thy selfe. Receiuing this answer, for her first entrance into the attempt, and as her Mistresse had aduised her, in all hast she went to the prison, where she preuailed so well with the Iaylor, that hee granted her priuate conference with *Ruggiero*. She hauing instructed him what he should say to the Prouost, if he had any purpose to escape with life; went thither before him to the Prouost, who admitting her into his presence, and knowing that shee was Master Doctors Maid, a man especially respected of all the City, he was the more willing to heare her message, he imagining that shee was sent by her Master.

Sir (quoth shee) you haue apprehended *Ruggiero de Ieroly*, as a theefe, and iudgement of death is (as I heare) pronounced against him: but hee is wrongfully accused, & is clearly innocent of such a heinous detection.

So

So entring into the Hiſtory, ſhe declared euery circumſtance, from the originall to the end: relating truly, that being her Louer, ſhee brought him into her Maſters houſe, where he dranke the compounded ſleepy water, and reputed for dead, ſhe laide him in the Cheſt. Afterward, ſhe rehearſed the ſpeeches betweene the Ioyner, and him that laide claime to the Cheſt, giuing him to vnderſtand thereby, how *Ruggiero* was taken in the *Lombards* houſe.

The Prouoſt preſently gathering, that the truth in this caſe was eaſie to be knowne; ſent firſt for Maſter Doctor *Mazzeo*, to know, whether he compounded any ſuch water, or no: which he affirmed to be true, and vpon what occaſion he prepared it. Then the Ioyner, the owner of the Cheſt, and the two *Lombards*, being ſeuerally queſtioned withall: it appeared euidently, that the *Lombards* did ſteale the Cheſt in the night ſeaſon, and carried it home to their owne houſe. In the end, *Ruggiero* being brought from the priſon, and demanded, where he was lodged the night before, made anſwer, that he knew not where. Onely he well remembred, that bearing affection to the Chamber-maide of Maſter Doctor *Mazzeo della Montagna*, ſhe brought him into a Chamber, where a violl of water ſtoode in the Window, and he being extreamly thirſty, dranke it off all. But what became of him afterward (till being awake, he found himſelfe encloſed in a Cheſt, and in the houſe of the two *Lombards*) he could not ſay any thing.

When the Prouoſt had heard all their anſwers, which he cauſed them to repeate ouer diuers times, in regard they were very pleaſing to him: he cleared *Ruggiero* from the crime impoſed on him, and condemned the *Lombards* in three hundred Ducates, to be giuen to *Ruggiero* in way of an amends, and to enable his marriage with the Doctors Mayde, whoſe conſtancie was much commended, and wrought ſuch a miracle on penitent *Ruggiero*; that after his marriage, which was graced with great and honourable pompe, he regained the intimate loue of all his kindred, and liued in moſt Noble condition, euen as if he had neuer bene any diſordered mans

If the former Nouels had made all the Ladies ſad and ſighe, this laſt of *Dioneus* as much delighted them, as reſtoring them to their former iocond humor, and baniſhing Tragicall diſcourſe for euer. The King perceiuing that the Sun was neere ſetting, and his gouernment as neere ending, with many kinde and courteous ſpeeches, excuſed himſelfe to the Ladies, for being the motiue of ſuch an argument, as expreſſed the infeliciry of poore Louers. And hauing finiſhed his excuſe, vp he roſe, taking the Crown of Lawrell from off his owne head, the Ladies awaiting on whoſe head he pleaſed next to ſet it, which proued to be the gracious Lady *Fiammetta*, and thus he ſpake. Here I place this Crowne on her head, that knoweth better then any other, how to comfort this faire aſſembly to morrow, for the ſorrow which they haue this day endured.

Madame *Fiammeeta*, whoſe lockes of haire were curled, long, and like golden wiers, hanging ſomewhat downe ouer her white & delicate ſhoul-

ders

ders, her viſage round, wherein the Damaske Roſe and Lilly contended for priority, the eyes in her head, reſembling thoſe of tthe Faulcon meſſenger, and a dainty mouth ; her lippes looking like two little Rubyes, with a commendable ſmile thus ſhe replyed.

Philoſtratus, gladly I do accept your gift; and to the end that ye may the better remember your ſelfe, concerning what you haue done hitherto: I will and cõmand, that generall preparatian be made againſt to morrow, for faire and happy fortunes hapning to Louers, after former cruell and vnkinde accidents. Which propoſition was very pleaſing to them all.

Then calling for the Maſter of the Houſhold, and taking order with him, what was moſt needfull to be done ; ſhe gaue leaue vnto the whole company (who were all riſen) to go recreate themſelues vntill ſupper time. Some of them walked about the Garden, the beauty whereof baniſhed the leaſt thought of wearineſſe. Others walked by the Riuer to the Mill, which was not farre off, and the reſt fell to exerciſes, fitting their owne fancies, vntill they heard the ſummons for Supper. Hard by the goodly Fountaine (according to their wonted manner) they ſupped altogether, and were ſerued to their no meane contentment: but being riſen from the Table, they fell to their delight of ſinging and dancing. While *Philomena* led the dance, the Queene ſpake in this mauner.

Philoſtratus, I intend not to varie from thoſe courſes heretofore obſerued by my predeceſſors, but euen as they haue already done, ſo it is my authority, to command a Song. And becauſe I am well aſſured, that you are not vnfurniſhed of Songs anſwerable to the quality of the paſſed Nouels: my deſire is, in regard we would not be troubled hereafter, with any more diſcourſes of vnfortunate Loue, that you ſhall ſing a Song agreeing with your owne diſpoſition. *Philoſtratus* made anſwer, that hee was ready to acomplish her command, and without all further ceremony, thus he began.

The Song.

Chorus. *My teares do plainly proue,*
How iuſtly that poore heart hath cauſe to greeue,
Which (vnder truſt) findes Treaſon in his Loue.

WHen firſt I ſaw her, that now makes me ſigh,
Diſtruſt did neuer enter in my thoughts.
So many vertues clearly ſhin'd in her,
That I eſteem'd all martyrdome was light
Which Loue could lay on me. Nor did I greeue,
Although I found my liberty was loſt.
But now mine error I do plainly ſee:
Not without ſorrow, thus betray'd to bee.
My teares do, &c.

For, being left by baſeſt treachery
Of her in whom I moſt repoſed truſt:
I then could ſee apparant flatterie
In all the faireſt ſhewes that ſhe did make.
But when I ſtroue to get forth of the ſnare,
I found my ſelfe the further plunged in.
For I beheld another in my place,
And I caſt off, with manifeſt diſgrace. My, &c.

Then felt my heart ſuch hels of heauy woes,
Not vtterable. I curſt the day and houre
When firſt I ſaw her louely countenance,
Enricht with beautie, farre beyond all other:
which ſet my ſoule on fire, enflamde each part,
Making a martyrdome of my poore hart.
My faith and hope being baſely thus betrayde;
I durſt not mooue, to ſpeake I was affrayde.
My teares do, &c.

Thou canſt (thou powerfull God of Loue) perceiue,
My ceaſſeleſſe ſorrow, voyde of any comfort:
I make my moane to thee, and do not fable,
Deſiring, that to end my miſery,
Death may come ſpeedily, and with his Dart
With one fierce ſtroke, quite paſsing through my heart:
To cut off future fell contending ſtriſe,
An happy end be made of Loue and Life.
My teares do, &c.

No other meanes of comfort doth remaine,
To eaſe me of ſuch ſharpe afflictions,
But onely death. Grant then that I may die,
To finiſh greeſe and life in one bleſt houre.
For, being bereſt of any future ioyes,
Come, take me quickly from ſo falſe a friend.
Yet in my death, let thy great power approue,
That I died true, and conſtant in my Loue.
My teares do, &c.

Happy ſhall I account this ſighing Song,
If ſome (beſide my ſelfe) do learne to ſing it,
And ſo conſider of my miſeries,
As may incite them to lament my wrongs.
And to be warned by my wretched fate;
Leaſt (like my ſelfe) themſelues do ſigh too late.
Learne Louers, learne, what tis to be vniuſt,
And be betrayed, where you repoſe beſt truſt.

The words contained in this Song, did manifeſtly declare, what torturing afflictons poore *Philoſtratus* felt, and more (perhaps) had beene perceiued by the lookes of the Lady whom he ſpake of, being then preſent in the dance; if the ſodaine enſuing darkneſſe had not hid the crimſon bluſh, which mounted vp into her face. But the Song being ended, and diuers other beſide, laſting till the houre of reſt drew on; by command of the Queene, they all repaired to their Chambers.

THE FIFT DAY.

Whereon, all the Diſcourſes do paſſe vnder the Gouernement of the moſt Noble Lady Fiammetta : *Concerning ſuch perſons, as haue bene ſucceſſefull in their Loue, after many hard and perillous misfortunes.*

The Induction.

NOW began the Sunne to dart foorth his golden beames, when Madam *Fiammetta* (incited by the ſweete ſinging Birdes, which ſince the breake of day, ſat merrily chanting on the trees) aroſe from her bed : as all the other Ladies likewiſe did, and the three young Gentlemen deſcending downe into the fields, where they walked in a gentle pace on the greene graſſe, vntill the Sunne were riſen a little higher. On many pleaſant matters they conferred together, as they walked in ſeuerall companies, till at the length the Queene, finding the heate to enlarge it ſelfe ſtrongly, returned backe to the Caſtle; where when they were all arriued, ſhe commanded, that after this mornings walking, their ſtomackes ſhould be refreſhed with wholſom Wines, as alſo diuers ſorts of banquetting ſtuffe. Afterward, they all repaired into the Garden, not departing thence, vntill the houre of dinner was come : at which time, the Maſter of the houſhold, hauing prepared euery thing in decent readineſſe, after a ſolemne ſong was ſung, by order from the Queene, they were ſeated at the Table.

When they had dined, to their owne liking and contentment, they beban (in continuation of their former order) to exerciſe diuers dances, and afterward voyces to their inſtruments, and many pretty Madrigals and Roundelayes. Vpon the finiſhing of theſe delights, the Queene gaue them leaue to take their reſt, when ſuch as were ſo minded, went to ſleep, others ſolaced themſelues in the Garden. But after midday was ouerpaſt, they met (according to their wonted manner) and as the Queene had

commanded, at the faire Fountaine; where ſhe being placed in her ſeate royall, and caſting her eye vpon *Pamphilus*, ſhe bad him begin the dayes diſcourſes, of happy ſucceſſe in loue, after diſaſtrous and troubleſome accidents; who yeelding thereto with humble reuerence, thus began.

Many Nouels (gracious Ladies) do offer themſelues to my memory, wherewith to beginne ſo pleaſant a day, as it is her Highneſſe deſire that this ſhould be: among which plenty, I eſteeme one aboue all the reſt, becauſe you may comprehend thereby, not onely the fortunate concluſion, wherewith we intend to begin our day; but alſo, how mighty the forces of Loue are, deſeruing to be both admired and reuerenced. Albeit there are many, who ſcarſely knowing what they ſay, do condemne them with infinite groſſe imputations: which I purpoſe to diſproue, and (I hope) to your no little pleaſing.

Chynon, *by falling in Loue, became wiſe, and by force of Armes, winning his faire Lady* Iphigenia *on the Seas, was afterward impriſoned at Rhodes. Being deliuered by one named* Lyſimachus, *with him he recouered his* Iphigenia *againe, and faire* Caſſandra, *euen in the middeſt of their marriage. They fled with them into Candye, where after they had married them, they were called home to their owne dwelling.*

The firſt Nouell.

Whereby is approued, that Loue (oftentimes) maketh a man both wiſe and valiant



ACcording to the ancient Annales of the *Cypriots*, there ſometime liued in *Cyprus*, a Noble Gentleman, who was commonly called *Ariſtippus*, and exceeded all other of the Country in the goods of Fortune.

Diuers

Diuers children he had, but (amongſt the reſt) a Sonne, in whoſe birth he was more infortunate then any of the reſt; and continually greeued, in regard, that hauing all the compleate perfections of beauty, good forme, and manly parts, ſurpaſſing all other youths of his age or ſtature, yet hee wanted the reall ornament of the ſoule, reaſon and iudgement; being (indeed a meere Ideot or Foole,) and no better hope to be expected of him. His true name, according as he receiued it by Baptiſme, was *Galeſus*, but becauſe neyther by the laborious paines of his Tutors, indulgence, and faire endeuour of his parents, or ingenuity of any other, he could not be brought to ciuility of life, vnderſtanding of Letters, or common carriage of a reaſonable creature: by his groſſe and deformed kinde of ſpeech, his qualities alſo ſauouring rather of brutiſh breeding, then any way deriued from manly education; as an Epithite of ſcorne and deriſion, generally, they gaue him the name of *Chynon*, which in their natiue Countrey language, and diuers other beſide, ſignifieth a very Sot or Foole, and ſo was he termed by euery one.

This loſt kinde of life in him, was no meane burthen of greefe vnto his Noble Father, and all hope being already ſpent, of any future happy recouery, he gaue command (becauſe he would not alwaies haue ſuch a ſorrow in his ſight) that he ſhould liue at a Farme of his owne in a Country Village, among his Peazants and Plough-Swaines. Which was not any way diſtaſtefull to *Chynon*, but well agreed with his owne naturall diſpoſition; for their rurall qualities, and groſſe behauiour pleaſed him beyond the Cities ciuility. *Chynon* liuing thus at his Fathers Countrey Village, exerciſing nothing elſe but rurall demeanour, ſuch as then delighted him aboue all other: it chanced vpon a day about the houre of noone, as hee was walking ouer the fields, with a long ſtaffe on his necke, which commonly he vſed to carry; he entred in to a ſmall thicket, reputed the goodlieſt in all thoſe quarters, and by reaſon it was then the month of May, the Trees had their leaues fairely ſhot forth.

When he had walked through the thicket, it came to paſſe, that (euen as good Fortune guided him) hee came into a faire Meadow, on euery ſide engirt with Trees, and in one corner thereof ſtoode a goodly Fountaine, whoſe current was both coole and cleare. Hard by it, vpon the greene graſſe, he eſpied a very beautifull young Damoſell, ſeeming to be faſt aſleepe, attired in ſuch fine looſe garments, as hidde very little of her white body: onely from the girdle downward, ſhe ware a kirtle made cloſe vnto her, of interwouen delicate ſilke, and at her feete lay two other Damoſels ſleeping, and a ſeruant in the ſame manner. No ſooner had *Chynon* fixed his eye vpon her, but he ſtood leaning vpon his ſtaffe; and viewed her very aduiſedly, without ſpeaking a word, and in no meane admiration, as if he had neuer ſeene the forme of a woman before. He began then to feele in his harſh rurall vnderſtanding (whereinto neuer till now, either by painfull inſtruction, or all other good meanes vſed to him, any honeſt ciuility had power of impreſſion) a ſtrange kinde of humour to awake, which informed his groſſe and dull ſpirite, that this Damoſell was

the very faireſt, which euer any liuing man beheld.

Then he began to diſtinguiſh her parts, commending the treſſes of her haire, which he imagined to be of gold; her forehead, noſe, mouth, necke, armes, but (about all) her breſts, appearing (as yet) but onely to ſhew themſelues, like two little mountaines. So that, of a fielden clowniſh lout, he would needs now become a iudge of beauty, coueting earneſtly in his ſoule, to ſee her eyes, which were veiled ouer with ſound ſleepe, that kept them faſt encloſed together, and onely to looke on them, hee wiſhed a thouſand times, that ſhe would awake. For, in his iudgement, ſhe excelled all the women that euer he had ſeene, and doubted, whether ſhe were ſome Goddeſſe or no; ſo ſtrangely was he metamorphoſed from folly, to a ſenſible apprehenſion, more then common. And ſo farre did this ſodaine knowledge in him extend; that he could conceiue of diuine and celeſtiall things, and that they were more to be admired and reuerenced, then thoſe of humane or terrene conſideration; wherefore the more gladly he contented himſelfe, to tarry till ſhe awaked of her owne accord. And although the time of ſtay ſeemed tedious to him, yet notwithſtanding, he was ouercome with ſuch extraordinary contentment, as he had no power to depart thence, but ſtood as if he had bin glued faſt to the ground.

After ſome indifferent reſpite of time, it chanced that the young Damoſel (who was named *Iphigenia*) awaked before any of the other with her, and lifted vp her head, with her eyes wide open, ſhe ſaw *Chynon* ſtanding before her, leaning ſtill on his ſtaffe; whereat maruailing not a little, ſhe ſaide vnto him: *Chynon*, whither wandereſt thou, or what doſt thou ſeeke for in this wood? *Chynon*, who not onely by his countenance but likewiſe his folly, Nobility of birth, and wealthy poſſeſſions of his father, was generally knowne throughout the Countrey, made no anſwere at all to the demand of *Iphigenia*: but ſo ſoone as he beheld her eyes open, he began to obſerue them with a conſtant regard, and being perſwaded in his ſoule, that from them flowed ſuch an vnvtterable ſingularity, as he had neuer felt till then. Which the young Gentlewoman well noting, ſhe began to wax fearefull, leaſt theſe ſtedfaſt lookes of his, ſhould incite his ruſticity to ſome attempt, which might redound to her diſhonour: wherefore awaking her women and ſeruants, and they all being riſen, ſhe ſaide. Farewell *Chynon*, I leaue thee to thine owne good Fortune; whereto hee preſently replyed, ſaying: I will go with you. Now, although the Gentlewoman refuſed his company, as dreading ſome acte of inciuility from him: yet could ſhe not deuiſe any way to be rid of him, till he had brought her to her owne dwelling, where taking leaue mannerly of her, he went directly home to his Fathers houſe, ſaying: Nothing ſhould compell him to liue any longer in the muddy Country. And albeit his Father was much offended hereat, and all the reſt of his kindred and friends: (yet not knowing how to helpe it) they ſuffered him to continue there ſtill, expecting the cauſe of this his ſo ſodaine alteration, from the courſe of life, which contented him ſo highly before.

Chynon being now wounded to the heart (where neuer any ciuill inſtruction.

ction could before get entrance) with loues piercing dart, by the bright beauty of *Iphigenia*, mooued much admiration (falling from one change to another) in his Father, Kindred, and all elsethat knew him. For first, he requested of his Father, that he might be habited and respected like to his other Brethren, whereto right gladly he condiscended. And frequenting the company of ciuill youths, obseruing also the cariage of Gentlemen, especially such as were honestly enclined: he grew to a beginning in short time (to the wonder of euery one) not onely to vnderstand the first instruction of letters, but also became most skilfull, euen amongst them that were best exercised in Philosophy. And afterward, loue to *Iphigenia* being the sole occasion of his happy alteration, not onely did his harsh and clowniſh voyce conuert it selfe more mildely, but also hee became a singular Musitian, and could perfectly play on any instrument. Beside, he tooke delight in the riding and managing of great horses, and finding himselfe of a strong and able body, he exercised all kinds of Military Disciplines, as well by Sea, as on the land. And, to be breefe, because I would not seeme tedious in the repetition of all his vertues, scarsly had he attained to the fourth yeare, after he was thus falne in loue, but hee became generally knowne, to be the most ciuill, wise, and worthy Gentleman, aswell for all vertues enriching the minde, as any whatsoeuer to beautifie the body, that very hardly he could be equalled throughout the whole kingdome of *Cyprus*.

What shall we say then (vertuous Ladies) concerning this *Chynon*? Surely nothing else, but that those high and diuine vertues, infused into his gentle soule, were by enuious Fortune bound and shut vp in some small angle of his intellect, which being shaken and set at liberty by loue, (as hauing a farre more potent power then Fortune, in quickning and reuiuing the dull drowsie spirits; declared his mighty and soueraigne Authority, in setting free so many faire and precious vertues vniustly detayned, to let the worlds eye behold them truly, by manifest testimony from whence he can deliuer those spirits subiected to his power, and guid them (afterward) to the highest degrees of honour. And although *Chynon* by affecting *Iphigenia*, failed in some particular things; yet notwithstanding, his Father *Aristippus* duely considering, that loue had made him a man, whereas (before) he was no better then a beast: not onely endured all patiently, but also aduised him therein, to take such courses as best liked himselfe. Neuertheless, *Chynon* (who refused to be called *Galesus*, which was his naturall name indeed) remembring that *Iphigenia* tearmed him *Chynon*, and coueting (vnder this title) to accomplish the issue of his honest amorous desire: made many motions to *Cipheus* the Father of *Iphigenia*, that he would be pleased to let him enioy her in marriage. But *Cipheus* told him, that he had already passed his promise for her, to a Gentleman of *Rhodes*, named *Pasimondo*, which promise he religiously intended to performe.

The time being come, which was concluded on for *Iphigenias* marriage, in regard that the affianced husband had sent for her: *Chynon* thus com-

communed with his owne thoughts. Now is the time (quoth he) to let my diuine Mistresse see, how truly and honourably I doe affect her, because (by her) I am become a man. But if I could be possessed of her, I should growe more glorious, then the common condition of a mortall man, and haue her I will, or loose my life in the aduenture. Being thus resolued, he preuailed with diuers young Gentlemen his friends, making them of his faction, and secretly prepared a Shippe, furnished with all things for a Nauall fight, setting sodainly forth to Sea, & hulling abroad in those parts by which the vessell should passe, that must conuey *Iphigenia* to *Rhodes* to her husband. After many honours done to them, who were to transport her thence vnto *Rhodes*, being imbarked, they set saile vpon their *Bon viaggio*.

Chynon, who slept not in a businesse so earnestly importing him, set on them (the day following) with his Ship, and standing aloft on the decke, cryed out to them that had the charge of *Iphigenia*, saying. Strike your sayles, or else determine to be sunke in the Sea. The enemies to *Chynon*, being nothing danted with his words, prepared to stand vpon their owne defence; which made *Chynon*, after the former speeches deliuered, and no answer returned, to command the grapling Irons to be cast forth, which tooke such fast hold on the Rhodians shippe, that (whether they would or no) both the vessels ioyned close together. And he shewing himselfe fierce like a Lyon, not tarrying to be seconded by any, stepped aboord the Rhodians ship, as if he made no respect at all of them, and hauing his sword ready drawne in his hand (incited by the vertue of vnfaigned loue) laied about him on all sides very manfully. Which when the men of *Rhodes* perceiued, casting downe their weapons, and all of them (as it were) with one voyce, yeelded themselues his prisoners: whereupon he said.

Honest Friends, neither desire of booty, nor hatred to you, did occasion my departure from *Cyprus*, thus to assaile you with drawne weapons: but that which hereto hath most mooued me, is a matter highly importing to me, and very easie for you to grant, and so enioy your present peace. I desire to haue faire *Iphigenia* from you, whom I loue aboue all other Ladies liuing, because I could not obtaine her of her father, to make her my lawfull wife in marriage. Loue is the ground of my instant Conquest, and I must vse you as my mortall enemies, if you stand vpon any further tearmes with me, and do not deliuer her as mine owne: for your *Pasimondo*, must not enioy what is my right, first by vertue of my loue, and now by Conquest: Deliuer her therefore, and depart hence at your pleasure.

The men of *Rhodes*, being rather constrrined thereto, then of any free disposition in themselues, with teares in their eyes, deliuered *Iphigenia* to *Chynon*; who beholding her in like manner to weepe, thus spake vnto her. Noble Lady, do not any way discomfort your selfe, for I am your *Chynon*, who haue more right and true title to you, and much better doe deserue to enioy you, by my long continued affection to you, then *Pasimon-*

do

do can any way plead; becauſe you belong to him but onely by promiſe. So, bringing her aboord his owne ſhip, where the Gentlemen his companions gaue her kinde welcome, without touching any thing elſe belonging to the Rhodians, he gaue them free liberty to depart.

Chynon being more ioyfull, by the obtaining of his hearts deſire, then any other conqueſt elſe in the world could make him, after he had ſpent ſome time in comforting *Iphigenia*, who as yet ſate ſadly ſighing; he conſulted with his companions, who ioyned with him in opinion, that their ſafeſt courſe was, by no meanes to returne to *Cyprus*; and therefore all (with one conſent) reſolued to ſet ſaile for *Candye*, where euery one made account, but eſpecially *Chynon*, in regard of ancient and new combined Kindred, as alſo very intimate friends, to finde very worthy entertainement, and ſo to continue there ſafely with *Iphigenia*. But Fortune, who was ſo fauourable to *Chynon*, in granting him ſo pleaſing a Conqueſt, to ſhew her conſtancy, ſo ſodainly changed the ineſtimable ioy of our iocond Louer, into as heauy ſorrow and diſaſter. For, foure houres were not fully compleated, ſince his departure from the Rhodians, but darke night came vpon them, and he ſitting conuerſing with his faire Miſtreſſe, in the ſweeteſt ſolace of his ſoule; the winds began to blow roughly, the Seas ſwelled angerly, and a tempeſt aroſe impetuouſly, that no man could ſee what his duty was to do, in ſuch a great vnexpected diſtreſſe, nor how to warrant themſelues from periſhing.

If this accident were diſpleaſing to poore *Chynon*, I thinke the queſtion were in vaine demanded: for now it ſeemeth to him, that the Godds had granted his cheefe deſire, to the end he ſhould dye with the greater anguiſh, in loſing both his loue and life together. His friends likewiſe, felte the ſelfe-ſame affliction, but eſpecially *Iphigenia*, who wept and greeued beyond all meaſure, to ſee the ſhip beaten with ſuch ſtormy billowes, as threatned her ſinking euery minute. Impatiently ſhe curſed the loue of *Chynon*, greatly blaming his deſperate boldneſſe, and maintaining, that ſo violent a tempeſt could neuer happen, but onely by the Gods diſpleaſure, who would not permit him to haue a wife againſt their will; and therefore thus puniſhed his proud preſumption, not onely in his vnauoidable death, but alſo that her life muſt periſh for company.

She continuing in theſe wofull lamentations, and the Mariners labouring all in vaine, becauſe the violence of the tempeſt encreaſed more and more, ſo that euery moment they expected wracking: they were carried (contrary to their owne knowledge) very neere vnto the Iſle of *Rhodes*, which they being no way able to auoyd, and vtterly ignorant of the Coaſt; for ſafety of their liues, they laboured to land there if poſſibly they might. Wherein Fortune was ſomewhat furtherous to them, driuing them into a ſmall gulfe of the Sea, whereinto (but a little while before) the Rhodians, from whom *Chynon* had taken *Iphigenia*, were newly entred with their ſhip. Nor had they any knowledge each of other, till the breake of day (which made the heauens to looke more clearly) gaue them diſcouery of being within a flight ſhoote together. *Chynon* looking forth, and eſpy-

ing

ing the ſame ſhip which he had left the day before, hee grew exceeding ſorrowfull, as fearing that which after followed, and therefore hee willed the Mariners, to get away from her by all their beſt endeauour, and let fortune afterward diſpoſe of them as ſhe pleaſed; for into a worſe place they could not come, nor fall into the like danger.

The Mariners employed their very vtmoſt paines, and all proued but loſſe of time: for the winde was ſo ſterne, and the waues ſo turbulent, that ſtill they droue them the contrary way: ſo that ſtriuing to get forth of the gulfe, whether they would or no, they were driuen on land, and inſtantly knowne to the Rhodians, whereof they were not a little ioyfull. The men of *Rhodes* being landed, ran preſently to the neere-neighbouring Villages, where dwelt diuers worthy Gentlemen, to whom they reported the arriuall of *Chynon*, what fortune befell them at Sea, and that *Iphigenia* might now be recouered againe with chaſtiſement to *Chynon* for his bold inſolence. They being very ioyfull of theſe good newes, tooke ſo many men as they could of the ſame Village, and ran immediately to the Sea ſide, where *Chynon* being newly Landed and his people, intending flight into a neere adioyning Forreſt, for defence of himſelfe and *Iphigenia*, they were all taken, led thence to the Village, and afterwards to the chiefe City of *Rhodes*.

No ſooner were they arriued, but *Paſimondo*, the intended Husband for *Iphigenia* (who had already heard the tydings) went and complained to the Senate, who appointed a Gentleman of *Rhodes* named *Lyſimachus*, and being that yeere ſoueraigne Magiſtrate ouer the *Rhodians*, to go well prouided for the apprehenſion of *Chynon* and his company, committing them to priſon, which accordingly was done. In this manner, the poore vnfortunate louer *Chynon*, loſt his faire *Iphigenia*, hauing won her in ſo ſhort a while before, and ſcarſely requited with ſo much as a kiſſe. But as for *Iphigenia*, ſhe was royally welcommed by many Lords and Ladies of *Rhodes*, who ſo kindely comforted her, that ſhe ſoone forgotte all her greefe and trouble on the Sea, remaining in company of thoſe Ladies and Gentlewomen, vntill the day determined for her marriage.

At the earneſt entreaty of diuers *Rhodian* Gentlemen, who were in the Ship with *Iphigenia*, and had their liues courteouſly ſaued by *Chynon*: both he and his friends had their liues likewiſe ſpared, although *Paſimondo* laboured importunately, to haue them all put to death; onely they were condemned to perpetuall impriſonment, which (you muſt thinke) was moſt grecuous to them, as being now hopeleſſe of any deliuerance. But in the meane time, while *Paſimondo* was ordering his nuptiall preparation, Fortune ſeeming to repent the wrongs ſhe had done to *Chynon*, prepared a new accident, whereby to comfort him in this deepe diſtreſſe, and in ſuch manner as I will relate vnto you.

Paſimondo had a Brother, yonger then he in yeeres, but not a iot inferiour to him in vertue, whoſe name was *Hermiſda*, and long time the caſe had bene in queſtion, for his taking to wife a faire young Gentlewoman of *Rhodes*, called *Caſſandra*; whom *Lyſimachus* the Gouernour loued very dear-

dearly,and hindred her marriage with *Hormiſda*, by diuers ſtrange accidents.Now *Paſimondo* perceiuing,that his owne Nuptials required much coſt and ſolemnity, hee thought it very conuenient,that one day might ſerue for both their Weddings,which elſe would lanch into more lauiſh expences, and therefore concluded, that his brother *Hormiſda* ſhould marry *Caſſandra*, at the ſame time as he wedded *Iphigenia*. Hereupon, he conſulted with the Gentlewomans parents, who liking the motion as well as he, the determination was ſet downe, and one day to effect the duties of both.

When this came to the hearing of *Lyſimachus*, it was very greatly diſpleaſing to him,becauſe now he ſaw himſelfe vtterly depriued of al hope to attaine the iſſue of his deſire, if *Hormiſda* receiued *Caſſandra* in marriage. Yet being a very wiſe and worthy man,he diſſembled his diſtaſte, and began to conſider on ſome apt meanes, whereby to diſappoint the marriage once more, which he found impoſſible to be done, except it were by way of rape or ſtealth. And that did not appeere to him any difficult matter,in regard of his Office & Authority: onely in would ſeeme diſhoneſt in him, by giuing ſuch an vnfitting example. Neuertheleſſe,after long deliberation,honour gaue way to loue,and reſolutely he concluded to ſteale her away,whatſoeuer became of it.

Nothing wanted now, but a conuenient company to aſſiſt him, & the order how to haue it done. Then he remembred *Chynon* and his friends, whom he detained as his priſoners,and perſwaded himſelfe,that he could not haue a more faithfull friend in ſuch a buſines,then *Chynon* was. Hereupon,the night following, he ſent for him into his Chamber, and being alone by themſelues,thus he began. *Chynon* (quoth he) as the Gods are very bountifull, in beſtowing their bleſſings on men, ſo do they therein moſt wiſely make proofe of their vertues, & ſuch as they finde firme and conſtant,in all occurrences which may happen,then they make worthy (as valiant ſpirits) of the very beſt and higheſt merites. Now,they being willing to haue more certain experience of thy vertues,then thoſe which heretofore thou haſt ſhewne,within the bounds and limits of thy fathers poſſeſſions, which I know to be ſuperabounding: perhaps do intend to preſent thee other occaſions, of more important weight and conſequence.

For firſt of all(as I haue heard) by the piercing ſolicitudes of loue, of a ſenſeleſſe creature,that made thee to become a man endued with reaſon. Afterward,by aduerſe fortune,and now againe by weariſome impriſonment, it ſeemeth that they are deſirous to make tryall,whether thy manly courage be changed,or no,from that which heretofore is was,when thou enioyedſt a matchleſſe beauty, and loſt her againe in ſo ſhort a while. Wherefore, if thy vertue be ſuch as it hath bin, the Gods can neuer giue thee any bleſſing more worthy acceptance,then ſhe whom they are now minded to beſtow on thee: in which reſpect,to the end that thou mayſt re-aſſume thy wanted heroicke ſpirit, and become more couragious then euer heretofore,I will acquaint thee withall more at large.

Vnder-

Vnderſtand then Noble *Chynon*, that *Paſimondo*, the onely glad man of thy masfortune, and diligent ſutor after thy death, maketh all haſt hee can poſſibly deuiſe to do, to celebrate his marriage with thy faire Miſtreſſe: becauſe he would plead poſſeſſion of the prey, which Fortune (when ſhe ſmiled) did firſt beſtow, and (afterward frowning) tooke from thee againe. Now, that it muſt needs be very irkeſome to thee (at leaſt if thy loue bee ſuch, as I am perſwaded it is) I partly can collect from my ſelfe, being intended to be wronged by his brother *Hormiſda*, euen in the ſelfeſame maner, and on his marriage day, by taking faire *Caſſandra* from me, the onely Iewell of my loue and life. For the preuention of two ſuch notorious iniuries, I ſee that Fortune hath left vs no other meanes, but onely the vertue of our courages, and the helpe of our right hands, by preparing our ſelues to Armes, opening a way to thee, by a ſecond rape or ſtealth; and to me the firſt, for abſolute poſſeſſion of our diuine Miſtreſſes. Wherefore, if thou art deſirous to recouer thy loſſe, I will not onely pronounce liberty to thee (which I thinke thou doſt little care for without her) but dare alſo aſſure thee to enioy *Iphigenia*, ſo thou wilt aſſiſt me in mine enterprize, and follow me in my fortune, if the Gods do let them fall into our power.

You may well imagine, that *Chynons* diſmayed ſoule was not a little cheared at theſe ſpeeches; and therefore, without crauing any long reſpit of time for anſwer, thus he replyed. Lord *Lyſimachus*, in ſuch a buſines as this is, you cannot haue a faſter friend then my ſelfe, at leaſt, if ſuch good hap may betide me, as you haue more then halfe promiſed: and therefore do no more but command what you would haue to be effected by mee, and make no doubt of my courage in the execution: whereon *Lyſimachus* made this anſwer. Know then *Chynon* (quoth he) that three dayes hence, theſe marriages are to bee celebrated in the houſes of *Paſimondo* and *Hormiſda*: vpon which day, thou, thy friends, and my ſelfe (with ſome others, in whom I repoſe eſpeciall truſt) by the friendly fauour of night, will enter into their houſes, while they are in the middeſt of their Iouiall feaſting; and (ſeizing on the two Birdes) beare them thence to a Shippe, which I will haue lye in ſecret, waiting for our comming, and kill all ſuch as ſhall preſume to impeach vs. This direction gaue great contentment to *Chynon*, who remained ſtill in priſon, without reuealing a word to his owne friends, vntill the limited time was come.

Vpon the Wedding day, performed with great and magnificent Triumph, there was not a corner in the Brethrens houſes, but it ſung ioy in the higheſt key. *Lyſimachus*, after he had ordred all things as they ought to be, and the houre for diſpatch approached neere; hee made a diuiſion in three parts, of *Chynon*, his followers, and his owne friends, being all well armed vnder their outward habites. Hauing firſt vſed ſome encouraging ſpeeches, for more reſolute proſecution of the enterprize, hee ſent one troope ſecretly to the Port, that they might not bee hindred of going aboord the ſhip, when the vrgent neceſſity ſhould require it. Paſſing with the other two traines of *Paſimondo*, he left the one at the doore, that

ſuch

ſuch as were in the houſe, might not ſhut them vp faſt, and ſo impeach their paſſage forth. Then with *Chynon*, & the third band of Confederates, he aſceuded the ſtaires vp into the Hall, where he found the Brides with ſtore of Ladies and Gentlewomen, all ſitting in comely order at Supper. Ruſhing in roughly among the attendants, downe they threw the Tables, and each of them laying hold of his Miſtris, deliuered them into the hands of their followers, commanding that they ſhould bee carried aboord the ſhip, for auoiding of further inconueniences.

This hurrie and amazement being in the houſe, the Brides weeping, the Ladies lamenting, and all the ſeruants confuſedly wondering; *Chynon* and *Lyſimachus* (with their Friends) hauing their weapons drawn in their hands, made all oppoſers to giue them way, and ſo gayned the ſtair head for their owne deſcending. There ſtood *Paſimonda*, with an huge long Staffe in his hand, to hinder their paſſage downe the ſtayres; but *Chynon* ſaluted him ſo ſoundly on the head, that it being cleft in twaine, he fell dead before his feete. His Brother *Hormiſda* came to his reſcue, and ſped in the ſelfe-ſame manner as he had done; ſo did diuers other beſide, whom the companions to *Lyſimachus* and *Chynon*, either ſlew out-right, or wounded.

So they left the houſe, filled with blood, teares, and out-cries, going on together, without any hinderance, and ſo brought both the Brides aboord the ſhip, which they rowed away inſtantly with their Oares. For, now the ſhore was full of armed people, who came in reſcue of the ſtolne Ladies: but all in vaine, becauſe they were lanched into the main, and ſayled on merrily towards *Candye*. Where being arriued, they were worthily entertained by honourable Friends and Kinſmen, who pacified all vnkindneſſes betweene them and their Miſtreſſes: And, hauing accepted them in lawfull marriage, there they liued in no meane ioy and contentment: albeit there was a long and troubleſome difference (about theſe rapes) betweene *Rhodes* and *Cyprus*.

But yet in the end, by the meanes of Noble Friends and Kindred on either ſide, labouring to haue ſuch diſcontment appeaſed, endangering warre betweene the Kingdomes: after a limited time of baniſhment, *Chynon* returned ioyfully with his *Iphigenia* home to *Cyprus*, and *Lyſimachus* with his beloued *Caſſandra* vnto *Rhodes*, each liuing in their ſeuerall Countries, with much felicity.

Faire Constance *of* Liparis, *fell in loue with* Martuccio Gomito: *and hearing that he was dead, desperately she entred into a Barke, which being transported by the windes to* Susa *in* Barbary, *from thence she went to* Thunis, *where she found him to be liuing. There she made her selfe knowne to him, and he being in great authority, as a priuy Counsellor to the King: he married the saide* Constance, *and returned richly home with hir, to the Island of* Liparis.

The Second Nouell.

Wherein is declared, the firme loyaltie of a true Louer: And how Fortune doth sometime humble men, to raise them afterward to a farre higher degree.



WHen the Queene perceiued, that the Nouell recited by *Pamphilus* was concluded, which she graced with especiall commendations: shee commanded Madam *Æmilia*, to take her turne as next in order; whereupon she thus began. Me thinkes it is a matter of equity, that euery one should take delight in those things, whereby the recompence may be noted, answerable to their one affection. And because I rather desire to walke along by the paths of pleasure, then dwell on any ceremonious or scrupulous affectation, I shall the more gladly obey our Queene to day, then yesterday I did our melancholly King.

Vnderstand then (Noble Ladies) that neere to *Sicily*, there is a small Island, commonly called *Liparis*, wherein (not long since) liued a yong Damosell, named *Constance*, born of very sufficient parentage in the same Island. There dwelt also a yong man called *Martuccio Gomito*, of comely feature, well conditioned, and not vnexpert in many vertuous qualities; affecting *Constance* in harty manner: and she so answerable to him in

in the ſame kinde, that to be in his company, was her onely felicity. *Martuccio* coueting to enioy her in marriage, made his intent knowne to her Father: who vpbraiding him with pouerty, tolde him plainly that ſhe ſhould not haue her. *Martuccio* greeuing to ſee himſelfe thus deſpiſed, becauſe he was poore: made ſuch good meanes, that he was prouided of a ſmall Barke; and calling ſuch friends (as he thought fit) to his aſſociation, made a ſolemne vow, that he would neuer returne backe to *Liparis*, vntill he was rich, and in better condition.

In the nature and courſe of a Rouer or Pirate, ſo put thence to ſea, coaſting all about *Barbarie*, robbing and ſpoyling ſuch as he met with; who were of no greater ſtrength then himſelfe: wherein Fortune was ſo fauourable to him, that he became wealthy in a very ſhort while. But as felicities are not alwayes permament, ſo he and his followers, not contenting themſelues with ſufficient riches: by greedy ſeeking to get more, happened to be taken by certaine ſhips of the Sarazins, and ſo were robbed themſelues of all that they had gotten, yet they reſiſted them ſtoutly a long while together, though it proued to the loſſe of many liues among them. When the Sarazens had ſunke his ſhip in the Sea, they tooke him with them to *Thunis*, where he was impriſoned, and liued in extreameſt miſery.

Newes came to *Liparis*, not onely by one, but many more beſide, that all thoſe which departed thence in the ſmall Barke with *Martuccio*, were drowned in the Sea, and not a man eſcaped. When *Conſtance*, heard theſe vnwelcome tydings (who was exceeding full of greefe, for his ſo deſperate departure) ſhe wept and lamented extraordinarily, deſiring now rather to dye, then liue any longer. Yet ſhe had not the heart, to lay any violent hand on her ſelfe, but rather to end her dayes by ſome new kinde of neceſſity. And departing priuately from her Fathers houſe, ſhe went to the Port or Hauen, where (by chance) ſhe found a ſmall Fiſher-boate, lying diſtant from the other veſſels, the owners whereof being all gone on ſhore, and it well furniſhed with Maſts, Sailes, and Oares, ſhe entred into it; and putting forth the Oares, being ſome-what skilfull in ſayling, (as generally all the Women of that Iſland are) ſhe ſo well guided the Sailes, Rudder, and Oares, that ſhe was quickly farre off from the Land, and ſoly remained at the mercy of the windes. For thus ſhe had reſolued with her ſelfe, that the Boat being vncharged, and without a guide (would either be ouer-whelmed by the windes, or ſplit in peeces againſt ſome Rocke; by which meanes ſhe could eſcape although ſhe would, but (as it wss her deſire) muſt needs be drowned.

In this determination, wrapping a mantle about her head, and lying downe weeping in the boats bottome, ſhe hourely expected her finall expiration: but it fell out otherwiſe, and contrary to her deſperate intention, becauſe the wind turning to the North, and blowing very gently, without diſturbing the Seas a iot, they conducted the ſmall Boat in ſuch ſort, that after the night of her entering into it, and the morrowes ſailing vntill the euening, it came within an hundre leagues of *Thunis* and toa

ſtrond neere a Towne called *Suſa.* The young Damoſell knew not whether ſhe were on the ſea or land; as one, who not by any accident happning, lifted vp her head to looke about her, neither intended euer to doe. Now it came to paſſe, that as the boate was driuen to the ſhore, a poore woman ſtood at the Sea ſide, waſhing certaine Fiſhermens Nets; and ſeeing the boate comming towards her vnder ſaile, without any perſon appearing in it, ſhe wondred thereat not a little. It being cloſe at the ſhore, and ſhe thinking the Fiſhermen to be aſleepe therein: ſtept boldly, and looked into the boate, where ſhe ſaw not any body, but onely the poore diſtreſſed Damoſell, whoſe ſorrowes hauing brought her now into a ſound ſleepe, the woman gaue many cals before ſhe could awake her, which at the length ſhe did, and looked very ſtrangely about her.

The poore woman perceyuing by her habite that ſhe was a Chriſtian, demanded of her (in ſpeaking Latine) how it was poſſible for her, being all alone in the boate, to arriue there in this manner? When *Conſtance*, heard her ſpeake the Latine tongue, ſhe began to doubt, leaſt ſome contrary winde had turned her backe to *Liparis* againe, and ſtarting vp ſodainly, to looke with better aduice about her, ſhee ſaw her ſelfe at Land: and not knowing the Countrey, demanded of the poore woman where ſhe was? Daughter (quoth ſhe) you are heere hard by *Suſa* in *Barbarie.* Which *Conſtance* hearing, and plainly perceyuing, that death had denied to end her miſeries, fearing leaſt ſhe ſhould receiue ſome diſhonour, in ſuch a barbarous vnkinde Country, and not knowing what ſhould now become of her, ſhee ſate downe by the boates ſide, wringing her hands, and weeping bitterly.

The good Woman did greatly compaſſionate her caſe, and preuailed ſo well by gentle ſpeeches, that ſhe conducted her into her owne poore habitation, where at length ſhe vnderſtoode, by what meanes ſhee happned thither ſo ſtrangely. And perceyuing her to be faſting, ſhe ſet ſuch homely bread as ſhe had before her, a few ſmall Fiſhes, and a Crewſe of Water, praying her for to accept of that poore entertainment, which meere neceſſity compelled her to do, and ſhewed her ſelfe very thankefull for it.

Conſtance hearing that ſhe ſpake the Latine language ſo well; deſired to know what ſhe was. Whereto the old woman thus anſwered: Gentlewoman (quoth ſhe) I am of *Trapanum*, named *Carapreſa*, and am a ſeruant in this Countrey to certaine Chriſtian Fiſhermen. The young Maiden (albeit ſhe was very full of ſorrow) hearing her name to be *Carapreſa*, conceiued it as a good augury to her ſelfe, and that ſhe had heard the name before, although ſhe knew not what occaſion ſhould moue her thus to do. Now began her hopes to quicken againe, and yet ſhe could not relie vpon what ground; nor was ſhe ſo deſirous of death as before, but made more precious eſtimation of her life, and without any further declaration of her ſelfe or Countrey, ſhe entreated the good woman (euen for charities ſake) to take pitty on her youth, and helpe her with ſuch good aduice, to preuent all iniuries which might happen to her, in ſuch a ſolitary wofull condition.

Carapresa hauing heard her request, like a good woman as she was, left *Constance* in her poore Cottage, and went hastily to leaue her nets in safety: which being done, she returned backe againe, and couering *Constance* with her Mantle, led her on to *Susa* with her, where being arriued, the good woman began in this manner. *Constance*, I will bring thee to the house of a very worthy Sarazin Lady, to whom I haue done many honest seruices, according as she pleased to command me. She is an ancient woman, full of charity, and to her I will commend thee as best I may, for I am well assured, that she will gladly entertaine thee, and vse thee as if thou wert her own daughter. Now, let it be thy part, during thy time of remaining with her, to employ thy vtmost diligence in pleasing her, by deseruing and gaining her grace, till heauen shall blesse thee with better fortune: and as she promised, so she performed.

The Sarazine Lady, being well stept into yeares, vpon the commendable speeches deliuered by *Carapresa*, did the more seriously fasten her eye on *Constance*, and compassion prouoking her to teares, she tooke her by the hand, and (in louing manner) kissed her fore-head. So she led her further into her house, where dwelt diuers other women (but not one man) all exercising themselues in seuerall labours, as working in all sorts of silke, with Imbroideries of Gold and Siluer, and sundry other excellent Arts beside, which in short time were very familiar to *Constance*, and so pleasing grew her behauiour to the old Lady, and all the rest beside; that they loued and delighted in her wonderfully, and (by little and little) she attained to the speaking of their language, although it were very harsh and difficult.

Constance continuing thus in the old Ladies seruice at *Susa*, and thought to be dead or lost in her owne Fathers house; it fortuned, that one reigning then as King of *Thunis*, who named himselfe *Mariabdela*: there was a young Lord of great birth, and very powerfull, who liued as then in *Granada*, and pleaded that the Kingdome of *Thunis* belonged to him. In which respect, he mustred together a mighty Army, and came to assault the King, as hoping to expell him. These newes comming to the eare of *Martuccio Gomito*, who spake the Barbarian Language perfectly; and hearing it reported, that the King of *Thunis* made no meane preparation for his owne defence: he conferred with one of his keepers, who had the custody of him, and the rest taken with him, saying: If (quoth he) I could haue meanes to speake with the King, and he were pleased to allow of my counsell, I can enstruct him in such a course, as shall assure him to win the honor of the field. The Guard reported these speeches to his Master, who presently acquainted the King therewith, and *Martuccio* being sent for; he was commanded to speake his minde: Whereupon he began in this manner.

My gracious Lord, during the time that I haue frequented your countrey, I haue heedfully obserued, that the Militarie Discipline vsed in your fights and battailes, dependeth more vpon your Archers, then any other men imployed in your warre. And therefore, if it could be so ordered,

that this kinde of Artillery may faile in your enemies Campe, and yours be ſufficiently furniſhed therewith, you neede make no doubt of winning the battaile: whereto the King thus replyed. Doubtleſſe, if ſuch an act were poſſible to be done, it would giue great hope of ſucceſſefull preuailing. Sir, ſaid *Martuccio*, if you pleaſe it may be done, and I can quickly reſolue you how. Let the ſtrings of your Archers Bowes be made more ſoft and gentle, then thoſe which heretofore they haue formerly vſed; and next, let the nockes of the Arrowes be ſo prouided, as not to receiue any other, then thoſe pliant gentle ſtrings. But this muſt be done ſo ſecretly, that your enemies may haue no knowledge thereof, leaſt they ſhould prouide themſelues in the ſame manner. Now the reaſon (Gracious Lord) why thus I counſell you, is to this end. When the Archers on the Enemies ſide haue ſhot their Arrowes at your men, and yours in the like maner at them: it followeth, that (vpon meere conſtraint) they muſt gather vp your Arrowes, to ſhoote them backe againe at you, for ſo long while as the battell endureth, as no doubt but your men wil do the like to them. But your enemies will finde themſelues much deceiued, becauſe they can make no vſe of your peoples Arrowes, in regard that the nockes are too narrow to receiue their boyſtrous ſtrings. Which will fall out contrary with your followers, for the pliant ſtrings belonging to your Bowes, are as apt for their enemies great nockt Arrowes, as their owne, and ſo they ſhall haue free vſe of both, reſeruing them in plentifull ſtore, when your aduerſaries muſt ſtand vnfurniſhed of any, but them that they cannot any way vſe.

This counſell pleaſed the King very highly, and he being a Prince of great vnderſtanding, gaue order to haue it accordingly followed, and thereby valiantly vanquiſhed his enemies. Heereupon, *Martuccio* came to be great in his grace, as alſo conſequently rich, and ſeated in no meane place of authority. Now as worthy and commendable actions are ſoone ſpread abroad, in honor of the man by whom they hapned: euen ſo the fame of this rare got victory, was quickly noyſed throughout the Countrey, and came to the hearing of poore *Conſtance*, that *Martuccio Gomito* (whom ſhe ſuppoſed ſo long ſince to be dead) was liuing, and in honourable condition. The loue which formerly ſhe bare vnto him, being not altogether extinct in her heart; of a ſmall ſparke, brake forth into a ſodaine flame, and ſo encreaſed day by day, that her hope (being before almoſt quite dead) reuiued againe in chearfull manner.

Hauing imparted all her fortunes to the good old Lady with whom ſhe dwelt; ſhe told her beſide, that ſhe had an earneſt deſire to ſee *Thunis*, to ſatisfie her eyes as well as her eares, concerning the rumor blazed abroad. The good old Lady commended her deſire, and (euen as if ſhe had bene her Mother) tooke her with her aboord a Barke, and ſo ſayled thence to *Thunis*, where both ſhe and *Conſtance* found honourable welcome, in the houſe of a kinſman to the Sarazin Lady. *Carapreſa* alſo went along with them thither, and her they ſent abroad into the City, to vnderſtand the newes of *Martuccio Gomito*. After they knew for a certainty

that

that he was liuing) and in great authoriry about the King, according as the former report went of him. Then the good old Lady, being desirous to let *Martuccio* know, that his faire friend *Constance* was come thither to see him; went her selfe to the place of his abiding, and spake vnto him in this manner. Noble *Martuccio*, there is a seruant of thine in my house, which came from *Liparis*, and requireth to haue a little priuate conference with thee: but because I durst not trust any other with the message, my selfe (at her entreaty) am come to acquaint thee therewith. *Martuccio* gaue her kinde and hearty thankes, and then went along with her to the house.

No sooner did *Constance* behold him, but she was ready to dye with conceite of ioy, and being vnable to containe her passion: sodainely she threw her armes about his necke, and in meere compassion of her many misfortunes, as also the instant solace of her soule (not being able to vtter one word) the teares trickled abundantly downe her cheekes. *Martuccio* also seeing his faire friend, was ouercome with exceeding admiration, and stood awhile, as not knowing what to say; till venting forth a vehement sighe, thus he spake. My deerest loue *Constance*! Art thou yet liuing? It is a tedious long while since I heard thou wast lost, and neuer any tydings knowne of thee in thine owne Fathers house. With which words, the teares standing in his eyes, most louingly he embraced her, *Constance* recounted to him all her fortunes, and what kindnesse she had receyued from the Sarazine Lady, since her first houre of comming to her. And after much other discourse passing betweene them, *Martuccio* departed from her, and returning to the King his master, tolde him all the history of his fortunes, and those beside of his Loue *Constance*, being purposely minded (with his gracious liking) to marry her according to the Christian Law.

The King was much amazed at so many strange accidents, and sending for *Constance* to come before him; from her owne mouth he heard the whole relation of her continued affection to *Martuccio*, whereupon hee saide. No trust me faire Damosell, thou hast dearely deserued him to be thy husband. Then sending for very costly Iewels, and rich presents, the one halfe of them he gaue to her, and the other to *Martuccio*, graunting them license withall, to marry according to their owne mindes.

Martuccio did many honors, and gaue great gifts to the aged Sarazine Lady, with whom *Constance* had liued so kindly respected: which although she had no neede of, neither euer expected any such rewarding; yet (conquered by their vrgent importunity, especially *Constance*, who could not be thankfull enough to her) she was enforced to receiue them, and taking her leaue of them weeping, sayled backe againe to *Susa*.

Within a short while after, the King licensing their departure thence, they entred into a small Barke, and *Carapresa* with them, sailing on with prosperous gales of winde, vntill they arriued at *Liparis*, where they were entertained with generall reioycing. And because their marriage vvas not sufficiently performed at *Thunis*, in regard of diuers Christian ceremo-

monies there wanting, their Nuptials were againe moſt honourably ſolemnized, and they liued (many yeares after) in health and much happineſſe.

Pedro Bocamazzo, *eſcaping away with a yong Damoſell which he loued, named* Angelina, *met with Theeues in his iourney. The Damoſell flying fearfully into a Forreſt, by chance arriueth at a Caſtle.* Pedro *being taken by the Theeues, and happening afterward to eſcape from them; commeth (accidentally) to the ſame Caſtle where* Angelina *was. And marrying her, they then returned home to Rome.*

The Third Nouell.

Wherein, the ſeuerall powers both of Loue and Fortune, is more at large approued.



THere was not any one in the whole company, but much commended the Nouell reported by Madam *Æmilia*, and when the Queene perceiued it was ended, ſhe turned towards Madam *Eliza*, commanding her to continue on their delightfull exerciſe: whereto ſhe declaring her willing obedience, began to ſpeake thus. Courteous Ladies, I remember one vnfortunate night, which happened to two Louers, that were not indued with the greateſt diſcretion. But becauſe they had very many faire and happy dayes afterwards, I am the more willing for to let you heare it.

In the City of *Rome*, which (in times paſt) was called the Lady and Miſtreſſe of the world, though now ſcarſely ſo good as the waiting maid: there dwelt ſometime a yong Gentleman, named *Pedro Boccamazzo*, deſcended from one of the moſt honorable families in *Rome*, who was much ena-

enamoured of a beautifull Gentlewoman, called *Angelina*, Daughter to one named *Giglinozzo Saullo*, whoſe fortunes were none of the faireſt, yet he greatly eſteemed among the Romanes. The entercourſe of loue betweene theſe twaine, had ſo equally enſtructed their hearts and ſoule, that it could hardly be iudged which of them was the more feruent in affection. But he, not being inured to ſuch oppreſſing paſſions, and therefore the leſſe able to ſupport them, except he were ſure to compaſſe his deſire, plainly made the motion, that he might enioy her in honourable mariage. Which his parents and friends hearing, they went to conferre with him, blaming him with ouer-much baſeneſſe, ſo farre to diſgrace himſelfe and his ſtocke. Beſide, they aduiſed the Father to the Maid, neither to credit what *Pedro* ſaide in this caſe, or to liue in hope of any ſuch match, becauſe they all did wholly deſpiſe it.

Pedro perceiuing, that the way was ſhut vp, whereby (and none other) he was to mount the Ladder of his hopes; began to wax weary of longer liuing: and if he could haue won her fathers conſent, he would haue maried her in the deſpight of all his friends. Neuertheleſſe, he had a conceit hammering in his head, which if the maid would bee as forward as himſelfe, ſhould bring the matter to full effect. Letters and ſecret intelligences paſſing ſtill betweene, at length he vnderſtood her ready reſolution, to aduenture with him thorough all fortunes whatſoeuer, concluding on their ſodaine and ſecret flight from Rome. For which *Pedro* did ſo well prouide, that very early in a morning, and well mounted on horſebacke, they tooke the way leading vnto *Alagna*, where *Pedro* had ſome honeſt friends, in whom he repoſed eſpeciall truſt. Riding on thus thorow the countrey, hauing no leyſure to accompliſh their marriage, becauſe they ſtood in feare of purſuite: they were ridden aboue foure leagues from Rome, ſtill ſhortning the way with their amorous diſcourſing.

It fortuned, that *Pedro* hauing no certaine knowledge of the way, but following a trackt guiding too farre on the left hand; rode quite out of courſe, and came at laſt within ſight of a ſmall Caſtle, out of which (before they were aware) yſſued twelue Villaines, whom *Angelina* ſooner eſpyed, then *Pedro* could do; which made her cry out to him, ſaying: Helpe deere Loue to ſaue vs, or elſe we ſhall be aſſayled. *Pedro* then turning his horſe ſo expeditiouſly as he could, and giuing him the ſpurres as need required; mainly he gallopped into a neere adioyning Forreſt, more minding the following of *Angelina*, then any direction of his way, or them that endeauoured to bee his hindrance. So that by often winding and turning about, as the paſſage appeared troubleſome to him, when he thought himſelfe free and furtheſt from them, he was round engirt, and ſeized on by them. When they had made him to diſmount from his houſe, queſtioning him of whence and what he was, and he reſoluing them therein, they fell into a ſecret conſultation, ſaying thus among themſelues. This man is a friend to our deadly enemies, how can wee then otherwiſe diſpoſe of him, but dreame him of all he hath, and in deſpight of the *Orſini* (men in nature hatefull to vs) hang him vp heere on one of theſe Trees?

All

All of them agreeing in this diſmall reſoluti n,they commanded *Pedro* to put off his garments,which he yeelding to do (albeit vnwillingly) it ſo fell out,that fiue and twenty other theeues,came ſodainly ruſhing in vpon them,crying,Kill,kill,and ſpare not a man.

They which before had ſurprized *Pedro*, deſiring now to ſhift for their owne ſafetie, left him ſtanding quaking in his ſhirt, and ſo ranne away mainely to defend themſelues. Which the new crew perceyuing, and that their number farre exceeded the other : they followed to robbe them of what they had gotten, accounting it as a preſent purchaſe for them. Which when *Pedro* perceyued, and ſaw none tarrying to prey vppon him; hee put on his cloathes againe, and mounting on his owne Horſe, gallopped that way, vvhich *Angelina* before had taken : yet could he not deſcry any tracke or path, or ſo much as the footing of a Horſe ; but thought himſelfe in ſufficient ſecurity,being rid of them that firſt firſt ſeized on him, and alſo of the reſt, which followed in the purſuite of th em.

For the loſſe of his beloued *Angelina*, he was the moſt wofull man in the world, wandering one while this way, and then againe another, calling for her all about the Forreſt, without any anſwere returning to him. And not daring to ride backe againe, on he trauailed ſtill,not knowing where to make his arriuall. And hauing formerly heard of ſauage rauenous beaſts,which commonly liue in ſuch vnfrequented Forreſts: he not onely was in feare of looſing his owne life, but alſo deſpayred much for his *Angelina*, leaſt ſome Lyon or Woolfe, had torne her body in peeces.

Thus rode on poore vnfortunate *Pedro*, vntill the breake of day appeared,not finding any meanes to get forth of the Forreſt,ſtill crying and calling for his fayre friend, riding many times backeward, when as hee thought hee rode forward, vntill hee became ſo weake and faint,what with extreame feare, lowd calling, and continuing ſo long awhile without any ſuſtenance, that the whole day being thus ſpent in vaine, and darke night ſodainly come vppon him, he was not able to hold out any longer.

Now was he in farre worſe caſe then before, not knowing where,or how to diſpoſe of himſelfe, or what might beſt be done in ſo great a neceſſity. From his Horſe he alighted, and tying him by the bridle vnto a great tree, vppe he climbed into the ſame Tree, fearing to be deuoured (in the night time) by ſome wilde beaſt, chooſing rather to let his Horſe periſh, then himſelfe. Within a while after, the Moone beganne to riſe, and the skies appeared bright and cleare : yet durſt hee not nod, or take a nap,leaſt he ſhould fall out of the tree; but ſate ſtill greeuing,ſighing, and mourning, deſparing of euer ſeeing his *Angelina* any more, for he could not be comforted by the ſmalleſt hopefull perſwaſion,that any good Fortune might befall her in ſuch a deſolate Forreſt, where nothing but diſmall feares was to be expected, and no likelihood that ſhe ſhould eſcape with life.

Now,

Now, concerning poore affrighted *Angelina*, who (as you heard before) knew not any place of refuge to flye vnto: but euen as it pleased the horse to carry her: she entred so farre into the Forrest, that she could not deuise where to seeke her owne safety. And therefore, euen as it fared with her friend *Pedro*, in the same manner did it fall out with her, wandering the whole night, and all the day following, one while taking one hopefull tracke, and then another, calling, weeping, wringing her hands, and greeuously complaining of her hard fortune. At the length, perceiuing that *Pedro* came not to her at all, she found a little path (which she lighted on by great good fortune) euen when dark night was apace drawing, and followed it so long, till it brought her within the sight of a small poore Cottage, whereto she rode on so fast as she could; and found therein a very old man, hauing a wife rather more aged then he, who seeing her to be without company, the old man spake thus vnto her.

Faire Daughter (quoth he) whether wander you at such an vnseasonable houre, and all alone in a place so desolate? The Damosell weeping, replied; that she had lost her company in the Forrest, and enquired how neere shee was to *Alagna*. Daughter (answered the old man) this is not the way to *Alagna*, for it is aboue six leagues hence. Then shee desired to know, how farre off she was from such houses, where she might haue any reasonable lodging? There are none so neere, said the old man, that day light will giue you leaue to reach. May it please you then good Father (replied *Angelina*) seeing I cannot trauaile any whether else; for Gods sake, to let me remaine heere with you this night. Daughter answered the good old man, we can gladly giue you entertainement here, for this night, in such poore manner as you see: but let mee tell you withall, that vp and downe these woods (as well by night as day) walke companies of all conditions, and rather enemies then friends, who do vs many greeuous displeasures and harmes. Now if by misfortune, you being here, any such people should come, and seeing you so louely faire, as indeed you are, offer you any shame or iniurie: Alas you see, it lies not in our power to lend you any help or succour. I thought it good (therefore) to acquaint you heerewith, because if any such mischance do happen, you should not afterward complaine of vs.

The yong Maiden, seeing the time to be so farre spent, albeit the old mans words did much dismay her, yet she thus replyed. If it be the will of heauen, both you and I shall be defended from any misfortune: but if any such mischance do happen, I account the meanes lesse deseruing grief, if I fall into the mercy of man, then to be deuoured by wild beasts in this Forrest. So, being dismounted from her horse, and entred into the homely house; shee supt poorely with the old man and his wife, with such meane cates as their prouision affoorded: and after supper, lay downe in her garments on the same poore pallet, where the aged couple tooke their rest, and was very well contented therewith, albeit she could not refraine from sighing and weeping, to be thus diuided from her deare *Pedro*, of whose life and welfare she greatly despaired.

When

When it was almoſt day, ſhe heard a great noiſe of people trauailing by, whereupon ſodainly ſhe aroſe, and ranne into a Garden plot, which was on the backſide of the poore Cottage, eſpying in one of the corners a great ſtacke of Hay, wherein ſhe hid her ſelfe, to the end, that trauelling ſtrangers might not readily finde her there in the houſe. Scarſely was ſhe fully hidden, but a great company of Theeues and Villaines, finding the doore open, ruſhed into the Cottage, where looking round about them for ſome booty, they ſaw the Damoſels horſe ſtand ready ſadled, which made them demand to whom it belonged. The good old man, not ſeeing the Maiden preſent there, but immagining that ſhe had made ſome ſhift for her ſelfe, anſwered thus. Gentlemen, there is no body here but my wife and my ſelfe: as for this Horſe, which ſeemeth to be eſcaped from the Owner; hee came hither yeſternight, and we gaue him houſe-roome heere, rather then to be deuoured by Wolues abroad. Then ſaid the principall of the Theeuiſh crew: This horſe ſhall be ours, in regard he hath no other Maſter, and let the owner come claime him of vs.

When they had ſearched euery corner of the poore Cottage, & found no ſuch prey as they looked for, ſome of them went into the backeſide; where they had left their Iauelins and Targets, wherwith they vſed commonly to trauaile. It fortuned, that one of them, being more ſubtily ſuſpitious then the reſt, thruſt his Iauelin into the ſtacke of Hay, in the very ſame place where the Damoſell lay hidden, miſſing very little of killing her; for it entred ſo farre, that the iron head pierced quite thorough her Garments, and touched her left bare breſt: whereupon, ſhee was ready to cry out, as fearing that ſhe was wounded: but conſidering the place where ſhe was, ſhe lay ſtill, and ſpake not a word. This diſordered company, after they had fed on ſome young Kids, and other fleſh which they brought with them thither, they went thence about their theeuing exerciſe, taking the Damoſels horſe along with them.

After they were gone a good diſtance off, the good old man began thus to queſtion his Wife. What is become of (quoth hee) our young Gentlewoman, which came ſo late to vs yeſternight? I haue not ſeen her to day ſince our ariſing. The old woman made anſwer, that ſhe knew not where ſhe was, and ſought all about to finde her. *Angelinaes* feares being well ouer-blowne, and hearing none of the former noiſe, which made her the better hope of their departure, came forth of the Hay-ſtack; wherof the good old man was not a little ioyfull, and becauſe ſhe had ſo well eſcaped from them: ſo ſeeing it was now broad day-light, he ſaid vnto her. Now that the morning is ſo fairely begun, if you can be ſo well contented, we will bring you to a Caſtle, which ſtands about two miles and an halfe hence, where you will be ſure to remaine in ſafety. But you muſt needs trauaile thither on foot, becauſe the night-walkers that happened hither, haue taken away your horſe with them.

Angelina making little or no account of ſuch a loſſe, entreated them for charities ſake, to conduct her to that Caſtle, which accordingly they did, and arriued there betweene ſeuen and eight of the clock. The Caſtle belon-

longed to one of the *Orsini*, being called, *Liello di Campo di Fiore*, and by great good fortune, his wife was then there, she being a very vertuous and religious Lady. No sooner did she looke vpon *Angelina*, but she knew her immediately, and entertaining her very willingly, requested, to know the reason of her thus arriuing there: which she at large related, and moued the Lady (who likewise knew *Pedro* perfectly well) to much compassion, because he was a kinsman and deare friend to her Husband; and vnderstanding how the Theeues had surprized him, she feared, that he was slaine among them, whereupon she spake thus to *Angelina*. Seeing you know not what is become of my kinsman *Pedro*, you shall remaine here with me, vntill such time, as (if we heare no other tidings of him) you may with safety be sent backe to *Rome*.

Pedro all this while sitting in the Tree, so full of griefe, as no man could be more; about the houre of midnight (by the bright splendour of the Moone) espied about some twenty Wolues, who, so soone as they got a sight of the Horse, ran and engirt him round about. The Horse when he perceiued them so neere him, drew his head so strongly back-ward, that breaking the reines of his bridle, he laboured to escape away from them. But being beset on euery side, and vtterly vnable to helpe himself, he contended with his teeth and feete in his owne defence, till they haled him violently to the ground, and tearing his body in peices, left not a iot of him but the bare bones, and afterward ran ranging thorow the Forest. At this sight, poore *Pedro* was mightily dismaied, fearing to speed no better then his Horse had done, and therefore could not deuise what was best to be done; for he saw no likelihood, of getting out of the Forest with life. But day-light drawing on apace, and he almost dead with cold, hauing stood quaking so long in the Tree; at length by continuall looking euery where about him, to discerne te least glimpse of any comfort; he espied a great fire, which seemed to be about halfe a mile off from him.

By this time it was broad day, when he descended downe out of the Tree, (yet not without much feare) and tooke his way towards the fire, where being arriued, he found a company of Shepheards banquetting about it, whom he curteously saluting, they tooke pity on his distresse, and welcommed him kindly. After he had tasted of such cheare as they had, and was indifferently refreshed by the good fire; he discourse his hard disasters to them, as also how he happened thither, desiring to know, if any Village or Castle were neere there about, where he might in better manner releeue himselfe. The Shepheards told him, that about a mile and an halfe from thence, was the Castle of *Signior Liello di Campo di Fiore*, and that his Lady was residing there; which was no meane comfort to poore *Pedro*, requesting that one of them would accompany him thither, as two of them did in louing manner, to rid him of all further feares.

When he was arriued at the Castle, and found there diuers of his familiar acquaintance; he laboured to procure some meanes, that the Damosell might bee sought for in the Forrest. Then the Lady calling for her, and bringing her to him; he ran and caught her in his armes, being ready

to ſwoune with conceite of ioy, for neuer could any man be more comforted, then he was at the ſight of his *Angelina*, and queſtionleſſe, her ioy was not a iot inferiour to his, ſuch a ſimpathy of firme loue was ſettled betweene them. The Lady of the Caſtle, after ſhe had giuen them very gracious entertainment, and vnderſtood the ſcope of their bold aduenture; ſhe reproued them both ſomewhat ſharpely, for preſuming ſo farre without the conſent of their Parents. But perceiuing (notwithſtanding all her remonſtrances) that they continued ſtill conſtant in their reſolution, without any inequality of either ſide; ſhee ſaide to her ſelfe. Why ſhould this matter be any way off nſiue to me? They loue each other loyally; they are not inferiour to one another in birth, but in fortune; they are equally loued and allied to my Husband, and their deſire is both honeſt and honorable. Moreouer, what know I, if it be the will of Heauen to haue it ſo? Theeues intended to hang him, in malice to his name and kinred, from which hard fate he hath happily eſcaped. Her life was endangered by a ſharpe pointed Iaueline, and yet her fairer ſtarres would not ſuffer her ſo to periſh: beſide, they haue both eſcaped the fury of rauenous wild beaſts; and all theſe are apparant ſignes, that future comforts ſhould recompence former paſſed misfortunes; farre be it therefore from me, to hinder the appointment of the Heauens.

Then turning her ſelfe to them, thus ſhe proceeded. If your deſire be to ioyne in honourable marriage, I am well contented therewith, and your nuptials ſhall here be ſolemnized at my Husbands charges. Afterward both he and I will endeauour, to make peace betweene you and your diſcontented Parents. *Pedro* was not a little ioyfull at her kinde offer, and *Angelina* much more then he; ſo they were married together in the Caſtle, and worthily feaſted by the Lady, as Forreſt entertainment could permit, and there they enioyed the firſt fruits of thier loue. Within a ſhort while after, the Lady and they (well mounted on Horſe-backe, and attended with an honourable traine) returned to *Rome*; where her Lord *Liello* and ſhe preuailed ſo well with *Pedroes* angry Parents: that the variance ended in loue and peace, and afterward they liued louingly together, till old age made them as honourable, as their true and mutuall affection formerly haddone.

Ricciardo Manardy, *was found by* Meſſer Lizio da Valbonna, *as he ſate faſt aſleepe at his Daughters Chamber window, hauing his hand faſt in hers, and ſhe ſleeping in the ſame manner. Whereupon, they are ioyned together in marriage, and their long loyall loue mutually recompenced.*

The fourth Nouell.

Declaring the diſcreete prouidence of Parents, in care of their Childrens loue and their owne credit, to cut off inconueniences, before they do proceede too farre.

MAdam *Eliza* hauing ended her Tale, and heard what commendations the whole company gaue thereof; the Queene commanded *Philoſtratus*,

loſtratus, to tell a Nouell agreeing with his owne minde, who ſmiling thereat, thus replyed. Faire Ladies, I haue bene ſo often checkt and ſnapt, for my yeſterdayes matter and argument of diſcourſing, which was both tedious and offenſiue to you; that if I intended to make you any amends, I ſhould now vndertake to tell ſuch a Tale, as might put you into a mirthfull humour. Which I am determined to do, in relating a briefe and pleaſant Nouell, not any way offenſiue (as I truſt) but exemplary for ſome good notes of obſeruation.



Not long ſince, there liued in *Romania*, a Knight, a very honeſt Gentleman, and well qualified, whoſe name was *Meſſer Lizio da Valbonna*, to whom it fortuned, that (at his entrance into age) by his Lady and wife, called *Iaquemina*, he had a Daughter, the very choyceſt and goodlieſt gentlewoman in all thoſe places. Now becauſe ſuch a happy bleſſing (in their olde yeeres) was not a little comfortable to them; they thought themſelues the more bound in duty, to be circumſpect of her education, by keeping her out of ouer-frequent companies, but onely ſuch as agreed beſt with their grauity, and might giue the leaſt ill example to their Daughter, who was named *Catharina*; as making no doubt, but by this their prouident and wary reſpect, to match her in marriage anſwerable to their liking. There was alſo a yong Gentleman, in the very flouriſhing eſtate of his youthfull time, deſcended from the Family of the *Munardy da Brettinoro*, named *Meſſer Ricciardo*, who oftentimes frequented the Houſe of *Meſſer Lizio*, and was a continuall welcome gueſt to his Table, *Meſſer Lizio* and his wife making the like account of him, euen as if hee bene their owne Sonne.

This young Gallant, perceiuing the Maiden to be very beautfull, of

ſingular behauiour, and of ſuch yeeres as was fit for marriage, became exceeding enamoured of her, yet concealed his affection ſo cloſely as he could, which was not ſo couertly carried, but that ſhe perceiued it, and grew into as good liking of him. Many times he had an earneſt deſire to haue conference with her, which yet ſtill he deferred, as fearing to diſpleaſe her; at the length he lighted on an apt opportunity, and boldly ſpake to her in this manner. Faire *Catharina*, I hope thou wilt not let me die for thy loue? *Signior Ricciardo* (replyed ſhe ſuddenly againe) I hope you will extend the like mercy to me, as you deſire that I ſhould ſhew to you. This anſwere was ſo pleaſing to *Meſſer Ricciardo*, that preſently he ſaide. Alas deare Loue, I haue dedicated all my faireſt fortunes onely to thy ſeruice, ſo that it remaineth ſoly in thy power, to diſpoſe of me as beſt ſhall pleaſe thee, and to appoint ſuch times of priuate conuerſation, as may yeeld more comfort to my poore afflicted ſoule.

Catharina ſtanding muſing awhile, at laſt returned him this anſwere. *Signior Ricciardo*, quoth ſhe, you ſee what a reſtraint is ſet on my liberty, how ſhort I am kept from conuerſing with any one, that I hold this our enterparlance now almoſt miraculous. But if you could deuiſe any conuenient meanes, to admit vs more familiar freedome, without any preiudice to mine honour, or the leaſt diſtaſte to my Parents; do but enſtruct it, and I will aduenture it. *Ricciardo* hauing conſidered on many wayes and meanes, thought one to be the fitteſt of all; and therefore thus replyed. *Catharina* (quoth he) the onely place for our more priuate talking together, I conceiue to be the Gallery ouer your Fathers Garden. If you can winne your Mother to let you lodge there, I will make meanes to climbe ouer the wall, and at the goodly gazing window, we may diſcourſe ſo long as we pleaſe. Now truſt me deare Loue (anſwered *Catharina*) no place can be more conuenient for our purpoſe, there ſhall we heare the ſweete Birds ſing, eſpecially the Nightingale, which I haue heard ſinging there all the night long; I will breake the matter to my Mother, and how I ſpeede, you ſhall heare further from me. So, with diuers parting kiſſes, they brake off conference, till their next meeting.

On the day following, which was towards the ending of the moneth of May, *Catharina* began to complaine to her Mother, that the ſeaſon was ouer-hot and tedious, to be ſtill lodged in her Mothers Chamber, becauſe it was an hinderance to her ſleeping; and wanting reſt, it would be an empairing of her health. Why Daughter (quoth the Mother) the weather (as yet) is not ſo hot, but (in my minde) you may very well endure it. Alas Mother, ſaide ſhe, aged people, as you and my Father are, do not feele the heates of youthfull blood, by reaſon of your farre colder complexion, which is not to be meaſured by younger yeeres. I know that well Daughter, replyed the Mother; but is it in my power, to make the weather warme or coole, as thou perhaps wouldſt haue it? Seaſons are to be ſuffered, according to their ſeuerall qualities; and though the laſt night might ſeeme hot, this next enſuing may be cooler, and then thy reſt will be the better. No Mother, quoth *Catharina*, that cannot be; for as Summer proceedeth

ceedeth on, ſo the heate encreaſeth, and no expectation can be of temperate weather, vntill it groweth to Winter againe. Why Daughter, ſaide the Mother, what wouldeſt thou haue me to do? Mother (quoth ſhe) if it might ſtand with my Fathers good liking and yours, I would be ſpared from the Garden Gallery, which is a great deale more coole lodged. There ſhall I heare the ſweete Nightingale ſing, as euery night ſhe vſeth to do, and many other pretty Birdes beſide, which I cannot do lodging in your Chamber.

The Mother louing her Daughter dearely, as being ſomewhat ouerfond of her, and very willing to giue her contentment; promiſed to impart her minde to her Father, not doubting but to compaſſe what ſhee requeſted. When ſhe had mooued the matter to *Meſſer Lizio* whoſe age made him ſomewhat froward and teaſty; angerly ſaid to his wife. Why how now woman? Cannot our Daughter ſleepe, except ſhe heare the Nightingale ſing? Let there be a bed made for her in the Ouen, and there let the Crickets make her melody. When *Catharina* heard this anſwere from her Father, and ſaw her deſire to be diſappointed; not onely could ſhe take any reſt the night following, but alſo complained more of the heate then before, not ſuffering her Mother to take any reſt, which made her go angerly to her Husband in the morning, ſaying. Why Husband, haue we but one onely Daughter, whom you pretend to loue right dearly, and yet can you be ſo careleſſe of her, as to denie her a requeſt, which is no more then reaſon? What matter is it to you or me, to let her lodge in the Garden Gallery? Is her young blood to be compared with ours? Can our weake and crazie bodies, feele the frolicke temper of hers? Alas, ſhe is hardly (as yet) out of her childiſh yeeres, and Children haue many deſires farre differing from ours: the ſinging of Birdes is rare muſicke to them, and chiefly the Nightingale; whoſe ſweete notes will prouoke them to reſt, when neither Art or Phyſicke can do it.

Is it euen ſo Wife? anſwered *Meſſer Lizio.* Muſt your will and mine be gouerned by our Daughter? Well be it ſo then, let her bed be made in the Garden Gallerie, but I will haue the keeping of the key, both to locke her in at night, and ſet her at liberty euery morning. Woman, woman, yong wenches are wily, many wanton crotchets are buſie in their braines, and to vs that are aged, they ſing like Lapwings, telling vs one thing, and intending another; talking of Nightingales, when their mindes run on Cocke-Sparrowes. Seeing Wife, ſhe muſt needes haue her minde, let yet your care and mine extend ſo farre, to keepe her chaſtity vncorrupted, and our credulity from being abuſed. *Catharina* hauing thus preuailed with her Mother, her bed made in the Garden Gallerie, and ſecret intelligence giuen to *Ricciardo*, for preparing his meanes of acceſſe to her window; old prouident *Lizio* lockes the doore to bed-ward, and giues her liberty to come forth in the morning, for his owne lodging was neere to the ſame Gallery.

In the dead and ſilent time of night, when all (but Louers) take their reſt; *Ricciardo* hauing prouided a Ladder of Ropes, with grapling hookes

to take hold aboue and below, according as he had occaſion to vſe it. By helpe thereof, firſt he mounted ouer the Garden wall, and then climbde vp to the Gallery window, before which (as is euery where in *Italie*) was a little round engirting Tarras, onely for a man to ſtand vpon, for making cleane the window, or otherwiſe repairing it. Many nights (in this manner) enioyed they their meetings, entermixing their amorous conference with infinite kiſſes and kinde embraces, as the window gaue leaue, he ſitting in the Tarras, and departing alwayes before breake of day, for feare of being diſcouered by any.

But, as exceſſe of delight is the Nurſe to negligence, and begetteth ſuch an ouer-preſuming boldneſſe, as afterward proueth to be ſauced with repentance: ſo came it to paſſe with our ouer-fond Louers, in being taken tardy through their owne folly. After they had many times met in this manner, the nights (according to the ſeaſon) growing ſhorter and ſhorter, which their ſtolne delight made them leſſe reſpectiue of, then was requiſite in an aduenture ſo dangerous: it fortuned, that their amorous pleaſure had ſo farre tranſported them, and dulled their ſenſes in ſuch ſort, by theſe their continuall nightly watchings; that they both fell faſt aſleepe, he hauing his hand cloſed in hers, and ſhe one arme folded about his body, and thus they ſlept till broade day light. Old *Meſſer Lizio*, who continually was the morning Cocke to the whole Houſe, going foorth into his Garden, ſaw how his Daughter and *Ricciardo* were ſeated at the window. In he went againe, and going to his wiues Chamber, ſaide to her. Riſe quickly wife, and you ſhall ſee, what made your Daughter ſo deſirous to lodge in the Garden Gallery. I perceiue that ſhee loued to heare the Nightingale, for ſhe hath caught one, and holds him faſt in her hand. Is it poſſible, ſaide the Mother, that our Daughter ſhould catch a liue Nightingale in the darke? You ſhall ſee that your ſelfe, anſwered *Meſſer Lizio*, if you will make haſt, and go with me.

She, putting on her garments in great haſte, followed her Husband, and being come to the Gallery doore, he opened it very ſoftly, and going to the window, ſhewed her how they both ſate faſt aſleepe, and in ſuch manner as hath bene before declared: whereupon, ſhee perceiuing how *Riccciardo* and *Catharina* had both deceiued her, would haue made an outcry, but that *Meſſer Lizio* ſpake thus to her. Wife, as you loue me, ſpeake not a word, neither make any noyſe: for, ſeeing ſhee hath loued *Ricciardo* without our knowledge, and they haue had their priuate meetings in this manner, yet free from any blamefull imputation; he ſhall enioy her, and ſhe him. *Ricciardo* is a Gentleman, well deriued, and of rich poſſeſſions, it can be no diſparagement to vs, that *Catharina* match with him in mariage, which he neither ſhall, or dare deny to do, in regard of our Lawes ſeuerity; for climbing vp to my window with his Ladder of Ropes, whereby his life is forfeited to the Law, except our Daughter pleaſe to ſpare it, as it remaineth in her power to doe, by accepting him as her husband, or yeelding his life vp to the Law, which ſurely ſhe will not ſuffer, their loue agreeing together in ſuch mutuall manner, and he aduenturing ſo dangerouſly for her.

Madam

Madam *Iaquemina*, perceiuing that her husband ſpake very reaſonably, and was no more offended at the matter; ſtept aſide with him behinde the drawne Curtaines, vntill they ſhould awake of themſelues. At the laſt, *Ricciardo* awaked, and ſeeing it was ſo farre in the day, thought himſelfe halfe dead, and calling to *Catharina*, ſaide. Alas deare Loue! what ſhall we doe? we haue ſlept too long, and ſhall be taken here. At which words, *Meſſer Lizio* ſtept forth from behind the Curtaines, ſaying. Nay, *Signior Ricciardo*, ſeeing you haue found ſuch an vnbefitting way hither, we will prouide you a better for your backe returning. When *Ricciardo* ſaw the Father and Mother both there preſent, he could not deuiſe what to do or ſay, his ſenſes became ſo ſtrangely confounded; yet knowing how hainouſly he had offended, if the ſtrictneſſe of Law ſhould bee challenged againſt him, falling on his knees, he ſaide. Alas *Meſſer Lizio*, I humbly craue your mercy, confeſſing my ſelfe well worthy of death, that knowing the ſharpe rigour of the Law, I would preſume ſo audaciouſly to breake it. But pardon me worthy Sir, my loyall and vnfeigned loue to your Daughter *Catharina*, hath bene the only cauſe of my tranſgreſſing.

Ricciardo (replied *Meſſer Lizio*) the loue I beare thee, and the honeſt confidence I do repoſe in thee, ſtep vp (in ſome meaſure) to plead thine excuſe, eſpecially in the regard of my Daughter, whom I blame thee not for louing, but for this vnlawfull way of preſuming to her. Neuertheleſſe, perceiuing how the caſe now ſtandeth, and conſidering withall, that youth and affection were the ground of thine offence: to free thee from death, and my ſelfe from diſhonour, before thou departeſt hence, thou ſhalt eſpouſe my Daughter *Catherina*, to make her thy lawfull wife in marriage, and wipe off all ſcandall to my Houſe and me. All this while was poore *Catharina* on her knees likewiſe to her Mother, who (notwithſtanding this her bold aduenture) made earneſt ſuite to her Husband to remit all, becauſe *Ricciardo* right gladly condiſcended, as it being the maine iſſue of his hope and deſire; to accept his *Catharina* in marriage, whereto ſhe was as willing as he. *Meſſer Lizio* preſently called for the Confeſſour of his Houſe, and borrowing one of his Wiues Rings, before they went out of the Gallery; *Ricciardo* and *Catharina* were eſpouſed together, to their no little ioy and contentment.

Now had they more leaſure for further conference, with the Parents and kindred to *Ricciardo*, who being no way diſcontented with this ſudden match, but applauding it in the higheſt degree; they were publikely maried againe in the Cathedrall Church, and very honourable triumphes performed at the nuptials, liuing long after in happy proſperity.

Guidotto *of Cremona, departing out of this mortall life, left a Daughter of his, with* Iacomino *of Pauia.* Giouanni di Seuerino, *and* Menghino da Minghole, *fell both in loue with the young Maiden, and fought for her; who being afterward knowne to be the Siſter to* Giouanni, *ſhe was giuen in mariage to* Menghino.

The

The fifth Nouell.

Wherein may be obserued, what quarrels and contentions are occasioned by Loue; with some particular description, concerning the sincerity of a loyall friend.



ALl the Ladies laughing heartily, at the Nouell of the Nightingale, so pleasingly deliuered by *Philostratus*, when they saw the same to be fully ended, the Queene thus spake. Now trust me *Philostratus*, though yester-day you did much oppresse mee with melancholly, yet you haue made me such an amends to day, as we haue little reason to complaine any more of you. So conuerting her speech to Madam *Neiphila*, shee commanded her to succeede with her discourse, which willingly she yeelded to, beginning in this manner. Seing it pleased *Philostratus*, to produce his Nouell out of *Romania* : I meane to walke with him in the same iurisdiction, concerning what I am to say.

There dwelt sometime in the City of *Fano*, two Lombards, the one being named *Guidotto* of *Cremona*, and the other *Iacomino* of *Pauia*, men of sufficient entrance into yeares, hauing followed the warres (as Souldiers) all their youthfull time. *Guidotto* feeling sickneſſe to ouer-master him, and hauing no sonne, kinsman, or friend, in whom he might repose more trust, then he did in *Iacomino* : hauing long conference with him about his worldly affaires, and setled his whole estate in good order ; he left a Daughter to his charge, about ten yeeres of age, with all such goods as he enioyed, and then departed out of this life. It came to passe, that the City of *Faenza*, long time being molested with tedious warres, and subiected to very seruile condition ; beganne now to recouer her former

strength,

ſtrength, with free permiſſion (for all ſuch as pleaſed) to returne and poſſeſſe their former dwellings. Whereupon, *Iacomino* (hauing ſometime bene an inhabitant there) was deſirous to liue in *Faenza* againe, conuaying thither all his goods, and taking with him alſo the young Girle, which *Guidotto* had left him, whom hee loued, and reſpected as his owne childe.

As ſhee grew in ſtature, ſo ſhe did in beauty and vertuous qualities, as none was more commended throughout the whole City, for faire, ciuill, and honeſt demeanour, which incited many amorouſly to affect her. But (aboue all the reſt) two very honeſt young men, of good fame and repute, who were ſo equally in loue addicted to her, that being iealous of each others fortune, in preuenting of their ſeuerall hopefull expectation; a deadly hatred grew ſuddenly betweene them, the one being named, *Giouanni de Seuerino*, and the other *Menghino de Minghole*. Either of theſe two young men, before the Maide was fifteene yeeres old, laboured to be poſſeſſed of her in marriage, but her Guardian would giue no conſent thereto: wherefore, perceiuing their honeſt intended meaning to be fruſtrated, they now began to buſie their braines, how to foreſtall one another by craft and circumuention.

Iacomino had a Maide-ſeruant belonging to his Houſe, ſomewhat aged, and a Man-ſeruant beſide, named *Grinello*, of mirthfull diſpoſition, and very friendly, with whom *Giouanni* grew in great familiarity, and when he found time fit for the purpoſe, he diſcouered his loue to him, requeſting his furtherance and aſſiſtance, in compaſſing the height of his deſire, with bountifull promiſes of rich rewarding; whereto *Grinello* returned this anſwere. I know not how to ſted you in this caſe, but when my Maſter ſhall ſup foorth at ſome Neighbours houſe, to admit your entrance where ſhee is: becauſe, if I offer to ſpeake to her, ſhe neuer will ſtay to heare mee. Wherefore, if my ſeruice this way may doe you any good, I promiſe to performe it; doe you beſide, as you ſhall finde it moſt conuenient for you So the bargaine was agreed on betweene them, and nothing elſe now remained, but to what iſſue it ſhould ſort in the end.

Menghino, on the other ſide, hauing entred into the Chamber-maides acquaintance, ſped ſo well with her, that ſhe deliuered ſo many meſſages from him, as had (already) halfe won the liking of the Virgin; paſſing further promiſes to him beſide, of bringing him to haue conference with her, whenſoeuer her Maſter ſhould be abſent from home. Thus *Menghino* being fauoured (on the one ſide) by the olde Chamber-maide, and *Giouanni* (on the other) by truſty *Grinello*; their amorous warre was now on foote, and diligently followed by both their ſollicitors. Within a ſhort while after, by the procurement of *Grinello*, *Iacomino* was inuited by a Neighbour to ſupper, in company of diuers his familiar friends, whereof intelligence being giuen to *Giouanni*; a concluſion paſſed betweene them, that (vpon a certaine ſignale giuen) he ſhould come, and finde the doore ſtanding ready open, to giue him all acceſſe vnto the affected Mayden.

The

The appointed night being come, and neither of these hot Louers knowing the others intent, but their suspition being alike, and encreasing still more and more; they made choyce of certaine friends and associates, well armed and prouided, for eithers safer entrance when need should require. *Menghino* stayed with his troope, in a neere neighbouring house to the Mayden, attending when the signall would be giuen: but *Giouanni* and his consorts, were ambushed somewhat further off from the house, and both saw when *Iacomino* went foorth to supper. Now *Grinello* and the Chamber-maide began to vary, which should send the other out of the way, till they had effected their seuerall inuention; wherupon *Grinello* said to her. What maketh thee to walke thus about the house, and why doest thou not get thee to bed? And thou (quoth the Maide) why doest thou not goe to attend on our Master, and tarry for his returning home? I am sure thou hast supt long agoe, and I know no businesse here in the house for thee to doe. Thus (by no meanes) the one could send away the other, but either remained as the others hinderance.

But *Grinello* remembring himselfe, that the houre of his appointment with *Giouanni* was come, he saide to himselfe. What care I whether our olde Maide be present, or no? If she disclose any thing that I doe, I can be reuenged on her when I list. So, hauing made the signall, he went to open then doore, euen when *Giouanni* (and two of his confederates) rushed into the House, and finding the faire young Maiden sitting in the Hall, laide hands on her, to beare her away. The Damosell began to resist them, crying out for helpe so loude as she could, as the olde Chamber-maide did the like: which *Menghino* hearing, he ranne thither presently with his friends, and seeing the young Damosell brought well-neere out of the House; they drew their Swords, crying out: Traytors, you are but dead men, here is no violence to be offered, neither is this a booty for such base groomes. So they layed about them lustily, and would not permit them to passe any further. On the other side, vpon this mutinous noyse and outcry, the Neighbours came foorth of their houses, with lights, staues, and clubbes, greatly reprouing them for this out rage, yet assisting *Menghino*: by meanes whereof, after a long time of contention, *Menghino* recouered the Mayden from *Giouanni*, and placed her peaceably in *Iacominoes* House.

No sooner was this hurly burly somewhat calmed, but the Serieants to the Captine of the City, came thither, and apprehended diuers of the mutiners: among whom were *Menghino*, *Giouanni*, and *Grinello*, committing them immediately to prison. But after euery thing was pacified, and *Iacomino* returned home to his house from supper; he was not a little offended at so grosse an iniury. When he was fully informed, how the matter happened, and apparantly perceiued, that no blame at all could be imposed on the Maypeu: he grew the better contented, resoluing with himselfe (because no more such inconueniences should happen) to haue her married so soone as possibly he could.

When morning was come, the kindred and friends on either side, vnderstan-

derſtanding the truth of the errour committed, and knowing beſide, what puniſhment would be inflicted on the priſoners, if *Iacomino* preſſed the matter no further, then as with reaſon and equity well he might; they repaired to him, and (in gentle ſpeeches) entreated him, not to regard a wrong offered by vnruly and youthfull people, meerely drawne into the action by perſwaſion of friends; ſubmitting both themſelues, and the offendors, to ſuch ſatisfaction as pleaſed to appoint them. *Iacomino*, who had ſeene and obſerued many things in his time, and was a man of ſound vnderſtanding, returned them this anſwer.

Gentlemen, if I were in mine owne Country, as now I am in yours, I would as forwardly confeſſe my ſelfe your friend, as here I muſt needes fall ſhort of any ſuch ſeruice, but euen as you ſhall pleaſe to command me. But plainely, and without all further ceremonious complement, I muſt agree to whatſoeuer you can requeſt; as thinking you to be more iniured by me, then any great wrong that I haue ſuſtained. Concerning the young Damoſell remaining in my Houſe, ſhe is not (as many haue imagined) either of *Cremona*, or *Pauia*, but borne a *Faentine*, here in this Citie: albeit neither my ſelfe, ſhe, or he of whome I had her, did euer know it, or yet could learne whoſe Daughter ſhe was. Wherefore, the ſuite you make to me, ſhould rather (in duty) be mine to you: for ſhee is a natiue of your owne, doe right to her, and then you can doe no wrong vnto mee.

When the Gentlemen vnderſtood, that the Mayden was borne in *Faenza*, they maruelled thereat, and after they had thanked *Iacomino* for his curteour anſwer; they deſired him to let them know, by what meanes the Damoſell came into his cuſtody, and how he knew her to be borne in *Faenza*: when hee, perceiuing them attentiue to heare him, began in this manner.

Vnderſtand worthy Gentlemen, that *Guidotto* of *Cremona*, was my companion and deare friend, who growing neere to his death, tolde me that when this City was ſurprized by the Emperour *Frederigo*, and all things committed to ſacke and ſpoile; he and certaine of his confederates entred into a Houſe, which they found to bee well furniſhed with goods, but vtterly forſaken of the dwellers, onely this poore Mayden excepted, being then aged but two yeeres, or thereabout. As hee mounted vp the ſteps, with intent to depart from the Houſe; ſhe called him Father, which word moued him ſo compaſſionately, that he went backe againe, brought her away with him, and all things of worth which were in the Houſe: going thence afterward to *Fano*, and there deceaſing, hee left her and all his goods to my charge; conditionally, that I ſhould ſee her married when due time required, and beſtow on her the wealth which he had left her. Now, very true it is, although her yeeres are conuenient for marriage, yet I could neuer finde any one to beſtow her on, at leaſt that I thought fitting for her: howbeit, I will liſten thereto much more reſpectiuely, before any other ſuch accident ſhall happen.

It came to paſſe, that in the reporting of this diſcourſe, there was then a Gentle-

a Gentleman in the compauy, named *Guillemino da Medicina*, who at the ſurprizall of the City, was preſent with *Guidotto* of *Cremona*, and knew well the Houſe which he had ranſacked, the owner whereof was alſo preſent with him, wherefore taking him aſide, he ſaid to him. *Bernardino*, heareſt thou what *Iacomino* hath related? Yes very well, replyed *Bernardino*, and remember withall, that in that diſmall bloody combuſtion, I loſt a little Daughter, about the age as *Iacomino* ſpeaketh. Queſtionleſſe then replyed *Guillemino*, ſhe muſt needs be the ſame young Mayden, for I was there at the ſame time, and in the Houſe, whence *Guidotto* did bring both the Girle and goods, and I do perfectly remember, that it was thy Houſe. I pray thee call to minde, if euer thou ſaweſt any ſcarre or marke about her, which may reuiue thy former knowledge of her, for my minde perſwades me, that the Maide is thy Daughter.

Bernardino muſing awhile with himſelfe, remembred, that vnder her left eare, ſhe had a ſcarre, in the forme of a little croſſe, which happened by the byting of a Wolfe, and but a ſmall while before the ſpoyle was made. Wherefore, without deferring it to any further time, he ſtept to *Iacomino* (who as yet ſtayed there) and entreated him to fetch the Mayden from his houſe, becauſe ſhee might be knowne to ſome in the company: whereto right willingly he condiſcended, and there preſented the Maide before them. So ſoone as *Bernardino* beheld her, he began to be much inwardly moued, for the perfect charracter of her Mothers countenance, was really figured in her ſweete face; onely that her beauty was ſomewhat more excelling. Yet not herewith ſatisfied, he deſired *Iacomino* to bee ſo pleaſed, as to lift vp a little the lockes of haire, depending ouer her left eare. *Iacomino* did it preſently, albeit with a modeſt bluſhing in the Maide, and *Bernardino* looking aduiſedly on it, knew it to be the ſelfe-ſame croſſe, which confirmed her conſtantly to be his Daughter.

Ouercome with exceſſe of ioy, which made the teares to trickle downe his cheekes, he proffered to embrace and kiſſe the Maide: but ſhe refuſing his kindneſſe, becauſe (as yet) ſhe knew no reaſon for it, hee turned himſelfe to *Iacomino*, ſaying. My deare brother and friend, this Maide is my Daughter, and my Houſe was the ſame which *Guidotto* ſpoyled, in the generall hauocke of our City, and thence he carried this childe of mine, forgotten (in the fury) by my Wife her Mother. But happy was the houre of his becomming her Father, and carrying her away with him; for elſe ſhe had periſhed in the fire, becauſe the Houſe was inſtantly burnt downe to the ground. The Mayden hearing his words, obſeruing him alſo to be a man of yeeres and grauity: ſhe beleeued what he ſaide, and humbly ſubmitted her ſelfe to his kiſſes and embraces, euen as inſtructed thereto by inſtinct of nature. *Bernardino* inſtantly ſent for his wife, her owne Mother, his daughters, ſonnes, and kindred, who being acquainted with this admirable accident, gaue her moſt gracious and kinde welcome, he receiuing her from *Iacomino* as his childe, and the legacies which *Guidotto* had left her.

When the Captaine of the City (being a very wiſe and worthy Gentleman) heard theſe tydings, and knowing that *Giouanni*, then his priſoner,

was

was the Son to *Bernardino*, and naturall Brother to the newly recouered Maide: he bethought himselfe, how best he might qualifie the fault committed by him. And entring into the Hall among them, handled the matter so discreetly, that a louing league of peace was confirmed betweene *Giouanni* and *Menghino*, to whom (with free and full consent on all sides) the faire Maide, named *Agatha*, was giuen in marriage, with a more honourable enlargement of her dowry, and *Grinello*, with the rest, deliuered out of prison, which for their tumultuous riot they had iustly deserued. *Menghino* and *Agatha* had their wedding worthily solemnized, with all due honours belonging thereto; and long time after they had liued in *Faenza*, highly beloued, and graciously esteemed.

Guion di Procida, *being found familiarly conuersing wieh a young Damosell, which he loued; and had beene giuen (formerly) to* Frederigo, *King of Sicilie: was bound to a stake, to be consumed with fire. From which danger (neuertheless) he escaped, being knowne by* Don Rogiero de Oria, *Lord Admirall of Sicilie, and afterward married the Damosell.*

The sixth Nouell.

Wherein is manifested, that loue can leade a man into numberlesse perils: out of which he escapeth with no meane difficulty.



THe Nouell of Madame *Neiphila* being ended, which proued very pleasing to the Ladies: the Queene commanded Madam *Pampinea*, that she should prepare to take her turne next, whereto willingly obeying, thus she began. Many and mighty (Gracious Ladies) are the preuailing powers of loue, conducting amorous soules into infinite trauels, with inconueniences no way auoidable, and not easily to be foreseene, or preuented. As partly already hath bene obserued, by diuers of our former

mer Nouels related, and ſome (no doubt) to enſue hereafter; for one of them (comming now to my memory) I ſhall acquaint you withall, in ſo good tearmes as I can.

Iſchia is an Iland very neere to *Naples*, wherein (not long ſince) liued a faire and louely Gentlewoman, named *Reſtituta*, Daughter to a Gentleman of the ſame Iſle, whoſe name was *Marino Bolgaro*. A proper youth called *Guion*, dwelling alſo in a neere neighbouring Iſle, called *Procida*, did loue her as dearly as his owne life, and ſhe was as intimately affected towards him. Now becauſe the ſight of her was his onely comfort, as occaſion gaue him leaue, he reſorted to *Iſchia* very often in the day time, and as often alſo in the night ſeaſon, when any Barke paſſed from *Procida* to *Iſchia*; if to ſee nothing elſe, yet to behold the walles that encloſed his Miſtreſſe thus.

While this loue continued in equall feruency, it chanced vpon a faire Summers day, that *Reſtituta* walked alone vpon the Sea-ſhore, going from Rocke to Rocke, hauing a naked knife in her hand, wherewith ſhe opened ſuch Oyſters as ſhee found among the ſtones, ſeeking for ſmall pearles encloſed in their ſhelles. Her walke was very ſolitary and ſhady, with a faire Spring or Well adioyning to it, & thither (at that very inſtant time) certaine *Sicilian* young Gentleman, which came from *Naples*, had made their retreate. They perceiuing the Gentlewoman to be very beautifull (ſhe as yet not hauing any ſight of them) and in ſuch a ſilent place alone by her ſelfe: concluded together, to make a purchaſe of her, and carry her thence away with them; as indeed they did, notwithſtanding all her out cryes and exclaimes, bearing her perforce aboard their Barke.

Setting ſayle thence, they arriued in *Calabria*, and then there grew a great contention betweene them, to which of them this booty of beauty ſhould belong, becauſe each of them pleaded a title to her. But when they could not grow to any agreement, but doubted greater diſaſters would enſue thereon, by breaking their former league of friendſhip: by an equall conformity in conſent, they reſolued, to beſtow her as a rich preſent, on *Frederigo* King of *Sicilie*, who was then young and iouiall, and could not be pleaſed with a better gift; wherefore, they were no ſooner landed at *Palermo*, but they did according as they had determined. The King did commend her beauty extraordinarily, and liked her farre beyond all his other Loues: but, being at that time empaired in his health, and his body much diſtempered by ill dyet; he gaue command, that vntill he ſhould be in more able diſpoſition, ſhe muſt be kept in a goodly houſe of his owne, erected in a beautifull Garden, called the *Cube*, where ſhe was attended in moſt pompous manner.

Now grew the noyſe and rumor great in *Iſchia*, about this rape or ſtealing away of *Reſtituta*; but the chiefeſt greeuance of all, was, that it could not be knowne how, by whom, or by what meanes. But *Guion di Procida*, whom this iniury concerned much more then any other: ſtood not in expectation of better tydings from *Iſchia*, but hearing what courſe the Barke had taken, made ready another, to follow after with all poſſible ſpeede.

Flying

Flying thus on the winged winds through the Seas, euen from *Minerua*, vnto the *Scalea* in *Calabria*, searching for his loſt Loue in euery angle: at length it was told him at the *Scalea*, that ſhee was carryed away by certaine *Sicillian* Marriners, to *Palermo*, whither *Guion* ſet ſayle immediately.

After ſome diligent ſearch made there, he vnderſtood, that ſhe was deliuered to the King, and he had giuen ſtrict command, for keeping her in his place of pleaſure; called the *Cube*: which newes were not a little greeuous to him, for now he was almoſt quite out of hope, not onely of euer enioying her, but alſo of ſeeing her. Nenertheleſſe, Loue would not let him vtterly deſpaire, whereupon he ſent away his Barque, and perceiuing himſelfe to be vnknowne of any; he continued for ſome time in *Palermo*, walking many times by that goodly place of pleaſure. It chanced on a day, that keeping his walke as he vſed to do, Fortune was ſo fauourable to him, as to let him haue a ſight of her at her window; from whence alſo ſhe had a full view of him, to their exceeding comfort and contentment. And *Guion* obſeruing, that the *Cube* was ſeated in a place of ſmall reſort; approached ſo neere as poſſibly he durſt, to haue ſome conference with *Reſtituta*.

As Loue ſets a keene edge on the dulleſt ſpirit, and (by a ſmall aduantage) makes a man the more aduenturous: ſo this little time of vnſeene talke, inſpired him with courage, and her with witty aduice, by what meanes his acceſſe might be much neerer to her, and their communication concealed from any diſcouery, the ſcituation of the place, and benefit of time duly conſidered. Night muſt be the cloud to their amorous concluſion, and therefore, ſo much thereof being ſpent, as was thought conuenient, he returned thither againe, prouided of ſuch grappling-yrons, as is required when men will clamber, made faſt vnto his hands and knees; by their helpe hee attained to the top of the wall, whence diſcending downe into the Garden, there he found the maine yard of a ſhip, whereof before ſhe had giuen him inſtruction, and rearing it vp againſt her Chamber window, made that his meanes for aſcending thereto, ſhe hauing left it open for his eaſier entrance.

You cannot denie (faire Ladies) but here was a very hopefull beginning, and likely to haue as happy an ending, were it not true Loues fatal miſery, euen in the very height of promiſed aſſurance, to be thwarted by vnkind preuention, and in ſuch manner as I will tell you. This night, intended for our Louers meeting, proued diſaſtrous and dreadfull to them both: for the King, who at the firſt ſight of *Reſtituta*, was highly pleaſed with her excelling beauty, gaue order to his Eunuches and other women, that a coſtly bathe ſhould be prepared for her, and therein to let her weare away that night, becauſe the next day he intended to viſit her. *Reſtituta* being royally conducted from her Chamber to the Bathe, attended on with Torch-light, as if ſhe had bene a Queene: none remained there behind, but ſuch women as waited on her, and the Guards without, which watched the Chamber.

No ſooner was poore *Guion* aloft at the window, calling ſoftly to his Miſtreſſe, as if ſhe had bene there; but he was ouer-heard by the women in the darke: and immediately apprehended by the Guard, who forthwith brought him before the Lord Marſhall, where being examined, and he auouching, that *Reſtituta* was his elected wife, and for her he had preſumed in that manner; cloſely was he kept in priſon till the next morning. When he came into the Kings preſence, and there boldly iuſtified the goodneſſe of his cauſe: *Reſtituta* likewiſe was ſent for, who no ſooner ſaw her deare Loue *Guion*, but ſhe ran and caught him faſt about the necke, kiſſing him in teares, and greeuing not a little at his hard fortune. Heereat the King grew exceedingly enraged, loathing and hating her now, much more then formerly hee did affect her, and hauing himſelfe ſeene by what ſtrange meanes he did climbe ouer the wall, and then mounted to her Chamber window; he was extreamely impatient, and could not otherwiſe bee perſwaded, but that their meetings thus had bene very many.

Forthwith hee ſentenced them both with death, commanding, that they ſhould be conueyed thence to *Palermo*, and there (being ſtript ſtarke naked) be bound to a ſtake backe to backe, and ſo to ſtand the full ſpace of nine houres, to ſee if any could take knowledge, of whence, or what they were; then afterward, to be conſumed with fire. The ſentence of death, did not ſo much daunt or diſmay the poore Louers, as the vnciuill and vnſightly manner, which (in feare of the Kings wrathfull diſpleaſure) no man durſt preſume to contradict. Wherefore, as he had commanded, ſo were they carryed thence to *Palermo*, and bound naked to a ſtake in the open Market place, and (before their eyes) the fire of wood brought, which was to conſume them, according to the houre as the King had appointed. You neede not make any queſtion, what an huge concourſe of people were ſoone aſſembled together, to behold ſuch a ſad and wofull ſpectacle, euen the whole City of *Palermo*, both men and women. The men were ſtricken with admiration, beholding the vnequalled beauty of faire *Reſtituta*, and the ſelfe-ſame paſſion poſſeſſed the women, ſeeing *Guion* to be ſuch a goodly and compleat young man: but the poore infortunate Louers themſelues, they ſtood with their lookes deiected to the ground, being much pitied of all, but no way to be holpen or reſcued by any, awaiting when the happy houre would come, to finiſh both their ſhame and liues together.

During the time of this tragicall expectation, the fame of this publike execution being noyſed abroade, calling all people farre and neere to behold it; it came to the eare of *Don Rogiero de Oria*, a man of much admired valour, and then Lord high Admirall of *Sicily*, who came himſelfe in perſon, to the place appointed for their death. Firſt, he obſerued the Mayden, confeſſing her (in his ſoule) to be a beauty beyond all compare. Then looking on the young man, thus he ſaide within himſelfe: If the inward endowments of the mind, doe paralell the outward perfections of body; the World cannot yeeld a more compleate man. Now, as good natures are quickly incited to compaſſion (eſpecially in caſes almoſt commanding

it) and compaſſion knocking at the doore of the ſoule, doth quicken the memory with many paſſed recordations: ſo this noble Admirall, aduiſedly, beholding poore condemned *Guion*, conceiued, that he had ſomewhat ſeene him before this inſtant, and vpon this perſwaſion (euen as if diuine vertue had tutored his tongue) he ſaide: Is not thy name *Guion di Procida?*

Marke now, how quickly miſery can receiue comfort, vpon ſo poore and ſilly a queſtion; for *Guion* began to eleuate his deiected countenance, and looking on the Admirall, returned him this anſwer. Sir, heretofore I haue bene the man which you ſpeake of; but now, both that name and man muſt die with me. What misfortune (ſaid the Admirall) hath thus vnkindly croſt thee? Loue (anſwered *Guion*) and the Kings diſpleaſure. Then the Admirall would needs know the whole hiſtory at large, which briefly was related to him, and hauing heard how all had happened; as he was turning his Horſe to ride away thence, *Guion* called to him, ſaying. Good my Lord, entreat one fauour for me, if poſſibly it may be. What is that? replyed the Admirall. You ſee Sir (quoth *Guion*) that I am very ſhortly to breathe my laſt; all the grace which I do moſt humbly entreat, is, that as I am here with this chaſte Virgin, (whom I honour and loue beyond my life) and miſerably bound backe to backe: our faces may be turned each to other, to the end, that when the fire ſhall finiſh my life, by looking on her, my ſoule may take her flight in full felicity. The Admirall ſmiling, ſaid; I will do for thee what I can, and (perhaps) thou mayeſt ſo long looke on her, as thou wilt be weary, and deſire to looke off her.

At his departure, he commanded them that had the charge of this execution, to proceede no further, vntill they heard more from the King, to whom he gallopped immediately, and although he beheld him to bee very angerly moued; yet he ſpared not to ſpeake in this maner. Sir, wherin haue thoſe poore young couple offended you, that are ſo ſhamefully to be burnt at *Palermo?* The King told him: whereto the Admirall (purſuing ſtill his purpoſe) thus replyed. Beleeue me Sir, if true loue be an offence, then theirs may be termed to be one; and albeit it deſerued death, yet farre be it from thee to inflict it on them: for as faults doe iuſtly require puniſhment, ſo doe good turnes as equally merit grace and requitall. Knoweſt thou what and who they are, whom thou haſt ſo diſhonourably condemned to the fire? Not I, quoth the King. Why then I will tell thee, anſwered the Admirall, that thou mayeſt take the better knowledge of them, and forbeare hereafter, to be ſo ouer violently tranſported with anger.

The young Gentleman, is the Sonne to *Landolfo di Procida*, the onely Brother to Lord *Iohn di Procida*, by whoſe meanes thou becameſt Lord and King of this Countrey. The faire young Damoſell, is the Daughter to *Marino Balgaro*, whoſe power extendeth ſo farre, as to preſerue thy prerogatiue in *Iſchia*, which (but for him) had long ſince bene out-rooted there. Beſide, theſe two maine motiues, to challenge iuſtly grace and fauour from thee; they are in the floure and pride of their youth, hauing

long continued in loyall loue together, and compelled by feruency of endeared affection, not any will to diſpleaſe thy Maieſty: they haue offended (if it may be termed an offence to loue, and in ſuch louely young people as they are.) Canſt thou then finde in thine heart to let them die, whom thou rather oughеſt to honour, and recompence with no meane rewards?

When the King had heard this, and beleeued for a certainty, that the Admirall told him nothing but truth: he appointed not onely, that they ſhould proceede no further, but alſo was exceeding ſorrowfull for what he had done, ſending preſently to haue them releaſed from the Stake, and honourably to be brought before him. Being thus enſtructed in their ſeuerall qualities, and ſtanding in duty obliged, to recompence the wrong which he had done, with reſpectiue honours: he cauſed them to be cloathed in royall garments, and knowing them to bee knit in vnity of ſoule; the like he did by marrying them ſolemnly together, and beſtowing many rich gifts and preſents on them, ſent them honourably attended home to *Iſchia*; where they were with much ioy and comfort receiued, and liued long after in great felicity.

Theodoro *falling in loue with* Violenta, *the Daughter to his Maſter, named* Amarigo, *and ſhe conceiuing with child by him; was condemned to be hanged. As they were leading him to the Gallowes, beating and miſuſing him all the way: he happened to be knowne of his owne Father, whereupon he was releaſed, and afterward enioyed* Violenta *in marriage.*

The ſeuenth Nouell.

Wherein is declared, the ſundry trauels and perillous occidents, occaſioned by thoſe two powerfull Commanders, Loue and Fortune, the inſulting Tyrants ouer humane life.

GReatly were the Ladies minds perplexed, when they heard, that the two poore Louers were in danger to be burned: but hearing afterward of their happy deliuerance, for which they were as ioyfull againe; vpon the concluding of the Nouell, the Queene looked on Madame *Lauretta*, enioyning her to tell the next Tale, which willingly ſhe vndertooke to do, and thus began.

Faire Ladies, at ſuch time as the good King *William* reigned in *Sicily*, there liued within the ſame Dominion, a young Gentleman, named *Signior Amarigo*, Abbot of *Trapani*, who (among his other worldly bleſſings, (commonly termed the goods of Fortune) was not vnfurniſhed of children; and therefore hauing neede of ſeruants, he made his prouiſion of them the beſt he might. At that time, certaine Gallies of *Geneway* Pyrates comming from the Eaſterne parts, which coaſting along *Armenia*, had taken diuers children; he bought ſome of them, thinking that they were Turkes. They all reſembling clowniſh Peazants, yet there was one among them, who ſeemed to be of more tractable and gentle nature, yea, and of a more affable countenance then any of the reſt, being named,

Theodoro:

Theodoro: who growing on in yeeres, (albeit he liued in the condition of a ſeruant) was educated among *Amarigoes* Children, and as enſtructed rather by nature, then accident, his conditions were very much commended, as alſo the feature of his body, which proued ſo highly pleaſing to his Maſter *Amarigo*, that he made him a free man, and imagining him to be a Turke, cauſed him to be baptized, and named *Pedro*, creating him ſuperintendent of all his affaires, and repoſing his chiefeſt truſt in him.



As the other Children of *Signior Amarigo* grew in yeeres and ſtature, ſo did a Daughter of his, named *Violenta*, a very goodly and beautifull Damoſell, ſomewhat ouer long kept from marriage by her Fathers couetouſneſſe, and caſting an eye of good liking on poore *Pedro*. Now, albeit ſhee loued him very dearly, and all his behauiour was moſt pleaſing to her, yet maiden modeſty forbad her to reueale it, till Loue (too long concealed) muſt needes diſcloſe it ſelfe. Which *Pedro* at the length tooke notice of, and grew ſo forward towards her in equality of affection, as the very ſight of her was his onely happineſſe. Yet very fearefull he was, leaſt it ſhould be noted, either by any of the Houſe, or the Mayden her ſelfe: who yet well obſerued it, and to her no meane contentment, as it appeared no leſſe (on the other ſide) to honeſt *Pedro*.

While thus they loued together meerely in dumbe ſhewes, not daring to ſpeake to each other, (though nothing more deſired) to finde ſome eaſe in this their oppreſſing paſſions: Fortune, euen as if ſhe pitied their ſo long languiſhing, enſtructed them how to finde out a way, whereby they might both better releeue themſelues. *Signior Amarigo*, about ſome two or three miles diſtance from *Trapani*, had a Countrey-Houſe or Farme, whereto his Wife, with her Daughter and ſome other women, vſed often-

times

times to make their resort, as it were in sportfull recreation; *Pedro* alwayes being diligent to man them thither. One time among the rest, it came to passe, as often it falleth out in the Summer season, that the faire Skie became suddenly ouer-clouded, euen as they were returning home towards *Trapani*, threatning a storme of raine to ouertake them, except they made the speedier haste.

Pedro, who was young, and likewise *Violenta*, went farre more lightly then her Mother and her company, as much perhaps prouoked by loue, as feare of the sudden raine falling, and paced on so fast before them, that they were wholly out of sight. After many flashes of lightning, and a few dreadfull clappes of thunder, there fell such a tempestuous showre of hayle, as compelled the Mother and her traine to shelter themselues in a poore Countrey-mans Cottage. *Pedro* and *Violenta*, hauing no other refuge, ranne likewise into a poore Sheepe-coate, so ouer-ruined, as it was in danger to fall on their heads; and no body dwelt in it, neither stood any other house neere it, and it was scarsely any shelter for them, howbeit, necessity enforceth to make shift with the meanest. The storme encreasing more and more, and they coueting to auoyd it as well as they could; sighes and drie hemmes were often inter-uented, as dumbly (before) they were wont to doe, when willingly they could affoord another kinde of speaking.

At last *Pedro* tooke heart, and saide: I would this showre would neuer cease, that I might be alwayes where I am. The like could I wish, answered *Violenta*, so we were in a better place of safety. These wishes drew on other gentle language, with modest kisses and embraces, the onely ease to poore Louers soules; so that the raine ceased not, till they had taken order for their oftner conuersing, and absolute plighting of their faiths together. By this time the storme was fairely ouer-blowne, and they attending on the way, till the Mother and the rest were come, with whom they returned to *Trapani*, where by wise and prouident meanes, they often conferred in priuate together, and enioyed the benefit of their amorous desires, yet free from any ill surmise or suspition.

But, as Louers felicities are sildome permanent, without one encountring crosse or other: so these stolne pleasures of *Pedro* and *Violenta*, met with as sowre a sauce in the farewell. For, shee proued to be conceiued with childe, then which could befall them no heauier affliction, and *Pedro* fearing to loose his life therefore, determined immediate flight, and reuealed his purpose to *Violenta*. Which when she heard, she told him plainly, that if he fled, forth-with she would kill her selfe. Alas deare Loue (quoth *Pedro*) with what reason can you wish my tarrying here? This conception of yours, doth discouer our offence, which a Fathers pity may easily pardon in you: but I being his seruant and vassall, shall be punished both for your sinne and mine, because he will haue no mercy on me. Content thy selfe *Pedro*, replyed *Violenta*, I will take such order for mine owne offence, by the discreete counsell of my louing Mother, that no blame shall any way be laide on thee, or so much as a surmise, except thou wilt

fondly

fondly betray thy ſelfe. If you can do ſo, anſwered *Pedro*, and conſtantly maintaine your promiſe; I will not depart, but ſee that you proue to bee ſo good as your word.

Violenta, who had concealed her amiſſe ſo long as ſhe could, and ſaw no other remedy, but now at laſt it muſt needes be diſcouered; went priuately to her Mother, and (in teares) reuealed her infirmity, humbly craning her pardon, and furtherance in hiding it from her Father. The Mother being extraordinarily diſpleaſed, chiding her with many ſharpe and angry ſpeeches, would needes know with whom ſhee had thus offended. The Daughter (to keepe *Pedro* from any detection) forged a Tale of her owne braine, farre from any truth indeede, which her Mother verily beleeuing, and willing to preſerue her Daughter from ſhame, as alſo the fierce anger of her Husband, he being a man of very implacable nature: conueyed her to the Countrey-Farme, whither *Signior Amarigo* ſildome or neuer reſorted, intending (vnder the ſhadow of ſickneſſe) to let her lye in there, without the leaſt ſuſpition of any in *Trapani*.

Sinne and ſhame can neuer be ſo cloſely carryed, or clouded with the greateſt cunning; but truth hath a loop-light whereby to diſcouer it, euen when it ſuppoſeth it ſelfe in the ſureſt ſafety. For, on the very day of his deliuerance, at ſuch time as the Mother, and ſome few friends (ſworne to ſecrecy) were about the buſineſſe, *Signior Amarigo*, hauing beene in company of other Gentlemen, to flye his Hawke at the Riuer, vpon a ſudden, (but very vnfortunately, albeit hee was alone by himſelfe) ſtept into his Farme-houſe, euen to the next roome where the women were, and heard the new-borne Babe to cry, whereat maruelling not a little, he called for his Wife, to know what young childe cryed in his Houſe. The Mother, amazed at his ſtrange comming thither, which neuer before he had vſed to doe, and pittying the wofull diſtreſſe of her Daughter, which now could bee no longer couered, reuealed what happened to *Violenta*. But he, being nothing ſo raſh in beliefe, as his Wife was, made anſwere, that it was impoſſible for his Daughter to be conceiued with childe, becauſe he neuer obſerued the leaſt ſigne of loue in her to any man whatſoeuer, and therefore he would be ſatisfied in the truth, as ſhee expected any fauour from him, or elſe there was no other way but death.

The Mother laboured by all meanes ſhe could deuiſe, to pacifie her Husbands fury, which proued all in vaine; for being thus impatiently incenſed, he drew foorth his Sword, and ſtepping with it drawne into the Chamber (where ſhe had bene deliuered of a goodly Sonne) he ſaid vnto her. Either tell me who is the Father of this Baſtard, or thou and it ſhall periſh both together. Poore *Violenta*, leſſe reſpecting her owne life, then ſhe did the childes, forgot her ſolemne promiſe made to *Pedro*, and diſcouered all. Which when *Amarigo* had heard, he grew ſo deſperately enraged, that hardly he could forbeare from killing her. But after hee had ſpoken what his fury enſtructed him, hee mounted on Horſe-backe againe, ryding backe to *Trapani*, where hee diſcloſed the iniury which *Pedro* had done him, to a noble Gentleman, named *Signior Conrado*, who

was

was Captaine for the King ouer the City.

Before poore *Pedro* could haue any intelligence, or ſo much as ſuſpected any treachery againſt him; he was ſuddenly apprehended, and being called in queſtion, ſtood not on any deniall, but confeſſed truly what hee had done: whereupon, within ſome few dayes after, he was condemned by the Captaine, to be whipt to the place of execution, and afterward to be hanged by the necke. *Signior Amarigo*, becauſe he would cut off (at one and the ſame time) not onely the liues of the two poore Louers, but their childes alſo; as a franticke man, violently carried from all ſenſe of compaſſion, euen when *Pedro* was led and whipt to his death: he mingled ſtrong poyſon in a Cup of wine, deliuering it to a truſty ſeruant of his owne, and a naked Rapier withall, ſpeaking to him in this manner. Goe carry theſe two preſents to my late Daughter *Violenta*, and tell her from me, that in this inſtant houre, two ſeuerall kinds of death are offered vnto her, and one of them ſhe muſt make choyce of, either to drinke the poyſon, and ſo dye, or to run her body on this Rapiers point, which if ſhe denie to doe, ſhe ſhall be haled to the publike market place, and preſently be burned in the ſight of her lewd companion, according as ſhee hath worthily deſerued. When thou haſt deliuered her this meſſage, take her Baſtard brat, ſo lately ſince borne, and daſh his braines out againſt the walles, and afterward throw him to my Dogges to feede on.

When the Father had giuen this cruell ſentence, both againſt his owne Daughter, and her young Sonne, the ſeruant readier to do euill, then any good, went to the place where his Daughter was kept. Poore condemned *Pedro*, (as you haue heard) was led whipt to the Gibbet, and paſſing (as it pleaſed the Captaines Officers to guide him) by a faire Inne: at the ſame time were lodged there three chiefe perſons of *Arminia*, whom the King of the Countrey had ſent to *Rome*, as Ambaſſadours to the Popes Holineſſe, to negociate about an important buſineſſe neerely concerning the King and State. Repoſing there for ſome few dayes, as being much wearied with their iourney, and highly honoured by the Gentlemen of *Trapani*, eſpecially *Signior Amarigo*; theſe Ambaſſadours ſtanding in their Chamber window, heard the wofull lamentations of *Pedro* in his paſſage by.

Pedro was naked from the middle vpward, and his hands bound faſt behind him, but being well obſerued by one of the Ambaſſadours, a man aged, and of great authority, named *Phinio*: hee eſpied a great red ſpot vpon his breaſt, not painted, or procured by his puniſhment, but naturally imprinted in the fleſh, which women (in theſe parts) terme the Roſe. Vpon the ſight hereof, he ſuddenly remembred a Sonne of his owne, which was ſtolne from him about fifteene yeeres before, by Pyrates on the Seacoaſt of *Laiazzo*, neuer hearing any tydings of him afterward. Vpon further conſideration, and comparing his Sonnes age with the likelyhood of this poore wretched mans; thus he conferred with his owne thoughts. If my Sonne (quoth he) be liuing, his age is equall to this mans time, and by the red blemiſh on his breaſt, it plainely ſpeakes him for to bee my Sonne.

More.

Moreouer, thus he conceiued, that if it were he, he could not but remember his owne name, his Fathers, and the *Armenian* Language; wherefore, when he was iuſt oppoſite before the window, hee called aloud to him, ſaying: *Theodoro*. *Pedro* hearing the voyce, preſently lifted vp his head, and *Phenio* ſpeaking *Armnian*, ſaide: Of whence art thou, and what is thy Fathers name? The Sergeants (in reuerence to the Lord Ambaſſador) ſtayed awhile, till *Pedro* had returned his anſwer, who ſaide. I am an *Armenian* borne, Sonne to one *Phineo*, and was brought hither I cannot tell by whom. *Phineo* hearing this, knew then aſſuredly, that this was the ſame Sonne which he had loſt; wherefore, the teares ſtanding in his eyes with conceite of ioy, downe he deſcended from the window, and the other Ambaſſadors with him, running in among the Sergeants to embrace his Sonne, and caſting his owne rich Cloake about his whipt body, entreating them to forbeare and proceed no further, till they heard what command he ſhould returne withall vnto them; which very willingly they promiſed to do.

Already, by the generall rumour diſperſed abroad, *Phineo* had vnderſtood the occaſion, why *Pedro* was thus puniſhed, and ſentenced to bee hanged; wherefore, accompanied with his fellow Ambaſſadors, and all their attending traine, he went to *Signior Conrado*, and ſpake thus to him. My Lord, he whom you haue ſent to death as a ſlaue, is a free Gentleman borne, and my Sonne, able to make her amends whom he hath diſhonoured, by taking her in marriage as his lawfull Wife. Let me therefore entreat you, to make ſtay of the execution, vntill it may be knowne, whether ſhe will accept him as her Husband, or no; leaſt (if ſhe be ſo pleaſed) you offend directly againſt your owne Law. When *Signior Conrado* heard, that *Pedro* was Sonne to the Lord Ambaſſador, he wondred thereat not a little, and being ſomewhat aſhamed of his fortunes errour, confeſſed, that the claime of *Phineo* was conformable to Law, and ought not to be denied him; going preſently to the Counſell Chamber, ſending for *Signior Amarigo* immediately thither, and acquainting him fully with the caſe.

Amarigo, who beleeued that his Daughter and her Child were already dead, was the wofulleſt man in the World, for his ſo raſh proceeding, knowing very well, that if ſhe were not dead, the ſcandall would eaſily be wipt away with credit. Wherefore he ſent in all poaſt haſte, to the place where his Daughter lay, that if his command were not already executed, by no meanes to haue it done at all. He who went on this ſpeedy errand, found there *Signior Amarigoes* ſeruant ſtanding before *Violenta*, with the Cup of poyſon in the one hand, and the drawne Rapier in the other, reproaching her with very foule and iniurious ſpeeches, becauſe ſhe had delayed the time ſo long, and would not accept the one or other, ſtriuing (by violence) to make her take the one. But hearing his Maſters command to the contrary, he left her, and returned backe to him, certifying him how the caſe ſtood.

Moſt highly pleaſed was *Amarigo* with theſe glad newes, and going to the

the Ambaſſadour *Phineo*, in teares excuſed himſelfe (ſo well as he could) for his ſeuerity, and crauing pardon; aſſured him, that if *Theodoro* would accept his Daughter in marriage, willingly he would beſtow her on him. *Phineo* allowed his excuſes to be tollerable, and ſaide beſide; If my Son will not marry your Daughter, then let the ſentence of death be executed on him. *Amarigo* and *Phineo* being thus accorded, they went to poore *Theodoro*, fearefully looking euery minute when he ſhould dye, yet ioyfull that he had found his Father, who preſently moued the queſtion to him. *Theodoro* hearing that *Violenta* ſhould bee his Wife, if he would ſo accept her: was ouer come with ſuch exceeding ioy, as if he had leapt out of hell into Paradiſe; confeſſing, that no greater felicity could befall him, if *Violenta* her ſelfe were ſo well pleaſed as he.

The like motion was made to her, to vnderſtand her diſpoſition in this caſe, who hearing what good hap had befalne *Theodoro*, and now in like manner muſt happen to her: whereas not long before, when two ſuch violent deathes were prepared for her, and one of them ſhee muſt needs embrace, ſhe accounted her miſery beyond all other womens, but ſhe now thought her ſelfe aboue all in happineſſe, if ſhe might be wife to her beloued *Theodoro*, ſubmitting her ſelfe wholy to her Fathers diſpoſing. The marriage being agreed on betweene them, it was celebrated with great pompe and ſolemnity, a generall Feaſt being made for all the Citizens, and the young married couple nouriſhed vp their ſweete Son, which grew to be a very comely childe.

After that the Embaſſie was diſpatched at *Rome*, and *Phineo* (with the reſt) was returned thither againe; *Violenta* did reuerence him as her owne naturall Father, and he was not a little proud of ſo louely a Daughter, beginning a freſh feaſting againe, and continuing the ſame a whole moneth together. Within ſome ſhort while after, a Galley being fairely furniſhed for the purpoſe, *Phineo*, his Sonne, Daughter, and their young Sonne, went aboard, ſayling away thence to *Laiazzo*, where afterward they liued in much tranquility.

Anaſtaſio, *a Gentleman of the Family of the* Honeſti, *by louing the Daughter to* Signior Paulo Trauerſario, *lauiſhly waſted a great part of his ſubſtance, without receiuing any loue from her againe. By perſwaſion of ſome of his kindred and friends, he went to a Countrey dwelling of his, called* Chiaſſo, *where he ſaw a Knight deſperately purſue a young Damoſell; whom he ſlew, and afterward gaue her to be deuoured by his Hounds.* Anaſtaſio *inuited his friends, and hers alſo whom he ſo dearely loued, to take part of a dinner with him, who likewiſe ſaw the ſame Damoſell ſo torne in peeces: which his vnkind Loue perceiuing, and fearing leaſt the like ill fortune ſhould happen to her; ſhe accepted* Anaſtaſio *to be her Husband.*

The eighth Nouell.

Declaring, that Loue not onely makes a man prodigall, but alſo an enemy to himſelfe. Moreouer, aduenture oftentimes bringeth ſuch matters to paſſe, as wit and cunning in man can neuer comprehend.

So

SO ſoone as Madam *Lauretta* held her peace, Madam *Pampinea* (by the Queenes command) began, and ſaid. Louely Ladies, as pitty is moſt highly commended in our ſexe, euen ſo is cruelty in vs as ſeuerely reuenged (oftentimes) by diuine ordination. Which that you may the better know, and learne likewiſe to ſhun, as a deadly euill; I purpoſe to make apparant by a Nouell, no leſſe full of compaſſion, then delectable.



Rauenna being a very ancient City in *Romania*, there dwelt ſometime a great number of worthy Gentlemen, among whom I am to ſpeake of one more eſpecially, named *Anaſtaſio*, deſcended from the Family of the *Honeſti*, who by the death of his Father, and an Vnckle of his, was left extraordinarily abounding in riches, and growing to yeares fitting for marriage, (as young Gallants are eaſily apt enough to do) he became enamored of a very bountifull Gentlewoman, who was Daughter to *Signior Paulo Trauerſario*, one of the moſt ancient and noble Families in all the Countrey. Nor made he any doubt, but by his meanes and induſtrious endeauour, to deriue affection from her againe; for he carried himſelfe like a braue-minded Gentleman, liberall in his expences, honeſt and affable in all his actions, which commonly are the true notes of a good nature, and highly to be commended in any man. But, howſoeuer Fortune became his enemy, theſe laudable parts of man-hood did not any way friend him, but rather appeared hurtfull to himſelfe: ſo cruell, vnkind, and almoſt meerely ſauage did ſhe ſhew her ſelf to him; perhaps in pride of her ſingular beauty, or preſuming on her nobility by birth, both which are on her blemiſhes, then ornaments in a woman, eſpecially when they be abuſed.

The harſh and vnciuill vſage in her, grew very diſtaſtefull to *Anaſtaſio*, and ſo vnſufferable, that after a long time of fruitleſſe ſeruice, requited ſtill

with nothing but coy diſdaine; deſperate reſolutions entred into his braine, and often he was minded to kill himſelfe. But better thoughts ſupplanting thoſe furious paſſions, he abſtained from any ſuch violent act; and gouerned by more manly conſideration, determined, that as ſhee hated him, he would requite her with the like, if he could: wherein he became altogether deceiued, becauſe as his hopes grew to a dayly decaying, yet his loue enlarged it ſelfe more and more.

Thus *Anaſtaſio* perſeuering ſtill in his bootleſſe affection, and his expences not limited within any compaſſe; it appeared in the iudgement of his Kindred and Friends, that he was falne into a mighty conſumption, both of his body and meanes. In which reſpect, many times they aduiſed him to leaue the City of *Rauenna*, and liue in ſome other place for ſuch a while; as might ſet a more moderate ſtint vpon his ſpendings, and bridle the indiſcreete courſe of his loue, the onely fuell which fed this furious fire.

Anaſtaſio held out thus along time, without lending an eare to ſuch friendly counſell: but in the end, he was ſo neerely followed by them, as being no longer able to deny them, he promiſed to accompliſh their requeſt. Whereupon, making ſuch extraordinary preparation, as if he were to ſet thence for *France* or *Spaine*, or elſe into ſome further diſtant countrey: he mounted on horſeback, and accompanied with ſome few of his familiar friends, departed from *Rauenna*, and rode to a countrey dwelling houſe of his owne, about three or foure miles diſtant from the Cittie, which was called *Chiaſſo*, and there (vpon a very goodly greene) erecting diuers Tents and Pauillions, ſuch as great perſons make vſe of in the time of a Progreſſe: he ſaid to his friends, which came with him thither, that there he determined to make his abiding, they all returning backe vnto *Rauenna*, and might come to viſite him againe ſo often as they pleaſed.

Now, it came to paſſe, that about the beginning of May, it being then a very milde and ſerrene ſeaſon, and he leading there a much more magnificent life, then euer hee had done before, inuiting diuers to dine with him this day, and as many to morrow, and not to leaue him till after ſupper: vpon the ſodaine, falling into remembrance of his cruell Miſtris, hee commanded all his ſeruants to forbeare his company, and ſuffer him to walke alone by himſelfe awhile, becauſe he had occaſion of priuate meditations, wherein he would not (by any meanes) be troubled. It was then about the ninth houre of the day, and he walking on ſolitary all alone, hauing gone ſome halfe miles diſtance from his Tents, entred into a Groue of Pine-trees, neuer minding dinner time, or any thing elſe, but onely the vnkind requitall of his loue.

Sodainly he heard the voice of a woman, ſeeming to make moſt mournfull complaints, which breaking off his ſilent conſiderations, made him to lift vp his head, to know the reaſon of this noiſe. When he ſaw himſelfe ſo farre entred into the Groue, before he could imagine where he was; hee looked amazedly round about him, and out of a little t'icket of buſhes & briars, round engirt with ſpreading trees, hee eſpyed a young Damoſell

come

come running towards him, naked from the middle vpward, her haire diſheuelled on her ſhoulders, and her faire skinne rent and torne with the briars and brambles, ſo that the blood ran trickling downe mainely; ſhe weeping, wringing her hands, and crying out for mercy ſo lowde as ſhe could. Two fierce Blood-hounds alſo followed ſwiftly after, and where their teeth tooke hold, did moſt cruelly bite her. Laſt of all (mounted on a luſty blacke Courſer) came gallopping a Knight, with a very ſterne and angry countenance, holding a drawne ſhort Sword in his hand, giuing her very vile and dreadfull ſpeeches, and threatning euery minute to kil her.

This ſtrange and vncouth ſight, bred in him no meane admiration, as alſo kinde compaſſion to the vnfortunate woman; out of which compaſſion, ſprung an earneſt deſire, to deliuer her (if he could) from a death ſo full of anguiſh and horror: but ſeeing himſelfe to be without Armes, he ran and pluckt vp the plant of a Tree, which handling as if it had bene a ſtaffe, he oppoſed himſelfe againſt the Dogges and the Knight, who ſeeing him comming, cryed out in this manner to him. *Anaſtaſio*, put not thy ſelfe in any oppoſition, but referre to my Hounds and me, to puniſh this wicked woman as ſhe hath iuſtly deſerued. And in ſpeaking theſe words, the Hounds tooke faſt hold on her body, ſo ſtaying her, vntill the Knight was come neerer to her, and alighted from his horſe: when *Anaſtaſio* (after ſome other angry ſpeeches) ſpake thus vnto him: I cannot tell what or who thou art, albeit thou takeſt ſuch knowledge of me, yet I muſt ſay, that it is meere cowardize in a Knight, being armed as thou art, to offer to kill a naked woman, and make thy dogges thus to ſeize on her, as if ſhe were a ſauage beaſt; therefore beleeue me, I will defend her ſo farre as I am able.

Anaſtaſio, anſwered the Knight, I am of the ſame City as thou art, and do well remember, that thou waſt a little Ladde, when I (who was then named *Guido Anaſtaſio*, and thine Vnckle) became as intirely in loue with this woman, as now thou art of *Paulo Trauerſarioes* daughte. But through her coy diſdaine and cruelty, ſuch was my heauy fate, that deſperately I ſlew my ſelfe with this ſhort ſword which thou beholdeſt in mine hand: for which raſh ſinfull deede, I was, and am condemned to eternall puniſhment. This wicked woman, reioycing immeaſurably in mine vnhappy death, remained no long time aliue after me, and for her mercileſſe ſinne of cruelty, and taking pleaſure in my oppreſſing torments, dying vnrepentant, and in pride of her ſcorne, ſhe had the like ſentence of condemnation pronounced on her, and ſent to the ſame place where I was tormented.

There the three impartiall Iudges, impoſed this further infliction on vs both; namely, that ſhe ſhould flye in this manner before me, and I (who loued her ſo deerely while I liued) muſt purſue her as my deadly enemy, not like a woman that had a taſte of loue in her. And ſo often as I can ouertake her, I am to kill her with this ſword, the ſame Weapon wherewith I ſlew my ſelfe. Then am I enioyned, therewith to open her

accurſed body, and teare out her hard and frozen heart, with her other inwards, as now thou ſeeſt me doe, which I giue vnto my Hounds to feede on. Afterward, ſuch is the appointment of the ſupreame powers, that ſhe re-aſſumeth life againe, euen as if ſhe had not bene dead at all, and falling to the ſame kinde of flight, I with my Hounds am ſtill to follow her; without any reſpite or intermiſſion. Euery Friday, and iuſt at this houre, our courſe is this way, where ſhe ſuffereth the iuſt puniſhment inflicted on her. Nor do we reſt any of the other dayes, but are appointed vnto other places, where ſhe cruelly executed her malice againſt me, being now (of her deare affectionate friend) ordained to be her endleſſe enemy, and to purſue her in this manner for ſo many yeares, as ſhe exerciſed moneths of cruelty towards me. Hinder me not then, in being the executioner of diuine iuſtice; for all thy interpoſition is but in vaine, in ſeeking to croſſe the appointment of ſupreame powers.

Anaſtaſio hauing attentiuely heard all this diſcourſe, his haire ſtood vpright like Porcupines quils, and his ſoule was ſo ſhaken with the terror, that he ſtept backe to ſuffer the Knight to do what he was enioyned, looking yet with milde commiſſeration on the poore woman. Who kneeling moſt humbly before the Knight, and ſtearnely ſeized on by the two blood-hounds, he opened her breſt with his weapon, drawing foorth her heart and bowels, which inſtantly he threw to the dogges, and they deuoured them very greedily. Soone after, the Damoſell (as if none of this puniſhment had bene inflicted on her) ſtarted vp ſodainly, running amaine towards the Sea ſhore, and the Hounds ſwiftly following her, as the Knight did the like, after he had taken his ſword, and was mounted on horſeback; ſo that *Anaſtaſio* had ſoone loſt all ſight of them, and could not geſſe what was become of them.

After he had heard and obſerued all theſe things, he ſtoode a while as confounded with feare and pitty, like a ſimple ſilly man, hoodwinkt with his owne paſſions, not knowing the ſubtle enemies cunning illuſions in offering falſe ſuggeſtions to the ſight, to worke his owne ends theteby, and encreaſe the number of his deceiued ſeruants. Forthwith he perſwaded himſelfe, that he might make good vſe of this womans tormenting, ſo iuſtly impoſed on the Knight to proſecute, if thus it ſhould continue ſtill euery Friday. Wherefore, ſetting a good note or marke vpon the place, he returned backe to his owne people, and at ſuch time as he thought conuenient, ſent for diuers of his kindred and friends from *Rauenna*, who being preſent with him, thus he ſpake to them.

Deare Kinſmen and Friends, ye haue a long while importuned me, to diſcontinue my ouer-doating loue to her, whom you all thinke, and I find to be my mortall enemy: as alſo, to giue ouer my lauiſh expences, wherein I confeſſe my ſelfe too prodigall; both which requeſts of yours, I will condiſcend to, prouided, that you will performe one gracious fauour for me; Namely, that on Friday next, Signior *Paulo Trauerſario*, his wife, daughter, with all other women linked in linage to them, and ſuch beſide onely as you ſhall pleaſe to appoint, will vouchſafe to accept a dinner

heere

heere with me; as for the reaſon thereto moouing me, you ſhall therm more at large be acquainted withall. This appeared no difficult matter for them to accompliſh: wherefore, being returned to *Rauenna*, and as they found the time anſwerable to their purpoſe, they inuited ſuch as *Anaſtaſio* had appointed them. And although they found it ſome-what an hard matter, to gaine her company whom he ſo deerely affected; yet notwithſtanding, the other women won her along with them.

A moſt magnificent dinner had *Anaſtaſio* prouided, and the tables were couered vnder the Pine-trees, where he ſaw the cruell Lady ſo purſued and ſlaine: directing the gueſts ſo in their ſeating, that the yong Gentlewoman his vnkinde Miſtreſſe, ſate with her face oppoſite vnto the place, where the diſmall ſpectacle was to be ſeene. About the cloſing vp of dinner, they beganne to heare the noiſe of the poore proſecuted Woman, which droue them all to much admiration, deſiring to know what it was, and no one reſoluing them, they aroſe from the Tables, and looking directly as the noiſe came to them, they eſpyed the wofull Woman, the Dogges eagerly purſuing her; and the armed Knight on horſebacke, gallopping fiercely after them with his drawne weapon, and came very nere vnto the company, who cryed out with lowd exclaimes againſt the dogs and the Knight, ſtepping forth in aſſiſtance of the iniuried woman.

The Knight ſpake vnto them, as formerly he had done to *Anaſtaſio*, (which made them draw backe, poſſeſſed with feare and admiration) acting the ſame cruelty as he did the Friday before, not differing in the leaſt degree. Moſt of the Gentlewomen there preſent, being neere allyed to the vnfortunate Woman, and likewiſe to the Knight, remembring well both his loue and death, did ſhed teares as plentifully, as if it had bin to the very perſons themſelues, in vſuall performance of the action indeede. Which tragicall Scœne being paſſed ouer, and the Woman and Knight gone out of their ſight: all that had ſeene this ſtraunge accident, fell into diuerſity of confuſed opinions, yet not daring to diſcloſe them, as doubting ſome further danger to enſue thereon.

But beyond all the reſt, none could compare in feare and aſtoniſhment with the cruell yong Maide affected by *Anaſtaſio*, who both ſaw and obſerued all with a more inward apprehenſion, knowing very well, that the morall of this diſmall ſpectacle, carried a much neerer application to her then any other in all the company. For now ſhe could call to mind, how vnkinde and cruell ſhe had ſhewne her ſelfe to *Anaſtaſio*, euen as the other Gentlewoman formerly did to her Louer, ſtill flying from her in great contempt and ſcorne: for which, ſhe thought the Blood-hounds alſo purſued her at the heeles already, and a ſword of vengeance to mangle her body. This feare grew ſo powerfull in her, that to preuent the like heauy doome from falling on her, ſhe ſtudied (by all her beſt and commendable meanes, and therein beſtowed all the night ſeaſon) how to change her hatred into kinde loue, which at the length ſhe fully obtained, and then purpoſed to proſecute in this manner.

Secretly ſhe ſent a faithfull Chamber-maide of her owne, to greete

Anaſtaſio on her behalfe; humbly entreating him to come ſee her: becauſe now ſhe was abſolutely determined, to giue him ſatisfaction in all which (with honour) he could requeſt of her. Whereto *Anaſtaſio* anſwered, that he accepted her meſſage thankfully, and deſired no other fauour at her hand, but that which ſtood with her owne offer, namely, to be his Wife in honourable marriage. The Maide knowing ſufficiently, that he could not be more deſirous of the match, then her Miſtreſſe ſhewed her ſelfe to be, made anſwer in her name, that this motion would be moſt welcome to her.

Heereupon, the Gentlewoman her ſelfe, became the ſolicitour to her Father and Mother, telling them plainly, that ſhe was willing to be the Wife of *Anaſtaſio*: which newes did ſo highly content them, that vpon the Sunday next following, the marriage was very worthily ſolemnized, and they liued and loued together very kindly. Thus the diuine bounty, out of the malignant enemies ſecret machinations, can cauſe good effects to ariſe and ſucceede. For, from this conceite of fearfull imagination in her, not onely happened this long deſired conuerſion, of a Maide ſo obſtinately ſcornfull and proud: but likewiſe all the women of *Rauenna* (being admoniſhed by her example) grew afterward more kind and tractable to mens honeſt motions, then euer they ſhewed themſelues before. And let me make ſome vſe hereof (faire Ladies) to you, not to ſtand ouer-nicely conceited of your beauty and good parts, when men (growing enamored of you by them) ſolicite you with their beſt and humbleſt ſeruices. Remember then this diſdainfull Gentlewoman, but more eſpecially her, who being the death of ſo kinde a Louer, was therefore condemned to perpetuall puniſhment, and he made the miniſter thereof, whom ſhe had caſt off with coy diſdaine, from which I wiſh your minds to be as free, as mine is ready to do you any acceptable ſeruice.

Frederigo, *of the* Alberighi *Family, loued a Gentlewoman, and was not requited with like loue againe. By bountifull expences, and ouer liberall inuitations, he waſted and conſumed all his lands and goods, hauing nothing left him, but a Hawke or Faulcon. His vnkinde Miſtreſſe happeneth to come viſite him, and he not hauing any other foode for her dinner; made a dainty diſh of his Faulcone for her to feede on. Being conquered by this exceeding kinde courteſie; ſhe changed her former hatred towardes him, accepting him as her Husband in marriage, and made him a man of wealthy poſſeſſions.*

The Ninth Nouell.

Wherein is figured to the life, the notable kindneſſe and courteſie, of a true and conſtant Louer: As alſo the magnanimous minde of a famous Lady.

MAdam *Philomena* hauing finiſhed her diſcourſe, the Queene perceiuing, that her turne was the next, in regard of the priuiledge granted to *Dioneus*; with a ſmiling countenance thus ſhe ſpake. Now or neuer am I to maintaine the order which was inſtituted when wee began this com-

commendable exercise, whereto I yeeld with all humble obedience. And (worthy Ladies) I am to acquaint you with a Nouell, in some sort answerable to the precedent, not onely to let you know, how powerfully your kindnesses do preuaile, in such as haue a free and gentle soule: but also to aduise you, in being bountifull, where vertue doth iustly challenge it. And euermore, let your fauours shine on worthy deseruers, without the direction of chaunce or Fortune, who neuer bestoweth any gift by discretion; but rashly without consideration, euen to the first she blindly meets withall.



You are to vnderstand then, that *Coppo di Borghese Domenichi*, who was of our owne City, and perhaps (as yet) his name remaineth in great and reuerend authority, now in these dayes of ours, as well deseruing eternall memory; yet more for his vertues and commendable qualities, then any boast of Nobility from his predecessors. This man, being well entred into yeares, and drawing towards the finishing of his dayes; it was his only delight and felicity, in conuersation among his neighbours, to talke of matters concerning antiquity, and some other things within compasse of his owne knowledge: which he would deliuer in such singular order, (hauing an absolute memory) and with the best Language, as very few or none could do the like. Among the multiplicity of his queint discourses, I remember he told vs, that sometime there liued in *Florence* a yong Gentleman, named *Frederigo*, Sonne to Signior *Phillippo Alberigo*, who was held and reputed, both for Armes, and all other actions beseeming a Gentleman, hardly to haue his equall through all *Tuscany*.

This *Friderigo* (as it is no rare matter in yong Gentlemen) became enamored of a Gentlewoman, named Madam *Giana*, who was esteemed (in her

her time)to be the faire ſt and moſt gracious Lady in all *Florence.* In which reſpect, and to reach the height of his deſire, he made many ſumptuous Feaſts and Banquets, Iouſtes, Titlies, Tournaments, and all other noble actions of Armes, beſide, ſending her infinite rich and coſtly preſents, making ſpare of nothing, but laſhing all out in lauiſh expence. Notwithſtanding, ſhe being no leſſe honeſt then faire, made no reckoning of whatſoeuer he did for her ſake, or the leaſt reſpect of his owne perſon. So that *Frederigo*, ſpending thus daily more, then his meanes and ability could maintaine, and no ſupplies any way redounding to him, or his faculties (as very eaſily they might) diminiſhed in ſuch ſort, that he became ſo poore; as he had nothing left him, but a ſmall poore Farme to liue vpon, the ſilly reuenewes whereof were ſo meane, as ſcarcely allowed him meat and drinke; yet had he a faire Hawke or Faulcon, hardly any where to be fellowed, ſo expeditious and ſure ſhe was of flight. His low ebbe and pouerty, no way quailing his loue to the Lady, but rather ſetting a keener edge thereon; he ſaw the City life could no longer containe him, where moſt he coueted to abide: and therefore, betooke himſelfe to his poore Countrey Farme, to let his Faulcon get him his dinner and ſupper, patiently ſupporting his penurious eſtate, without ſuite or meanes making to one, for helpe or reliefe in any ſuch neceſſity.

While thus he continued in this extremity, it came to paſſe, that the Husband to Madam *Giana* fell ſicke, and his debility of body being ſuch, as little, or no hope of life remained: he made his laſt will and teſtament, ordaining thereby, that his Sonne (already growne to indifferent ſtature) ſhould be heire to all his Lands and riches, wherein he abounded very greatly. Next vnto him, if he chanced to die without a lawfull heire, he ſubſtituted his Wife, whom moſt dearely he affected, and ſo departed out of this life. Madam *Giana* being thus left a widdow; as commonly it is the cuſtome of our City Dames, during the Summer ſeaſon, ſhe went to a houſe of her owne in the Countrey, which was ſomewhat neere to poore *Frederigoes* Farme, and where he liued in ſuch an honeſt kind of contented pouerey.

Hereupon, the young Gentleman her Sonne, taking great delight in Hounds and Hawkes; grew into familiarity with poore *Frederigo*, and hauing ſeene many faire flights of his Faulcon, they pleaſed him ſo extraordinarily, that he earneſtly deſired to enioy her as his owne; yet durſt not moue the motion for her, becauſe he ſaw how choycely *Frederigo* eſteemed her. Within a ſhort while after, the young Gentleman, became very ſicke, whereat his Mother geeued exceedingly, (as hauing no more but he, and therefore loued him the more entirely) neuer parting from him either night or day, comforting him ſo kindly as ſhe could, and demanding, if he had a deſire to any thing, willing him to reueale it, and aſſuring him withall, that (if it were within the compaſſe of poſſibility) he ſhould haue it. The youth hearing how many times ſhe had made him theſe offers, and with ſuch vehement proteſtations of performance, at laſt thus ſpake.

Mother

Mother (quoth he) if you can do ſo much for me, as that I may haue *Frederigoes* Faulcon, I am parſwaded, that my ſickneſſe ſoone will ceaſe. The Lady hearing this, ſate ſome ſhort while muſing to her ſelfe, and began to conſider, what ſhe might beſt doe to compaſſe her Sonnes deſire: for well ſhe knew, how long a time *Frederigo* had moſt louingly kept it, not ſuffering it euer to be out of his ſight. Moreouer, ſhee remembred, how earneſt in affection he had bene to her, neuer thinking himſelfe happy, but onely when he was in her company; wherefore, ſhee entred into this priuate conſultation with her owne thoughts. Shall I ſend, or goe my ſelfe in perſon, to requeſt the Faulcon of him, it being the beſt that euer flew? It is his onely Iewell of delight, and that taken from him, no longer can he wiſh to liue in this World. How farre then voyde of vnderſtanding ſhall I ſhew my ſelfe, to rob a Gentleman of his ſole felicity, hauing no other ioy or comfort left him? Theſe and the like conſiderations, wheeled about her troubled braine, onely in tender care and loue to her Sonne, perſwading her ſelfe aſſuredly, that the Faulcon were her owne, if ſhe would but requeſt it: yet not knowing whereon it were beſt to reſolue, ſhee returned no anſwer to her Sonne, but ſate ſtill in her ſilent meditations. At the length, loue to the youth, ſo preuailed with her, that ſhe concluded on his contentation, and (come of it what could) ſhee would not ſend for it; but go her ſelfe in perſon to requeſt it, and then returne home againe with it: whereupon thus ſhe ſpake. Sonne, comfort thy ſelfe, and let languiſhing thoughts no longer offend thee: for here I promiſe thee, that the firſt thing I do to morrow morning, ſhall bee my iourney for the Faulcon, and aſſure thy ſelfe, that I will bring it with me. Whereat the youth was ſo ioyed, that he imagined, his ſickneſſe began inſtantly a little to leaue him, and promiſed him a ſpeedy recouery.

Somewhat early the next morning, the Lady, in care of her ſicke Sons health, was vp and ready betimes, and taking another Gentlewoman with her; onely as a morning recreation, ſhee walked to *Frederigoes* poore Countrey Farme, knowing that it would not a little glad him to ſee her. At the time of her arriuall there, he was (by chance) in a ſilly Garden, on the backe-ſide of the Houſe, becauſe (as yet) it was no conuenient time for flight: but when he heard, that Madam *Giana* was come thither, and deſired to haue ſome conference with him; as one almoſt confounded with admiration, in all haſt he ran to her, and ſaluted her with moſt humble reuerence. She in all modeſt and gracious manner, requited him with the like ſalutations, thus ſpeaking to him. *Signior Frederigo*, your owne beſt wiſhes befriend you, I am now come hither, to recompence ſome part of your paſſed trauailes, which heretofore you pretended to ſuffer for my ſake, when your loue was more to me, then did well become you to offer, or my ſelfe to accept. And ſuch is the nature of my recompence, that I make my ſelfe your gueſt, and meane this day to dine with you, as alſo this Gentlewoman, making no doubt of our welcome: whereto, with lowly reuerence, thus he replyed.

Madam, I doe not remember, that euer I ſuſtained any loſſe or hinderance

rance by you, but rather ſo much good, as if I was worth any thing, it proceeded from your great deſeruings, and by the ſeruice in which I did ſtand engaged to you. But my preſent happineſſe can no way be equalled, deriued from your ſuper-abounding gracious fauour, and more then common courſe of kindneſſe, vouchſafing (of your owne liberall nature) to come and viſit ſo poore a ſeruant. Oh that I had as much to ſpend againe, as heretofore riotouſly I haue runne thorow: what a welcome would your poore Hoſt beſtow vpon you, for gracing this homely houſe with your diuine preſence? With theſe wordes, he conducted her into his houſe, and then into his ſimple Garden, where hauing no conuenient company for her, he ſaid. Madam, the pouerty of this place is ſuch, that it affoordeth none fit for your conuerſation: this poore woman, wife to an honeſt Husbandman will attend on you, while I (with ſome ſpeede) ſhall make ready dinner.

Poore *Frederigo*, although his neceſſity was extreame, and his greefe great, remembring his former inordinate expences, a moity whereof would now haue ſtood him in ſome ſtead; yet he had a heart as free and forward as euer, no a iotte detected in his minde, though vtterly ouerthrowne by Fortune. Alas! how was his good ſoule afflicted, that he had nothing wherewith to honour his Lady? Vp and downe he runnes, one while this way, then againe another, exclaiming on his diſaſtrous Fate, like a man enraged, or bereft of ſenſes: for he had not one peny of mony neither pawne or pledge, wherewith to procure any. The time haſted on, and he would gladly (though in meane meaſure) expreſſe his honourable reſpect of the Lady. To begge of any, his nature denied it, and to borrow he could not, becauſe his neighbours were all as needie as himſelfe.

At laſt, looking round about, and ſeeing his Faulcon ſtanding on her pearch, which he felt to be very plumpe and fat, being voyde of all other helpes in his neede, and thinking her to be a Fowle meete for ſo Noble a Lady to feede on: without any further demurring or delay, he pluckt off her necke, and cauſed the poore woman preſently to pull her Feathers: which being done, he put her on the ſpit, and in ſhort time ſhe was daintily roaſted. Himſelfe couered the Table, ſet bread and ſalt on and laid the Napkins, whereof he had but a few left him. Going then with chearfull lookes into the Garden, telling the Lady that dinner was ready, and nothing now wanted, but her preſence. Shee, and the Gentlewoman went in, and being ſated at the Table, not knowing what they fed on, the Faulcon was all their foode; and *Frederigo* not a little ioyfull, that his credite was ſo well ſaued. When they were riſen from the table, and had ſpent ſome ſmall time in familiar conference: the Lady thought it fit, to acquaint him with the reaſon of her comming thither, and therefore (in very kinde manner) thus began.

Frederigo, if you do yet remember your former carriage towards mee, as alſo my many modeſt and chaſte denials, which (perhaps) you thought to ſauour of a harſh, cruell, and vn-womanly nature, I make no doubt,

but

but you will wonder at my preſent preſumption, when you vnderſtand the occaſion, which expreſſely mooued me to come hither. But if you were poſſeſſed of children, or euer had any, whereby you might comprehend what loue (in nature) is due vnto them: then I durſt aſſure my ſelfe, that you would partly hold me excuſed.

Now, in regard that you neuer had any, and my ſelfe (for my part) haue but onely one, I ſtand not exempted from thoſe Lawes, which are in common to other mothers. And being compelled to obey the power of thoſe Lawes, contrary to mine owne will, and thoſe duties which reaſon ought to maintaine, I am to requeſt ſuch a gift of you, which I am certaine, that you do make moſt precious account of, as in manly equity you can do no leſſe. For Fortune hath bin ſo extreamly aduerſe to you, that ſhe hath robbed you of all other pleaſures, allowing you no comfort or delight, but onely that poore one, which is your faire Faulcone. Of which Bird, my Sonne is become ſo ſtrangely deſirous, as, if I doe not bring it to him at my comming home; I feare ſo much, the extreamity of his ſickneſſe, as nothing can enſue thereon, but his loſſe of life. Wherefore I beſeech you, not in regard of the loue you haue borne me, for therby you ſtand no way obliged: but in your owne true gentle nature (the which hath alwayes declared it ſelfe ready in you, to do more kinde offices generally, then any other Gentleman that I know) you will be pleaſed to giue her me, or at the leaſt, let me buy her of you. Which if you do, I ſhall freely then confeſſe, that onely by your meanes, my Sonnes life is ſaued, and we both ſhall for euer remaine engaged to you.

When *Frederigo* had heard the Ladies requeſt, which was now quite out of his power to graunt, becauſe it had bene her ſeruice at dinner: he ſtood like a man meerely dulled in his ſences, the teares trickling amaine downe his cheekes, and he not able to vtter one word. Which ſhe perceiuing, began to coniecture immediately, that theſe teares and paſſions proceeded rather from greefe of minde, as being loather to part with his Faulcon, then any other kinde of manner: which made her ready to ſay, that ſhe would not haue it. Neuertheleſſe ſhe did not ſpeake, but rather tarried to attend his anſwer. Which, after ſome ſmall reſpite and pauſe, he returned in this manner.

Madame, ſince the houre, when firſt mine affection became ſoly deuoted to your ſeruice; Fortune hath bene croſſe and contrary to me, in many occaſions, as iuſtly, and in good reaſon I may complain of her, Yet all ſeemed light and eaſie to be indured, in compariſon of her preſent malicious contradiction, to my vtter ouerthrow, and perpetuall molleſtation. Conſidering, that you are come hither to my poore houſe, which (while I was rich and able) you would not ſo much as vouchſafe to looke on. And now you haue requeſted a ſmall matter of me, wherein ſhe hath alſo moſt crookedly thwarted me, becauſe ſhe hath diſabled me, in beſtowing ſo meane a gift, as your ſelfe will confeſſe, when it ſhall be related to you in few words.

So ſoone as I heard, that it was your gracious pleaſure to dine with me,

me, hauing regard to your excellency, and what (by merit) is iuſtly due vnto you : I thought it a part of my bounden duty, to entertaine you with ſuch exquiſite viands, as my poore power could any way compaſſe, and farre beyond reſpect or welcome, to other common and ordinary perſons. Whereupon, remembring my Faulcon, which now you aske for ; and her goodneſſe, excelling all other of her kinde; I ſuppoſed, that ſhe would make a dainty diſh for your dyet, and hauing dreſt her, ſo well as I could deuiſe to do: you haue fed heartily on her, and I am proud that I haue ſo well beſtowne her. But perceiuing now, that you would haue her for your ſicke Sonne ; it is no meane affliction to me, that I am diſabled of yeelding you contentment, which all my life time I haue deſired to doe.

To approue his words, the feathers, feete. and beake were brought in, which when ſhe ſaw, ſhe greatly blamed him for killing ſo rare a Faulcon, to content the appetite of any woman whatſoeuer. Yet ſhe commended his height of ſpirit, which pouerty had no power to abaſe. Laſtly, her hopes being fruſtrate for enioying the Faulcon, and fearing beſides the health of her Sonne, ſhe thanked *Friderigo* for his honorable kindneſſe, returning home againe ſad and melancholly. Shortly after, her ſonne either greeuing that he could not haue the Faulcon, or by extreamity of his diſeaſe, chanced to dye, leauing his mother a moſt wofull Lady.

After ſo much time was expired, as conueniently might agree with ſorrow, and mourning ; her Brethren made many motions to her, to ioyne her ſelfe in marriage againe, becauſe ſhe was extraordinarily rich, and as yet but yong in yeares. Now although ſhe was well contented neuer to be married any more ; yet being continually importuned by them, and remembring the honorable honeſty of *Frederigo*, his laſt poore, yet magnificent dinner, in killing his Faulcon for her ſake, ſhe ſaide to her Brethren. This kind of widdowed eſtate doth like me ſo well, as willingly I would neuer leaue it : but ſeeing you are ſo earneſt for my ſecond marriage, let me plainly tell you, that I will neuer accept of any other husband, but onely *Frederigo di Alberino.*

Her Brethren in ſcornefull manner reprooued her, telling her, that he was a begger, and had nothing left to keepe him in the world. I know it well (quoth ſhe) and am heartily ſorry for it. But giue me a man that hath neede of wealth, rather then wealth that hath neede of a man. The Brethren hearing how ſhe ſtood addicted, and knowing *Frederigo* to be a worthy Gentleman, though pouerty had diſgraced him in the World : conſented thereto, ſo ſhe beſtowed her ſelfe and her riches on him. He on the other ſide, hauing ſo noble a Lady to his Wife, and the ſame whom he had ſo long and deerely loued, ſubmitted all his faireſt Fortunes vnto her, became a better husband (for the world) then before, and they liued, and loued together in equall ioy and happineſſe.

Pedro

Pedro di Vinciolo *went to ſup at a friends houſe in the City. His wife (in the meane while) had a young man whom ſhee loued, at ſupper with her.* Pedro *returning home on a ſodaine, the young man was hidden vnder a Coope for Hens.* Pedro *in excuſe of his ſo ſoone comming home, declareth, how in the houſe of* Herculano *(with whom he ſhould haue ſupt) a friend of his wiues was found, which was the reaſon of the Suppers breaking off.* Pedroes *wife reprouing the error of* Herculanoes *wife, an Aſſe (by chance) treads on the yong mans fingers that lay hidden vnder the Hen-coope. Vpon his crying out* Pedro *ſteppeth thither, ſees him, knowes him, and findeth the fallacy of his wife; with whom (neuertheleſſe) he groweth to agreement, in regard of ſome imperfections in himſelfe.*

The Tenth Nouell.

Reprehending the cunning of immodeſt women, who by abuſing themſelues, do throw euill aſperſions on all their Sexe.



THe Queenes Nouell being ended, and all applauding the happy fortune of *Frederigo*, as alſo the noble nature of Madam *Giana: Dioneus* expecting no command, prepared to deliuer his diſcourſe in this maner. I know not whether I ſhould terme it a vice accidentall, and inſuing thorow the badnes of complexions on vs mortals; or an error in Nature, to reioyce rather at lewd accidents, then at deeds that deſerue commendation, eſpecially when they no way concern our ſelues. Now, in regard that all the paines I haue hitherto taken, and am alſo to vndergo at this preſent aymeth at no other end, but onely to purge your minds of melancholly, and entertain the time with mirthful matter: pardon me I pray you (faire Ladies) if my Tale trip in ſome part, and ſauour a little of immodeſty; yet

in hearing it, you may obſerue the ſame courſe, as you doe in pleaſing and delightfull Gardens, plucke a ſweete Roſe, and preſerue your fingers from pricking. Which very eaſily you may doe, winking at the imperfections of a fooliſh man, and ſmiling at the amourous ſubtilties of his Wife, compaſſionating the misfortune of others, where vrgent neceſſity doth require it.

There dwelt not long ſince in *Perugia*, a wealthy man named *Pedro di Vinciolo*, who perhaps more to deceiue ſome other, and reſtraine an euill opinion which the *Perugians* had conceiued of him, in matter no way beſeeming a man, then any beauty or good feature remaining in the woman entred into the eſtate of marriage. And Fortune was ſo conforme to him in his election, that the woman whom he had made his wife, had a yong, luſty, and well enabled bodie, a red-haird Wench, hot and fiery ſpirited, ſtanding more in neede of three Husbands, then he, who could not any way well content one Wife, becauſe his minde ran more on his mony, then thoſe offices and duties belonging to wedlock, which time acquainted his Wife withall, contrary to her owne expectation, and thoſe delights which the eſtate of marriage afforded, knowing her ſelfe alſo to be of a ſprightly diſpoſition, and not to be eaſily tamed by houſhold cares and attendances, ſhee waxed weary of her husbands vnkind courſes, vpbraided him daily with harſh ſpeeches, making his owne home meerly as a hell to him.

When ſhe ſaw that this domeſticke diſquietneſſe returned her no benefit, but rather tended to her own conſumption, then any amendment in her miſerable Husband, ſhee began thus to conferre with her priuate thoughts. This Husband of mine liueth with me, as if he were no Huſband, or I his Wife; the marriage bed, which ſhould be a comfort to vs both, ſeemeth hatefull to him, and as little pleaſing to mee, becauſe his minde is on his money, his head buſied with worldly cogitations, and early and late in his counting-houſe, admitting no familiar conuerſation with me. Why ſhould not I be as reſpectleſſe of him, as he declares him ſelfe to be of me? I tooke him for an Husband, brought him a good and ſufficient Dowry, thinking him to be a man, and affected a woman as a man ought to doe, elſe he had neuer beene any Husband of mine. If he be a Woman hater, why did he make choice of me to be his Wife? If I had not intended to be of the World, I could haue coopt my ſelfe vp in a Cloyſter, and ſhorne my ſelfe a Nunne, but that I was not born to ſuch ſeuerity of life. My youth ſhall be blaſted with age before I can truly vnderſtand what youth is, and I ſhall be branded with the diſgraceful word barrenneſſe, knowing my ſelfe meete and able to be a Mother, were my Husband but worthy the name of a Father, or expected iſſue and poſterity, to leaue our memoriall to after times in our race, as all our predeceſſours formerly haue done, and for which mariage was chiefly inſtituted. Caſtles long beſieged, doe yeeld at the laſt, and women wronged by their owne husbands, can hardly warrant their owne frailety, eſpecially liuing among ſo many temptations, which fleſh and bloud are not alwaies able

to

to reſiſt. Well, I meane to be aduiſed in this caſe, before I will hazard my honeſt reputation, either to ſuſpition or ſcandall, then which, no woman can haue two heauier enemies, and very few there are that can eſcape them.

Hauing thus a long while conſulted with her ſelfe, and (perhaps) oftner then twice or thrice; ſhe became ſecretly acquainted with an aged woman,, generally reputed to be more then halfe a Saint, walking alwayes very demurely in the ſtreetes, counting (ouer and ouer) her *Paters Noſters*, and all the Cities holy pardons hanging at her girdle neuer talking of any thing, but the liues of the holy Fathers, or the woundes of Saint *Frances*, all the World admiring her ſanctity of life, euen as if ſhee were diuinely inſpired: this ſhee Saint muſt bee our diſtreſſed womans Counſellour, and hauing found out a conuenient ſeaſon, at large ſhe imparted all her minde to her, in ſome ſuch manner as formerly you haue heard, vvhereto ſhe returned this anſwer.

Now truſt me Daughter, thy caſe is to be pittied, and ſo much the rather, becauſe thou art in the flowre and ſpring time of thy youth, when not a minute of time is to bee left: for there is no greater an errour in this life, then the loſſe of time, becauſe it cannot bee recouered againe; and when the fiends themſelues affright vs, yet if wee keepe our embers ſtill couered with warme aſhes on the hearth, they haue not any power to hurt vs. If any one can truly ſpeake thereof, then I am able to deliuer true teſtimony; for I know, but not without much preturbation of minde, and piercing afflictons in the ſpirit; how much time I loſt without any profit. And yet I loſt not all, for I would not haue thee thinke me to bee ſo fooliſh, that I did altogether neglect ſuch an eſpeciall benefit; which when I call to mind, and conſider now in what condition I am, thou muſt imagine, it is no ſmall hearts griefe to mee, that age ſhould make me vtterly deſpiſed, and no fire affoorded to light my tinder.

With men it is not ſo, they are borne apt for a thouſand occaſions, as well for the preſent purpoſe wee talke of, as infinite other beſide; yea, and many of them are more eſteemed being aged, then when they were young. But women ſerue onely for mens contentation, and to bring Children; and therefore are they generally beloued, which if they faile of, either it is by vnfortunate marriage, or ſome imperfection depending on nature, nor through want of good will in themſelues. Wee haue nothing in this World but what is giuen vs, in which regard, wee are to make vſe of our time, and employ it the better while wee haue it. For, when wee grow to bee old, our Husbands, yea, our very deareſt and neareſt Friends, will ſcarſely looke on vs. Wee are then fit for nothing, but to ſit by the fire in the Kitchin, telling tales to the Cat, or counting the Pots and Pannes on the ſhelues. Nay, which is worſe, Rimes and Songs is

made of vs, euen in meere contempt of our age, and commendation of ſuch as are young, the daintieſt morſels are fitteſt for them, and wee referred to feed on the ſcrappes from their Trenchers, or ſuch reuerſion as they can ſpare vs. I tell thee Daughter, thou couldſt not make choyce of a meeter woman in all the City, to whom thou mighteſt ſafely open thy minde, and knowes better to aduiſe thee then I doe. But remember withall, that I am poore, and it is your part not to ſuffer pouerty to bee vnſupplyed. I will make thee partaker of all theſe bleſſed pardons, at euery Altar I will ſay a *Pater Noſter*, and an *Aue Maria*, that thou maiſt proſper in thy hearts deſires, and be defended from foule ſinne and ſhame, and ſo ſhe ended her Motherly counſell.

Within a while after, it came to paſſe, that her Husband was inuited foorth to ſupper, with one named *Herculano*, a kinde Friend of his, but his Wife refuſed to goe, becauſe ſhe had appointed a Friend to Supper with her, to whom the old woman was employed as her meſſenger, and was well recompenced for her labour. This friend was a gallant proper youth, as any all *Perugia* yeelded, and ſcarcely was hee ſeated at the Table, but her Husband was returned backe, and called to bee let in at the doore. Which when ſhee perceiued, ſhe was almoſt halfe dead with feare, and coueting to hide the young man, that her Husband ſhould not haue any ſight of him, ſhee had no other meanes, but in an entry, hard by the Parlour where they purpoſed to haue ſupt, ſtood a Coope or Hen-pen, wherein ſhee vſed to keepe her Pullen, vnder which hee crept, and then ſhee couered it vvith an olde empty Sacke, and after ranne to let her Husbaad come in. When hee was entred into the Houſe; as halfe offended at his ſo ſudden returne, angerly he ſaide: It ſeemes Sir you are a ſhauer at your meate, that you haue made ſo ſhort a Supper. In troth Wife (quoth hee) I haue not ſupt at all, no not ſo much as eaten one bit. How hapned that, ſaid the woman? Marry Wife (quoth hee) I vvill tell you, and then thus he began.

As *Herculano*, his Wife, and I were ſitting downe at the Table, very neere vnto vs wee heard one ſneeze, whereof at the firſt wee made no recknoning, vntill wee heard it againe the ſecond time, yea, a third, fourth, and fifth, and many more after, whereat wee were not a little amazed. Now Wife I muſt tell you, before wee entred the roome where we were to ſupt, *Herculanoes* Wife kept the doore faſt ſhut againſt vs, and vvould not let vs enter in an indifferent while; which made him then ſomewhat offended, but now much more, when hee had heard one to ſneeze ſo often. Demaunded of her a reaſon for it, and who it was that thus ſneezed in his Houſe: hee ſtarted from the Table, and ſtepping to a little doore neere the ſtaires head, neceſſarily made, to ſet ſuch things in, as otherwiſe would be troubleſome

bleſome to the roome, (as in all Houſes we commonly ſee the like) he perceiued, that the party was hidden there, which wee had heard ſo often to ſneeze before.

No ſooner had hee opened the doore, but ſuch a ſmell of brimſtone came foorth (whereof wee felt not the leaſt ſauour before) as made vs likewiſe to cough and ſneeze, being no way able to refraine it. Shee ſeeing her Husband to bee much moued, excuſed the matter thus: that (but a little while before) ſhee had whited certaine linnen with the ſmoake of brimſtone, as it is a vſuall thing to doe, and then ſet the Pan into that ſpare place, becauſe it ſhould not bee offenſiue to vs. By this time, *Herculano* had eſpied him that ſneezed, who being almoſt ſtifled with the ſmell, and cloſeneſſe of the ſmall roome wherein hee lay, had not any power to helpe himſelfe, but ſtill continued coughing and ſneezing, euen as if his heart would haue ſplit in twaine. Foorth hee pluckt him by the heeles, and perceiuing how matter had paſt, hee ſaide to her. I thanke you Wife, now I ſee the reaſon, why you kept vs ſo long from comming into this roome let: mee die, if I beare this wrong at your hands. When his Wife heard theſe words, and ſaw the diſcouery of her ſhame; without returning either excuſe or anſwer, foorth of doores ſhee ranne, but whither, wee know not. *Herculano* drew his Dagger, and would haue ſlaine him that ſtill lay ſneezing: but I diſſwaded him from it, as well in reſpect of his, as alſo mine owne danger, when the Law ſhould cenſure on the deede. And after the young man was indifferently recouered; by the perſwaſion of ſome Neighbours comming in: hee was cloſely conueyed out of the Houſe, and all the noyſe quietly pacified. Onely (by this meanes, and the flight of *Herculanoes* Wife) wee were diſappointed of our Supper; and now you know the reaſon of my ſo ſoone returning.

When ſhee had heard this whole diſcourſe, then ſhee perceiued, that other Women were ſubiect to the like infirmitie, and as wiſe for themſelues, as ſhee could be; though theſe the like ſiniſter accidents might ſometime croſſe them: and gladly ſhee wiſhed, that *Herculanoes* Wiues excuſe, might now ſerue to acquite her: but becauſe in blaming others errours, our owne may ſometime chance to eſcape diſcouery, and cleare vs, albeit wee are as guilty; in a ſharpe reprehending manner, thus ſhee began. See Husband, heere is hanſome behauiour, of an holy faire-ſeeming, and Saint like woman, to whom I durſt haue confeſt my ſinnes, I conceiued ſuch a religious perſwaſion of her liues integrety, free from the leaſt ſcruple of taxation. A woman, ſo farre ſtept into yeeres, as ſhee is, to giue ſuch an euill example to younger women, is it not a ſinne beyond all ſufferance? Accurſed be the houre, when ſhe was borne into this World, and her ſelfe likewiſe, to bee ſo lewdly and incontinently giuen;

giuen; an vniuerſall ſhame and ſlaunder, to all the good women of our City.

Shall I tearme her a woman, or rather ſome ſauage monſter in a womans ſhape? Hath ſhee not made an open proſtitution of her honeſty, broken her plighted faith to her Husband, and all the womanly reputation ſhee had in this World? Her Husband, being an honourable Citizen, entreating her alwayes, as few men elſe in the City doe their wiues; what an heart-breake muſt this needes bee to him, good man? Neither I, nor any honeſt man elſe, ought to haue any pity on her, but (with our owne hands) teare her in peeces, or dragge her along to a good fire in the Market place, wherein ſhe and her minion ſhould be conſumed together, and their baſe aſhes diſperſed abroad in the winde, leaſt the pure Aire ſhould be infected with them.

Then, remembring her owne caſe, and her poore affrighted friend, who lay in ſuch diſtreſſe vnder the Hen-coope; ſhe began to aduiſe her Husband, that he would be pleaſed to go to bed, becauſe the night paſſed on apace. But *Pedro*, hauing a better will to eate, then to ſleepe, deſired her to let him haue ſome meate, elſe hee muſt goe to bed with an empty bellie; whereto ſhee anſwered. Why Huſband (quoth ſhee) doe I make any large prouiſion, when I am debard of your company? I would I were the Wife of *Herculano*, ſeeing you cannot content your ſelfe from one nights feeding, conſidering, it is now ouer-late to make any thing ready.

It fortuned, that certaine Husbandmen, which had the charge of *Pedroes* Farme-houſe in the Countrey, and there followed his affaires of Husbandry, were returned home this inſtant night, hauing their Aſſes laden with ſuch prouiſion, as was to bee vſed in his City-houſe. When the Aſſes were vnladen, and ſet vp in a ſmall Stable, without watering; one off them being (belike) more thirſty then the reſt, brake looſe, and wandering all about ſmelling to ſeeke water, happened into the entry, where the young may lay hidden vnder the Hen pen. Now, hee being conſtrained (like a Carpe) to lye flat on his belly, becauſe the Coope was ouer-weighty for him to carry, and one of his hands more extended foorth, then was requiſite for him in ſo vrgent a ſhift: it was his hap (or ill fortune rather) that the Aſſe ſet his foote on the young mans fingers, treading ſo hard, and the paine being very irkeſome to him, as hee was enforced to cry out aloude: which *Pedro* hearing, he wondered thereat not a little.

Knowing that this cry was in his houſe, hee tooke the Candle in his hand, and going foorth of the Parlour, heard the cry to be louder; becauſe the Aſſe remoued not his foote, but rather trod the more firmely on his hand. Comming to the Coope, driuing the Aſſe, and taking off the old ſacke, he eſpyed the young man, who, beſide the painfull

painefull anguiſh he felt of his fingers, aroſe vp trembling, as fearing ſome outrage beſide to bee offered him by *Pedro*, who knew the youth perfectly, aud demaunded of him, how he came thither. No anſwere did hee make to that queſtion, but humbly entreated (for charities ſake) that hee would not doe him any harme. Feare not (quoth *Pedro*) I will not offer thee any violence : onely tell mee how thou cameſt hither, and for what occaſion; wherein the youth fully reſolued him.

Pedro being no leſſe ioyfull for thus finding him, then his Wife was ſorrowfull, tooke him by the hand, and brought him into the Parlour, where ſhee ſate trembling and quaking, as not knowing what to ſay in this diſtreſſe. Seating himſelfe directly before her, and holding the youth ſtill faſt by the hand, thus hee began. Oh Wife! What bitter ſpeeches did you vſe (euen now) againſt the Wife of *Herculano*, maintaining that ſhee had ſhamed all other women, and iuſtly deſerued to be burned ? Why did you not ſay as much of your ſelfe ? Or, if you had not the heart to ſpeake, how could you bee ſo cruell againſt her, knowing your offence as great as hers ? Queſtionleſſe, nothing elſe vrged you thereto, but that all women are of one and the ſame condition, couering their owne groſſe faults by farre inferiour infirmities in others. You are a peruerſe generation, meerely falſe in your faireſt ſhewes.

When ſhe ſaw that he offered her no other violence, but gaue her ſuch vaunting and reproachfull ſpeeches, holding ſtill the young man before her face, meerely vexe and deſpight her : ſhee began to take heart, and thus replied. Doeſt thou compare mee with the Wife of *Herculano*, who is an old, diſſembling hypocrite ? Yet ſhe can haue of him whatſoeuer ſhee deſireth, and he vſeth her as a woman ought to be, which fauour I could neuer yet finde at thy hands. Put the caſe, that thou keepeſt me in good garments ; allowing mee to goe neatly hoſed and ſhod; yet well thou knoweſt, there are other meere matters belonging to a woman, and euery way as neceſſarily required, both for the preſeruation of Houſhold quietneſſe, and thoſe other rites betweene a Husband and Wife. Let mee be worſer garmented, courſer dieted, yea, debarred of all pleaſure and delights; ſo I might once be worthy the name of a Mother, and leaue ſome remembrance of woman-hood behinde me. I tell thee plainely *Pedro*, I am a woman as others are, and ſubiect to the ſame deſires, as (by nature) attendeth on fleſh and blood : looke how thou faileſt in kindneſſe towards me, thinke it not amiſſe, if I doe the like to thee, and endeauour thou to win the worthy title of a Father, becauſe I was made to be a Mother.

When *Pedro* perceiued, that his Wife had ſpoken nothing but reaſon, in regard of his ouer-much neglect towards her; and not vſing ſuch Houſhold kindneſſe, as ought to be betweene Man and Wife, hee returned

returned her this anſwer. Well Wife (quoth he) I confeſſe my fault, and hereafter will labour to amend it; conditionally, that this youth, nor any other, may no more viſite my Houſe in my abſence. Get me therefore ſomething to eate, for doubtleſſe, this young man and thy ſelfe fell ſhort of your Supper, by reaſon of my ſo ſoone returning home. In troth Husband, ſaide ſhe, we did not eate one bit of any thing, and I will be a true and loyall Wife to thee, ſo thou wilt be the like to me. No more words then Wife, replyed *Pedro*, all is forgotten and forgiuen, let vs to Supper, and we are all friends. She ſeeing his anger was ſo well appeaſed, louingly kiſſed him, and laying the cloth, ſet on the ſupper, which ſhe had prouided for her ſelfe and the youth, and ſo they ſupt together merrily, not one vnkinde word paſſing betweene them. After Supper, the youth was ſent away in in friendly manner, and *Pedro* was alwayes afterward more louing to his Wife, then formerly hee had beene, and no complaint paſſed on either ſide, but mutuall ioy and Houſhold contentment, ſuch as ought to bee betweene Man and Wife.

Dioneus hauing ended this his Tale, for which the Ladies returned him no thankes, but rather angerly frowned on him: the Queene, knowing that her gouernment was now concluded, aroſe, and taking off her Crowne of Lawrell, placed it graciouſly on the head of Madame *Eliza*, ſaying. Now Madame, it is your turne to commaund. *Eliza* hauing receiued the honour, did (in all reſpects) as others formerly had done, and after ſhee had enſtructed the Maſter of the Houſhold, concerning his charge during the time of her Regiment, for contentation of all the company; thus ſhee ſpake.

We haue long ſince heard, that with witty words, readly anſweres and ſudden ieſts or taunts, many haue checkt and reproued great folly in others, and to their no meane owne commendation. Now, becauſe it is a pleaſing kinde of argument, miniſtring occaſion of mirth and wit: my deſire is, that all our diſcourſe to morrow ſhall tend thereto. I meane of ſuch perſons, either Men or Women, who with ſome ſudden witty anſwere, haue encountred a ſcorner in his owne intention, and layed the blame where it iuſtly belonged. Euery one commended the Queenes appointment, becauſe it ſauoured of good wit and iudgement; and the Queene being riſen, they were all diſcharged till ſupper time, falling to ſuch ſeuerall exerciſes as themſelues beſt fancyed.

When Supper was ended, and the inſtruments layed before them; by the Queenes conſent, Madam *Emilia* vndertooke the daunce, and the Song was appointed to *Dioneus*, who began many, but none that proued to any liking, they were ſo palpably obſcœne and idle, ſauouring altogether of his owne wanton diſpoſition. At the length,

the

the Queene looking ſtearnely on him, and commanding him to ſing a good one, or none at all; thus he began.

The Song.

EYes, can ye not refraine your hourely weeping?
Eares, how are you depriu'd of ſweete attention?
Thoughts, haue you loſt your quiet ſilent ſleeping?
Wit, who hath rob'd thee of thy rare inuention?
The lacke of theſe, being life and motion giuing:
Are ſenſeleſſe ſhapes, and no true ſignes of liuing.

Eyes, when you gaz'd vpon her Angell beauty;
Eares, while you heard her ſweete delitious ſtraines,
Thoughts (ſleeping then) did yet performe their duty,
Wit, tooke ſprightly pleaſure in his paines.
While ſhee did liue, then none of theſe were ſcanting,
But now (being dead) they all are gone, and wanting.

After that *Dioneus* (by proceeding no further) declared the finiſhing of his Song; many more were ſung beſide, and that of *Dioneus* highly commended. Some part of the night being ſpent in other delightfull exerciſes, and a fitting houre for reſt drawing on: they betooke themſelues to their Chambers, where we will leaue them till to morrow morning.

FINIS.